



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

Educ T 20688, 98.129



Harvard College Library

FROM

Jenny C. Watts

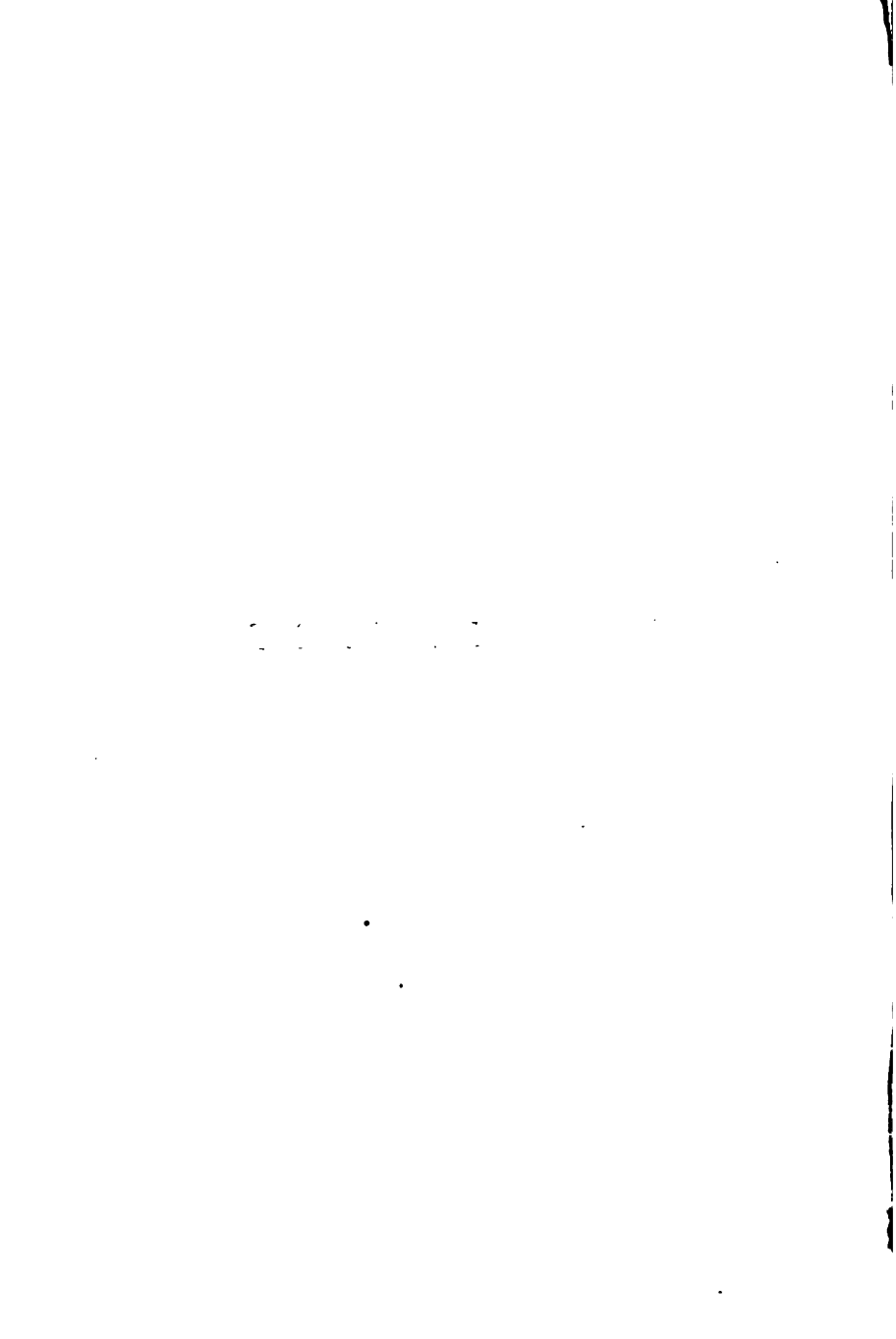




3 2044 102 787 280

EducT 20688.98.129

ENGLISH HISTORY



TEXT-BOOK
OF
ENGLISH HISTORY

FROM THE EARLIEST TIMES

For Colleges and Schools

BY

OSMUND AIRY

ONE OF H.M. INSPECTORS OF SCHOOLS; AUTHOR OF 'THE ENGLISH RESTORATION AND
LOUIS XIV'; EDITOR OF THE 'LAUDERDALE' AND 'ESSEX' PAPERS
CORRESPONDING MEMBER OF THE COUNCIL OF THE
SCOTTISH HISTORICAL SOCIETY

WITH SIXTEEN MAPS

AND APPENDICES CONTAINING SUMMARY, GLOSSARY, &c.

NEW EDITION, REVISED AND BROUGHT DOWN TO 1897

LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO.

29 PATERNOSTER ROW, LONDON

NEW YORK AND BOMBAY

1898

All rights reserved

Educ T

20682.98.129

✓



Jenny C. Watts

✓

PREFACE

TO

THE SECOND EDITION.

THIS is, so far as the text is concerned, in all essentials a reprint. But in the first edition of a narrative at once lengthy and condensed it was perhaps inevitable that there should be found a certain number of misprints, and minor statements of detail which needed correction or modification. The rigid scrutiny to which the book has been subjected leads me to hope that very few, if any, of these have escaped detection.

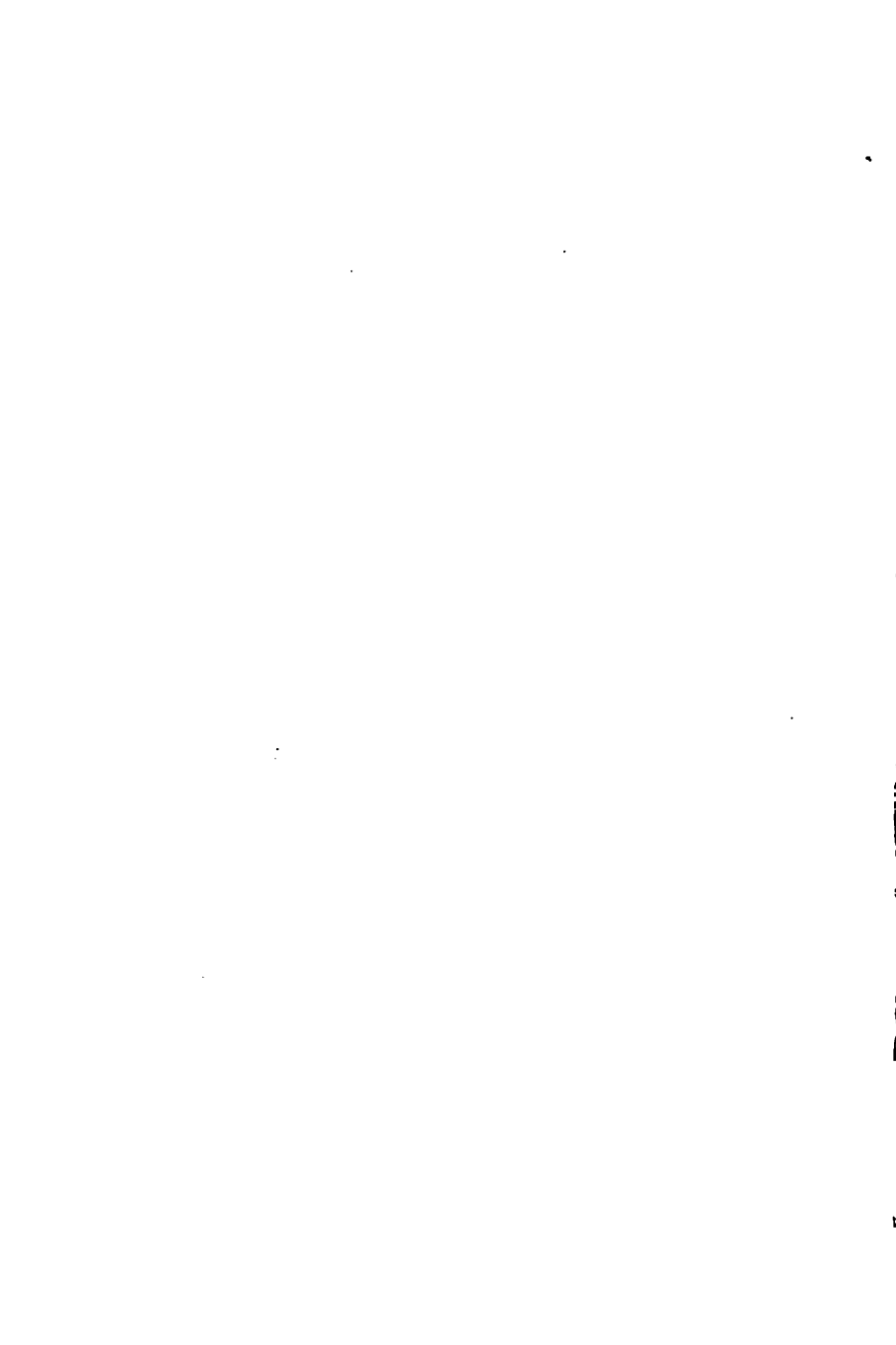
One or two matters which had previously not been mentioned have now been shortly dealt with ; and I have in a few instances extended or modified the notes.

I would call especial attention to two features of this edition for which, while I feel that they add greatly to its usefulness, I am not responsible ; I mean the excellent tables of contents and the glossary of historical terms.

OSMUND AIRY.

SOLIHULL, BIRMINGHAM :

September 16, 1892.



PREFACE

TO

THE FIRST EDITION:

It is HOPED that this may prove useful as a text-book both for teachers and for those students who, while their knowledge of facts is incomplete, are mature enough to desire to connect events with their causes and effects, and to feel an interest in constitutional questions.

It is seldom that any general view of a period is grasped by a learner. I have endeavoured to deal with this difficulty partly by care in the headings of books and chapters, partly by short summaries. The facts upon which these summaries are based are given in the fullest detail possible in the space to which the narrative is necessarily confined.

Frequent reference has been made in the notes to authorities. This has been done not so much to support the statements in the text as with the hope that the reader may be induced to turn to the books thus brought to his notice. The rapid spread of the Free Library movement renders it probable that before long the greater number of them will be easily accessible to most students. I have not hesitated now and again to mention works of comparative rarity, for the benefit of those who, as in the city from which I write, possess the advantage of libraries of the highest class.

More space than is usual in books of this order has been given to elaborating special points, such as the nature of, and contrast between, Anglo-Saxon Feudalism and the Norman Feudal

System, the causes of the Peasants' Revolt, the course and meaning of the Reformation, the connection between political ideas and systems of Church government, the causes of the French Revolution and its effects at home, the 'Expansion of England,' the condition of the labouring classes and the legislation to which that condition gave rise, and the reforms of later years. This has necessitated corresponding compression in accounts of battles and campaigns. Wherever these are described at any length, and where it has seemed necessary for clearness, the description is accompanied by a plan. Of Hastings, Bannockburn, Poitiers, Agincourt, the Great Civil War, the struggles in Canada and India, the Peninsular War, Waterloo, the Crimean War, and the Indian Mutiny, the accounts will, I hope, be found adequate. My indebtedness to the great writers upon these subjects is too obvious to need notice.

For occasional advice and help I have now, as often in the past, to thank Mr. S. R. GARDINER, the completion of whose own 'Student's History of England' is looked for with such keen interest; while to the suggestions of another friend, the Rev. A. JAMSON SMITH, Head Master of King Edward's School, Camp Hill, Birmingham, is due much of whatever value my book may be thought to contain.

A work of this kind may be regarded as scarcely a fit subject for a dedication. I wish, nevertheless, to connect the labour bestowed upon it with the honoured memory of WILLIAM LUCAS SARGANT.

OSMUND AIRY.

SOLLHULL, BIRMINGHAM: 1891.

CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION

THE ROMAN MILITARY OCCUPATION, B.C. 55 TO A.D. 409	PAGE 1
--	-----------

BOOK I

SAXON ENGLAND

449-1066

CHAPTER

I. TO THE COMING OF THE NORTHMEN. 449-828	8
II. THE NORTHMEN. INVASION AND SETTLEMENT. 885-955 . . .	17
III. THE DANISH AND NORMAN CONQUESTS. 955-1066	24

BOOK II

THE ANGLO-NORMAN KINGS, AND THEIR STRUGGLE AGAINST FEUDALISM

1066-1154

I. THE REIGN OF WILLIAM THE CONQUEROR. 1066-1087	38
II. FEUDALISM: (1) UNDER CONTROL. 1037-1135. (2) UNCHECKED. 1135-1154	49

BOOK III

THE DOWNFALL OF FEUDALISM AND THE
GREAT CHARTER

1154-1216

CHAPTER		PAGE
I.	HENRY II. 1154-1189. ORGANISATION	63
II.	THE SONS OF HENRY II. 1189-1216	73

BOOK IV

THE STRUGGLE FOR THE CHARTERS

1216-1307

I.	HENRY III. 1216-1272. REVOLT AGAINST FOREIGN INFLUENCE	85
II.	EDWARD I. ORGANISATION. 1272-1307	93

BOOK V

CAUSES OF THE POWER OF THE COMMONS

I.	EDWARD II. FAVOURITES. 1307-1327	106
II.	EDWARD III. THE HUNDRED YEARS WAR. 1327-1377	113
III.	RICHARD II. LABOUR REVOLT. CONFUSION. 1377-1399	127

BOOK VI

THE HOUSES OF LANCASTER AND YORK. TESTING
OF THE PARLIAMENTARY SYSTEM

1399-1485

I.	HENRY IV. (OF LANCASTER). RESTORATION OF ORDER. 1399-1413	137
II.	HENRY V. (OF MONMOUTH). FOREIGN CONQUEST. 1413-1422	141
III.	HENRY VI. 1422-1461. CONFUSION AND LOSS OF CONQUESTS	148
IV.	EDWARD IV. TRIUMPH OF THE HOUSE OF YORK. 1461-1483	159
V.	FALL OF THE HOUSE OF YORK. 1483-1485	164

BOOK VII

THE TUDOR DESPOTISM

CHAPTER	PAGE
I. HENRY VII. AND ORDER. DESPOTISM CREATED. 1485-1509	169
II. HENRY VIII. 1509-1547. TUDOR DESPOTISM CONFIRMED BY PARLIAMENT	178
III. EDWARD VI. AND MARY. 1547-1558. DESPOTISM IN ABEYANCE	198
IV. ELIZABETH. 1558-1603. DESPOTISM WITH THE WILL OF THE PEOPLE. DUEL WITH ROME	211

BOOK VIII

PARLIAMENT AND PREROGATIVE

I. JAMES I. 1603-1625. THE QUARREL DEFINED	233
II. CHARLES I. TO THE CIVIL WAR. 1625-1642	248
III. THE GREAT CIVIL WAR. 1642-1647	266
IV. PARLIAMENT AND THE ARMY. EXECUTION OF CHARLES. 1647- 1649	276
V. THE COMMONWEALTH. THE FIGHT FOR TOLERATION. 1649- 1660	280
VI. CHARLES II. ATTEMPT TO REGAIN THE PREROGATIVE. 1660- 1685	297
VII. JAMES II. 1685-1689. CLOSE OF THE CONTEST BETWEEN PARLIAMENT AND PREROGATIVE	317

BOOK IX

THE NEW MONARCHY

I. WILLIAM AND MARY. 1689-1702	326
II. ANNE. 1702-1714. GREAT BRITAIN	342

CHAPTER	PAGE
III. GEORGE I. 1714-1727. THE WHIG SUPREMACY . . .	354
IV. GEORGE II. THE EXPANSION OF ENGLAND. 1727-1760 . . .	366
V. GEORGE III. 1760-1820. PRIVILEGE AND PREROGATIVE. 1760- 1784	389
VI. GEORGE III. PITT'S MINISTRY AND THE GREAT WAR. 1784- 1820	418

BOOK X

THE ERA OF REFORM

I. GEORGE IV. 1820-1830. BEGINNING OF REFORM . . .	457
II. WILLIAM IV. THE REFORMED PARLIAMENT. 1830-1837 . . .	467
III. VICTORIA. TO THE END OF THE INDIAN MUTINY. 1837-1858	478
IV. VICTORIA, 1858-1897	501
APPENDIX I. SUMMARY OF THE LEADING FACTS	521
" II. A GLOSSARY OF TECHNICAL AND OTHER TERMS . . .	562
" III. GENEALOGICAL TABLES	585
" IV. TREATIES, STATUTES, AND CHARTERS	592
INDEX	609

LIST OF MAPS

ENGLAND AND WALES, TO ILLUSTRATE THE HISTORY UP TO 1066	<i>To face page</i> 1
BATTLE OF HASTINGS, 1066	" 85
FRANCE	" 63
BATTLE OF BANNOCKBURN, 1314	" 103
" POITIEBS, 1356	" 119
ENGLAND AND WALES, TO ILLUSTRATE THE CIVIL WAR .	" 266
SCOTLAND " " "	" 283
IRELAND " " "	" 329
MAP TO ILLUSTRATE THE CAPTURE OF QUEBEC	" 382
MAP TO ILLUSTRATE THE CONQUEST OF INDIA, FROM CLIVE TO THE GREAT MUTINY	" 385
S.E. OF NORTH AMERICA, TO ILLUSTRATE THE ENGLISH SETTLEMENTS AND THE WAR OF INDEPENDENCE .	" 393
WESTERN SPAIN AND PORTUGAL, TO ILLUSTRATE THE PENINSULAR WAR FROM AUGUST 1808 TO OCTOBER 1812	" 437
S. FRANCE AND N.E. SPAIN	" 443
BATTLE OF WATERLOO, JUNE 18, 1815, AT 11 A.M.	{ 446 and 447, facing each other
" " " " 5.30 P.M.	
MAP TO ILLUSTRATE THE CRIMEAN WAR	<i>To face page</i> 491

LIST OF GENEALOGICAL TABLES

	PAGE
I. EGBERT AND HIS HOUSE	17
II. WILLIAM THE CONQUEROR AND HIS DESCENDANTS	62
III. HENRY II. AND HIS DESCENDANTS	77
IV. HENRY III. AND HIS DESCENDANTS	84
V. THE SCOTTISH KINGS FROM DAVID I. TO ROBERT BRUCE	97
VI. THE CLAIM OF EDWARD III. TO THE FRENCH CROWN	114
VII. THE DESCENT OF HENRY IV. OF LANCASTER	136
VIII. THE BEAUFORTS AND THE TUDORS	149
IX. DESCENT OF RICHARD OF YORK	152
X. THE STAFFORDS	165
XI. THE HOUSES OF YORK AND TUDOR	163
XII. THE HOWARDS	183
XIII. (1) DARNLEY AND ARABELLA STUART	232
(2) THE ENGLISH STUARTS	232
XIV. THE SPANISH SUCCESSION	337
XV. KINGS OF FRANCE	342
XVI. THE HOUSE OF HANOVER	354

IMPORTANT DATES

1. ROMAN MILITARY OCCUPATION. B.C. 55-A.D. 409.

Landings of Cæsar	B.C. 55, 54
Roman Conquest	A.D. 43-84
Recall of the Legionaries	409
Hallelujah Victory	429

2. SAXON ENGLAND. 449-1066.

Landing of Jutes, Saxons, and Engles	449-500
Landing of Augustine	597
Conquest completed	600
Struggle for Supremacy	600-835
Synod of Whitby	664
Church Union and Organisation	664-678
Danish Invasions begin, about	800
Egbert of Wessex King of the English	885
Alfred	871-901
Peace of Wedmore	878
Edward, 'the Unconquered,' King over all Britain, dies	925
Edred, elected by English, Welsh, and Danes, dies	955
Danish Kings of England	1010-1042
Edward the Confessor	1042-1066
Battle of Hastings	1066

3. ANGLO-NORMAN KINGS AND FEUDALISM. 1066-1154.

William I. 1066-1087.

English Revolts, to	1072
Remodelling of the Church, by Lanfranc	1070
Revolt of Robert	1077
Domesday Book	1085, 1086
Salisbury Decree	1086

William II. (Rufus). 1087-1100

Revolts of Barons against Rufus	1088-1095
Acquisition of Normandy	1096

Henry I. 1100-1135.

Great Charter of Henry I.	1100
Second Acquisition of Normandy	1106
Investiture Dispute	1107

Stephen. 1135-1154.

Battle of the Standard	1138
Peace of Wallingford	1153

4. DOWNFALL OF FEUDALISM AND GREAT CHARTER. 1154-1217.

Henry II. 1154-1189.

	A.D.
Acquisition of Anjou and Touraine	1158
Scutage	1160
Thomas of London, Archbishop of Canterbury	1162
Constitutions of Clarendon	1164
Murder of Archbishop Thomas	1170
General Revolt against Henry II.	1178
Justices in Eyre	1176
Assize of Arms	1181
Revolt of Richard	1187

Richard I. 1189-1199.

Richard I. and Second Crusade	1190
---	------

John. 1190-1216.

Loss of Normandy	1204
Stephen Langton, Primate	1207
Magna Carta	1215

5. THE STRUGGLE FOR THE CHARTERS. 1216-1307:

Henry III. 1216-1272.

Final Issue of Great Charter	1217
Hubert de Burgh	1217-1282
Battle of Lewes	1264
Representation of Towns in Parliament	1265
Battle of Evesham	1265

Edward I. 1272-1307.

Legislative Reforms of Edward I., to	1290
Subjugation of Wales	1283
Baliol does Homage for Scotland	1291
Model Parliament	1295
Confirmation of the Charters	1297-1800
Revolt of Wallace	1297-1804
Robert Bruce crowned	1306

6. CAUSES OF THE POWER OF THE COMMONS. 1307-1399.

Edward II. 1307-1327.

Edward II. and the Favourites	1307-1327
Battle of Bannockburn	1314

Edward III. 1327-1377.

Scotland independent	1328
Beginning of Hundred Years War	1338
Battle of Crécy	1346
Black Death	1348
Battle of Poitiers	1356
Peace of Brétigny	1360
John Wiclif	1370
The Good Parliament	1376

Richard II. 1377-1399.

Peasants' Revolt	1381
Deposition of Richard II.	1399

7. HOUSES OF LANCASTER AND YORK. 1399-1485.

Henry IV. 1399-1413.

	A.D.
Act <i>De Heretico Comburendo</i>	1401
Act against Livery and Maintenance	1401
Battle of Shrewsbury	1403
Commons originate Money Grants	1406

Henry V. 1413-1422.

Battle of Agincourt	1415
Treaty of Troyes	1420
Jeanne Darc	1423-1431

Henry VI. 1422-1471 (nominally).

Final Loss of Normandy	1450
Loss of Gascony and Guienne	1453
Wars of the Roses begin	1455

Edward IV. 1461 (practically)-1483.

Battle of Towton	1461
Marriage of Edward IV.	1464
Disaffection of Warwick	1470
Battles of Barnet and Tewkesbury	1471

Edward V.

Richard III. 1483-1485.

Richard III. King	1483
Battle of Bosworth	1485

8. THE TUDOR DESPOTISM. 1485-1603.

Henry VII. 1485-1509.

Lambert Simnel	1487
Star Chamber	1487
Poynings' Act	1434
Perkin Warbeck	1401-1497
The 'De Facto' Law	1495
Marriage of James IV. and Margaret	1503

Henry VIII. 1509-1547.

Battle of Flodden	1513
Royal Supremacy asserted	1529
Fall of Wolsey	1530
Divorce of Catherine of Aragon	1520-1532
First Act of Supremacy	1534
Dissolution of the Monasteries	1536
Six Articles and Fall of Cromwell	1539, 1540
Battle of Solway Moss	1542

Edward VI. 1547-1553.

Battle of Pinkiecleugh	1547
First Prayer Book and First Act of Uniformity	1549
Second Prayer Book	1552

Mary. 1558-1558.

Restoration of Catholicism	1554
Persecution	1555
Loss of Calais	1558

Elizabeth. 1558-1608.

	A.D.
Second Act of Supremacy and Second Act of Uniformity	1559
Thirty-nine Articles	1563
Mary of Scots driven to England	1568
Northern Rebellion	1569
Elizabeth excommunicated	1570
St. Bartholomew's Day	1572
Assassination Plot	1584
Execution of Mary of Scots	1587
The Armada	1588

9. PARLIAMENT AND PREROGATIVE. 1608-1689.

James I. 1608-1625.

Hampton Court Conference	1604
Gunpowder Plot	1604-1605
'Apology' of the Commons	1604
Buckingham in power	1615-1628
Thirty Years' War begins	1618
Plantation of Ulster	1618
Five Articles of Perth	1621
Spanish Marriage proposed	1618-1623
Revival of Impeachments	1621

Charles I. 1625-1642.

Petition of Right	1628
Laud Archbishop of Canterbury	1633
Wentworth in Ireland	1633
John Hampden resists Ship-money	1637
The Scotch Covenant	1638
Government without Parliament	1629-1640
Long Parliament meets	1640
Execution of Strafford	1641
The Five Members	1642

Great Civil War. 1642-1649.

Solemn League and Covenant	1643
Scotch Army in England; Marston Moor	1644
New Model; Naseby	1645
Second Civil War	1648
Treaty of Newport and Pride's Purge	1648
Execution of Charles I.	1649

Commonwealth. 1649-1660.

Conquest of Ireland	1649
Conquest of Scotland	1650
Battle of Worcester	1651
Navigation Act	1651
Instrument of Government	1653
Petition and Advice	1657
Death of Cromwell	1658
Monk in London	1660

Charles II. 1660-1685.

Clarendon Administration	1660-1667
Persecution of Dissent	1661-1665
First Dutch War	1665-1667
Appropriation of Supplies	1665
The Cabal	1667-1673
Triple Alliance	1668
Treaty of Dover	1670

IMPORTANT DATES

xvii

Charles II.—continued

	A. D.
Rights of Juries established	1670
Stop of Exchequer and Declaration of Indulgence	1672
Second Dutch War	1672-1674
Test Act	1673
Danby's Administration	1673
'Country Party'	1674-1679
Marriage of William of Orange and Mary	1675
Popish Terror	1677
Exclusion Contest	1678
Habeas Corpus Act	1679-1681
Whigs and Tories	1679
Dissolution of Charles's last Parliament	1680
Government without Parliament	1681
Quo Warrantos	1681-1685
	1683

James II. 1685-1688.

Rebellion of Argyll and Monmouth	1685
Dismissal of Rochester	1686
Liberty of Conscience proclaimed	1687
Attack on the Universities	1687
The Seven Bishops	1688
Birth of James's Son	1688
Landing of William	1688
Declaration of Right and First Act of Settlement	1689

10. THE NEW MONARCHY. 1689-1690.

William III. 1689-1702.

High Church and Low Church	1689
Killicrankie and the Boyne	1689, 1690
Bill of Rights	1689
Glencoe	1692
Battle of La Hogue	1692
National Debt	1693
Bank of England	1694
Coinage Act	1696
Peace of Ryswick	1697
Partition Treaties	1698, 1700
Second Act of Settlement; Independence of the Judges	1701
Alliance against Louis XIV.	1701

Anne. 1702-1714.

Blenheim and Gibraltar	1704
Peterborough in Spain	1705
The Wonderful Year	1706
Ramillies	1706
Union of Scotland and England	1707
Almanza	1707
Oudenarde	1708
Malplaquet	1709
Sacheverell	1709-1710
Capitulation of Stanhope at Brihuega	1710
Occasional Conformity Act	1711
Peace of Utrecht	1711
Schism Act	1714

George I. 1714-1727.

Rebellion of the Old Pretender and Mar	1715
Septennial Act	1716

George I.—continued

	A.D.
Alberoni in Spain, to	1719
Peerage Bill	1719
South Sea Bubble	1720
Drapier's Letters	1724

George II. 1727-1760.

Walpole's Excise Bill	1783
Porteous Riots	1786
Death of Queen Caroline	1787
War of Jenkins's Ear	1789
Fall of Walpole	1742
Anson's Voyage round the World	1741-1744
Battle of Dettingen	1748
Battle of Fontenoy	1745
Rebellion of the Young Pretender	1745
Broad Bottom Administration	1745
Formation of Highland Regiments	1757
Great Administration of the first Pitt	1757-1761
Conquest of Canada	1759
Clive in India	1751-1759
Wesley and the Beginning of Methodism	1785

George III. 1760-1820.

Peace of Paris	1763
Wilkes and General Warrants	1763
Stamp Act	1765
Wilkes and the Middlesex Election	1768-1770
Junius	1769
Lord North Prime Minister	1770
Beginning of War of American Independence	1774
Declaration of Independence	1776
Death of Chatham	1778
Siege of Gibraltar	1779
Gordon Riots	1780
Close of the War of American Independence	1782
Economic Reforms	1782
Peace of Versailles	1788
Warren Hastings in India	1773-1785
Fox's India Bill	1783
William Pitt Prime Minister	1783
Pitt and Free Trade	1784
The India Act	1784
Impeachment of Warren Hastings	1786
Beginning of Slave Trade Agitation	1788
French Revolution	1789
Fox's Libel Act	1792
War declared with France	1793
Howe's Victory of June 1	1794
Battles of Cape St. Vincent and Camperdown	1797
Rebellion in Ireland	1797
Battle of the Nile	1798
Union of Ireland with England	1800
Battle of Copenhagen	1801
Battle of Aboukir	1801
Peace of Amiens	1802
Trafalgar	1805
Austerlitz	1805
Death of Pitt	1806

George III.—continued

	A.D.
Capture of Danish Fleet	1807
Peninsular War begins	1808
Wellesley in Portugal	1808
Rolica and Vimiero	1808
Moore's Retreat to Corunna	1809
Wellesley in Portugal and Spain	1809
Crossing of the Douro and Talavera	1809
Walcheren Expedition	1809
Torres Vedras	1810
Fuentes d'Onoro; Albuera	1811
Storm of Ciudad Rodrigo and Badajoz	1812
Battle of Salamanca	1812
Battle of Vittoria	1813
Storm of San Sebastian	1813
Battles of the Nivelle, Orthez, and Toulouse	1814
First Treaty of Paris	1814
Waterloo	1815
Second Treaty of Paris	1815
Distress caused by the Peace	1816
Peterloo Massacre and Six Acts	1819

11. THE ERA OF REFORM. 1820-1867.

George IV. 1820-1830.

Cato Street Conspiracy	1820
Death of Lord Castlereagh	1822
Reform of the Criminal Code	1823
Repeal of the Navigation Act	1823
Free Trade Measures	1823
Alteration of the Labour Laws	1824
'Malachi Malagrowther' and One-pound Notes	1826
Retirement of Lord Liverpool	1827
Battle of Navarino	1827
Repeal of Test and Corporation Acts	1828
Catholic Emancipation	1829

William IV. 1830-1837.

Reform Bill	1832
First Education Grant	1833
First Factory Act	1833
Abolition of Slave Trade	1834
New Poor Law	1834
Municipal Reform	1835
Commutation of Tithes	1836
Reduction of Newspaper Tax and Paper Duties	1836

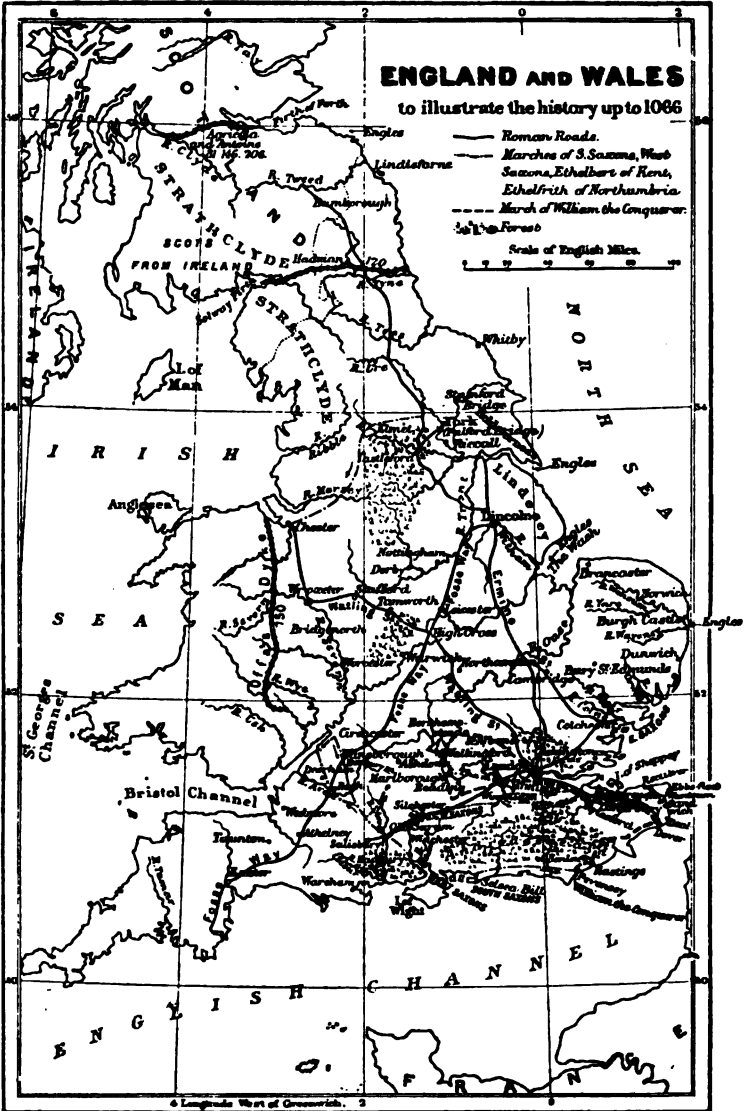
Victoria. 1837-1897.

Penny Postage	1840
Sir Robert Peel Prime Minister	1841
Union of Canada	1841
War in Afghanistan	1841, 1842
Chartism	1837-1843
Anti-Corn-Law League	1838
First Irish Famine	1845
Second Irish Famine	1846
Repeal of the Corn Laws	1846-1849
Death of Peel	1850
Great Exhibition	1851
Death of Wellington	1852

Victoria—continued

	A. D.
Transportation to Tasmania abolished	1853
Crimean War	1854-1856
Chinese War	1856
Indian Mutiny	1857
Government of India transferred to the Crown	1858
Commercial Treaty with France	1860
American Civil War	1861
Reform Bill	1867
Fenians	1867
Abyssinian War	1868
Irish Church Disestablished	1869
Irish Land Act	1870
Elementary Education Act	1870
Franco-Prussian War	1870
Merchant Seamen's Act	1875
Purchase of Shares in Suez Canal	1875
Russo-Turkish War	1877
Treaty of Berlin	1878
Wars in Afghanistan and with the Zulus	1879
War with the Boers	1881
War in Egypt and the Soudan	1882
Agricultural Franchise	1884
Conquest of Upper Burmah	1885
Home Rule Bill	1886
Jubilee of Queen Victoria	1887
County Councils established	1888
Charter of British South Africa Company	1889
Mr. Gladstone's Fourth Ministry	1892-1894
Matabele War	1893
District and Parish Councils established	1894
Retirement of Mr. Gladstone	1894
Lord Rosebery Prime Minister	1894-1895
Lord Salisbury's Third Ministry	1895-
Chitral Campaign	1895
Ashantee War	1895
Death of Prince Henry of Battenberg	1896
Diamond Jubilee of Queen Victoria	1897





HISTORY OF ENGLAND

INTRODUCTION

THE ROMAN MILITARY OCCUPATION

B.C. 55 TO A.D. 409

ON August 26, B.C. 55, the Romans, under the eye of Julius Cæsar, effected a landing at Pevensey. The natives, who after a sharp fight at the water's edge fled to the forests and marshes, were of the same Celtic blood as those whom the invaders had already conquered in Gaul and Spain, members of the vanguard of the westward migration of the Aryan race. In the south and south-east there was considerable civilisation, owing to the intercourse with Gaul. Further inland the standard of life grew lower; in the north and west the people, little better than savages, lived by the chase.¹

The tribes were sharply divided; among the chief were the Cantii

¹ In distant ages, previous to the coming of the Aryans, but subsequent to the cave dwellers [Dawkins, *Early Man in Britain*], and even an earlier race, the British Islands were occupied by the Iberians, of whom traces remain among the Basques of the Pyrenees. They were driven out northwards and westwards by the Goidels, the first body of Aryan Celts; these were in turn expelled by a second body of Celts, the Brythons, from whom perhaps the name Britain is derived. The languages derived from that of the Goidels are the Gaelic of the Highlands, the Manx of the Isle of Man, and the Erse of Ireland. Welsh, and the old Cornish spoken nearly to the end of the eighteenth century, are Brython. [Gardiner, *Student's History of England*, I. pp. 1-10]. The new comers in each case were of civilisation superior to that of those whom

they ousted. The Brythons of the south-east, like their brethren in Gaul, were no mean enemies. They carried spears and swords of bronze, shields, and some defensive armour, and were specially skilful in the management of their war chariots. Some savage customs they retained, such as tattooing and painting the body.

The greater part of the country was given over to forest, fen, and waste. The only clearings were on the uplands, such as Salisbury Plain, the Hampshire and Kentish Downs, the Cotswolds, the high grounds of Norfolk and Suffolk. Even at the close of the Roman rule the clearings in the valleys were but narrow strips of culture. The importance of the forests and fens in determining the course of the Saxon invasion will be seen later on, pp. 8, 9; Green, *Making of England*, pp. 7-11.

Salisbury

in Kent; the Belgæ westwards to Dorsetshire and Somersetshire; the Damnonii thence to the Land's End. On the left bank of the Thames, west of London, were the Cassii; the Trinobantes occupied Essex; the Iceni spread from the Stour to the Humber, the Brigantes from the Humber to the Tyne; the Silures lay between the Wye and the Dee; the Ordovices among the mountains of Wales; the Coritavi and Cornabii in the Midlands. North of the Tyne wandered the Mæata, and north of them the Caledonii, together known as Picts.

To these various tribes there was but one thing common, their religion. Britain, the remotest home of the Celtic race, was the most venerated dwelling of the mysterious Druids, as Anglesey, the remotest corner of Britain, was their most sacred haunt.

Organised independently of tribal divisions, they were subordinate to a high-priest chosen among themselves. Their worship bears signs of Eastern birth, but doctrines and forms are alike obscure. It seems certain however that idol-worship was unknown, and that nature in various forms was adored. The oak and mistletoe were objects of profound veneration; when the latter was found growing on an oak, a priest severed the plant with a golden knife, and a solemn festival with sacrifices was held. The power of the Druids was immense. They were the priests, physicians, educators, astrologers, magicians, lawgivers, and judges—and as such were free from taxation or military service. They surrounded themselves with awful secrecy; a training of twenty years apart from men was necessary for admission to their body; their mysteries were handed down by word of mouth, and jealously confined to themselves. Sacrifices—in the last resort human sacrifices—were their propitiatory offerings to their gods. Their power formed one check upon the influence of the chiefs, another was found in an aristocratic order. Below the latter were none but serfs. Besides the Druids were two inferior orders, the Ovates, or sacrificing priests, and the Bards, or prophets, who were attached to the various chiefs, roused them to battle, and celebrated their prowess on the harp.²

At the moment of Cæsar's landing, Cassivellaunus ruled over the Cassii and Trinobantes, with overlordship over the Cantii and Belgæ.

Uniting all four, he inflicted upon the Romans losses so serious that Cæsar hastily re-embarked, and returned to Rome after a stay of but three weeks, to prepare for a more serious expedition. In the following spring, B.C. 54, he landed again at Pevensey, drove Cassivellaunus before him, forced the Thames at Coway Stakes, below the mouth of the Wey, and captured

Second landing of the Romans, B.C. 54

² Kitchin, *History of France*, vol. i. pp. 14, 15.

Verulamium, the royal town of the Cassii, near the present St. Albans. Cassivellaunus soon gave in his submission; and Cæsar, dreading the autumnal storms, was obliged to content himself with this barren triumph, and again return to Gaul.

For ninety years no Roman again set foot in Britain. But in A.D. 43 Aulus Plautius landed with a force of German auxiliaries used to savage war. He was opposed by the same combination of tribes as before, led by Caractacus, a great-grandson of Cassivellaunus. In vain they endeavoured to weary him out by desultory warfare. Camulodunum, the modern Colchester, the royal town of the Trinobantes, was captured and garrisoned. Then Plautius and his colleague Vespasian took charge of the left and right banks of the Thames respectively. Vespasian, after thirty battles, reduced the Belgæ and the Isle of Wight. Plautius for five years carried on a doubtful contest with the Cassii and the Silures under Caractacus.

Ostorius Scapula then took up the work. In 50 he overthrew Caractacus at Caer Caradoc, a lofty hill in Shropshire, at the junction of the Tame and Cōlne. But the Silures held out, and so effective was their guerilla warfare that in 53 Scapula died, worn out with toil and vexation, after he had secured the territory in his hands by a line of strong forts on the Severn and Avon. In 61 Suetonius Paulinus broke down the resistance of the North and West, for which the Druids were the rallying-point. He marched to Anglesey, crossed the straits, slew the priests, and burnt down the groves. From this time Druidism ceased to be a power in the land.

From this distant expedition Paulinus was suddenly recalled by terrible news. Under their queen Boadicea, the Iceni had swept into Essex, burnt Camulodunum, and trodden the legion which guarded it underfoot. The flame spread rapidly; London and Verulamium were sacked and burnt; 70,000 persons, Romans, and British who did not join their brethren, perished. For this awful outburst the Romans themselves were responsible. The natives had been driven from their homes, treated with insult and oppression, and crushed by extortion; while the young men had been drafted into the armies of Rome on the continent. Paulinus flew back along the Watling Street to the rescue. For a long time his own destruction seemed imminent. At length he turned to bay in a strong position. Forming his 10,000 men into a solid wedge, he became the assailant. Before the disciplined valour of the

legionaries the British could do nothing; the battle became a butchery, in which 80,000 men were slain. Boadicea, rather than survive her ruin, killed herself with poison.

But the lesson of the revolt was not lost; Paulinus was recalled, and a more equitable administration established. In 70 the conquest of the country was practically completed by the reduction of the northern Brigantes and the western Silures, and in 78 Julius Agricola crushed the Ordovices of Wales and again overran Anglesey. But his great work was in the north. In 80 he reduced the lowlands of Scotland up to the Tay, and in 81 drew a line of forts, to bridle the Picts, between the Forth and the Clyde. In 84 he reached Mons Graupius, probably on the Isla, and there overthrew Galgacus with a loss of 10,000 men; his own loss was but 360. At the same time his fleet made the circuit of North Britain, reaching even to the Orkneys.

But Agricola's forts soon proved ineffectual. In 120, therefore, the Emperor Hadrian built a wall, strengthened on its southern side by a deep ditch and earthen rampart, from the Solway to the Tyne, a distance of seventy miles. This he garrisoned with 80,000 men. Antoninus Pius afterwards raised a new line of forts on the site of those of Agricola, and joined them by an immense rampart of earth, now known as Graham's Dyke. About 210 the old Emperor Severus, after a campaign north of this rampart in which he lost 50,000 men, again strengthened the wall of Agricola.

For seventy years after the victories of Agricola there had been peace. Britain was completely incorporated as a Roman province under military rule. The old tribal divisions disappeared, and the country appears to have been divided into five parts for administrative purposes, the boundaries of which are very uncertain, the whole, with Gaul and Spain, being under a prefect with absolute power. Progress was rapid; Wales, Cornwall, and Devon, and the country north of the Tyne, were little affected; but elsewhere the people, though only those of the higher class, began to assume the Roman dress and language; houses, baths, temples, were built in Roman fashion. The valleys were partially cleared of forest; the tin mines of Cornwall, the lead mines of Somersetshire and Northumberland, the iron mines of Sussex and the Forest of Dean, were busily worked; agriculture so flourished that Britain became the granary of Europe; her builders and artificers were sought for abroad. Roads were made in every direction, and towns sprung up along them.³

³ The tracing of the Roman roads has been a matter of controversy. But it is certain, to give them their later names, that the great Watling

The conquest completed by Agricola, A.D. 78-84. His line of forts

Wall of Hadrian, A.D. 120

Of Lollius Urbicus (or Antonine), 148

Progress under the Romans

But this development was checked by the appearance of a new enemy, the dreaded sea-pirates, who, known generally as Saxons, sailed in large flat-bottomed galleys from their homes around the mouths of the Ems, Weser, and Elbe. They were a branch of the Teuton race, the second wave of the Aryans. To preserve the south and south-eastern shores from these marauders an officer was appointed, known as the 'Count of the Saxon shore'; he had a squadron to keep the narrow seas to the Land's End, and a line of nine fortresses (from Pevensey to Brancaster on the Wash) with 4,000 men was placed under his command. Besides this officer there were, at the beginning of the fourth century, two others: the 'Duke of Britain,' who commanded north of the Humber, with 15,000 men; and the 'Count of Britain,' who exercised a general supervision of the whole country. But the Romans were fast losing their hold upon the country; disaffection was deep and widespread; the extensive use of mercenaries was weakening their military strength; and their troops were continually being withdrawn to help Rome in her own necessities. Thus in 368 the Picts and the Irish Scots—Celtic settlers, that is, from Ireland, in the south-west of what is now called Scotland—raided through the country even to the right bank of the Thames, while the sea-pirates constantly

Raids of the
Picts and
Scots

Street led from London north by St. Albans, Fenny Stratford, Northampton, and Tamworth to Wroxeter, near Shrewsbury; the *Ermine Street* from London to Lincoln by Colchester and Cambridge; the *Foss Way* from Cornwall to Lincoln, crossing the Watling Street at High Cross, between Coventry and Leicester. There was also the *Icknield Street*, perhaps from Bury St. Edmunds to Salisbury and Southampton; but this is a matter of conjecture. These four are known as the Four Great Roman Ways, though the Icknield Street was probably only a British track, and the Ermine Street was certainly not Roman south of Huntingdon. From London one great road led to Richborough on the coast. Smaller roads stretched from these between all military stations and places of importance.—Guest, *The Four Roman Ways*, *Archæological Journal*, vol. xiv. p. 99.

The towns were of four classes: (1) *Colonia*, granted to the Roman veterans, with the laws, customs, and officers of Rome itself. Of these there

were nine: Richborough, the great port for Gaul, where a beacon always shone to guide ships across the channel, and which guarded at the southern end, as Reculver guarded it at the northern, the waterway to the Thames, between Thanet and the mainland, known as the Wantsum, now dry land; London, the great trading town; Colchester, Bath, Gloucester, Caerleon-on-Usk, Chester, Lincoln, and Chesterfield. (2) *Municipia*, whose inhabitants had the rights of Roman citizens, chose their own magistrates, and made their own laws. Of these there were two, St. Albans and York. (3) Ten towns possessing the *Latin right*, where there was an annual election of magistrates. (4) The great mass of *Stipendiary* towns, governed by Roman officials and paying tribute. All of these were chosen for their military advantages. Those which were in a special sense military stations may be generally known by the occurrence of the word *chester*, *cester*, or *caster* (castra = a camp).—Lingard, *Hist. of Engl.*, vol. i. p. 60; and Wright, *The Celt, the Roman, and the Saxon*.

harassed the coasts. In 369 Theodosius restored the administration; but in 383 Maximus, a successful soldier of British descent, proclaiming himself emperor, led nearly the whole army of occupation to Gaul and Italy. Thus denuded of troops, Britain was an easy prey to her foes. Whenever Rome could spare help they were driven back. But her own peril obliged her to concentrate all her forces in Italy, and the last legionaries were recalled in 409. For a time the natives themselves fought bravely against their fate. The 'Hallelujah' victory over the Piets and Scots in 429, so called from the shout with which at the bidding of the Gaulish bishop Germanus they went to the attack, was their last effort. In the words of their petition to Rome in 446, 'The barbarians drive us to the sea, the sea to the barbarians; we are massacred or must be drowned.'

For this helplessness the Romans were again responsible. Their conquest had been purely a military occupation, and everything had been arranged for military needs alone. The insular position of Britain, the rigour of its climate, prevented the Romans from settling down in it as in Gaul and Spain. The natives had been treated as a subject race, disarmed, excluded from office and military service in the country. Local independence had been crushed, serfdom established. Britain was to Rome what Algiers has been to France, merely a training and recruiting ground. Thus when the Roman administration was gone there was nothing to take its place. It was seen how skin-deep had been the Roman influence, how little it had really touched the mass of the natives. Roman laws, customs, and language, disappeared, and Britain was left once more—but for the mighty engineering works of its conquerors, roads, bridges, towns, lighthouses, drainage works, and fortresses—the Britain of the past, but without even the old tribal organisation—a helpless mass of individuals.*

One great change, though probably very superficial, had come over the land. Christianity had nominally become universal, the source of its introduction being, however, very doubtful. In 303 a desolating persecution is said to have taken place under the Emperors Diocletian and Maximian, and St. Alban at Verulamium is claimed as its earliest martyr. But in 314 and 359 British bishops were present at councils on the Continent; British pilgrims visited Palestine; a monastery was erected at Bangor; schools for the education of the clergy were set up. Britain even had the honour of producing the founder of a famous heresy in Pelagius, who advanced

* Green, *Making of England*, pp. 5, 6.

unorthodox opinions upon divine grace and original sin. The facts, however, that no Christian inscription or ornament has been found of earlier date than the close of the Roman rule, and that Canterbury, London, and St. Albans were the only known Roman churches, show that Christianity had but little hold upon the country.

Principal dates

✚ Landings of Cæsar B.C. 55, 54	Conquest of North and Wall of
✚ Conquest of East and South A.D. 43	Agricola A.D. 81
Defeat of Caractacus and Con-	Wall of Hadrian " 120
quest of South-west " 52	Picts and Scots in Britain " 368
Conquest of the North-west	Recall of the Legionaries " 409
and revolt of Boadicea " 01	'Hallelujah' Victory " 429

BOOK I

SAXON ENGLAND

CHAPTER I

TO THE COMING OF THE NORTHMEN¹

449-828

SECTION 1.—*The Conquest, and introduction of Christianity*

450-600

IN 449 the despairing Britons sought the aid of two of the sea-pirates, Hengest and Horsa, chiefs of the Jutes, a Teutonic tribe from which Jutland takes its name. Landing at Ebbsfleet, a spit of land jutting out from Thanet into the Wantsum, which then formed the waterway from the channel to the Thames estuary,² they helped to drive back the Picts and Scots, and received Thanet for their reward. For five years the Wantsum, jealously guarded, kept them there. Then they forced a passage, won a great battle, in which Horsa was killed, at Aylesford, the lowest ford on the Medway, which formed the second line of the British defence, and a second on the little river Cray. But here they were checked; the British, deposing their chief Vortigern, rallied and drove Hengest back to Thanet until 465. In that year the Jutes once more swarmed across the Wantsum, overthrew the British at Wippedfleet, and by 473 had won all Kent. Here they remained for a century; their further progress to the south was checked by Romney marsh; while the great forest of the Andredsweald, 120 miles long and 80 broad, from the northern corner of which morasses stretched to the Thames, shut them off on the west.

On either side of the Jutes came the Saxons. In 477 one body, the South Saxons, landed near Selsey Bill, and after fourteen years of hard fighting eastwards along the coast, the most Romanised part of Britain, captured the great fortified town of Andérida, close to the modern Pevensey. But they too were stopped by the Andredsweald, which at this point came right to the sea, and were hemmed in to the narrow strip of

¹ For the whole of this chapter read Green, *Making of England*.

² For the Wantsum, and the remark-

able changes in the south-east coast, see Burrows, 'Cinque Ports' in the *Historic Towns* series.

Sussex coast. The East Saxons landed in Essex in the valleys of the Colne and Stour. They captured Colchester, but could do nothing more; for the forest, of which Epping and Hainault forests are the remnants, stopped them on the south and west; while to the north Suffolk and Norfolk were already occupied.

A third Teutonic tribe, the Engles, who inhabited Schleswig and Holstein, had made their way up the Orwell, Yare, Wensum, and Waveney, into the heart of Norfolk and Suffolk. One band settled upon Suffolk, another upon Norfolk. A third forced their way up the Witham to Lindum, the modern Lincoln, and gave their name to the Lindesey (Lindis-waras = dwellers near Lindum). A fourth, landing upon Holderness, north of the Humber, were in fifty years masters of all Yorkshire up to the Pennine chain. This became the kingdom of Deira. A fifth, under Ida, raided along the Tweed and its southern tributaries, and erected the mighty coast fortress of Bamborough. Ida's territory became the kingdom of Bernicia. A sixth mounted the Trent, overran the northern and western Midlands to the watershed of the SVERN and Trent, and formed the kingdom of Mercia, the land of the 'march,' or border.

Meanwhile the West Saxons, under their kings Cerdic and Cynric, had landed at Southampton, whence alone an open way could be found inland through the forest. In 514 they won all the country between the Avon and the Andredswald. But in 520, when striving to pierce the woodland west of the Avon, they were overthrown at Badbury, and for 80 years could attempt nothing more except the capture of the Isle of Wight. In 552, however, they stormed the huge fortress of Sorbiodunum or Old Sarnum, which blocked the road to Salisbury Plain, and Marlborough, which guarded that from Winchester to Cirencester; won a great battle at Barbury Hill, overran the Vale of the White Horse, and before long destroyed Silchester, which commanded the road to London.³ Meanwhile, the Jutes of Kent, led by the youthful Ethelbert, great grandson of Hengest, had edged their way westward between the forest and the Thames. Suddenly they came face to face at Wimbledon with the West Saxons, pressing eastward after the sack of Silchester. Ethelbert was defeated (568) and forced back

³ London was for a long while un- attacked, and the date of its conquest, and its conquerors, are alike unknown. It then stood at the point where the river became an estuary. As the natural port for all traffic from Gaul,

the lowest point for a bridge or ferry, and as the meeting-point of many roads, it was the richest and most populous town. It completely blocked the river, for no movement was possible along the marshes of its banks.

into Kent. Then the conquerors crossed the Thames and mastered the southern Midlands. In 577, after a great victory at Deorham near Bath, they overran the lower Severn valley, thus cutting off the British in Wales from their brethren in Cornwall. To reach Chester, and so cut the British line in a second place, was then their aim. But in this their king Ceawlin failed. A revolt of his own people, following upon a defeat at Faddiley by the British, and a second terrible defeat at Wansborough on the Wiltshire downs by the British and his revolted subjects combined, drove him from his throne in 591, and for two centuries no further advance was made by Wessex.

Thus a line drawn along the Pennine chain to Derbyshire, past the Arden forest to the mouth of the Severn, enclosing the lower Severn valley, and thence to Southampton, marked the limits of the Teuton Conquest of Britain up to 600. All to the west remained British. This conquest was no mere military occupation, like that of Rome. The attack had been made by small parties, the defence was

stubborn, the country difficult; it had therefore been a *gradual* conquest. It was a *destroying* conquest, for the invaders left desolation behind them. British life for the most part disappeared in the mastered lands, those who escaped death fleeing to their brethren in Cornwall or Wales. British laws, customs, and language utterly disappeared. A few words of domestic use, learned probably from the female slaves, the names of natural objects, rivers or hills, the Roman words 'port,' 'chester,' 'street,' and the like, remained to emphasise the general change. Christianity vanished utterly, for the conquest was a *heathen* one.⁴

The falling away of the West Saxon power after Wansborough had given another opportunity to Ethelbert of Kent. So vehement was the pent-up force of his people that by 597 he had gained supremacy over the South and West Saxons, the Mercians, the East Saxons, and the East Engles of Norfolk and Suffolk.

He established a written code of laws, famous for more than a century before any other code followed. This supremacy, however, lasted but a few years. By the death of Ethelbert in 616, Redwald, king of the East Engles, had managed to mass all the tribes of Mid-Britain, except the East Saxons, and had established himself as overlord of all Mercia, the East and South Saxons remaining independent. But meanwhile another great power was formed by the union of Déira and Bernicia, the kingdoms of the Engles north of the Humber, under the name of Northumbria. Under Ethelfrith North-

⁴ Read Freeman's *England*, in 'Encyclopædia Britannica,' and his three lectures in 'Macmillan's Magazine' for 1870.

umbria spread rapidly westward. In 613 he accomplished the design in which Ceawlin had failed. He broke through the British march, fought his way to Chester, after a battle in which 2,000 monks from the monastery at Bangor (p. 6) were slain, and thus cut off the British of Wales from those of the north. Northumbria and Mercia soon came in conflict. Edwine, the heir of the kingly house of Deira, whom Ethelfrith had driven away when he united the kingdoms, fled to Redwald. On the banks of the Idle, in 617, Redwald and Edwine together defeated and slew Ethelfrith, and Edwine was acknowledged King of Northumbria.

The rising of the East Saxons and East Engles against Ethelbert was probably as much a religious as a political revolt. In the changes which had taken place Christianity had a part. The Pope Gregory had heard of Ethelbert, and of his marriage with the Christian Bertha. In 597 the first foreign mission of Rome reached Kent under Augustine, a Roman monk. Ethelbert and his chiefs received baptism, and Canterbury was allotted to Augustine as the seat of his mission. Augustine was anxious to join hands with the church of the British. But the latter refused to admit the supremacy of Rome in Christendom, or to conform to the Roman ecclesiastical practices; and Augustine was thrown back upon the Saxons, whose Christianity thus took the Roman form. The East Saxons accepted the new faith, and Ethelbert compelled Redwald to receive baptism.

SECTION 2.—*The Anglo-Saxon System.*⁵

In the Anglo-Saxon system the family was the base of society. To each family was given a hide of land (40 acres). All the families of one kin, with their land, formed a 'ham' or 'township,'⁶ so-called from the 'tun' or enclosure surrounding the group of dwellings. If defended by a mound, it was called a 'burgh,' or borough. The town or borough was presided over by its 'reeve,' the hundred by its hundred-elder. Several townships formed a 'hundred,' and the later 'shire,' or part 'shorn' off, contained several hundreds. Each shire had an independent organisation. Its chief was called 'ealdorman,' or 'heretoga,' according as he was engaged in peace or war. A system of shires formed a kingdom, whose king claimed descent from the god Woden. The kingship was elective, but the election could be made only within the divinely descended family. His power was greatly limited by the necessity of obtaining the consent of his great council to his acts.

⁵ *Constitutional Essays*, ed. by Wakeman, 1st Essay; Stubbs, *Constitutional History*, ch. v.; and Green, *Making of England*, ch. iv.

⁶ Thus Nottingham=home of the Nottings; Warrington=town of the Warrings.

In each shire he was represented by the 'shire-reeve,' or sheriff. The people were in three classes, the *eorls* and *ceorls*, nobles and simple Eorls, ceorls, freemen, and *thralls*, or slaves. Every freeman was a full thralls citizen, with a voice in the assemblies, and an independent share of the land. The thrall had no rights; he was as much his lord's creature as his ox. Between ceorl and thrall grew up an intermediate class, the *læt*, or serf (afterwards the *villain*), who tilled land not his own, which he could not leave for other land, and who paid for it by certain dues, especially by labour on the lord's special land. But he was secure in his tenancy, and his lord owed him aid and protection.

Soon a new nobility arose. Each chief collected a band of followers attached directly to his person. They became his *men*; he was their lord (hlaford = loaf-giver), who fed, lodged, and rewarded them. These were called 'gesiths,' or 'thegns,' i.e., comrades, or servants. The thegns became continually of more importance, and the eorls, and those ceorls who were not thegns, of less importance. The eorl was soon what we should call a gentleman of old family, the thegn one of the new nobility. The king's thegns became a superior order of their own body. In Alfred's reign any ceorl who acquired five hides of land, or any merchant who had made three voyages beyond sea, became 'thegn-worthy.' Thegns might in their turn become 'eorl-worthy.' There was thus a complete absence of any caste system.

Land was originally common or *folk-land*, of which each freeman had a share assigned to him, with common rights over the unassigned part. Later, the community gave allotments to individuals as their own; thus private property in land arose. By degrees the *king* was regarded as the owner of the folk-land, and with the consent of the witan could grant it away by written documents. This was known as *book-land*. Then he would give to his favourites exemption from ordinary jurisdictions, with special powers over their own land, and later over that of their neighbours; thus arose the 'lord of the manor.' Every freeman was liable to the *trinoda necessitas*, that is, the threefold duty of attendance on the 'fyrd,'⁷ or general levy of the shire, repair of bridges, and maintenance of fortifications.

The township, the hundred, the shire, and the kingdom, had each its assembly or 'gemot,' in which the leading men debated, the general body of freemen giving their 'yea' or 'nay' with clashing of shields and brandishing of spears. Before long the difficulty of securing attendance led to the practice of summoning certain

⁷ To collect the 'fyrd' the men of each township marched in families, with their reeve, and, in Christian times, their parish priest, to the meeting-place of the hundred; thence the united townships marched under the hundred-man to the shire meeting-place, where the ealdorman and bishop took the command.

persons to attend; and this led to the shire-moot becoming a meeting of none but those so summoned. The witenagemot, or assembly of the 'witan' or 'wise' of the whole of a kingdom, was composed of the king and his family, the bishops, ealdorman, and king's thegns. Its counsel and consent was needed in all legislation; it had criminal and judicial power, the right of taxation and of declaring war or peace, and the election of ealdormen, bishops, and, practically, of the king, though this last was supposed to be done by a general assembly of the whole nation. An able king however was fairly absolute, especially when the practice grew of allowing him to pack the witan with his own nominees.

All penalties for injury were fines. Every man had his value according to his rank. An eorl's oath was worth three times that of a ceorl, and twenty times that of a lœt (p. 12), and an injury done to one of high rank was paid for at a higher rate. The tie of kinship ruled everything. An injury was an injury to the whole kin of the wronged man, and the penalty, called in case of murder 'weregild,' or 'the price of a man,' was paid by kin to kin, not by man to man. A man charged with a crime was condemned or absolved by the oath of his kin.

SECTION 8.—*The Struggle between the Kingdoms. Church Organisation. The English own one King. 600-835.*

Northumbria, Mercia, and Wessex now began to contend for supremacy. It fell momentarily to Edwine of Northumbria (626). His immediate kingdom stretched from Edinburgh (Edwine's burgh) to the Humber, and he cleared the west of Yorkshire of the British who had clung to the Forest of Elmet. So able was his rule that 'a woman with her babe might walk scatheless from sea to sea in Edwine's day.' Christianity, soon to be the great consolidating power, had for the moment the opposite effect. In 627 Edwine and his witan declared their conversion. But Penda of Mercia stood by the old faith. In 628 he made himself master of a large part of Wessex, and then, in alliance with the British Cadwallon, overthrew and slew Edwine at Hatfield, near the Don, in 633. Northumbria at once returned to paganism, and to its old division into Deira and Bernicia. Then Penda conquered the East Engles (634); while Cadwallon captured York, but was overthrown by Edwine's successor, Oswald (635), at the 'Heavensfield' near the Roman wall. This was the last great aggressive effort of the British. Oswald, who was an ardent Christian, restored the union of Deira and Bernicia, extended his power over Strath-clyde (Lancashire to the Clyde), and forced the West Saxons to accept

Christianity. But the old pagan Penda fought desperately, and at the battle of the Maserfeld Oswald went down. Once more Northumbria broke up and Wessex threw off its new religion. In 642 Oswy of Bernicia began the struggle again; by 652 he had finally formed Northumbria. In 655, at the river Winwaed, encouraged by heavenly visions, he abode the attack of Penda, who had thrice his number. This battle decided the contest of the religions. Penda fell fighting, with thirty ealdormen. Mercia accepted Christianity, but again rallied, and at Oswy's death in 670 the great threefold division seemed permanently settled.

The reconversion of Northumbria after Hatfield, had been begun by missionaries, not from Rome but from Ireland, where in a tribal and monastic form, utterly unlike the episcopal and centralised system of Rome, flourished a vigorous Celtic church. St. Colomba settled on the barren island of Iona, off the west coast of Scotland. Thither Oswald sent for help, and in 635 Aidan came to Lindisfarne, which became the centre of the missionary work in the north. But the Celtic church of Aidan and the Roman church of Wessex, Kent, and East Anglia, differing as to the tonsure and observance of Easter, hated one another bitterly. While Aidan lived the Roman party made no way. But Oswy recognised that union with Rome meant union with western Christendom; separation from her, ecclesiastical isolation. At the Synod of Whitby in 664 he declared for Rome; the Irish missionaries left the land, and, as Sussex had been converted, and Mercia had thrown off the Celtic church which St. Chad had introduced, all England was one communion.

Church organisation was now possible. From 664 to 673 the primate Theodore was engaged in appointing bishops with fixed sees, enforcing uniformity as to Easter, and, especially, securing union by insisting upon the supreme authority of the Archbishop of Canterbury. At Canterbury itself a great school arose, famous for both religious and secular knowledge, whence scholars went out to become centres of spiritual life in the provinces. Then followed the subdivision of sees, and in the next century *parish* organisation. The township, or group of townships under a great lord, became the parish, and its missionary chaplain the permanent parish priest. He was supported by tithes, or a tenth of the annual produce, by 'plough alms' after Easter, 'church shot' at Martinmas, 'light shot' thrice a year, and 'soul shot' or burial dues. The church grew up intensely national, reverencing Rome, but not slavishly

Oswy of Northumbria. Battle of the Winwaed 655. Downfall of paganism

The Irish missionaries in Northumbria

Synod of Whitby 664

Organisation of the church

bowing down to her. From the earliest time it was the *Church of England*.⁸

Church and state grew up in union. The diocese corresponded with the territorial divisions; bishop and chief sat side by side in the assembly; the prelates were soon Englishmen, not Romans; the churches were nurseries of patriots. A national tie was thus created; the Archbishop of Canterbury came in time to be regarded as the head, not only of the English church, but of the English folk.

Very important, too, was the establishment of monasteries. On wild sea-coasts, in primeval forests and dreary fens, desolate moorlands, deserted Roman towns, along the courses of rivers, they became centres of industrial life. The land was reclaimed and tilled, the woods hewn down. Thither fled all who preferred industry to fighting; labour soon took a dignity hitherto reserved for war. They were the homes of early literature and of all art known to the time.⁹

The influence of Christianity upon the general life was all-pervading. The church, generally erected on the mound of defence, became the centre of village life; the parish priest displaced the town reeve. Heathen customs survived, but were brought into the service of religion; Easter, May Day, Midsummer Day, Michaelmas, Christmas, were all Pagan festivals turned into Christian festivals. Christianity entered the home; it forbade infanticide and the putting away of a wife at will; it denounced blood feuds and revenge, gluttony, drunkenness, and vice; it prohibited Sunday labour, established fasts, took in hand the child from the cradle to the grave, made births, marriages, and burials the occasions for religious rites; it discouraged war. For the mere slave it did much. It forbade the kidnapping and sale of his children. He himself might not be sold out of the land in which he was a slave. The Church demanded penance for his murder by his master or mistress; sometimes he gained the right of purchasing his freedom. On church lands the example was set of freeing the slaves; and nobles on their death-beds were urged to obtain grace by doing the same.

The nation was thus being made one through the Church. Politically it appeared hopelessly divided. In 694 Ine, the great king of the West Saxons, made himself supreme over Essex, London, and all south of Thames. By 710 he had wrested Somerset and Devon from the British. But conquest now did not mean extermination; the laws of Ine acknow-

⁸ Stubbs, *Const. Hist.* ch. viii. p. 245; Freeman, *Encycl. Brit.*

⁹ Green, *Making of England*, ch. vii. p. 361 seq.

ledged the 'Welshman' as a man and citizen, free to hold land; his blood had its price, his oath its value. From 715 to 752 Wessex and Mercia struggled with varying success for the mastery; in the end the threefold division, though with advantage to Wessex, was maintained.

Northumbria had meanwhile been at peace. She had become the home of literature and religion; of Cædmon of Whitby (650) and his successors in poetry; of Cuthbert of Melrose and Lindisfarne (651-676); and of the saintly Bede of Jarrow (704-731), the writer of the great ecclesiastical history of the English people. Politically isolated, she had become also ecclesiastically independent of Canterbury, through the erection of an archbishopric of York with the pope's sanction. Two brothers, Egbert and Edbert (738), were respectively archbishop and king; and while the king extended his power by alliance with the Picts, the archbishop made York a great home of culture, attracting scholars from all parts of Europe by its teachers and splendid library, and sending them back to preach among the Germans conquered by the Franks.

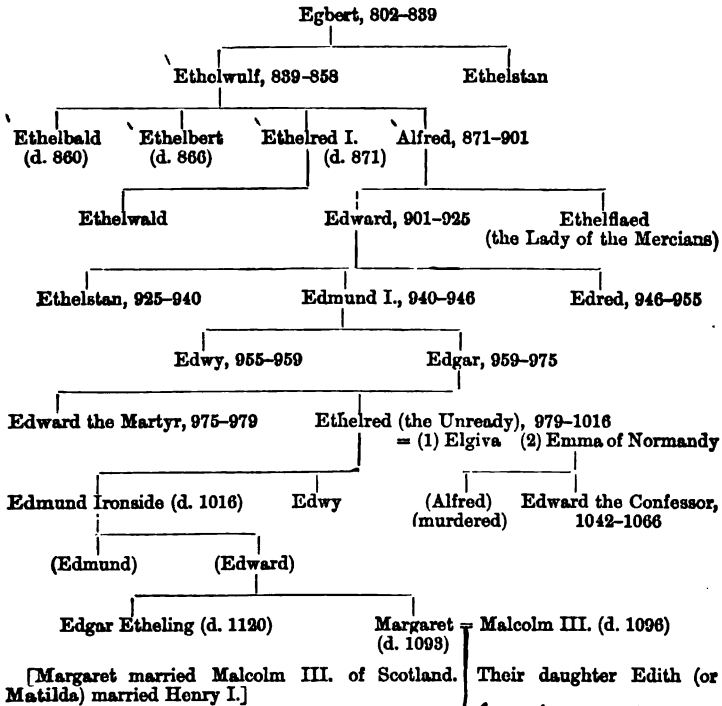
From 758 to 796 a great king, Offa, held the Mercian throne. He wrested Kent, Essex, and London from Wessex, with all north of the Thames. Westwards he conquered the British up to the Wye; Offa's Dyke, as it is still called, marking his border from the Wye to the Dee. Here also Mercians and Welsh lived peacefully together under Offa's code. Thus the land was now in three well-defined parts—a purely Teuton part, a part containing a mixed population, and a purely British part.

In 802, Egbert, a descendant of Cerdic and Ceawlin (pp. 9, 10), became king of Wessex. With him the West Saxons once more took the lead. In 815 he completed the conquest of the British in the south-west by occupying Cornwall. In 826 Kent, Sussex, Essex, and East Anglia, submitted. By 828 he had overrun Mercia, which had been a prey to anarchy after Offa's death. A little later Northumbria peacefully became his tributary. In 835 he crushed a revolt of Cornishmen, aided by some new-comers, at Hengestdun, in Cornwall. Thus, if only for a moment, all England had nominally become one, and owned a single lord. Egbert, the eighth Bretwalda,¹⁰ was called 'King of the English.'

¹⁰ This name means 'Lord of the Britons' (see Murray's *Dictionary*). It was given in turn to the kings, who at different times were acknowledged as more or less lords of all England.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE I

EGBERT AND HIS HOUSE



Edith = Henry I
Matilda = Geoffrey of Anjou
Henry II

CHAPTER II

THE NORTHMEN. INVASION AND SETTLEMENT¹

835-955

SECTION 1.—Vikings and Danes. Alfred. Peace of Wedmore

835-878

WHILE Jutes, Saxons, and Angles were thus winning England, another Teutonic race, the Scandinavians, known generally as North-

¹ Green, *Conquest of England*; Freeman, early chapters of *History of Norman Conquest*, and article in *Encycl. Brit.*

men, had been the occupants of Sweden, Denmark, and Norway. Wild, pitiless, with a passionate delight in battle, unfettered by kingship or law, the Vikings sallied from their creeks (vik = a creek) in long narrow vessels, and took their prey in every land. Over-population soon drove them far afield. In the beginning of the ninth century one body, from South Jutland, of which they had taken possession, sailed up the Seine, Loire, and Garonne, raided through the Mediterranean, and founded kingdoms in South Italy and Sicily. Another, from Norway, fastened upon the Shetlands and Iceland. Ireland, whose monasteries were filled with gold-work and jewellery, was their most alluring prey. For thirty years it was plundered; in 832 the Northmen established themselves at Armagh, and put all North Ireland under tribute. On every side England was surrounded by Vikings.

As early as 787 three ships landed their crews near Weymouth, who slew, burnt, or carried off all within reach of a sudden dash. By 794 the coast-line of Northumbria had been ravaged. In 834 one party, from the Seine, sailed across the Channel and seized Sheppey; another, from Ireland, joined the revolted Welsh in Cornwall (p. 16). In 851 an organised invasion took place. A fleet of 350 ships sailed up the Thames. London and Canterbury were sacked. But at Aclea (Ockley) in Surrey, Ethelwulf, the son and successor of Egbert, and his brother Ethelstan, hurled them back. In 855, however, they again wintered at Sheppey.

Ethelwulf had four sons—Ethelbald, Ethelbert, Ethelred, and Alfred, who in turn wore the crown. With Alfred he visited the Emperor Charles the Bald, who was compelled to watch the depredations of his own lands by the Northmen. The common danger bound them together; Ethelwulf married Judith, the daughter of Charles, as his second wife. But by 866 he and his two eldest sons were dead, and Ethelred was king.

A fresh body of Northmen, more terrible even than the Norwegians, now attacked England. These were Danes from North Jutland and the Baltic Isles, the Dubhgail, or 'dark strangers,' as they were called, in distinction from the Finngail, or 'white strangers,' who were in Ireland. Their daring and rapidity in attack were equalled only by their appalling cruelty.² They landed

² 'The Vikings were superior to the forces brought against them, alike in tactics, in armaments, in training, and in mobility. Personally, the Dane was the member of an old war-band contending with a farmer fresh from the plough, a veteran soldier pitted against a raw militiaman. As a professional warrior, he had provided himself with an equipment which only the chiefs among the English army could rival, the mail "byrnie," and the steel

suddenly, seized all the horses in the neighbourhood, mounted, and sped like a fire through the land; and, when forced to retreat, they fought as well behind earthworks as in the field.

In 856 these Danes drove out the Finngail from Ireland. In 866 they overran Fifeshire, and in 867 southern Northumbria, whose civilisation vanished before them so utterly that for ages it was the rudest part of Britain. Beaten off in Mercia, they turned aside to the Fen country, and in 869 Peterborough, Ely, and Crowland were in ruins. They defeated Edmund, king of East Anglia, and shot him to death in their camp. Mercia consented to pay tribute.

Then, under Guthrum, they made for Wessex. Sailing up the Thames, they forced their way through Berkshire to Ashdown, 871, and entrenched themselves on the heights overlooking the Vale of the White Horse. Here they were met by Ethelred and the young Alfred. Time after time Alfred led an unavailing rush up the heights. At length Ethelred, who had kept his force in hand, made his effort: the Danes were routed with great loss, and retreated to their camp at Reading. But in the same year Ethelred died fighting, and Alfred, at the age of 22, became king of Wessex. For a time he knew nothing but defeat, and was forced to buy a truce, which set the Danes free for the complete conquest of Mercia.

In 876 Guthrum, joined by comrades from Ireland and Gaul, landed at Wareham and seized Exeter. But in 877 Alfred drove them thence to Gloucester, where Guthrum was joined by a fresh fleet, which sailed up the Severn. So hardly was Alfred pressed that he fell back to Athelney, a small patch of ground near Taunton, about three acres in extent, standing a few feet above the impenetrable fens which then surrounded it for miles. Here he lay for three months. In May 878 he secretly mustered the whole of the West Saxon strength behind the Selwood Forest, threw himself upon the Danes at Ethandun (Edington, near Westbury), routed them utterly, and forced Guthrum to surrender in his entrenchments. By the peace of Wedmore Guthrum swore to become a Christian; and all south of the Thames and west of Watling Street was left to Alfred. The country held by the Danes was called the Danelaw, or land where the law of the Danes was observed. This repulse coincided with a turn in the

cap. The "fyrd," on the other hand, came out against him destitute of armour, and bearing a motley array of weapons, wherein the spear and sword

were mixed with the club and stone-axe.' Oman, *Art of War in the Middle Ages*.

tide of the general Scandinavian invasion. The Vikings made no further progress on the Continent.

SECTION 2.—*Alfred.*³ 878-901

Alfred set to work without delay to restore his wasted realm. A standing army was his first care. The old system of the 'fyrd' (p. 12, note) was unsuited to extensive kingdoms or circumstances requiring rapid concentration. The period of compulsory service moreover was but two months, and an army likely to melt away in two months could never contend successfully with invaders who were always under arms. He had the basis of a standing army ready to his hand. During the struggles of the past centuries great numbers of the ceorls, for the sake of safety, had 'commended' themselves to thegns, who gave them protection in return for fidelity. The number of thegns also had continually increased; and Alfred by the system of five-hide thegnhood (p. 12) still further swelled a class bound to personal service. The rest of the fighting men he divided into two parts, of which one only was in the field at a time, while the other carried on their ordinary occupations and garrisoned the forts. He also created a navy of larger ships than those of the Danes, which met the enemy with great success. Under his son the English fleet numbered 100 ships.

In times of national danger the power of the king, if in able hands, always increases. Alfred used it nobly. Justice became a real thing, and the king its source. The courts became the king's courts; Alfred was the final appeal, and he delegated his power to judges whom he appointed. To judicial work he gave the best of his time and strength — 'for the poor had no helper, or few, save the king himself.' The three extant codes of laws, those of Ethelbert of Kent, the National code of laws of Wessex, and Offa of Mercia (pp. 10, 16), were consolidated into one national code, showing that all legal distinction of Saxon and British had passed away.

The successful resistance made to the Vikings on the Continent drove them once more to England. In 884 they entered the Thames, and attacked Rochester. Alfred flew to its relief, and forced his old antagonist Guthrum, king of East Anglia, who had broken the truce by welcoming his brethren, to give up London and its neighbourhood.

He then resumed the work of restoration. Except in Mercia west of Watling Street, art, learning, and religion had been swept away in one common ruin. Thither he sent for priests to become his prelates, and summoned others from the Continent to preside over his new foundations. An indefatigable scholar,

³ Article, 'Alfred,' in *Dict. National Biography*.

he was before long able to translate Latin with ease. Hitherto there had been English poetry, but no English prose. For the pupils at the court school translations were now made from all the great prose works of Christianity. Alfred led the way with Bede's 'Ecclesiastical History,' the 'Pastoral Book of Pope Gregory,' and others, enriching them with notes and reflections. The 'Latin Chronicle,' compiled from the Bishops' Roll of Winchester, was done by him into English with an introduction, and completed by a continuous narrative, the whole forming the famous 'English Chronicle.'

But in 893 the Danes made a fresh descent, and established themselves in the Andredsweald. Another force sailed up the Thames and fastened upon northern Kent. In 894 they crossed into Essex. Here they were successfully attacked on the Colne by Alfred's son Edward; while the king in person held Exeter against a Danish fleet and the Welsh who had risen to join them. The Danes of the Danelaw then crossed the Cotswolds into the Severn valley. But Edward, and Ethelred the ealdorman of Mercia, who had married Alfred's daughter Ethelflaed, collected every available man, besieged the Danes for several weeks in their entrenchments at Buttington, the site of which is unknown, forced them at length to battle, and drove them back in confusion to Essex. Another Danish force, which made a try for Chester, was equally discomfited. In 895 Alfred came himself to London, and by blocking the mouth of the Lea surprised and captured the whole Danish fleet. Utterly baffled, the enemy withdrew to the Danelaw, and the war came to an end.

Alfred was now fifty years old, but his energy was ceaseless. Every hour had its definite occupation, and court and government were regulated with equal precision. Travellers and scholars were welcomed from abroad. When his own people refused to embrace a monastic life he filled his abbeys with slaves from Gaul and with children, who were educated for monks. His revenue was carefully collected and largely increased. One-sixth was given to the military, naval, and civil services; another sixth to public works; one eighth to poor relief, another to education; the remainder supported his religious houses at Athelney, Winchester, Shaftesbury, and others among the Welsh and Irish, and even in Brittany and Gaul.

Like his father, he sought to strengthen himself by foreign alliances. His daughter Elfthrith was married to Baldwin the Second, Count of Flanders, and an ally thus secured on the Scheldt, whence the Danes often issued on their raids. This marriage was the beginning of the permanent connection between England and

the Low Countries. With the Papacy he held close relations. At home he brought North Wales under his power (897), established a good understanding with Bernicia, which the Danes had left untouched, and with the Scots.⁴

Alfred died on October 28, 901, just a hundred years from the
 Death of accession of Egbert. As he said himself, he had 'striven
 Alfred to live worthily.' He had lived worthily, because he had
 lived only for the good of his people.

SECTION 3.—*The Grandchildren of Alfred.* 901-955

In his son Edward, Alfred had a worthy successor. For ten years he reigned almost in peace, but keeping one object steadily in view.

Edward, the Chester was made a strong place of arms and a harbour for
 Uncon- a fleet, to cut off the Danes of the Danelaw from the Welsh
 quered' and from Ireland. Two attacks from the Danelaw having
 been repelled, Edward in 912 mastered the valley of the Thames from Oxford to London. Then he pressed steadily northward, securing himself against attack from the Danes of Essex by fortifying the country on his eastern flank; while his valiant sister Ethel-
 His sister, Ethel- Ethel- flæd, the 'Lady of the Mercians,' now a widow, fortified
 flæd, the 'Lady of the Mercians,' now a widow, fortified
 the Watling Street at Tamworth, Stafford, and other strategic points, blocked the Fosse-way by a great fortress at Warwick, and secured her western flank at Bridgenorth and Scargate. Then they moved simultaneously upon the Danes. Ethel- flæd captured Derby, Leicester, and York (919), and there the triumphs of the great daughter of Alfred were ended by death. Edward conquered East Anglia, and took Northampton, Stamford, Nottingham, and Lincoln. This ended the war for the time.

In 924 Edward prepared to invade the northern Danelaw. Scots, British from Strathclyde, Bernicians, and Danes, formed a
 Edward, great league to resist him. But their hearts failed them at
 king of all the moment of the fight, and all owned him as 'father and
 Britain lord.'⁵ Then, 'unconquered,' Edward died in 925, king over all Britain from Forth and Clyde to the English Channel.

Ethelstan his son went on with the work of consolidation. He drove back the revolted British of Wales and Cornwall behind the Wye and the Tamar. His chief work was the organisation of the shires. Each shire was bound to provide a fixed contingent to the army, a certain revenue, and, later, ships, or equivalent ship-money. The king's shire-reeve (p. 12) gradually superseded

⁴ The name 'Pict' now disappears from history. ⁵ That is, 'commenced' themselves (p. 20).

the ealdorman, and became the important person; the shiremoot became the sheriff's court; centralised government grew familiar.

Shire organisation Frith-gilds, or peace-clubs, weakened the idea of kinship as the base of society. These were voluntary associations each member of which swore faith to the rest, and in which all aided each to secure justice. They afterwards became an important **Frith-gilds** feature of society. In England they were wisely encouraged; abroad they were rigorously suppressed as possible centres of opposition to the crown.⁶

In 937 Ethelstan was confronted by a repetition of the league which had fallen to pieces before his father. With his brother **Brunan-burgh** Edmund he marched north and met the allies at **Brunan-burgh**. The battle raged with fearful slaughter from sunrise to sunset. The site is unknown, but the memory of Ethelstan's victory lives in the triumphant 'Song of Brunanburgh.' Ethelstan was however obliged to leave Northumbria in comparative independence.

His policy in Northumbria As his under-king he selected Eric 'Bloodaxe,' a noted Norwegian adventurer, who was now pillaging the coast. His idea was to balance the Danes by an infusion of Norwegian power, and Eric pledged himself to guard Northumbria against further attack.

A new Danish kingdom, a Danelaw across the sea, which offered encouragement and help to that in England, had meanwhile been formed in Normandy, under Rolf, or Rollo, who was master of the Seine up to Rouen. The connection between them was seen when Ethelstan's brother Edmund, a youth of eighteen, succeeded him. A

The Norman Danelaw great increase of the Norman Danelaw under William 'Longsword,' Rolf's son, was at once followed (941) by the failure of the new policy in Northumbria, and by a revolt so serious, that after two years' hard fighting Edmund was left master of no more than Alfred's kingdom, with a shadowy overlordship of the rest. But in 943 William Longsword was murdered; anarchy and disaster fell upon his kingdom, and corresponding disheartenment upon the Danes in England. In a short space Edmund had the

Strathelyde held by the King of Scots on military tenure Danelaw again well in hand. He then overran Strathelyde, including the Lake district, with its numerous settlements of Northmen,⁷ and gave it to the Scottish king Malcolm I., on condition that he should be his 'fellow-worker by sea and land.'⁸ At this moment of success his career was cut short by murder.

⁶ Brentano, *Guilds and Trade Unions*.

⁷ Wherever the endings 'thorpe,' 'thwaite,' or 'by' occur, they show

Scandinavian settlement; and the first two are thickly scattered over the Lake district.

⁸ I.e., as a *territorial fief*, to be held

The crown passed to Edred, the last grandchild of Alfred. He was elected by a witanagemot at which for the first time were present the leaders, not only of the English, but of Danes and Welsh as well, and he was crowned by both archbishops. His chief adviser was Dunstan, Abbot of Glastonbury, the friend and counsellor of ~~Edward~~. In his second year the unquiet Northmen rose in revolt, led by Wulfstan, the Archbishop of York. But Edred, though suffering from mortal disease, marched upon them, ravaged the country, enforced submission, and carried off Wulfstan to his court. He died in 955, with the high-sounding title of 'Cæsar of the whole of Britain.'

Edred
elected by all
three peoples

CHAPTER III

THE DANISH AND NORMAN CONQUEST

955-1066

SECTION 1.—*Disintegration. The Ealdormanries and Dunstan.*¹

955-988

THE triumph of Alfred and his house gave to England more than thirty years of repose. English, Danes, and British acknowledged themselves one nation with one king, however loose might be the tie. But with this apparent incorporation there had been going on a system of disintegration, the effects of which were not seen until a weak king came to the throne, but which was the leading cause of the disasters soon to follow.

Up to the coming of the Northmen the shires had been governed by ealdormen (p. 12), the chiefs, and successors of the chiefs, whose bands had won them. The Danish storm had swept them away, and they never reappeared in the same form. But Alfred was forced to delegate West Mercia to Ethelred (p. 21), and though Edward took back Mercia into direct dependence upon the crown, the systematic creation of ealdormanries of great extent was introduced by Ethelstan. Besides Northumbria, both East Anglia and Essex were placed under ealdormen by him. These were not hereditary chiefs; they were mere nominees, of royal blood, or nearly allied to it. It was supposed that as such they would support the king's authority. But the extent of their dominion soon awakened

Creation of
new ealdor-
manries

by military tenure; the first case of the kind, a different thing from mere 'commendation.'—Freeman, *The Relations between the Crowns of England and Scotland*. 'Essays,' first series, iii. p. 59, seq.
¹ Green, *Conquest*, ch. vii. Article, 'Dunstan' in *Dict. Nat. Biog.*

an ambition to rival the power of the crown; and though they never could render it a nullity, so strong had the kingship grown during the past wars, their insubordination and rivalries were enough to paralyse the government in time of need. It was the struggle of these great officers with the crown which is the key to the history of England for the next one hundred years.

The first act of Edwy, Edmund's son, was to separate Mercia and Wessex, and to create a fresh ealdormany of the former. The result was soon seen. The new ealdorman of Mercia, supported by the country north of the Thames, declared for Edwy's younger brother, Edgar; and an arrangement was made between the witan of Mercia and Wessex, by which that river was to divide the realms of the two brothers. But Edwy died in 959, and Edgar became sole ruler. He also was forced on in the fatal path of disintegration. Wessex itself was split up into western, central, and eastern; the last, as including the primate's see, alone remained under the direct rule of the king.

Edgar, the 'Peaceful,' follows policy of disintegration

Edgar at once recalled Dunstan, who had been forced to flee during the troubles, and made him primate. Dunstan was the first of our great ecclesiastical statesmen, and was always engaged with the work of government; but he was especially a reformer of the church. In every way he strove to raise the dignity and authority of the clergy. Vowed to a higher life, they were to scorn mere worldly pleasures. They were to regard themselves as a separate order. Celibacy was therefore encouraged, though not insisted upon. All clerical disputes were to be brought before a bishop, not before a lay court; the clergy were to pay the greatest attention to ceremonial and the use of vestments. They were to bring the daily life of the people as far as possible under their inspection; they were especially to insist upon the sanctity of marriage, a tie loosely kept, and upon its celebration with the rites of the church. Dunstan applied himself also to the revival of letters. The compilation of the national history, abandoned since Edward's day, was resumed; and the 'Worcester Chronicle' is the record of England up to the reign of Canute. Between Edgar and Dunstan there was complete co-operation. Their joint reign was marked by a fresh code of laws, by vigorous justice, and by an unbroken repose, which earned for Edgar the title of 'the Peaceful.' Commerce with foreign countries was encouraged; splendid churches were built. The Danes became more and more Englishmen; many of them rose to high office.

Dunstan reforms the church

But there were serious elements of weakness. The church was sharply divided between the monastic, or *regular* clergy, so called

because they lived by the rule of their order (*regulum*), and the parish clergy, or *secular* priests, who shared in the everyday life of the people (*seculum*). Monasticism, never heartily in favour in England, had almost disappeared during the wars. Edgar, supported by the ealdormen of East Anglia and Essex, and with the concurrence of Dunstan, wished to restore it; and to a great extent he succeeded in Wessex and East Anglia. The ealdorman of Mercia headed the anti-monastic party. The dispute grew fierce when Edgar died (975), leaving two young sons, Edward and Ethelred, eleven and seven years old. The Mercian anti-monastic party supported the former; the East Anglian party the latter. Dunstan sacrificed his monastic sympathies for the sake of order, and Edward ('the Martyr') was crowned by both archbishops. His short and stormy reign of four years was ended by his murder at the hands of Ethelred's party in 979. Ethelred succeeded at eleven years of age; the eastern ealdormen straightway drove their Mercian rival into exile. From Dunstan's opposition they were freed by his death in 988.

Dunstan had brought the crown and the church into close alliance. The bishops, whose sees were as a rule coterminous with the governments of the ealdormen (p. 15), had grown very powerful, and had become the instruments whereby the crown had a check upon the latter. Lands and gifts were abundantly bestowed upon them by the king; while Dunstan surrendered to the crown the right always held by the witan of nomination and deposition. Thus a political episcopate sprung up, devoted to the crown. Meanwhile the principle that 'every man must have a lord' by commendation (p. 20) had become established. The ceorls had practically disappeared, either rising to thegnhood or sinking to villenage (p. 12); villages were no longer groups of free holdings, but the property of great lords. For justice they looked to the lord's court, which had taken the place of the hundred-moot, as the sheriff's court had taken that of the shire-moot.

SECTION 2.—*The Danish Conquest. 988-1016*

Weakened by the distractions in church and state—weak, above all, in her king—England had now to face the second great Danish invasion, the story of which constitutes the interest of the reign of Ethelred II., the 'Unredig,' or 'Counsel-lacking.' For nearly 30 years, with but short respites, the wretched country, in spite of many instances of gallant defence, was an easy prey to her ferocious foes, led by Sweyn, king of Denmark.

Regular and secular priests.
Ethelred II. 'the Unredig.'
Death of Dunstan
Political episcopate
Disappearance of the ceorls
Second Danish invasion

Those respites were secured, not by the sword, but by ever increasing payments, the money for which was raised by a heavy land-tax, known as 'Danegeld,' henceforward a chief source of revenue, and by taking bodies of the invaders themselves into English pay. Thus in 1001 Ethelred paid 24,000*l.*; in 1005, 30,000*l.*; in 1006, 36,000*l.*; in 1011, 48,000*l.* The Danes of course came back for more money, and the mercenaries on each occasion deserted to their kinsfolk. At length Ethelred was driven to a great crime. Large numbers of Danes had settled quietly down as farmers by the side of the English. In 1002, yielding to a panic of his people and to his own base temper, he secretly gave orders that on November 13th, St. Brice's Day, every Dane within reach should be massacred. This of course did not apply to the Danelaw, where such a deed was impossible. The doom was ruthlessly carried out: men, women, and children were slaughtered without mercy. But vengeance came hard upon the deed. Among the dead was the sister of Sweyn. In 1003 he stormed Exeter and wasted Wiltshire; in 1004 it was the turn of East Anglia. Until 1007 the land was a prey to desolation. Then came a respite of two years. A great effort was made, and in 1009 Ethelred was at the head of a splendid fleet and army. But treason and the quarrels of the ealdormen paralysed action. Thurkill, one of Sweyn's lieutenants, carried fire and sword up the Thames to Oxford, northwards to the Wash, and south to the Channel. He was bought off by large sums and larger promises. When the promises were unfulfilled, he sacked Canterbury and carried off the primate Elfheah, who died under the drunken wrath of his men. In 1013 Sweyn himself entered the Humber with a superb fleet. The ealdormen of Northumbria and East Anglia deserted to him, and all resistance broke down. London was the last place to surrender. Ethelred with his second wife and their sons fled to Normandy, and Sweyn was acknowledged king. But in 1014 he suddenly died; the national spirit re-awoke, and Ethelred was recalled on promise to rule justly. Canute, Sweyn's son, who had been chosen king by the Danes, was driven off; but returned in 1015 in overwhelming force. Dissensions broke out between Edmund, a son of Ethelred by his first wife, and Edric, the king's chief counsellor, a traitor at heart. Edmund threw himself into London with his father. There Ethelred died, April 1016. The citizens at once chose Edmund king, while the overawed witans acknowledged Canute. For a few glorious months Edmund Ironside, a true hero, struggled to free his country. He fought seven great battles with success, and drove the

Danes to take refuge at Sheppey. Thence Canute crossed into Essex, and Edmund followed. At Assandun, or Ashingdon, on the Crouch,

took place the last battle of English and Danes. Edric, who had deserted Edmund, rejoined him, only to prove traitor again at the critical moment. It was a crushing defeat—'all the English nobles were slain.' Edmund fell back to the Severn valley. A truce was made at the Isle of Olney by which

he retained the ancient kingdom of Alfred, as settled by the Peace of Wedmore (p. 19), viz., Wessex and Western Mercia. But in November 1016, murdered or worn out by toil, he died; and Canute, then 22 years of age, the age at which Alfred became king of Wessex, was master of all England without a blow.

The Danish Conquest was the direct result of the splitting up of the country into ealdormanries, and of Ethelred's incompetence. Indirectly Ethelred was the cause of a future and greater conquest:

To secure the support of Normandy, he had in 1002 married as his second wife Emma, the sister of its duke, Richard the Good; and henceforward Norman influence entered largely into the fate of England.

SECTION 8.—*The Danish Kings. 1016–1042.*

For a few months Canute showed himself the ruthless conqueror. Edwy, the brother of Edmand Ironside, was murdered; Edmund's

sons were exiled to Hungary; all the English nobles who could be dangerous were got rid of. But then he cast in his lot unreservedly with his new subjects. He married Ethelred's widow, Emma of Normandy. He was crowned in the English

fashion; he renewed Edgar's laws, and placed Englishmen in all important offices, though he sedulously got rid of the ealdormen of royal blood, replacing them by nominees of his own, called earls. Of these earldoms there were but four—Northumbria, Mercia, East Anglia, Wessex. Of the army of conquest he retained but a few thousand

'hus-carles' (house-men), who formed the nucleus of a standing army. His northern realms became subsidiary.

To win the church he did honour to English saints, and to the memory of Edmund the Martyr, Elfheah, and Dunstan. He built a church at Assandun, dedicated to all who had fallen in that great fight. He went on pilgrimage to offer gifts on Edmund's tomb at Glastonbury; he enriched many religious houses. English priests were even sent to fill Danish bishoprics, and English soldiers followed him to fight his own kinsfolk in Denmark.

Among the Englishmen whom he specially attached to himself

was Godwine—of obscure birth, but able, eloquent, and wise. He was the first great lay statesman, as Dunstan was the first great ecclesiastical statesman. He rapidly became Canute's chief servant, was made Earl of Wessex, and in 1020 married Gytha, who was nearly related by blood and by marriage to the king. With the royal chaplains as his secretaries, he governed the kingdom under Canute. These chaplains were promoted to bishoprics, and practically formed the royal council, for the earls were summoned only to the witan, and the primate lost his commanding influence. The political episcopate of Dunstan (p. 25), and its alliance with the crown, thus became still more marked.

For eight years Canute devoted himself to England. In 1025 he went on pilgrimage to Rome, during which he gained from the European princes on his route many privileges for English traders

Godwine's letter to his people

thither. From Rome he sent back the most striking letter ever addressed by a king to his people.²

On his return, loyally supported by England, he put down revolts in Norway and Denmark, and was thenceforward master of the North in peace. He crushed a rising of the Welsh, and in 1031 forced the Scottish king Malcolm II. to swear allegiance on receiving, as an English earldom, the northern portion of Northumbria, the present Lothian. Malcolm removed his seat of government to Edinburgh, and became to all intents English in feeling; while the real Scots, north of Forth, were regarded as savages.³

Malcolm swears allegiance for Lothian

The sole danger to Canute's power lay in his stepsons, Alfred and Edward, the sons of Ethelred and Emma, who lived at the Norman court. In 1028 Duke Robert the Devil, Emma's nephew (p. 28), took up their cause, and sailed with Alfred to invade England.

Death of Canute

But a storm shattered the fleet. Robert, in disappointment, threw away his crown and went on pilgrimage, after making his nobles swear fealty to his bastard son William. He died in 1035; Normandy fell into anarchy, and Canute's danger was over. But almost at the same moment the great king himself, at the early age of

² 'I have vowed to God to lead a right life in all things, to rule justly and piously my realms and subjects, and to administer just judgment to all. If heretofore I have done aught beyond what was just, through headiness or negligence of youth, I am ready, with God's help, to amend it utterly. . . . I have sent this letter before me that all the people of my realm may rejoice in my well-doing; for, as you yourselves

know, never have I spared, nor will I spare, myself and my toil in what is needful and good 'or my people.'

³ Thus Malcolm held from England by three different tenures; all Scotland by mere personal 'commendation,' like that of a ceorl to his lord, fidelity for protection (pp. 20, 22); Strathclyde as a territorial fief, held by military tenure; (p. 28, note) Lothian as an earldom of the kingdom of England.

40, passed away at Shaftesbury. Norway revolted, and the northern empire which he had built up at once dissolved.

Canute had left the throne by will to Hardicanute, his son by Emma; and Godwine and the South of England upheld his claim.

But he was little known in England, and was at the moment absent. Harald, his illegitimate brother, known as 'Hare-foot,' was a familiar figure in the country, and he in turn was favoured by Leofric, earl of Mercia, and the North. To avoid civil war, Godwine referred the matter to the witan, and the old division by the Thames was again resorted to. The quarrel gave hope to the Ethelings,⁴ Alfred and Edward: Alfred landed at Dover, and rode to join his mother Emma at Winchester. He was kidnapped on the road, carried to Harald, blinded, and left to die at Ely. The shame of this betrayal was laid upon Godwine,

Murder of
Ethelred's
son Alfred

in whose jurisdiction the arrest had taken place, and clung to him in spite of his acquittal by the witan. Feeling was so strong that he was obliged in 1037 to surrender Wessex into Harald's hands. But in 1040 Harald died, and Hardicanute was acknowledged by the whole kingdom. His heavy exactions of

money for the pay of his Danish fleet—levied, too, by the house-carles—and the harshness of his government, roused so much discontent that it was soon plain that no other Dane would rule in England without a struggle. Hardicanute therefore invited Edward, the remaining son of Ethelred, to court, and acknowledged him as heir. Had the modern ideas of hereditary right been in force, the children of Edmund Ironside, exiles in Hungary, would have been the rightful heirs, as grandsons of Ethelred by his first marriage. But Edward was received with enthusiasm when Hardicanute fell dead at a drinking bout (1042), and was crowned by the two archbishops at Easter 1043.

Return of the
English line.
Edward 'the
Confessor'

SECTION 4.—*Edward the Confessor.* 1043–1066

Delicate and fragile, Edward was little suited for the work of governing England. His virtues were those of a monk, not of a king; he was often weak and petulant. Moreover, he was but half an Englishman in blood, and utterly foreign in feeling. Since his youth he had lived in Normandy; he spoke Norman, his sympathies and friends were Norman. The Norman conquest virtually began with his accession, and the whole reign was occupied with the struggle of English against Norman influence.

Edward
really a
Norman

At the outset indeed Godwine was supreme in Edward's councils.

⁴ This title was given to princes born on English soil, when their parents had been crowned before their birth.

His eldest sons Sweyn and Harold, and his nephew Beorn, received earldoms which with his own of Wessex placed the whole coast from the Humber to the Severn in his hands; while the marriage of the king to his daughter Edith seemed to secure the succession to his house. There was however a danger to his personal credit in the misconduct of his son Sweyn, who was twice outlawed, the second time for the murder of his cousin Beorn; and the purely English policy which he upheld was confronted by the influence of William the Bastard of Normandy, who, aided by the counsels of the famous priest and scholar Lanfranc, had brought the turbulent Norman baronage under control, and had greatly extended his duchy. William had moreover planned a marriage with Matilda daughter of Baldwin of Flanders, which would have broken up the friendship formed by Alfred with Flanders, and have also given him command of the Channel. But here Godwine outwitted him by securing the Pope's prohibition of the marriage as incestuous, and by marrying his own third son, Tostig, to Judith, Baldwin's sister.

For a long time Edward fretted under Godwine's control. At length he broke through it when the monks of Canterbury, in whose hands lay the choice of their primate, selected Godwine's kinsman Elfric. He forced upon them instead Robert of Jumièges, his principal Norman adviser, already Bishop of London. English feeling had long been rising at the favour shown to Normans and at their contempt for English customs. The placing of a Norman priest at the head of the English church was an insult to the national feeling which made revolt only a question of time. The insolence of the followers of Eustace count of Boulogne, the king's brother-in-law, caused a scuffle at Dover in which many Normans were killed. Edward called upon Godwine to punish the inhabitants. His reply was to demand justice upon Eustace, and, when that was refused, to call Wessex and his sons Sweyn and Harold to arms. But Leofric of Mercia and Siward the Dane, earl of Northumbria, came to the rescue of the king. The dispute was referred to the witan. Godwine was outlawed, and fled to Flanders with three of his sons, while Harold escaped to Ireland. Their earldoms were given to Normans, and Norman influence seemed supreme. William himself paid a visit to Edward, and the promise of the succession which he afterwards put forward was probably made, if at all, at this time.

A reaction soon took place. In September 1052, Godwine and his sons sailed up the Thames. The seaport towns and London

were enthusiastic in his favour, and Edward was forced to yield.

Reaction, and return of Godwine
 Stigand primate
 Death of Godwine

Godwine was purged of all charges, and he and his sons were restored. Robert of Jumièges was outlawed, and fled in haste across the sea, and Stigand, the first priest of Canute's church at Assandun, was made primate. All foreigners were dismissed. Scarcely had the national cause thus triumphed when Godwine died, April 1053.

Harold succeeded to his power, for Sweyn was dead. Both to him and to his younger brother Tostig Edward was personally attached. Upon the death of Siward, Tostig was made Earl of Northumbria; and when Leofric also died, Harold's remaining brothers, Gyrth and Leofwine, were placed in control of the whole course of the Thames. Other deaths gave him command of the Severn valley. From this time he must have thought of the crown for himself, for Edward was childless, and the only representatives of the royal line were the grandchildren of Edmund Ironside, a boy, Edgar, and two girls.

Meanwhile the Welsh had become formidably aggressive. Two campaigns had failed to break them. But in May 1063 Harold ravaged the whole country without mercy. Their king the Welsh Griffith was murdered by his own people. A law was passed that any Welshman found in arms on the English side of Offa's Dyke (p. 16) should lose his right hand. The nature of the fighting is seen in the permission given to Welsh widows to marry Englishmen. Harold himself married the beautiful Edith, the widow of Griffith and granddaughter of Leofric.

Tostig ruled Northumbria badly. In 1065 the Northumbrians drove him out and elected Morkere, Leofric's youngest grandson, to be their earl, and Harold was obliged to confirm the election. Morkere's elder brother Edwine had succeeded to Mercia. Waltheof, Siward's son, was Earl of Northamptonshire and Huntingdonshire.

For a long time Edward had been king only in name. He lived to see the great work of his life, Westminster Abbey, completed. On his death-bed he recommended Harold as his heir; and on January 6, 1066, Harold was elected king by the unanimous consent of nobles and bishops, and crowned, not by Stigand, whose election was held to be uncanonical, but by Eldred, Archbishop of York.

SECTION 5.—*Harold and William of Normandy*

Preparations of Harold

Harold betook himself at once to defence. For the safety of the south he trusted to himself, Gyrth, and Leofwine; for that of the north to Edwine and Morkere.

At Easter he learned that William claimed the throne. That great man was now famous throughout Europe. All revolts within his dominions had been crushed, all attacks from without hurled back, by mingled valour and craft. His physical strength was equalled by his unswerving force of character. In the teeth of the Pope's prohibition he had at length married Matilda of Flanders. In 1064, as far as can be known, had taken place the famous meeting with Harold. Harold had been wrecked on the coast of William's vassal Guy of Ponthieu, and the custom of the time made him Guy's prisoner; but William, as overlord, demanded his release, and carried him to Rouen, where, treated with all honour, but none the less a prisoner, he remained for some months. It was now that he took his fatal oath.

Time, place, and substance of the oath are alike uncertain; but William declared that he swore upon the relics of the Norman saints to secure his succession, to give up the castle of Dover at once, and to erect other castles for Norman garrisons. It is possible that he swore to these things, knowing that none could be performed unless the English people willed it.⁵

William's first step was to send an embassy demanding performance of the oath, that a refusal might give him the vantage ground of a charge of perjury. At Lanfranc's suggestion he determined to give to his enterprise the character of a holy war. The first thing was to gain the support of Rome. He himself, on account of his marriage and other acts of independence, was not in good odour there. But the English church was looked upon with the utmost jealousy by the Pope Alexander II. Her allegiance to Rome had been purely nominal; her bishops were made or deposed without reference to the Pope. At this moment Stigand was primate, while Robert of Jumièges, who had received the papal approval, was an exile from the land. Nay, worse, Stigand had, in the schism which then divided Christendom, acknowledged the anti-pope Benedict. Most of all, the Archdeacon Hildebrand, soon to be the greatest of popes, saw the opportunity for establishing a claim to the future disposal of European crowns; and at his advice, when William promised to hold England of God and St. Peter, Alexander issued a bull excommunicating Harold as a usurper, and declaring William the rightful claimant. With his blessing he sent a ring containing a hair of St. Peter, and a consecrated banner; and William went forth as the avenger of Rome. To Englishmen his claim was absurd; but among other nations hereditary right had superseded election. His kinship

⁵ Freeman, 'William the Conqueror,' in *Twelve English Statesmen* series, ch. v.

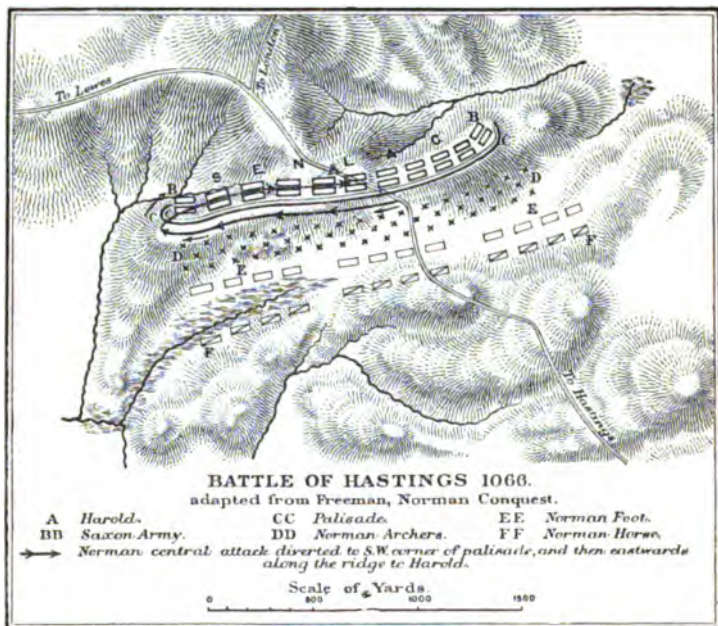
to Edward therefore, with the alleged bequest and oath, gave him the better right in their eyes. Love of plunder drew to him volunteers from all. His own people were reminded of the murder of the Etheling Alfred, a prince of Norman blood, of the expulsion of the Normans from England, of the insult to the Norman saints. By August a fleet of many hundred ships—large open boats with a single mast and sail—lay ready at the mouth of the Dive. His own ship, the 'Mora,' which bore at its prow the golden figure of a boy blowing an ivory horn, was the gift of Matilda. To secure the favour of Heaven he bestowed lavish gifts on the church, and devoted his eldest daughter Cicely as a virgin to her service.

Meanwhile Tostig, who since his expulsion had been longing for revenge, had attacked the English coasts. Beaten off by Edwin and Morkere, he took refuge with Malcolm III. of Scotland, until a fresh opportunity should arrive. It soon came. Simultaneously with William, though independently, Harold Hardrada, the famous king of Norway, had planned the conquest of England.

With half the fighting men of his kingdom he reached the Tyne, where he was joined by Tostig, Malcolm, and large contingents from Ireland and Iceland. Thence the vast flotilla sailed to the Humber, mounted the Ouse, and disembarked its crews at Riccall, about nine miles from York. At Fulford (Sept. 20) they were met by Edwin and Morkere. For a while the fight went against the invaders; but when Hardrada, with the dreaded Norwegian banner, the 'Land-waster,' charged in person, fortune changed, and a terrible slaughter took place. York surrendered (Sept. 24). Thence Hardrada took his men to Stamford Bridge on the Derwent, a tributary of the Ouse, a few miles north-east of the city, and drew them up on the left bank, a small detachment being left on the York side of the river.

For four months Harold had kept together a magnificent fleet and army, watching William. But the hus-carles (p. 28) alone were of the nature of a standing army; the rest were farmers, and as harvest approached he was forced to disband them. At this moment he heard of the blow which had fallen on the north. He himself was lying ill. But straightway he set out along the Ermine Street with his hus-carles. Marching night and day, and gathering forces as he went, he passed through York on September 25, and pressed on without pausing to Stamford Bridge. Coming unawares upon the detached portion of Hardrada's army, he attacked at once, and drove it into the Derwent, which was literally choked with corpses. Then he forced the narrow bridge, where one gallant Northman for a time held the passage with his axe, and charged up the opposite

Battle of
Stamford
Bridge



Longmans, Green & Co., London & New York.

F. S. Willer.

slope to the heights still called Battle Flats. All day long the contest raged, until Hardrada and Tostig, with the great mass of their host, lay dead. Such a march, followed by such a victory, has had few if any parallels in history. Three days later, while Harold was celebrating his victory in York, a messenger from the south rushed into the banqueting hall to tell that William had landed at Pevensey.⁶

For two months William had been—first at the Dive, then at St. Valéry at the mouth of the Somme—impatiently waiting for a wind. At length a solemn procession, in which the shrine of the saint was borne aloft through the army, won favour, and on September 27 the south wind blew. At daybreak next morning the trumpet sounded from the 'Mora'; and in a few hours the whole Norman army stood

on the beach at Pevensey, where Cæsar had landed eleven hundred years before. As William leaped ashore he fell. His ready wit turned the evil omen. 'By the splendour of God,' he cried, 'I have taken seizin of my kingdom; the earth of England is in my two hands!' The next day he marched to Hastings. To force Harold to battle, he gave orders to ravage the country systematically.

Within ten days from the news reaching him Harold passed through London with the house-carles. The treachery of Edwine and Morkere kept back the forces of the north. But he soon had with him his own men of Wessex, the *fyrð* of East Anglia and South Mercia, and the picked men of Kent. He sent word to William that he would fight him on Saturday, October 14; and he chose a position where the Normans must attack at a disadvantage. This was the

hill of Senlac, seven miles from Hastings, over which ran the main road to London. Stretching from east to west, it is joined by an isthmus to the high ground on the north. The southern and south-eastern faces are steep, but at the south-west it slopes more gently. Along the length of the hill Harold formed a three-fold palisade, with an exterior ditch. Behind it, on the crown of the hill where it slopes to the south-east, beneath the 'Dragon' of Wessex and Harold's own banner, the 'Fighting Man,' wrought with gold

and jewels, he stood with Gyrth and Leofwine, at the head of the house-carles and picked men. They were armed with javelins and the terrible two-handed axe, with a shaft five feet long, the blows of which no shield or mail could resist. Such a weapon precluded the use of a shield. At the south-west were the irregular levies, roughly and variously armed. In the whole English force there were no archers.

⁶ For Fulford and Stamford Bridge, see Freeman, *Norman Conquest*, ch. xiv.

On the morning of the 14th William advanced to the attack. His army was in three divisions; he himself, and his two brothers, Odo Bishop of Bayeux and Robert Count of Mortain, were in the centre with the native Normans. Each division was in three ranks: first the archers, then the heavy-armed foot, then the horsemen, armed with long lances and heavy straight swords. The archers were to disorder the foe with their arrows; the footmen were then to pull down the palisades that the horsemen might dash in.

At 9 A.M. the battle began. The archers poured their arrows, the foot rushed up the slope. A long struggle took place. The palisades were in places pulled down, but not a Norman soldier passed the line of axes. They fell back, and the horse charged. They too failed. On the left the assailants turned and fled; and the English rushed over the palisades in pursuit. The Norman centre caught the panic. The cry ran that William had fallen. Tearing off his helmet, he showed himself to his men, and launched them to another attack. With Odo and Robert—the latter a boy of twelve years old—he spurred right for the standards. A javelin from Gyrrh brought down William's horse; the duke sprang to his feet and crushed Gyrrh with a blow of his mace. At the same moment Leofwine too fell dead. William mounted again; once more his horse was killed under him, and again he slew with his own hand the man who had struck the blow.

After six hours the English line was still unbroken. William now thought of stratagem. He had noticed how, when his men fled on the south-west, the defenders had left their post; and he bade them flee again. A second time the English rushed to the pursuit, leaving their position open. The main body of the Normans left the central attack, rode westward, mounted the undefended slope, and charged eastwards, rolling up the English line along the ridge. Foot by foot the defence was beaten down. But still the standards flew and Harold stood unhurt. It was now six in the evening. William bade his archers shoot vertically into the air, especially above the spot where Harold stood. Pierced in the right eye, the king fell at the foot of the standards. Then twenty Norman knights vowed to lower those standards or die; and with the loss of all but four of their number the vow was accomplished. Harold was despatched as he lay, and horribly mutilated; the English nobles fell around their king. That night the victor slept among the dead on the spot where the 'Dragon' and the 'Fighting Man' had waved. To the corpse of Harold, as an excommunicated man, William refused Christian burial; wrapped in a purple robe, the body of the last

The battle of
Senlac

William's
stratagem

Death of
Harold

English king was laid under a heap of stones by the sea-shore. Later he was buried by the high altar of the minster, or college for secular priests, which he had founded at Waltham.⁷

William returned to Hastings, and waited in vain for the submission of the people. As though no stranger were in the land, the witan held their meeting in London, and elected Edgar the grandson of Edmund Ironside king in Harold's place.

William first secured his retreat by taking Dover Castle. Then, marching by Canterbury and passing London, he crossed the river at Wallingford. His plan was to encircle London with a desert tract, cutting it off from help from the north, and thus to secure its submission without a blow. He was entirely successful. At Berkhamsted Edgar himself, who had not yet been consecrated, with Eldred and Stigand, came to his camp and proffered him the crown. Sending a detachment before him to erect a fortress—the future Tower of London—he marched to the city. On Christmas morning, after the people in the ancient fashion had elected him king, with shouts of 'Yea, yea, King William,' he was crowned by Eldred.

Principal Dates of the Pre-Norman Period

	A.D.		A.D.
Landing of Hengest and Horsa . . .	449	Alfred, king of Wessex . . .	872-901
Christianity introduced by Augustine . . .	597	Peace of Wedmore . . .	878
Conquest practically completed, about . . .	600	Edward 'the Unconquered,' king over all Britain . . .	925
Synod of Whitby . . .	664	Edred, elected by English, Welsh, and Danes, dies . . .	955
Attacks of the Northmen begin, about . . .	800	Canute, king of England . . .	1016
Egbert, 'king of the English' . . .	885	Edward the Confessor . . .	1043
		Harold and William the Conqueror	1066

⁷ The battle of Senlac, or Hastings, has a special place in the history of warfare, as being the last in which a phalanx of axe-men was used with anything approaching to success. At Stamford Bridge the two armies had used the same weapons; here it was a contest

of the old and new formations and arms, and the new won. The Saxons had fallen before the superior tactics and military equipment of the Danes; and so they now fell before those of the Normans.—Oman, *Art of War in the Middle Ages*, p. 24.

20
 81

BOOK II
THE ANGLO-NORMAN KINGS, AND THEIR
STRUGGLE AGAINST FEUDALISM
1066-1154

CHAPTER I

THE REIGN OF WILLIAM THE CONQUEROR
1066-1087

SECTION 1.—*The Conquest completed, 1066-1070*

WILLIAM was now lawful king by election; all who resisted him henceforth were rebels. Indeed, from the fiction that he was heir to Edward, it followed that all England had already rebelled against him, and that all English land was thereby forfeited to him. It was a territorial conquest under legal forms. He did not claim as conqueror; but he had to act as conqueror: his followers had to be rewarded, and his power secured.¹ The possessions of all who had fought at Senlac, that is practically the whole of the south and south-east, were at once confiscated. Others, who submitted at once, received their lands again, but by re-grant from the king in every case. Ecclesiastical lands were left untouched; only the monasteries were spoiled in which wealthy Englishmen had stored their money for safety. Northern England, under Edwine and Morkere, was for the present not affected by the conquest.

In March 1067 William returned to Normandy, leaving the conquered part of the country in the hands of Odo of Bayeux and FitzOsbern, created Earls of Kent and Hereford, with Castles built orders to build castles at all important points. Castles were almost unknown in England. But henceforward, where William conquered, he built a castle to secure the conquest. Earls too were appointed wherever attack was likely, as in Kent, Norfolk, Northumberland, Chester, Hereford, Shrewsbury, and Cornwall. In some cases he created *palatine* earldoms or bishoprics, as at Chester and Durham, in which the earl or bishop acted as an independent prince, saving allegiance to the king himself; he nominated the sheriffs, and the landowners held directly from him.² But no earl

¹ Freeman, 'William the Conqueror,' in *Twelve English Statesmen*, ch. viii.

² Stubbs, *Const. Hist.* vol. i. p. 271.

was allowed the command of more than one shire; or, if exceptions were made, William was careful to put such shires apart from one another. His chief danger in Normandy had arisen from Restricted earldoms the power of his great vassals, and he wished to guard against a recurrence of this danger.

William himself had carried out the confiscations with comparatively little hardship. But scarcely was he gone when the people rose English revolt under the intolerable oppression of Odo and FitzOsbern. In Herefordshire they were joined by the Welsh; the Normans were besieged in the castle of Hereford. The Kentish men invited Eustace of Boulogne to help in an attack upon Dover Castle, which they promised to put into his hands. He came, but failed, and barely escaped with the loss of almost all his men. From other parts an appeal was sent to Sweyn of Denmark.

William returned in haste in December. A fresh confiscation and redistribution of lands was his first act. Sweyn's threatened attack was Conquest of the south-west staved off by negotiation. Then he turned to further conquest. The citizens of Exeter, which was to the south-west what London, Norwich, York, and Chester, were to the other parts of England, refused to admit him within the walls or swear fealty, though they offered tribute. But Exeter fell after a siege of eighteen days,³ ended only by the walls being undermined, a device which showed how far the Normans were in advance of the English in military arts; and William showed judicious clemency to the inhabitants. The whole south-west was then divided among his followers; castles were built at Gloucester and Worcester, and William's young brother Robert was made Earl of Cornwall.

From the south-west William turned to the north, where Edwine, Morkere, and Edgar were in arms. At his first move to Warwick Of the north the fickle earls made submission, and Edgar took refuge with Malcolm. York then surrendered, and Malcolm swore fealty. During his absence Harold's sons, with fifty-two ships from Ireland, sailed up the Bristol Channel. But it was now so clear that William's power was the only guarantee for order, that the English inhabitants of Bristol themselves beat them back. They revenged themselves by ravaging all Somersetshire, and then returned to Ireland. In 1069 they made a similar raid. But a Norman force fell upon them and they were utterly routed. They again fled to Dublin, and from this time were no more heard of.

In 1069 the north rose again. The movement began at Durham, and, headed by Edgar, was joined by all Yorkshire. York Castle held

³ Freeman, 'Exeter,' in *Historic Towns*, p. 84.

out until William by forced marches came to its relief. The besiegers were cut to pieces, and a second castle built.

At this moment Sweyn suddenly appeared on the coasts with a fleet of 240 ships. Beaten off at Dover, Ipswich, and Norwich, he entered the Humber in September, and was joined by Danish Invasion Edgar, Waltheof, and all Northumbria. They at once marched upon York. The garrisons of the castles sallied out upon their besiegers to their own destruction, the gigantic Waltheof distinguishing himself by the slaughter he did with his two-handed axe. The castles were levelled to the ground. But then the revolt collapsed. The Danes, gorged with plunder, left the land; the English dispersed to their homes.

For some time William was delayed by further trouble in the west. When he came, it was with an awful purpose. He was determined that never again should revolt be feared from Yorkshire the north. For this he made the whole of Yorkshire and the neighbouring lands a desert. He himself supervised the awful work. All who resisted were slain on the spot; every house was burned, every living animal destroyed. Beverley alone, dedicated to St. John, was spared in this universal wasting. For seventeen years the land lay utterly desolate. In Domesday Book the record is, page after page, 'waste.' The few who survived by living upon whatever unclean food they could find—even, it was said, upon the corpses of the more fortunate dead—sold themselves for slaves. The conqueror, who had spent his night of victory in England amongst the dead and dying of Senlac, spent now his Christmas in the midst of a desolation such as even the Danes had never caused.

All who still had heart to resist took refuge near the mouth of the Tees. But in January 1070 the king was upon them. Some fled, some submitted to mercy. Among the latter was Waltheof. To conciliate those whom terror did not subdue, William reinstated him in his earldoms, and even married him to his niece Judith.

Then the king marched to Durham, ravaging still, and returned amid excessive hardships through the snow-covered Hambleton hills to York. Even then he did not rest. West, south, east, and north were now subdued. Chester, in the north-west, alone Storming of held out. In February he set forth on another march Chester over the Pennine chain. The snow lay deep. His men mutinied; he told them that he did not want the aid of cowards, and that he would go with those who would follow. Chester was at length reached, taken by storm, and secured by a castle. The lands around were so wasted that the surviving population pressed

southwards in a mass, seeking food. With the death of at least 100,000 persons England was now at William's feet. To reconcile the people he renewed the laws of Edward, as Canute had renewed those of Edgar. One serious addition was made to put an end to the frequent assassinations of Norman soldiers by the peasants, that of 'Englishry' 'murder' and 'Englishry,' by which any unknown corpse was held to be that of a Norman until it was proved to be otherwise, and a fine levied on the hundred where it was found.

SECTION 2.—*The Church. Ely. Lowland Scotland. 1070-1071*

During 1070 William remodelled the church. As ecclesiastical offices fell vacant they were filled with Norman prelates. When Eldred of York died he was succeeded by Thomas of Bayeux. Stigand was deposed, and replaced by the famous Lanfranc. But in order that there might be but one ecclesiastical authority, the original aim of Theodore (p. 14), Thomas of York was obliged to swear obedience to Lanfranc. Henceforward William and Lanfranc, like Edgar and Dunstan, were joint rulers of England.

We have seen how purely national the English church was, how slight was its dependence upon Rome. But the reign of the great Pope Hildebrand was one long struggle to subject everywhere the civil to the ecclesiastical power, to separate the church as far as possible from the state, to denationalise it, to bring it into immediate obedience to Rome. Lanfranc seconded his views with great ability. He encouraged monasticism, while he reformed the lives of the monks. A rage spread for founding monasteries which the Pope exempted from the authority of the bishops. Lanfranc established church courts, in which alone ecclesiastical causes were judged. Hitherto bishop and earldorman had sat side by side in judgment—a type of the identity of church and state. But now the convocation of the clergy, which was held when a gemot was summoned, was made to last three days after the latter, to show its independence. Priests were forbidden to marry. Elsewhere Hildebrand had compelled those who were already married to put away their wives. But in England marriage was so general among the parish priests that Lanfranc shrank from too sweeping a change, and merely ordained that no such marriages should take place in future. Civil marriages—marriages, that is, without church ceremonies—were forbidden.

So long as William reigned there was no fear of Rome gaining too much power. He insisted upon the full right of investiture of bishops and abbots, though Hildebrand had forbidden them to take the pastoral

ring and staff from any temporal lord. When Hildebrand demanded the better payment of the annual tribute to Rome, called 'Peter's pence' or 'Rome-fee' (a tax of a penny on every hearth, paid since the beginning of the tenth century), and a fulfilment of his promise to hold England as a fief of Rome, William replied that the money with all arrears should be sent in, but that his predecessors had not paid homage, neither should he. No pope should be acknowledged, no papal bull circulated, no decrees or excommunications of the church courts enforced, without his consent. But the very fact that he had to state this shows how rapidly Rome was gaining ground.

The last stand of the conquered race was on the Isle of Ely, a piece of rising ground then completely surrounded by the Ouse and impassable fens. Thither fled all who still refused to bow to William. 1070. Their leader was Hereward 'the Wake,' the English hero around whom legend has grown so thickly that it is impossible to separate truth from falsehood. The monks of Ely supported him, and he was joined by Morkere, Edwine being slain in the attempt to reach him. The island was approached only by raised causeways, such as may be seen in Holland. The principal of these was at Aldreth on the south-west, where the Ouse was crossed by a bridge. William attacked on both sides: with his ships from Brandon, on the east; at Aldreth with his army. For many months he was foiled. But during 1071 Morkere, with the monks, turned traitor, and the defence broke down. Mutilation was the lot of the prisoners, Morkere was kept in captivity for the rest of William's reign, and Ely was secured by a castle at Aldreth. Hereward, whose after-life is uncertain, escaped with a few followers.

In August, 1072, William again went north to avenge a raid of Malcolm so desolating that 'there was no house so poor in Scotland but had an English bondman.' Marching unopposed through Lothian, he crossed the firth, and reached Abernethy near the Tay. Here Malcolm came to him, swore to be his man, and left his son Robert as hostage. The marriage of Malcolm with Margaret, sister of Edgar, was an important event. Of a strong and beautiful character, and highly accomplished, she gained complete influence over her husband. English exiles gathered around her; and thus, while England was becoming Norman, lowland Scotland became more and more English, the land in which the purest English tongue was spoken.

Submission
of Malcolm
of Scotland

Lothian
becomes
English

SECTION 3.—*Conspiracies. William's crimes and family troubles.*
Domesday Book. 1074-1083

Hitherto William had been undisturbed by disaffection among his own people. But in 1074, while he was employed in the reconquest of his revolted province of Maine, a conspiracy was formed in England. Ralph Wader earl of Norfolk, an Englishman, had asked for the hand of Emma, daughter of Roger FitzOsbern of Hereford. The approval of William as feudal lord was necessary; and, jealous of the union of two such powerful houses, he withheld it. But in his absence the marriage was carried out. At the feast there were present Ralph, Roger, and Waltheof, and an oath was taken to drive William out of England and to divide the kingdom. Waltheof, repenting of the oath, confessed to Lanfranc, who taught him that a sinful promise might be broken; he sailed to Normandy, disclosed the plot to William, and was forgiven. Roger had meanwhile begun revolt; but, unsupported by the natives, who saw no prospect of advantage to themselves, the rising was abortive. Roger was taken prisoner, Ralph escaped beyond sea. Upon his return to confront a second Danish attack, William faithlessly arrested Waltheof. He and Roger were brought to trial. Roger was condemned, and died in imprisonment. Waltheof, at the instigation of the Normans who hungered for his lands, and of his false Norman wife Judith, was also found guilty. His fate was deferred until May 31, 1076, when he was beheaded at Winchester. For this, the only execution of the reign, William might plead the sailing of the Danish fleet—which, in fact, burnt York—the necessity of striking a blow which would hinder the natives from joining the invaders, and Waltheof's connection with their last raid. But it was none the less a crime; he had treacherously grasped at an opportunity of getting rid of the last great Englishman.⁴ From this time he governed the provinces chiefly by sheriffs of lower rank.

The wasting of Yorkshire, the murder of Waltheof, were followed by another gigantic misdeed. The passion of William's life was hunting, and to it he sacrificed every interest. Hitherto any man might slay the wild beasts on his own land. But by the savage forest laws now enacted this right was reserved to the king himself. Rich and poor alike were forced to observe them; mutilation in its most fearful forms was the punishment for any infraction. 'He loved the high deer as if he had been their father.' To indulge his passion near at hand, a tract of land in Hampshire, more

Conspiracy
 against
 William

Execution of
 Waltheof

The forest
 laws. The
 New Forest

⁴ Freeman, *William the Conqueror*, ch. x. p. 163.

than thirty miles in length, was laid waste. The people were driven out, the farms and churches destroyed. But a curse followed the crime. In the New Forest there died, during his lifetime, his second son Richard, and his grandson, the son of Robert; here too in after-time William Rufus met his death.

The next eleven years were years of harsh and oppressive government; William's demands for money were exorbitant, the forest laws cruelly enforced. Numbers of the English youth sought service abroad in the famous Varangian guard maintained by the Roman emperors at Constantinople. But life and property were comparatively safe; violence, especially against women, was rigorously punished; the building of churches and monasteries went on apace. The slave trade of Bristol was prohibited. Amalgamation between the two races was already beginning; in the towns Normans and English were living side by side. In many respects each race kept its own laws; thus, while for Englishmen the ordeal—the appealing to the judgment of God—by hot water or hot iron was retained, the Normans held to the decision by single combat.

During these later years, chiefly spent in Normandy, William's life was embittered by troubles in his family. Resolved to have no rivals there, he had kept his sons in close dependence upon himself, giving them neither lands nor power. Robert, the eldest, who from his short, squat figure had gained the nickname of 'Curthose,' had been promised the succession of both Normandy and Maine. But he asked for an immediate provision, and that William would not give him. In 1077, while attending his father in Normandy, Robert left the court, gathered adherents, and defied him. In 1079 he received effectual help from Philip of France, with the command of the castle of Gerberoi. There father and son met in fight, and William received his first wound at Robert's hand. His second son, William Rufus, was also wounded in his defence. A reconciliation was then patched up through the mediation of the nobles and prelates of Normandy, and Robert returned with William to England.

In 1082 his brother Odo, a cruel, oppressive, and ambitious priest, openly aspired to the papacy, and even prepared, in William's absence, to lead an army across the Alps to secure it by force. William met him at the Isle of Wight and ordered his arrest. When none dared touch him, he himself laid hands upon him. Odo claimed immunity as a priest. 'I arrest,' said William, 'not the priest, but the earl.' Odo was thrown into prison, and remained there till William's death.

Character of
William's
government

Rebellion of
Robert

Odo im-
prisoned

There now fell upon William a still greater trouble. Throughout their lives Matilda had kept his entire love, and their union had been a pattern of domestic purity. The quarrel with Robert had caused the first estrangement. He was her first-born and her favourite son, and in spite of William's express prohibition she had sent him encouragement and help. The reconciliation had brought back the old confidence, when she died, November 3, 1083. From this moment the clouds gathered thick upon him. His second son Richard perished in the New Forest, and one of his daughters died. In the midst of his mourning he was called abroad to quell a fresh revolt in Maine. But success no longer waited upon him; peace was made, but it was upon his enemies' terms.

In 1083 William heard that the Danish king was again preparing to invade England. He hurriedly returned from Normandy, laid waste the whole of the eastern coast, that the invader might find no sustenance, and levied a tax of seventy-two pennies on every hide of land. To this tax, although it was in no way the old Danegeld (p. 27), that name was now given. To assist in its collection, and to ascertain what services were due to the crown, a general and detailed survey of the whole country was made. Commissioners went into every shire with orders to ascertain: (1) who had held the lands under Edward—the reign of Harold being ignored; (2) who held it now; (3) whether its value could be increased. They first ascertained the shire divisions; then from the reeve, parish priest, and six villeins of each township they learned how much land was arable, pasture, or forest; who were the owners; what fisheries and mills there were; and every fact that could assist the immediate object of the survey. It was frequently found that lands had been taken without William's grant, and these were at once resumed by the crown. The commissioners did their work in a single year, and the result was the invaluable picture of England known as Domesday Book.

SECTION 4.—*The Salisbury Law. Feudal System. Death of William. 1086–1087*

At the great gemot of Salisbury which William called in 1086, another measure was passed of incalculable importance. Every freeman, while he was the 'man' of his immediate lord, was henceforth to be the man of the king; in other words, duty to the king was to take precedence of duty to his lord. The meaning of this can only be seen by clearly understanding the great change which the conquest had produced in the conditions under which

The Salisbury decree

society was held together. This change was the introduction of the *feudal system*.

We have seen that in later Saxon times thegnhood had become associated with the ownership of five hides of land; that the custom of 'commendation' (pp. 20, 26) had become general; and that thus the idea had become familiar of land being held on condition of military service, although at first there was no such condition. But in many cases this military service was still unconnected with land tenure; in others there was no direct proportion between the amount of land and the amount of service, and the connection was apparently not indissoluble; in fact, there was no fixed system, though everything tended to strengthen the principle of land held by military tenure. But there was, too, another great principle: that every holder of a hide of land was bound to the *trinoda necessitas* (p. 12), which included attendance on the 'fyrd,' or national army; and so, when all the land became the king's land (p. 88), every holder could be summoned by the king.

The *feudal system*, as it had grown up in Normandy,⁵ was as simple as the Anglo-Saxon undeveloped feudalism was complex. Land tenure, and land tenure only, was its basis; the amount of land regulated the amount of service. The lord, who was lord of another man, was himself the vassal of a still higher lord, or of the king. The villein was lord of no man, the king tenant of no man; between them might be any number of steps. Each vassal owed to his lord an oath of fealty, or fidelity, and homage: fealty, in consideration of the land he held; homage, shown by placing his hands between those of his lord, in sign that he owed him service and claimed protection. The union of fealty and homage made the feudal tie—the tenure of the *feudum*, or fief. Each lord had jurisdiction, civil and criminal, over his own vassals, and was exempt from that of the national courts. Wherever this system flourished there rapidly grew up the idea that a vassal owed duty purely to his superior lord, none at all to the king; so that if a lord rebelled against his own lord, or against the king, his vassals followed him, and were free of all guilt. No such thing existed as the *trinoda necessitas*. Such a system, except under the strongest hand, meant disorder; the central authority became powerless; there was a continual

⁵ 'Feudal government, a graduated system of jurisdiction based on land tenure, in which every lord judged, taxed, and commanded the class next below him, in which abject slavery formed the lowest, and irresponsible tyranny the

highest grade, in which private war, private courage, private prisons, took the place of the imperial institutions of government.' Stubbs, *Const. Hist.* ch. ix. p. 250.

disruptive tendency, growing stronger as important posts became hereditary with the land. It was only by the ruthless exercise of his splendid gifts that William had been able, as Duke of Normandy, to make head against his own vassals; and he had been the great element of weakness to the power of his own overlord, the king of France. This system William had gradually imposed upon England, but not by any legislative act. Wherever a change of ownership occurred the Norman system was tacitly introduced, and was practically universal by the date of the Salisbury law. The landowners of Edward's time were supplanted by some 1,500 great lords, who received their lands directly from the king for military service, tenants *in capite*, or 'in chief.' From each of these, though whether in proportion to his land, or arbitrarily fixed by the king, is doubtful, military service was due. The tenants-in-chief stood in a similar relation to their own vassals. Had he stopped with the introduction of the Norman system, William would have been

no better off than in Normandy. But by the Salisbury law he kept all the advantages, while he checked the disruptive danger, of the feudal system. He retained feudal tenure of land, but not feudal government. Henceforth a vassal was bound to follow the king first, if the king and his own overlord quarrelled. The *fyrd* (pp. 12, 20, 85), as William found it, had not been abolished. While therefore the lord could demand his vassal's service to fulfil his own obligations to the king, the king could call that vassal to the *fyrd*, summon him to his courts, tax him, give him protection. He had a double claim upon him—indirectly through his lord, directly through the *fyrd* and the Salisbury law. He could thus rely on him in struggles with the great feudal barons. This was especially the case since the bulk of the small vassals were native English who suffered from their lords' oppression. For the same reason he maintained the old customs, the hundred-moot and shire-moot; he also confirmed the laws of Edward.⁶ In the Salisbury decree, more than in any other single act, is contained the future history of England.

The year 1087 was long remembered for its calamities. It was a year of murrain among the cattle, of a failure of the crops, of famine and pestilence. Many towns were destroyed by fire, and death was

⁶ 'The English system was strong in the cohesion of its town organism, the association of individuals in the township, in the hundred and in the shire; the Norman system was strong in its higher ranges, in the close rela-

tion to the crown of the tenants-in-chief. On the other hand, the English system was weak in the higher organisation, and the Normans in England had hardly any subordinate organisation at all.'—'England,' in *Encycl. Brit.*

busy among the great nobles. And William himself was now to die. War had again broken out with France, and he was carrying fire and sword through the borderland around Mantes. He was resting at Rouen, when a jest of Philip brought him in wrath to the field. The king, Philip said, in coarse allusion to his extreme corpulence, was lying-in at Rouen, and there would doubtless be a grand display of candles at his churching. William swore a tremendous oath that when he rose again and went to mass he would light 100,000 candles at Philip's expense; and the oath was kept. In August he led the way into France; the harvests were swept off, the people slaughtered, the whole place wasted with fire, as he had once wasted Yorkshire. On August 15 he utterly destroyed Mantes. As he rode through the burning streets, hounding on the men to their work, his horse stumbled, and he was thrown violently against the iron pommel. For several weeks he lay dying at the priory of St. Gervase, outside Rouen. There he thought of all his crimes towards England. The little he could do in restitution was done. His treasure was given to the church and to the poor; the churches in Mantes were to be rebuilt. He released his prisoners—even Odo at the last moment. Then, praying fervently, he died at dawn of Thursday, September 9, 1087. By his will he left Normandy and Maine to Robert, who was absent, and 5,000 pounds of silver to Henry. If Lanfranc approved, William, his second and favourite son, was to reign in England.

Even before his father had breathed his last, William Rufus had hurried to secure England, and Henry to weigh his treasure. The nobles departed in haste to set their castles in order. The servants stripped the bedchamber. For a whole day the body of the great conqueror lay unattended and almost bare upon the floor. At length, amid scenes as tragic and as sad as any which had happened in his life, he was laid to rest in St. Stephen's church at Caen, which he had himself built. The tomb lay undisturbed until the sixteenth century, when the Huguenot rising swept it away. The coffin was broken, and all but one thigh-bone lost; the relic was preserved until the French Revolution of 1793, when it too vanished.

Besides four sons, William had four daughters. One of these, Constance, was married to the Count of Brittany; another, Adela, to Stephen, Count of Blois.

Thus we have seen how William, partly by the accident of Harold's absence at the critical moment, partly by greater military skill and resource, triumphed at Hastings; how he overcame in succession the unconnected risings of the conquered people,

The year
1087

Death of
William

Marriage of
William's
daughters

Summary

treason among his followers, rebellion in his household. We have seen him remodel the church, and supplant the old social system by another, which none but wise and strong hands could prevent from becoming a system of disorder, and the evils of which we shall see under other kings. We have seen his crimes, his embittered age, his repentant and desolate end. Ruthless and despotic as was his sway, he was seldom wantonly cruel, and he strove for order and for justice rough as it might be. His passionate temper was generally under control, and, though his physical nature was robust, his life was temperate and chaste. We shrink from many of his deeds, but we recognise in William one of the great men of history.

CHAPTER II

FEUDALISM (1) UNDER CONTROL, (2) UNCHECKED

SECTION 1.—*William Rufus. 1087-1100*

WILLIAM RUFUS possessed a large share of the Conqueror's military skill, prompt decision, and masterfulness. Of his kingly virtues he had no trace. He was selfish, unjust, untruthful, wantonly cruel; he gloried in irreligion and vice; he robbed the nobles, the people, and the church. In person he was short, corpulent, and ruddy-faced, with flaxen hair. He stammered in his rage; and, like his father, he intimidated by voice and look. Such was the man who swore to Lanfranc to do right both to the people and to the church, and to obey him in all things; Lanfranc then secured his election by the Great Council, and he was crowned September 26.

But by Easter, 1088, the chief barons, headed by his uncles and the Bishop Palatine of Durham, were in revolt. They knew that their power would be greater under the weak rule of his elder brother Robert. Lanfranc and the bishops, with Hugh of Chester and William of Warrenne, alone remained faithful. But the contest was decided by the native English. To them the nobles in their castles were a worse enemy than any king. Upon the promise of William that all should be as in the days of Edward they joined him heart and soul; they beat back a Norman invasion at Pevensey; they took castles from the rebels and defended castles against them; and in several encounters defeated them in the open field. Odo was captured and exiled, with the Bishop of Durham and others. The victory won, Lanfranc called upon

William to carry out his pledge. 'Who is there who can fulfil all his promises?' was the flippant reply.

William had far-reaching designs upon France; but Normandy was his first object. Under Robert it had fallen back into anarchy, and Robert himself was speedily bankrupt. He sold the western part of the duchy to his brother Henry for 8,000*l.*, while Rufus bribed the barons on the right bank of the Seine to accept him as their king. War of course followed between the brothers; but William was the superior general and the most liberal giver; and in 1091, upon his promise to help Robert to regain what he had sold to Henry, as well as Maine, which had revolted, Robert agreed at Caen that if either died the survivor should succeed to all his dominions. Henry was passed over, and for two years forced to wander in great need from refuge to refuge. This was the first time that the right of election was openly ignored; the kingship was treated as something that might be willed away.

William broke his promise, and there was further war between him and Robert in 1094. But in 1095 Pope Urban appealed to the princes of Europe to go on a crusade to recover Jerusalem from the infidels. Robert was fired by the idea. He pledged his duchy to William for 10,000 marks. With Robert went Odo, who died on the expedition, Ralph of Wader, and Edgar. In 1096 William took possession of all Normandy.¹

He then, in accordance with the former treaty with Robert, entered Maine with an overpowering force, and overran the country. In 1099 he lost it by a popular rising, but recovered it the same year, and kept it till his death, when it returned to its allegiance to its former ruler, Hélie de la Flèche.²

William was as active on his own borders as abroad. Edgar had returned from the Crusades and had again sought protection in Scotland; and in 1091 his brother-in-law Malcolm III. raided through the north in support of his claims. William chased him back to the Forth, where Malcolm renewed homage. But the conquest by Rufus of the northern part of Cumberland, which

¹ Thus began the English wars with France. England was dragged into the continual conflict between France and Normandy; English men and money carried on the fight, so that the Normans of Normandy itself were soon known in France as 'English.' Rufus had indeed the future conquest of France always in view, and in 1097 was at active war with Philip. But a truce

in 1098 put an end to attempts at a French conquest until the fourteenth century.

² His daughter married Fulk of Anjou, king of Jerusalem; and their son, Geoffrey Plantagenet, thus came to inherit both Anjou and Maine: an important fact in later history, for the son of Geoffrey was our Henry II,

owed homage to Malcolm, with the important post of Carlisle, caused a fresh quarrel. Malcolm renounced his homage, and for the fifth time invaded England in 1093. But he was met and slain with his eldest son by Robert of Mowbray, the great Earl of Northumberland. Four days later his queen Margaret died. A period of confusion followed, ended by another Edgar, the younger son of Malcolm and Margaret, being placed on the throne by William's help. Thus the pure Scotch line of kings disappeared. Edgar held the throne as William's vassal. Norman families, such as the Baliols, Bruces, and Stewarts, settled in large numbers in Lothian.

The Welsh marches witnessed perpetual war, alternating between gradual encroachments of the Normans and desolating raids of the Welsh. In 1095 William led an army to the flanks of Snowdon; and though his loss in men and horses was enormous, the mountaineers were effectually bridled by a line of strong castles on the border, whose lords were at liberty to hold whatever lands they could tear from the Welsh: a rough but most effectual method of conquest.

The internal government was a scene of continued wrong-doing, for the death of Lanfranc in 1089 had removed the only check.

William's chief counsellor was now Ralph Flambard, a cleric of low origin, whom he appointed justiciar (p. 57) and bishop of Durham. Under his advice the feudal tie was made intolerably burdensome to the tenants-in-chief; and they in turn ground their vassals. The old 'moots' became mere engines of extortion; the hated Danegeld (p. 45) was increased; William summoned the people to the fyrd, and then laid hands upon the money provided by the shires for their maintenance, leaving them to get home as best they could; he enforced the forest laws with fine, mutilation and death; the country was scandalised with the unblushing wickedness of his life. No family, however noble, was secure against his tyranny and lust. At length Mowbray, De Lacy, and Bigod, the three chief barons, rose in revolt, 1095. But the rising was crushed almost before it was begun.

Mowbray was captured and lay in prison until his death thirty years later; De Lacy and Bigod were ruined by fines; the Count of Eu, a kinsman of William, was blinded and mutilated; William of Alderic, his godfather, was hung. There were no more revolts.

The only direct payments to which the tenants-in-chief had been liable hitherto were for the ransom of the king in case he were taken prisoner, for making his eldest son a knight, and for marrying his eldest daughter. Flambard is said to have added three other great burdens,

called 'relief,' 'marriage,' and 'wardship.' *Relief* was a sum paid on the death of a tenant-in-chief by the successor. Fiefs were practically hereditary; but Flambard's theory was that at death they fell back to the crown, which might therefore justly demand a sum of money from the next holder. *Marriage* was the right to compel a tenant-in-chief to marry according to the king's wish, or to pay a fine for marrying at his own will, an extension of the control which the Conqueror had exercised—as in the case of Ralph Wader (p. 48)—over marriages which threatened him with danger. *Wardship*, with enjoyment of the revenues, was assumed by the king when a tenant-in-chief died without leaving a male heir of full age, since a widow, a minor son, or a daughter, could not pay feudal service. These burdens were continually increased and exacted with the utmost rigour. The hardship fell however chiefly upon the sub-vassals, who were in turn mulcted by their lords.

With Flambard's help the church was robbed with impunity. Vacant benefices were either sold or kept vacant that the king might enjoy the revenues. Church preferments were granted for secular service, and church lands, which as a rule were exempt from feudal dues, though not from military service, were given to laymen as hereditary fiefs, and burdened with such dues.

For four years after Lanfranc's death William kept the primacy itself vacant. He then forced it upon Anselm,³ abbot of Bec in Normandy, a man of meek and holy mind. Anselm accepted investiture at William's hands and paid him homage for the possession of the see. But the vicious king and the pious prelate soon quarrelled, and William arrested him on a trumped-up charge of treason. He was told that a liberal gift to the king would restore him to favour. He rejected the proposal, and personally remonstrated with the king upon his evil life; he faced with calm dignity William's rage when, in the continued schism in the Papacy, he acknowledged Urban II. as Pope without his sanction; declared that he would obey the customs of the realm only so far as they were conformable to the law of God, and refused to engage not to appeal to Rome. William in turn forced the bishops to abjure the primate's authority, and forbade him to go to Rome to obtain the papal sanction to his appointment,⁴ shown by the gift of the *pallium* or vestment worn by metropolitan

³ See Church, *Life of Anselm*.

⁴ The demand of the great Pope Gregory VII. (Hildebrand) that all metropolitans should receive this sanction in person, without which Rome would not recognise them, was one of

the most effective of her methods for denationalising the church everywhere; and it was resisted by the Conqueror and his sons.—Hallam *Middle Ages*, ch. vii. part i.

archbishops. In 1097 however William gave way, and Anselm made his journey. But he was not allowed to return; his revenues were confiscated, and he remained in poverty and exile until the king's death. In 1099 excommunication was threatened by the Pope against any prelate who should henceforward receive investiture from, or do homage to, any lay prince.⁵

William's last year was passed in peace. To the end he cherished the dream of a great Continental dominion, and was actually in treaty with the Duke of Aquitaine, the country stretching from the Loire to the Pyrenees, to take his land in pledge as he had taken Normandy from Robert. On August 2, 1100, he perished by an arrow from an unknown hand while hunting in the New Forest. He was buried hastily in the old minster of Winchester. A plain stone was placed above his grave. No bells were tolled, no lamentations made; popular execration alone followed him to the grave.

SECTION 2.—*Henry I., 'the Lion of Justice.'* 1100-1135

By the treaty of Caen, Robert would now have succeeded to both England and Normandy. But he was far away, and Henry happened to be at hand. He rode straight to Winchester, seized the treasure, and secured his own election by such of the nobles as were there. He had the goodwill of the native population, for he was a genuine English 'Etheling' (p. 30, note). He at once endeavoured to propitiate all classes. His great charter promised to the English the observance of Edward's laws with his father's amendments; crimes were to be punished by these laws, not by the mere will of the king; all debts to the crown and murder fines incurred before the coronation were forgiven; the local moots were restored to their old functions; privileges of self-government were granted to the towns, and especially to London, which gained that of electing its own sheriffs. The church was gratified by the filling up of vacant sees, by the promised cessation of all William's attacks, and by the recall of Anselm. The abuses of the feudal burdens were removed, and the demesne lands—those which the tenants-in-chief kept in their own hands, and did not let out to sub-tenants—were freed from Danegeld and all burdens except knight service. The tenants-in-chief were enjoined to grant to their vassals the concessions which they themselves received. To please all, Henry imprisoned Flambard. Then, to the great delight of the English, he married Edith, daughter of Malcolm and Margaret, the great-granddaughter of Edmund Ironside (p. 17). Any child of the union would

⁵ All these pretensions of Rome gave rise to a special jurisprudence called canon law, and to a special race of lawyers, skilled in continually extending its functions.—Hallam, *Middle Ages*, ch. vii. part ii.

unite the Norman and Saxon houses. To satisfy Norman feeling, Edith was compelled to change her name to Matilda or Maud.

Henry was a complete contrast to his predecessor. A clear-headed, practical man of business, he was always master of himself; his licentiousness was kept within the bounds of outward decency; Character of Henry I. and of his reign. he was as cruel, but not so wantonly cruel, as his brother; as keen in the chase, and in the enforcement of the forest laws; self-interest was his only guide, but this fortunately led him to a course favourable to good government. His advanced education gave him many varied interests, of which a menagerie of wild beasts at Woodstock was but one example. His reign was a time of vigorous intellectual progress. Latin and English versifiers were numerous. 'Romance' writing—writing, that is, in the French form of Latin—was widely followed; Geoffrey of Monmouth wrote his 'History of Britain,' with tales of the 'gests' or deeds of Arthur and his knights, of Merlin and his prophecies, drawn from British songs and traditions; others wrote the stories of Charlemagne and Alexander the Great. Architecture flourished, and splendid religious houses arose in the land.

In spite of the charter, Henry's extortion, though more carefully applied, was probably as great as that of Rufus; and at his death he had hoarded an immense sum. But the merits of his rule were great. He, like Rufus, stifled the dangers of feudalism. Whenever possible, he took offices out of the hands of the old baronage and created a fresh body of officials, 'new men' from a lower class. Thus he raised The 'new men': Roger of Salisbury Roger, a priest of low degree, to be justiciar and bishop of Salisbury; and under his minute and laborious attention a permanent administration was established, which brought all matters directly under the king. This increase of the kingly power was a vast gain. Law succeeded to brute force. By his severe impartiality and personal diligence in judicial work Henry earned the title of the 'Lion of Justice.'

The fruit of all this was soon apparent. Robert, on his return from the East, had been accepted by Normandy, and all the great barons Agreement with Robert in England conspired in his favour. But the English and the church again supported the crown; and when Robert landed at Portsmouth, an agreement was come to by which he abandoned his claim to England, and Henry his claim to Normandy; if no male heir was left to either, both countries were to pass to the survivor; and Henry was to pay Robert a pension of 3,000 marks. Then Henry laid his hand heavily, but by legal process, upon the disloyal barons. Some were banished, others deprived of their lands. Robert of Belesme, a monster of cruelty, powerful in England,

Normandy, and Ponthieu, so powerful indeed that he was a serious rival to the crown, was beaten out of his castles at Bridgenorth, Shrewsbury, and Arundel by Henry himself, at the head of 60,000 native English, and imprisoned amid their rejoicings. Then Henry threw over the treaty with Robert, and in 1103, having him in his power, refused to give him his liberty until he had relinquished the pension. In 1104 an excuse was found for invading Normandy, and after two campaigns, ended by the great battle of Tenchebrai, 1106—a battle won by English soldiers against Normans, in which Henry fought on foot after the English fashion—he was master of the country. Robert remained his prisoner for the remaining twenty-eight years of his life. Of the Norman nobles many had lands in England as well; these he confiscated, while leaving them their lands in Normandy itself. Thus he separated from England those most likely to be troublesome to its peace.

War in Normandy however was chronic. Robert had left a son, William Clito (or Etheling), now twelve years old, whose cause was taken up in 1111 by Louis the Fat of France, many Norman nobles, the Count of Flanders, and Fulk of Anjou; while Henry formed a close alliance with Germany which was afterwards strengthened by the marriage of his daughter, henceforth known as the Empress Matilda, to the Emperor. At length the peace of Gisors, 1113, gave him the overlordship of Brittany and Maine; while his son William was betrothed to Matilda, Fulk's daughter. They were married in 1119. A fresh revolt in favour of William Clito, also supported by Louis, was closed by the victory of Noyon, or Brenneville, in 1119; Henry retained Normandy, and acknowledged Louis as overlord.

During the war Henry's queen died. But a still more grievous calamity overtook him: in 1120 his son William was shipwrecked close to the coast of Normandy and drowned with two natural children of the king, sixteen ladies, and 140 knights. The news was brought by a page to Henry, who was waiting his son's arrival at Southampton. He fell into a settled melancholy, from which he never afterwards emerged. But his activity was undiminished. By defeat in the field in 1124 he compelled Fulk to give up the cause of William Clito, which he had again espoused; and William Clito died in 1128. A desultory war with France finally ceased in 1127.

Henry now took a bold step. A second marriage had brought him no children. He had no male heir, and a female succession was unknown in England or Normandy. But he now sent for his daughter

The feudal
barons
depressed

Normandy
taken from
Robert

Peace of
Gisors

Death of
Henry's wife
and son

the Empress Matilda, who had been left a widow, and constrained the Great Council, at which were present his brother-in-law David I. of Scotland, Stephen, count of Boulogne, the son of his sister Adela (p. 62), and his natural son Robert earl of Gloucester, to swear to maintain her succession. She was then re-married in 1128 to Geoffrey Plantagenet of Anjou, the son and successor of Fulk (p. 50, note).

With Scotland, throughout the reign, there was unbroken peace. With Ireland a close connection grew up through the church. In Wales the progress of the English was steady. Henry planted a colony of Flemish clothworkers in Pembrokeshire, where the language still bears tokens of their presence. Norman bishops were placed at Llandaff and St. David's. In 1111 Cardiganshire was conquered by Gilbert of Clare, and in 1114 and 1121 Henry himself marched into the country; on the second occasion he reached Snowdon, and received the submission of the principal chiefs.

The dispute with the Pope on the old question of investiture had meanwhile been settled. Henry, like the Conqueror, was determined to maintain the rights of the crown as he had received them; and the bishops were easily coerced. But Anselm, in obedience to the papal decree of 1099 (p. 53), refused either to do homage for the temporal possession of his see, or to consecrate the bishops whom Henry had invested. Fortunately both king and primate were temperate men, and no open breach occurred. In 1102 Henry consented to a decree enforcing the strict rule of celibacy on all clergymen, parochial or not (p. 41); and to another that the clergy should no longer hold temporal offices. But on the main question he would admit no compromise until 1107, when it was agreed that henceforward prelates should own their allegiance by doing homage to the king for their temporal possessions, while Henry gave up to the Pope the right of investiture with the staff and ring, the signs of spiritual office.⁶ Further he would not go. The election of bishops was made by the chapters, but in the king's courts; synods met, but their decrees had no authority without his sanction; no ecclesiastical censure might be issued without his command; no papal legate might enter England without his licence. When Anselm died in 1109, Henry kept the see vacant for five years, and impounded the revenues. In 1110 he banished Thurstan, archbishop of York, on the ground that he had been consecrated by the Pope, and not by the primate of England; and only

⁶ The investiture dispute had been settled as Henry settled it, by the Concordat of Worms, 1122. going on elsewhere, especially with the Emperor in Germany. It was finally

restored him when, at the peace of Gisors in 1113, the Pope solemnly confirmed the ancient customs of England. The struggle went on, Rome now and then gaining a point, as when the papal legate displaced the archbishop as president of the synod, or losing one, as when Henry sanctioned the neglect of the marriage decrees. Meanwhile there was a great development of church activity. New sees were created at Ely and Carlyle. The Benedictine monks, or followers of St. Benedict, whose monasteries were found in populous places, were followed by the Cistercians, or 'white monks'—so called from Cîteaux in Burgundy, the site of the first abbey—who established themselves in homes remote from man, veritable voices in the wilderness.⁷

In 1133 Henry visited Normandy for the last time. He was seized with fever after hunting, and died December 1, 1135; his last words being a renewed declaration in favour of his daughter. His body was brought to England and buried at Reading.

SECTION 3.—*Administrative System.*⁸

The administrative system which had grown up, especially under Henry I. and Roger of Salisbury, was roughly as follows:—Instead of the witanagemot there was a *Great Council*, to which the principal tenants-in-chief were summoned by the king; the right of summons afterwards became hereditary, as with our House of Lords. It met thrice a year—at Christmas, Easter, and Whitsuntide—when the king 'wore his crown' in public. All important acts were passed by its counsel and consent; it was a court of appeal, and it elected the king. But far more important, except on the greatest occasions, was the *curia regis*, or king's court, which was permanently in session. This was composed of two classes: (1) the five hereditary officers of the household, the constable, chamberlain, steward, marshal, and butler; (2) three officers named by the king and removable at will, the justiciar, chancellor, and treasurer. The justiciar was for a long time the really important person. He was the king's prime minister, his representative when he was abroad. So long as there was danger from feudalism the kings were careful to place this office in the hands of humble churchmen, such as Flambard or Roger of Salisbury. The ruin of royal authority under Stephen is shown by the disappearance of the office for a time. When Henry II. had finally crushed feudalism, great nobles became justiciars, and were checks upon the royal power rather than its instruments. By the time of Edward I. they are

⁷ Fountains and Tintern were Cistercian abbeys.

⁸ *Constitutional Essays*, edited by Wakeman; third essay.

concerned, as 'lord chief justices,' entirely with the law. The *chancellor* was at first only the king's private secretary, seated behind the

Chancellor *cancella*, or screen. He was one of the royal chaplains.

No layman was chancellor until the fourteenth century.⁸

The office rapidly superseded that of justiciar. Becket, under Henry II., had fifty clerks and was the second man in the realm. The

Treasurer *treasurer* had charge of the royal hoard at Winchester.

The curia regis had three duties: sometimes it was the king's privy council, sometimes a court of appeal, sometimes the court of exchequer. As the two former, it accompanied the king wherever he went; as the third, it sat twice a year at Westminster to receive

the sheriffs' rents, at the table covered with the choquered

Functions of the curia regis cloth from which it took its name. As a court of appeal it heard (1) all cases between the king and the tenants-in-

chief; (2) all appeals from the popular courts; (3) cases which came there without coming before these courts; (4) cases where a precedent was wanted. Under Henry I. judges were sent at times from the

curia to sit in the shire courts; and this plan was greatly developed under Henry II.

The government of the shires hinged entirely upon a royal officer, the *sheriff* (shire-reeve, p. 22). His duty at first had been merely

The sheriff to collect the revenue. But he soon became a great man,

sitting side by side with ealdorman and bishop in the shiremoot. When the ealdormanries became very large, neither

of these two could often attend; and the sheriff gained their power. After the Conquest, when the earls became few—there were only

four at the time of Domesday Book—and when the bishop had his own ecclesiastical court (p. 41), the sheriff was the king's right hand,

his great check upon the baronage. He led the men of the shire to the fyrd; he was the sole judicial officer. The Conqueror was

careful to give the office, not to nobles, but to trusty servants of low degree.⁹ The sheriffs were responsible for the collection of all

royal rents and of the *ferms* or contributions of the towns on the king's demesne. In this capacity they became corrupt and ex-

ortionate; and the first privilege the towns always asked for was to be free of the sheriff's authority in this respect (p. 58). They had

⁸ As the clergy alone could write, they were naturally intrusted with political correspondence and with the framing of laws.—Hallam, *Middle Ages*.

⁹ Compare them with the 'intendants' of Richelieu and Mazarin in France.—Airy, 'The English Restoration and

Louis XIV.,' p. 10, in *Epochs of Modern History*. Their power of summoning the fyrd was superseded chiefly by 'commissions of array' in the fourteenth century, and their other functions were handed over by Mary to lord-lieutenants in 1556.

to collect the Danegeld, the judicial fines, the fines for non-attendance at the courts, the *escheats* or reversions of land to the crown when no heir was left, fees for permission to transfer land, fines for *essarts*, or illegal clearings in woods, and for non-attendance at the forest courts, the great feudal dues imposed by Flambard, and, under Henry II., the *scutage* (p. 65), which together formed the royal revenue.

Thus all branches of government were subordinated to the royal power, which could make itself felt at once through the sheriff, and the dangers of feudalism were greatly lessened. The king's revenue was partly from feudal dues; but, on the other hand, largely independent of them. The king had also the power of calling out the fyrd under the sheriffs, independently of his power to summon the feudal force. Thus it was that the crown was able, both now and in later times, even under the worst kings, such as Stephen or John, to face the whole baronage, and that the barons were afterwards compelled to throw in their lot with the people.

Consequent strength of the royal power

SECTION 4.—*Stephen. Unchecked Feudalism. 1135-1154*

If wills and oaths had force, Matilda the empress was the rightful heir. But there were other claimants. The Conqueror's daughter Adela (p. 62) had three sons, Theobald, Stephen, and Henry, bishop of Winchester. There was too a natural son of Henry, Robert earl of Gloucester, soldier, statesman, and scholar. Theobald was a stranger, but Stephen had been adopted by Henry after his son's death, and brought up in the English court. He had married a granddaughter of Margaret, the English wife of Malcolm III., also named Matilda. He was brave, generous, courteous, and warm-hearted; but without the stern character which had enabled his predecessors to cope with feudalism. During the next nineteen years was to be seen what unchecked feudalism meant. The three weeks following Henry's death gave a foretaste of the coming anarchy. Law ceased in the land; the nobles prepared for war; the people attacked the abuse most easily attacked: a general raid was made upon the forests, to the almost complete destruction of the deer.

Stephen secured the crown by prompt action. While Matilda attacked Normandy, he hurried across to England, undeterred by a terrific storm. At Dover and Canterbury he was refused admittance.

But London welcomed him. Thence he hastened to secure the treasure at Winchester, where he was joined by Roger of Salisbury and Henry of Winchester. Various reasons were found for evading the oath to the Empress Matilda (p. 56); the real one was doubtless the objection to a female ruler. Stephen was

Election of Stephen; his charters

chosen by the great council, and crowned December 22, 1135. Charters of conciliation were at once issued. To the people at large were again promised Edward's laws. The nobles acquired the baneful privilege of building castles at will. Rome, ever ready to take advantage of weakness in the crown, was the great gainer. The bishops would take no oath of allegiance until Stephen had been acknowledged by the Pope; they then swore fealty only so long as he should preserve the liberties of the church. The primate is mentioned, not as archbishop, but as Pope's legate. In 1141 the clergy under Henry of Winchester asserted that the right of election to the crown belonged to them alone.

Disturbances began east and west in 1136, when two great nobles, Bigod and Baldwin of Redvers, threw themselves into Exeter and Norwich. The revolt was suppressed without much difficulty, but the request that Stephen would release his prisoners because they had fought for their own lord shows the revival of the worst feature of feudalism (p. 46). Stephen had next to face the formidable invasion of David of Scotland, 1137, who remained faithful to his oath to the Empress Matilda. Peace was made by the cession of Cumberland with Carlisle, and David's son Henry was made Earl of Huntingdon. Another invasion followed in 1138, and the whole north suffered the extremity of misery. But the aged Thurstan of York and the sheriffs summoned the fyrd. They swore before the army to conquer or die. The standard was borne on a ship's mast mounted on a carriage, a silver box containing the consecrated elements above it. Beneath floated the banners of the local saints. On August 22 the Scotch attacked. The English were in their native formation, a compact wedge. The rush of David's half naked horde, though supported by his bodyguard of English and Norman knights, was vain. Half the Scotch army perished, David and Henry barely escaping. But Stephen's weakness was shown by his cession to Henry of Northumberland, except Bamborough and New-castle, with Cumberland and Westmoreland as an English earldom.

Stephen himself had been incessantly occupied with war on the Welsh marches and with scattered revolts of his nobles. Everywhere anarchy prevailed. Castles were springing up all over the land; those who did not build castles seized upon abbeys and fortified them. Private war desolated the country; private tyranny, private justice, private coinage, went on unchecked. Each day proved Stephen less capable of rule. The barons, led by Robert of Gloucester, were alienated by his employment of Flemish mercenaries:

Revolt of
barons

Invasion by
the Scots.
Battle of the
Standard

Cession of
the northern
counties

Anarchy

by the creation of new titular earldoms, without estates, but with money pensions ; by his lavish gifts to unworthy men ; and by the debasing of the coinage. Stephen then quarrelled with the church, his main support. Roger of Salisbury, his nephews the bishops of Ely and Lincoln, and his son Nigel the chancellor, held all the business of government in their hands. They possessed vast wealth and many of the noblest castles. But Stephen, suspecting treason, seized Roger and his nephews, with all their castles, and Roger died in prison. Thus the whole machinery of government was disturbed. For this outrage to the church the king was arraigned before an ecclesiastical synod at Winchester, presided over by his brother, Henry of Winchester, the Pope's legate, and forced to do penance for his crime.

Meanwhile, the Empress Matilda and her husband Geoffrey of Anjou, with Robert of Gloucester, had conquered Normandy. In 1139 it was thought that the time had come for an attempt on England, and in September the Empress landed with Robert. For eight years there is one dreary record of skirmishes and sieges, imprisonments and escapes. At the great battle of Lincoln, Feb. 2, 1141, Stephen was deserted by his mercenaries and taken prisoner; but was exchanged for Robert of Gloucester, who had fallen into the hands of Stephen's friends. London remained steady to Stephen, and with his devoted queen, also named Matilda, drove off the empress from before its walls. On the whole fortune favoured the king. In 1147 the empress, whose haughtiness had alienated her followers, and who was weary of the endless struggle, sailed to Normandy, and in the following year Earl Robert died. Many nobles also went to the Crusades.

For the people it had been an awful time. 'It was a time when any rich man made his castle, and when they filled them with devils and evil men. . . . They were the days when wretched men starved with hunger. . . . In those days the earth bare no corn, for the land was all fordone by such deeds, and men said openly that Christ and his apostles had gone to sleep.' It was amid scenes like these that the Cistercian monks flourished, no fewer than 115 monasteries, the refuges of the weak from violence, being built, and that the beginnings of a university at Oxford are seen. Divinity lectures had already been given in 1133; general subjects and Roman law were studied under Stephen.

And now a greater figure comes upon the scene. To Geoffrey and Matilda had been born on March 5, 1133, a son, Henry.¹⁰ Henry II. At nine he was sent to his mother in England; and thus, as an observant boy, he had before his eyes the real meaning of

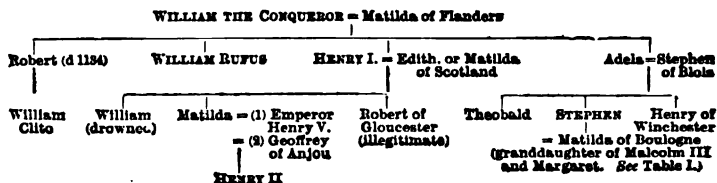
¹⁰ There were two other sons, Geoffrey and William.

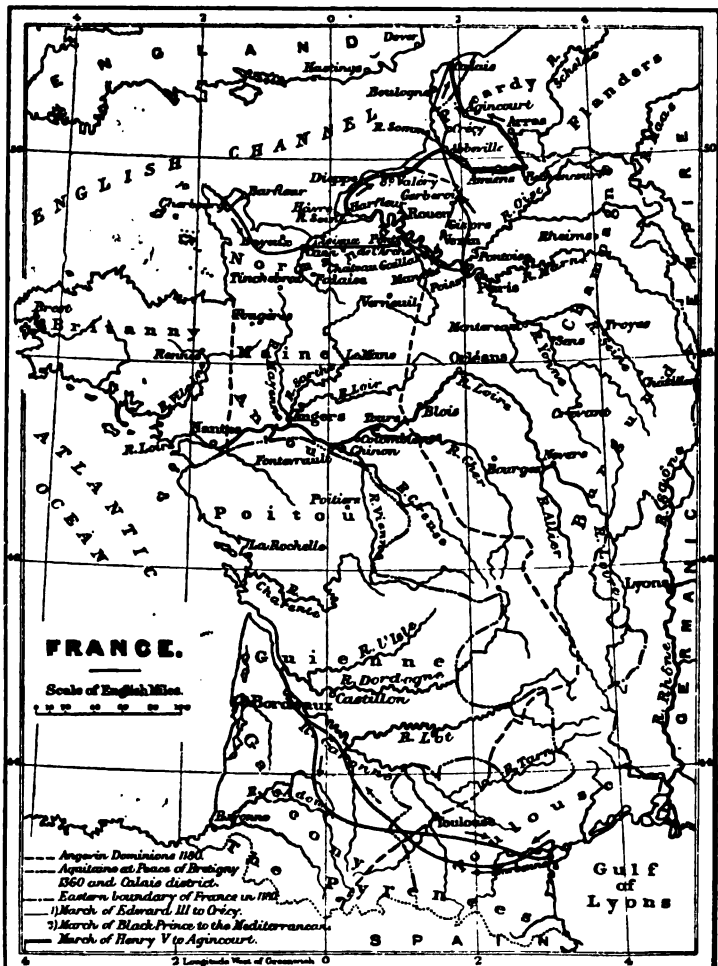
unchecked feudalism. After four years he returned to Normandy, which Geoffrey gave up to him in 1149. At eighteen he was in the north, fighting against Stephen, and was knighted by David of Scotland in 1152. When only 19 he married Eleanor, the divorced wife of Louis VII. of France, and the possessor of Aquitaine in her own right. He was overlord also of Brittany. The French King Louis, and his younger brother Geoffrey, with Stephen's son Eustace, now attacked him in Normandy, but in vain. Upon the invitation of several nobles in England, who looked to him as the eldest male descendant of Henry I., he determined to make a bid for England. The horrors of civil war were rekindled. But Stephen was anxious for peace. His queen and his brother Theobald were both dead; his son soon followed them. Peace was made at Wallingford, November 6, 1153. Stephen was to retain the crown for life; but Henry was adopted as heir, and Stephen was to act by his advice. All former rights of the crown were resumed; estates which had changed hands since Henry I. were restored; the castles which had sprung up — 'adulterine' they were called—of which there were 1,115, were to be destroyed, the armies disbanded, the mercenaries dismissed; the clergy were to be protected and not unduly taxed, the sheriffs re-appointed; justice was to be done without favour; the country was to be restocked and commerce encouraged; one coinage alone was to be minted. All paid homage to Henry, and nine months later Stephen died, October 25, 1154.

Principal Dates.

	A.D.		A.D.
English revolts, up to . . .	1072	Acquisition of Normandy . . .	1096
Remodelling of Church under Lanfranc	1070	Great Charter of Henry I.	1100
Conspiracy, and execution of Waltheof	1074-1076	Battle of Tenchebrai and second acquisition of Normandy	1106
Revolt of Robert	1077	Investiture dispute settled	1107
Domesday Book	1085-1086	Peace of Gisors	1113
Salisbury decree	1086	Battle of the Standard	1138
Barons' revolts against Rufus 1088, 1095		Peace of Wallingford	1153

GENEALOGICAL TABLE II





Longmans, Green & Co., London & New York.

F. & Weller.

BOOK III
THE DOWNFALL OF FEUDALISM AND THE
GREAT CHARTER

CHAPTER I

HENRY II.¹ 1154-1189

SECTION I.—*The Struggle with Privilege. Henry's European Empire*

HENRY was a great European ruler before he became king of England. From his mother he inherited Normandy, with the overlordship of Brittany; from his father Anjou, Maine, and Touraine Henry's dominions (p. 50, note); by his marriage he became lord of Aquitaine (p. 62) from the Loire to the Pyrenees and from the Bay of Biscay nearly to the Rhone. Thus England was but one portion of his mighty empire. He never spoke the English tongue; only thirteen out of the thirty-five years of his reign were spent in the country; twice only did he pass two years there consecutively; and it was but at the close that he recognised it as the chief of his dominions.

For six weeks he was detained in Normandy by contrary winds. They were weeks of peace, 'for no man durst do other than good, for the mickle awe of him.' He was crowned December 19. He was already a familiar figure, known as 'Curt-mantel,' from the short Angevin cape he wore. His frame was large, thickset, and powerful; his legs were bowed with incessant riding; his hair was short and red; his face freckled from exposure, and 'lion-like'; his grey eyes blazed and became bloodshot when he was angered. His dress was the roughest and most carelessly worn in the court. His physical vigour was so exuberant that he seldom sat down, even for meals; violent exertion was necessary to him, and he was immoderately devoted to the chase. His servants complained that they were worn out by the hardships of their lives.² The paroxysms of passion, when he would roll on the floor and gnash at the straw with his teeth, made men willing believers in the story that there was a demon strain in the Angevin blood.

¹ Norgate, *History of the Angevin Kings*.

² 'He may rather be said to fly than to go by horse or boat,' said the King

of France. One of his secretaries thus ends his wail:—'O Lord God Almighty, wilt thou not turn the heart of this king, that he may know himself to be

Henry was a great king, unailing in political craft and penetration; equally renowned as warrior and law-giver. His methods were as rough and downright as his personal habits; but everything got done, and thoroughly done. He seemed well informed on every subject; when not in action, he was reading, or in the company of scholars; his wit was ready and genial; his memory, whether for faces or facts, unerring. He owed much to his choice of ministers: Richard de Lucy and Robert earl of Leicester were justiciars; Nigel of Ely, nephew of Roger of Salisbury, treasurer. His chancellor was a young deacon named Thomas of London—his father's name was Thomas Becket—who both for business and pleasure became indispensable to him. Thomas was of great strength and stature, fluent of speech and ready in debate. Dignity and refinement marked his face; his hands were white and slender; his dress elegant; his expenditure upon his household profuse. It seemed as if it were he, not Henry, who kept a court; rich and poor found a free table at his house; the nobles sent their sons to be educated there. There was no stain on his honour or purity; he was impetuous, eloquent, resolute, as Henry himself.

Henry forthwith carried out the terms of the treaty with Stephen. The mercenaries were dismissed, many hundred castles destroyed, Stephen's pensionary earldoms abolished, all royal lands and fortresses forcibly resumed. To establish some sense of justice, judges were again sent into the provinces; the king himself took a large share in the judicial work. Malcolm IV. of Scotland, son of Henry of Huntingdon (p. 60), was compelled to restore the three northern shires and acknowledge himself Henry's vassal. An expedition into North Wales brought about the submission of Owen, its reigning prince. Then Henry made a royal progress from Malmesbury to Carlisle, fortifying his castles as he went, to show the people that he was truly king.

But he had been busy also across the Channel. He had wrested Anjou and Touraine from his brother Geoffrey, who claimed them by his father's will. In 1158 he secured the betrothal of Margaret, the baby daughter of Louis, to his infant son Henry. In the same year he mastered Nantes, at the mouth of the Loire, the first step in the annexation of Brittany.³ He next fell upon Toulouse, which he claimed through his wife Eleanor, but-

but man, and may learn to show some grace of regal consideration, some human fellow feeling, for those whom not ambition but necessity compel to run after him thus!—Mrs. Green, 'Henry II.,' in *Twelve English States-*

men, which should be read through-out.

³ This was completed in 1169, and Geoffrey, Henry's fourth son, who had married its heiress, Constance, was made duke.

which owned Louis, her former husband, as its overlord. This enterprise led to a step of the utmost moment in England. Neither English nor Norman knights could well be used for so distant an expedition, for they were only bound to serve for forty days. Instead therefore of personal service, every knight's fee was taxed at forty shillings, called *scutage* (*scutum*—a shield). Henry had already, in his Welsh campaign, struck a blow at feudalism by ordaining that, instead of all the knights following him, every two should furnish a third, who should serve three times the ordinary period if called upon. But the institution of scutage went further. The chief danger of feudalism had been that, in order to perform the required military service, every tenant-in-chief kept about him a large body of retainers. With the abolition of actual service the maintenance of such a body became yearly less usual, while the king grew stronger by being able to surround himself with mercenaries paid out of the scutage. Henry now overran Toulouse, except the city itself, into which Louis had thrown himself, and by the truce which followed retained the whole province. Becket remained to secure it, and showed himself as stout a man-at-arms as he was a sagacious chancellor. Henry's dominions, in actual possession, or by overlordship, now stretched from the Orkneys to the Pyrenees.

In 1160 Louis planned an attack upon Normandy. But Henry struck first. The little Margaret was in his keeping. Her dowry was the Vexin, a district which formed the strategic frontier between Normandy and France. Henry induced the Pope's legate to celebrate the marriage, seized the Vexin, and in 1161 forced Louis to a peace. Closer union was brought about by the schism which broke out in the church on the death of Nicholas Breakspear, the English Pope Adrian IV. Rival popes arose. Of these one, Victor, accepted investiture from the German emperor, and the church therefore refused to recognise him (pp. 53, 56). Henry, pursuing the traditional German policy of England, was upon the point of joining the emperor in upholding Victor, and of thus arraying the church, both in England and Normandy, against himself; but he was overruled, and with Louis acknowledged Alexander III., who had been driven out of Rome; and at Chouzy, near Blois, the two kings walked together, holding either rein of Alexander's horse

SECTION 2.—*The Struggle with Becket against Clerical Privilege*⁴

Henry desired to restore all things to their state under Henry I. The church was the great difficulty. Along with her power she had

⁴ Hook, *Lives of the Archbishops of Canterbury*.

developed abuses which stood in the way of his reforms, and he now looked to Becket, whom he had hitherto known only as his second self, to help him in combating these abuses. Unmoved by Becket's re-
 Becket made
 primate monstrances, he secured his election as primate a year after the death of Archbishop Theobald, and he was consecrated, June 10, 1162, by Henry of Winchester, at whose demand he was, in the king's absence, solemnly freed from all secular obligations previously incurred.

Henceforth he was the champion of the church, and of the church alone. To Henry's anger and surprise he threw up the chancellorship. His household was as splendid, his charity as profuse, as before. But he himself became an ascetic, a humble student of the Bible, a painful performer of the duties of his office. He determined to strengthen the church by reform. His predecessor Theobald had exercised little care in ordination, and this had led to the existence of a large number of vagabond priests of low character. He now refused to ordain any one who was not qualified by a good life, learning, and a fixed charge of souls. He secured the canonisation of Anselm, who had opposed Rufus. He busied himself in recovering for the church the property which had been alienated in the confusion.

Complaints soon reached Henry in Normandy. He came over in haste, and compelled Becket to resign the archdeaconry of Canterbury. A bitter quarrel arose when Becket declared in full council that Danegeld was not due from, and should not be paid by, any church lands—the first instance of constitutional opposition to a financial decree of the crown—and when he violated the 'custom' by excommunicating laymen without the consent of the king (p. 42).

But the great contest was over the church courts. Intended by the Conqueror to deal solely with spiritual offences, they had been gradually drawing to themselves every cause which by any stretch of the word could be brought under that head, such as oaths, wills, questions of legitimacy, the causes of widows and orphans, even debts, as breaches of faith. Worse still, no clergyman, nor any one in the remotest way connected with the church, was tried by the royal courts; while the church courts themselves could pronounce only spiritual censures.⁵ This immunity was called 'benefit of clergy.' Thus the king was deprived of his fines and large classes were outside the grasp of his law. The vagabond priests robbed or murdered with impunity; more than one hundred murders had been committed during Henry's reign without due penalty. Appeals to

⁵ Stubbs, vol. iii. p. 358.

Rome were frequent from the great monasteries, which were exempt from episcopal control.

Henry was bound to set his foot on such a system. In 1163 he called upon the bishops to confirm the 'custom' that all clerks found guilty by the lay courts should, after degradation by the clerical courts, be handed back to the sheriff for punishment. Becket led the refusal. To maintain the doctrine of Rome that no cleric was amenable to a lay court, he proposed that after conviction in the church courts the offender should be deprived of his clerical character; then, if he offended again, he would fitly come before the king's court. In other words, a cleric might commit two murders, a layman only one. Around this question the battle raged until, harassed by repeated confiscation, and unsupported by the Pope, he yielded. At Clarendon, near Salisbury, he was called upon to declare his submission publicly. He drew back from his word; but before the fury of the king and the entreaties of the bishops again gave way, and swore 'loyally and in good faith' to obey the 'customs.' The question was—what were these customs? Henry

at once embodied them in the celebrated *Constitutions of Clarendon*, Clarendon, January, 1164. Appeals to Rome were forbidden without the permission of the *curia regis* (p. 57), and no cleric might therefore leave the kingdom without license; the king's consent was necessary to the election of prelates; the estates of bishops and abbots were to pay the same dues as lay fiefs; the sons of serfs and villeins were no longer to be ordained without their lord's leave, lest they should thereby rise from their low estate. The crucial article was that which provided for the effective trial and punishment of 'criminous clerks.' Becket refused to admit that these were 'customs.' Twice he tried unsuccessfully to quit the country. At length, after a scene of violent recrimination with king and barons at Northampton Castle, he fled

under cover of a storm, reached Sandwich after three weeks wandering in disguise, and thence made his way to the exiled Becket escapes from England Pope, from whom he secured a solemn condemnation of the

Constitutions. In 1166 he was appointed legate for England. His first act was to excommunicate the king's chief agents, and to warn Henry himself. King and archbishop met in conference in 1169, but to no purpose. Becket threatened an interdict. Henry laughed at his threats. Any one who brought an interdict should, he swore, die as a traitor; any one who observed it should be banished and his goods confiscated. But such a deadlock could not continue. Henry took a false step when, following the Continental custom, he ordered the coronation of his eldest surviving son Henry, a ceremony only legally to be performed by the primate, to be celebrated by the Archbishop of York.

This was a matter of the greatest importance, since a king was nothing until he was crowned and anointed. By 1170 he found that he must make concessions, and Becket received his permission to return, though the question of the customs was not settled. Sending his sentence of excommunication upon Roger of York and the assisting bishops before him, Becket landed in Kent, and passed to Canterbury and London through welcoming crowds. From the high altar of Canterbury, on Christmas Day, he excommunicated De Broc, the holder and waster of the lands of his see. The news reached Henry in Normandy. Beside himself with fury, he shouted, 'What a pack of fools and cowards have I nourished in my house, that not one of them will avenge me of this upstart clerk!' That night four of his household secretly left the court. On December 29 they burst into the cathedral and slew Becket on the altar-steps.⁶ All Christendom was moved with horror. The Pope laid an interdict upon the land, and threatened to excommunicate the king. The cathedral was closed; the bells were not rung. Henry himself was overcome with despair; for three days he refused food and speech. But he soon regained mastery of himself. Before the Pope's legates could reach him he was in England. Strict orders were given to prevent the sentence reaching the country. From England he hastened to Wales, and thence to Ireland, where he remained until the spring. But then he went again to Normandy, and reconciled himself with the Pope by denying complicity in the murder on oath, abjuring the anti-pope and the Constitutions, and professing to hold England as a fief of Rome. The cathedral was reopened; the tomb of Becket, already the scene of many a miracle, was the object of pilgrimages from far and near. The date of his consecration, which he himself had dedicated to the Trinity, became, as Trinity Sunday, one of the chief festivals of the Catholic church.

Throughout this bitter struggle Becket, and not Henry, had been regarded by the people as their champion. This was not, as has been asserted, because he was of Saxon blood; for, although he belonged to the middle class, both his parents were Norman. It was because the church was the only refuge of the weak and poor, of the widow and the orphan, from the pitiless harshness of the royal power and from baronial outrage. Her courts had drawn under their jurisdiction many causes which, as we should regard it now, and as Henry regarded it then, had no business there. But the clergy were educated men, well qualified to sift evidence, and, when the church was not directly

⁶ Stanley, *Historical Memorials of Canterbury*; and Milman, *Hist. of Latin Christianity*, vol. iii.

concerned, probably juster than officials who existed at the royal will. Their penalties were milder and more humane. Many criminals escaped with inadequate punishment; but there were no crushing fines or hideous mutilations for petty thefts or assaults. Moreover, the immunity of all persons who partook of the clerical character from the jurisdiction of the lay courts, was in conformity with the fact that every class of society—nobles, burghers, monks, or merchants—tried to secure themselves by special privileges.

But Henry too was right. The purpose of his whole reign was to break down privilege and to establish equal justice. Nothing shows better how great a man he was, how far his ideas were in advance of his time, than that, with whatever violence and meanness, he attacked without reserve that form of privilege which could claim most respect, and to which the people whom his action was ultimately to benefit were most warmly attached.⁷

SECTION 8.—*Conquest of Ireland. Legislative Reform. The Last Effort of Feudalism*

As early as 1155 Henry had been commissioned by Adrian IV. to bring Ireland politically under his rule, and ecclesiastically into conformity with Rome. In 1166 one of the native kings, Dermot of Leinster, was allowed to seek allies against his rivals among the nobles of the Welsh marches. Between 1167 and 1170 various of these, the principal being Richard of Clare, called 'Strongbow,' son of the Earl of Pembroke, established themselves firmly in the old Danish settlements of the south and east. In October 1171 Henry entered into the fruits of their labours. He landed in person at Waterford with 4,000 men, and in three weeks all Munster was at his feet. The bishops acknowledged obedience to Rome, and the native kings, except the King of Connaught, did him homage. From this time the Norman barons pushed on steadily through Munster, Connaught, and Ulster. In 1177 they all did homage to Henry's youngest son John, who was destined to be king of Ireland. Hugh de Lacy remained as his justiciar. But in 1186 he was murdered; John alienated Norman nobles and Irish chiefs alike by his rudeness and insolence; and before Henry's death anarchy once more prevailed.

Meanwhile reform went on apace in England. Already Henry had by the Constitutions introduced the germ of our grand jury system into disputes as to tenures by ordaining that trial should follow upon the 'presentment' of twelve men to whom the circumstances were

⁷ Freeman, *Hist. Essays*, 'St. Thomas of Canterbury and his Biographers.'

known. He now, by the *Assize of Clarendon*, February 1166, extended it to criminal cases. Twelve men of the hundred and four men of the township were to 'present' all persons accused of felony by public report. The accused person was banished, and forbidden to return on pain of outlawry; and many regulations were made by which the people became their own police. Judges were sent every year throughout the country with almost unlimited powers. The great nobles lost their influence over the shire moots, and their private courts fell into disuse. The new *régime* was sure, pitiless, and unrelenting; the treasury was filled with fines for innumerable offences rigorously exacted. But the grand jury system, the application of which was continually extended, was a splendid training of the people in self-government.

In his downright course against privilege Henry had spared no interest. The barons had been impoverished by the exactions of the judges, and humiliated by the weakening of their local influence. Upon complaints of the extortions of many of them who had been made sheriffs Henry instituted an examination into their conduct, and by a single edict deposed them all; only seven out of the twenty-seven were reinstated, the places of the others being filled by clerks trained in the court. Henry's wife Eleanor, through resentment perhaps at his love for Rosamond Clifford, fostered the discontent of the barons; the ill-judged coronation of his son gave them a leader; and at the end of the Irish campaign they girded themselves for the last effort of feudalism. Already his second son had asked in vain for an independence, and had been refused as Robert had been refused by William the Conqueror. In 1173 he fled to the French court, where he was joined by his brothers Richard and Geoffrey. Louis, with the counts of Flanders, Blois, and Boulogne, openly espoused their cause. Normandy, Brittany, and Aquitaine revolted. At home, William of Scotland and his son David, the great Earls of Chester, Leicester, and Norfolk, with Hugh of Durham, were in arms, and all England north of a line from Huntingdon to Chester, except some royal castles, was held by the rebels. On the other hand, Richard de Lucy the justiciar, the king's kinsmen, the descendants of Henry I.'s 'new men,' Strongbow and De Lacy from Ireland, the trading classes, the church, and above all the native English, were staunch to the king.

Henry was roused to his utmost energy. By marvellous activity and skill he had beaten his enemies abroad in detail by September 1173, while the justiciar routed the Earl of Leicester in October with a loss

* His eldest son William died 1156; his second son Henry died 1183 (p. 77).

of 10,000 men. But in 1174 all his enemies were upon him again, and his peril was extreme. A vast fleet lay on the Flemish coast ready to invade. He determined to risk all to save England, which he now recognised as the chief of his wide dominions. On July 7 he set off in the midst of a terrific storm. At Canterbury he did public penance, prayed and fasted at Becket's tomb, and then, still fasting, went on to London. In the middle of the night of July 17 he was awakened with joyful news. William 'the Lion' of Scotland had been taken prisoner by a gallant enterprise of the sheriff and fyrd of Yorkshire. The heart was taken out of the revolt, and within three weeks of his landing Henry was master of the country. Then he flew back to Normandy; here also, and in Brittany, his success was rapid and complete. Thence he sped to Aquitaine, where Richard gave in his submission. A general peace ensued. By the treaty of Falaise, whither he had been carried, William the Lion swore homage and fealty, and placed in Henry's hands the castles of Roxburgh, Jedburgh, Berwick, Stirling, and Edinburgh. In England the king behaved with wise moderation: he dismantled the castles of the defeated rebels and exacted a fine; but he deprived none of them of their possessions. Of his prisoners one only remained a captive, his own traitorous wife. The strength which the system of Henry I. had given to the crown had enabled it to hold its own (p. 59). Before the barons again attacked the crown they had learned to rely, as the crown had hitherto relied, upon the people.

SECTION 4.—*The last Reforms, and the Downfall of Henry II*

The next fifteen years were spent in Normandy, with flying visits to England, each marked by some great legislative act or assertion of royal authority. In 1176 the *Assize of Northampton* improved upon that of Clarendon. The Salisbury decree of 1086 was again enforced; the jurisdiction of the judges largely extended. They were divided into six bodies of three each. Each body (*justiciarii itinerantes*, or 'justices in eyre') took a division of the kingdom for its circuit. In 1178 five judges were appointed as a court to hear appeals in Westminster, and this shortly developed into the *King's Bench*, which tried cases in which the king was concerned, and the court of *Common Pleas*, which tried cases between one subject and another. In 1181 the *Assize of Arms* ordained that every freeholder should be enrolled by the justices, and should swear to provide himself with certain prescribed arms, to be used only in the king's service, and not to be given away;

at the owner's death they were to pass to his heir. This act gave new importance to the fyrd, which the king alone could call out; and it made England a nation of men accustomed to arms.

Up to 1185 Henry was at peace. His court was famed throughout Europe. Ambassadors, theologians, scholars, and great lawyers surrounded the king. A great official nobility was trained up. Henry's court Richard, son of Nigel of Ely, gave an elaborate account of the administration in the 'Dialogus de Scaccario.'⁹ Ralph Glanville, justiciar in the place of De Lucy, wrote the 'Book of the Laws of England.' The blank in historical writing was filled up by the 'Gesta Henrici II.' Roger of Hoveden collected materials for his chronicle; Gerald of Wales related the conquest of Ireland. The country was growing rich by commerce; the royal income had more than doubled, and a vast treasure had been laid up. The Jews, the only bankers and usurers—since Rome forbade usury to Christians—and the sponge which the king squeezed dry when he needed money, in return for the protection which he afforded them, had largely multiplied. The towns were growing rapidly in prosperity, though the country districts were kept back by ignorance of cultivation, failure of crops, cattle plagues, and the heavy land taxes. London had its own laws, and many other towns bought the charters from Henry's successor which gave them similar freedom with the wealth which they now obtained.

But in 1185 Henry quarrelled with Philip Augustus of France; while the partiality which he showed to his youngest son John brought on war between the brothers. In this year Geoffrey, his fourth son, died, leaving a boy, Arthur, heir to Brittany. Philip, as overlord, claimed the wardship of Arthur. Henry's refusal would have been followed by immediate war, but for the news that Jerusalem had fallen at length before the Saracens, and that the cause of Christendom was ruined in the Holy Land. Both kings took the cross. Henry exacted throughout his dominions a tax of one-tenth of all personal goods, known as the Saladin tithe.¹⁰ But a rising of Aquitaine against Richard, who had been invested with the dukedom in 1189, delayed the expedition. Philip attacked Richard, and in 1188 Henry marched to his son's rescue. But the crafty Philip formed a secret engagement with Richard, and suddenly surprised Henry with the demand that he should name his son his heir and consent to his marriage with Philip's sister, Adela. When Henry refused, Richard publicly renounced his allegiance to his

⁹ Stubbs, *Documents*, p. 160.

¹⁰ All taxation had hitherto been laid on land only.

father, and swore homage to Philip for all the Angevin dominions. And now began the great king's downfall, the strange suddenness of which astonished all Europe. In June 1189 he was besieged in Le Mans by Philip and Richard. After a severe fight he had to flee, for the first time in his life, hotly pursued by Richard. Riding through the scorching heat of a long June day, he reached the Norman frontier, and thence, by a desperate enterprise, made his way to Anjou. Here he was summoned by Philip to a meeting at Colombières. On the way he was seized with mortal illness. But his will carried him to the place of meeting, where he accepted perforce the humiliating conditions laid before him. He only asked for a list of those who had conspired against him. As he lay dying at Chinon the list was brought. The first name was that of his darling John. He started from his pillow, lay down again, and turned his face to the wall. 'Let all the rest go as it will,' he murmured; 'I care no more for myself or the world.' In his delirium he cursed the day of his birth and called down vengeance on his sons. Sometimes he was heard to mutter, 'Shame on a conquered king!' He died on July 6. Borne on the shoulders of his faithful barons, and clad in regal robes, the great warrior and law-giver was laid to rest in the church of Fontévrault.

The down-
fall of
Henry

His death

CHAPTER II

THE SONS OF HENRY II

SECTION 1.—Richard I. ('Lion-heart') and the Crusades¹ 1189-1199

RICHARD I. can scarcely be termed a king of England. He was a foreigner even more than his father; of his reign of ten years less than ten months were spent in the country. He had been the earliest to take the cross, and is to be thought of first as a great crusader.²

His sole object was to get money for his expedition. There was a large sum in the treasury; everything was sold which could be sold

¹ Cox, *Hist. of the Crusades*.

² The coronation, September 3, was defaced by a massacre of Jews, who, in ignorance of the royal prohibition, came to offer gifts. The hatred against the bankers and usurers was set loose, and similar outrages occurred in many towns. At York, on March 17, 1190, a

terrible scene took place. The Jews fled to a tower of the castle, where they were besieged by a furious crowd. Hopeless of mercy, but with courage as great as their despair, they first slew their women and children; then they fired the tower, and to the number of five hundred perished in the flames.

—wardships, bishoprics, judgeships, sheriffdoms, and—a matter of vast importance—charters to towns (p. 72); crusade vows were commuted for money; a scutage was raised for a Welsh war, which was not begun; William the Lion was released from his vassalage (p. 71), and received back the castles of Berwick and Roxburgh for 10,000 marks.

Two justiciars were appointed—Hugh of Puiset, a grandson of the Conqueror, and William of Longchamp the chancellor, bishop of Ely, a man of lowly origin, small and misshapen in person, tyrannous and grasping, but of great capacity. In the hope of securing the fidelity of John, Richard gave him control of six counties in England; but he would not recognise him as heir, and insisted that he and their illegitimate brother Geoffrey, archbishop of York, should reside outside the kingdom.

Richard left England in December, and sailed with Philip in July 1190. At Messina he met his fleet. Here the two kings, scarcely disguised enemies, were delayed until the spring of 1191. During the interval Richard acknowledged his nephew Arthur of Brittany as heir. The fleet then sailed for Acre, which for two years

Richard in
the Holy
Land

had been besieged by a desponding and famishing army of Christians. On the way Richard conquered Cyprus, and, having been released from his betrothal to Philip's sister Adela (p. 72), married Berengaria, daughter of the King of Navarre. In June he reached Acre, and early in July the place surrendered. Philip of France at once returned home. His departure left paralysing jealousies behind. Scarcely one of the leaders, besides Richard, was disinterested; there was bad blood between the French and the English forces; famine and disease thinned the ranks. Twice Richard forced his way within a few miles of Jerusalem, and was compelled to retrace his steps. The enterprise was clearly hopeless. In September 1192, after rescuing Joppa from Saladin, he concluded a three years truce. In October he sailed; was shipwrecked on the Adriatic coast; made his way in disguise to Vienna; and was there made prisoner

His capture

by Leopold of Austria, his bitter personal foe. In March 1193 he was claimed by Leopold's overlord, the Emperor Henry VI., and remained his captive for more than a year.

Meanwhile William of Longchamp had driven his colleague out of office, and had been made papal legate. But the real struggle

Fall of
William of
Longchamp

for power began when John returned in 1191. Longchamp's corrupt and haughty behaviour had alienated the barons: and he presently gave John his opportunity by the arrest of archbishop Geoffrey of York, the son of the great Henry, when he came to take possession of his see. John held a meeting of

the barons at Windsor, and, supported both by them and the citizens of London; who expected to get more from him than from Longchamp, deprived him of all his offices and expelled him to France. Walter of Coutances, archbishop of Rouen, succeeded him both as justiciar and as legate.

Philip had returned after the fall of Acre to plot against Richard's Angevin dominions. He offered them to John with the hand of his sister Adela; and when Richard's capture was known John did homage to Philip. But Normandy would not support him, and indignation was keen in England. Walter condemned him as legate, and as justiciar besieged his castles, and beat off a French fleet which attacked the coast. Then a six months truce was arranged, which was spent in negotiating for Richard's release, Philip and John exerting all their influence to secure his prolonged detention. For a while the emperor hesitated. At length the king was set free for a ransom of 100,000*l.*, more than twice the annual revenue, on condition that he consented to hold England as a fief of the empire and gave up Cyprus. The nation responded nobly to the call. Besides the 'aid' (p. 51) due from the tenants-in-chief, a tax was levied of a quarter of every man's income and personal property; the Cistercian monasteries, which were the great sheep rearers, gave a fourth of their wool, the churches their ornaments. For the sum still unpaid the justiciar went as hostage, Hubert Walter, the primate, filling his post. In July 1193 John received the hurried warning from Philip, 'The Devil is let loose.' His attempt at revolt was frustrated by the vigour of Hubert Walter; Richard landed on March 18, 1194, and by the end of the month was complete master of the realm.

But even now he looked to England only as providing money to secure his foreign dominions. Fresh taxes were exacted, the monasteries plundered of their wool. Somewhat later five places were licensed for a heavy sum to hold tournaments, which had flourished under Stephen, but had been suppressed by Henry II., as leading to disorder, and forbidden by the Pope. The seal was taken from the chancellor, all acts passed under it declared invalid, and payments exacted for passing them under a new seal. John was forgiven and allowed to retain most of his lands with a pension. The submission to the emperor was annulled by a solemn re-crowning. Richard then went on progress through his kingdom, and in May, after two months stay in England, sailed to Normandy. Hubert Walter was left in command. He was a man of remarkable capacity and integrity, trained under Ralph Glanville in the traditions of Henry II. His main business

was to collect money for Richard. But he greatly extended the jury system (p. 70). Each county elected four knights of the shire. These four selected two from every 'hundred' (p. 11), who in turn selected ten more. To these twelve in every hundred was given the duty of deciding what cases should be 'presented' to the judges.³ The functions and importance of juries were also largely extended by their frequent employment in the assessment of taxes. The power of the sheriffs was limited by forbidding them to act as judges in their own shire, and by the election of special officers to keep the pleas of the crown in murder cases, the origin of our 'coroners.' The modern 'justice of the peace' arose from the edict of 1195 that everyone over fifteen should swear before a knight of the shire that he would personally aid in preserving the king's peace.

Taxation under Hubert Walter brought neither misery nor general revolt. But in London the money was raised by a poll tax, which, pressing to an equal amount on every man, was a special burden to the poor. They demanded taxation proportionate to their means, and under one William Fitz-Osbert rose in the streets. The riot was put down with difficulty; Fitz-Osbert fled to sanctuary, but was dragged out and hanged with eight others. Hubert was regarded by the mob as a tyrant, by the church as a violator of sanctuary. Richard now sent a demand for 300 knights to be maintained at their own cost, or an equivalent in money. Hubert laid the demand before the great council. For the second time constitutional opposition to a royal demand for money was raised (p. 66). The bishops, led by Hugh of Lincoln, refused to furnish knights for foreign service, and the barons followed their lead. When Hubert tried force, the bishops complained to Pope Inno-

Hubert
Walter
resigns

cent III., who at once ordered him to resign the justiciarship, as beneath the dignity of his holy office. He was succeeded by Geoffrey Fitz-Peter, a far harsher and less judicious man. Hubert's last act was to carry out a new survey. A large part of the nobility and many religious houses had been exempt from Danegeld (pp. 45, 66). This exemption was put an end to. The 'carucate,' practically the hide, which had varied according to the nature of the soil, was henceforward fixed as 100 acres; a permanent tax was laid

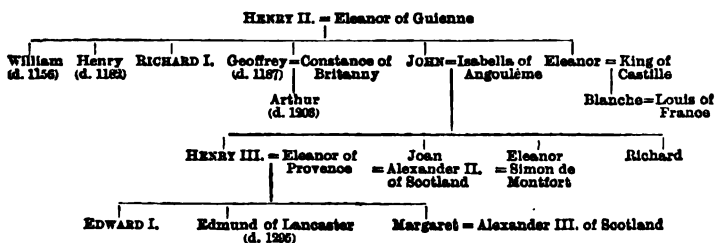
³ 'At an early period, even before the abolition of ordeal by the Lateran Council of 1215, a petty jury was allowed to disprove the truth of the presentment (as now), and after the abolition of ordeal that expedient came into general use. The further change in the character of jurors, by which they became judges of fact, instead of witnesses, is

common to civil and criminal jury alike. . . . The verdict of the jury no longer represented their previous knowledge of the case, but the result of the evidence afforded by the witnesses of the fact; and they became accordingly judges of the fact, the law being declared by the presiding officer acting in the king's name' (as now).—Stubbs, i. p. 619.

upon it, and to this all lands, lay or ecclesiastical, were subjected. The assessment was determined by the grand jury, the field of which now covered cases of every kind.

Meantime Richard was holding his own against Philip. No great progress was made on either side up to 1198. In that year, however, he formed a vast league against France, of which Otho of Germany, his nephew, was the chief member. But at the moment when ultimate triumph seemed certain he was struck down. It was in no great contest with a worthy foe that Richard the 'Lion-heart' met his death. With a large force he was besieging a single turret of an insignificant castle in Limousin, in which thirteen followers of a vassal who had refused to give up some treasure-trove held out against him. An arrow from the tower pierced his shoulder. He pulled at the arrow, and the shaft broke. Bad surgery brought on mortification. He sent for his mother Eleanor, of whom he was the favourite son, to hear his last words. He made his barons swear fealty to John. He forgave the man who had shot him, the only one of the thirteen left alive. On April 6, 1199, he died. His heart, of unusual size, was buried at loyal Rouen. His body, in sign of remorse for early undutifulness, was laid at his father's feet at Fontévrault.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE III



SECTION 2.—John ('Lackland') and the loss of Normandy.

1199-1204

The two male descendants of Henry II. were Arthur, son of John's elder brother Geoffrey, and John himself. But England did not desire a boy to rule, and at the coronation the old doctrine of kingship by election (p. 11) was publicly asserted in the archbishop's declaration that 'he who surpassed all other men in vigour was to be preferred,' and 'if there be one of the dead king's sons who excelleth, that one should be the more promptly and willingly chosen.' To Philip the disputed succession was a welcome opportunity for attacking English

power in France. He took Arthur under his guardianship, and the boy was acknowledged by Anjou, Touraine, and Maine. Then Philip attacked Normandy. For a year, however, John and his mother Eleanor prospered. In 1200, therefore, Philip agreed, for 20,000 marks, to recognise John as heir to Richard, and to marry his son Louis, who afterwards became Louis VIII., to Blanche, the daughter of John's sister, Eleanor of Castille.

So strong had the central government now become that if John had behaved with prudence he might have been more supreme even than Henry II. But every bad feature in his character had been heightened by his father's indulgence. He was intensely selfish and faithless; his vice and impiety were wilder than those of Rufus. So low was the estimate formed of him that at the death of Richard the nobles set their castles in order, and the horrors of unchecked feudalism were barely kept off by the devotion of Hubert Walter, William the marshal, and Fitz-Peter the justiciar. By divorcing his wife Avice, daughter of the

John
alienates all
classes

powerful Earl of Gloucester, and by marrying Isabella of Angoulême, who was betrothed to the Count de la Marche in her own country, he now alienated the baronage on either side of the Channel. He violated the rights of the church and quarrelled with the whole Cistercian brotherhood (pp. 57, 75). In 1201 he summoned the tenants-in-chief to go with him into Normandy. They returned a direct refusal until their grievances were redressed, and he was obliged to content himself with a scutage (p. 65).

In 1202, taking advantage of an appeal to him as overlord from John's subjects in Poitou, Philip demanded the surrender of all the Angevin fiefs to Arthur, and summoned John to trial at Paris for contumacy before the peers, who in default condemned him to deprivation. Philip at once entered Normandy, married Arthur to his daughter Mary, and invested him with all but Normandy. For a long while John showed marked incapacity. But a sudden act of vigour in August 1202, placed Arthur in his hands, and after Easter 1203 the boy was never again seen alive. The manner of his death is unknown; it is only certain that he died by John's contrivance, if not by his very hands. Once more John was summoned to Paris, and this time sentenced to death as a murderer. Philip again entered Normandy. Soon little but Rouen was left to John, and Rouen only because it was guarded by the strongest fortress in France, the Château Gaillard, the 'Saucy Castle,' upon which Richard had expended all his engineering skill. But after a memorable siege of nine months⁴ the castle was won, Rouen fell, and by Mid-

⁴ For an interesting account of the castle and this remarkable siege see Norgate, *History of the Angevin Kings*, vol. ii. pp. 375 seq. and 416 seq.

summer 1204 all Normandy was lost. By the end of the year Aquitaine alone remained of all Henry II.'s foreign dominions. England was henceforth complete in herself. Normandy became a province of France. Those nobles who had lands in both threw in their lots with one or the other. Normans and natives in England became one people: the Norman form of execration, 'May I become an Englishman!' disappeared. The king was answerable to, and dependent upon, the English people alone.

SECTION 3.—*John and the Pope. Baronage, Church, and People, in alliance against them. Magna Carta. 1205—1215*

The death of the primate Hubert at once involved John in a quarrel with the church. The chapter of the cathedral claimed the right of election. So did the bishops of the province. But in practice no election was made without a licence from the king, which carried with it the recommendation of his nominee and a practical veto on any other choice.⁵ The junior monks at Canterbury, wishing for a monk as primate, met in the night, chose their sub-prior Reginald without the licence, and hurried him off to Rome for the Pope's approbation. The elder monks, having received the king's licence, chose his nominee John de Gray, bishop of Norwich, and sent a counter deputation to Rome. Glad of the opportunity of striking against royal control of the church, Innocent III. decided in favour of election by the monks without a licence, and rejected the bishops' claim, but annulled the elections of both Reginald and De Gray as irregular. He then selected Stephen Langton, an Englishman of high repute living at Rome, induced the monks who had come to Rome to elect him, and consecrated him without the king's consent. John in fury drove their brethren from the kingdom, and refused to let Langton land. The Pope then commissioned three bishops to warn him. He forced them from his presence, threatened, blasphemed, and scoffed at Rome. Innocent hereupon laid the land under an interdict. This awful sentence, the invention of Rome to frighten kings into decent government, meant that from that moment the forms of religion were removed. The churches were closed, the bells silenced; no service was performed except baptism and extreme unction, the dead were buried in unconsecrated ground. In the midst of the general horror and gloom, John alone remained defiant. The bishops fled; he imprisoned their relations and confiscated their possessions. In 1209 excommunication followed the

⁵ As is the case now with the *congé d'élire*.

interdict;⁶ but the sentence had no force until published in England, and John watched the ports so jealously that no messenger could arrive with the bull. But in 1211, on the petition of Langton and the bishops, the Pope pronounced his deposition, and called upon Philip II. of France to execute it. Philip prepared a fleet; but John sent a squadron to the mouth of the Seine and burnt his ships.

But the country was groaning under the interdict. The people were oppressed with taxation and the forest laws; the baronage were more than ever estranged by extortion, by the licentiousness which did not spare the honour of their families, by the presence of the mercenaries, and by the forced surrender of their castles and of hostages for their loyalty. Pandulph, the Pope's legate, worked incessantly on the king's fears. The prediction of the hermit Peter of Wakefield, three days before Ascension Day, that he would not survive the feast, had still

more effect. On May 15, 1213, in full council, he swore to hold England as a fief of Rome,⁷ and to pay 1,000 marks annually in token of submission; to receive Langton, with

the exiled bishops and monks, and to pay them an indemnity for their losses. The next day was the feast, and on the 17th he hanged the hermit. Philip again prepared to invade, and again was frustrated by a naval defeat at Damme. But when John proposed a counter invasion his barons refused to follow an excommunicated king. In July Langton landed and absolved him on receiving his oath to govern righteously. Once more he appealed to the barons. Those of the north again refused. The whole body of nobles held an as-

sembly on August 4 at St. Albans, and called to it the reeve and four representatives from each township on the royal demesne. This advance towards popular representation was carried still further in November, when the king himself summoned four knights from each county to discuss with him the affairs of the kingdom. It showed that the barons had recognised that, with the great power possessed by the crown (pp. 59, 71), they must have the people on their side, instead of against them, as heretofore.

John's submission to Rome, however, had divided his foes. Supported by Innocent, who now removed the interdict, he was in good heart, though the church, with Langton at its head, had thrown in its lot with the barons. In June, 1214, he invaded Poitou, while the great league which Richard had brought together (p. 77), was reformed, and the north of

⁶ For the History of excommunication, see Hallam, *Middle Ages*, chap. vii. part i.

⁷ The formal receipt for the kingdom, with the seals of the Pope and the cardinals, is in the British Museum.

France invaded by an army of 100,000 men under John's illegitimate brother the Earl of Salisbury, called 'Longsword.' But at Bouvines (July 27, 1214) they were met by Philip with half their number, and disastrously defeated. A truce for five years was concluded, and John returned to England.

This ill-success weakened John before the barons. In November they met again at St. Edmund's, and took an oath to insist, even by force, upon their demands being granted. These they presented on January 6, 1215. Continual evasion, in which John was supported by the Pope's legates, led to a third meeting at Stamford, when, proclaiming themselves the army of God and the church, they marched directly upon London, and were received there with welcome. John

saw that the game was up for the moment. With assumed cheerfulness he met the barons at Runnymede, a meadow on the Thames between Staines and Windsor, and signed the Great Charter, June 15, 1215. He was then asked to dismiss his mercenary troops; to leave London in possession of the barons for two months, and the Tower in the hands of the primate; to consent that a vigilance committee should be appointed of twenty-five barons, with the right of distraining upon the king's lands to make up for any loss incurred by his violation of the charter, and that freemen should be allowed to swear obedience to it and take up arms at its bidding. The barons' object in this was not a permanent constitution, but immediate safety. The outburst of frenzied wrath, the old Angevin fury, told how great was the humiliation felt by the king.

Magna Carta, based upon the charter of Henry I., was the first fruits of the loss of Normandy, 'the first great public act of the nation, after it has realised its own identity,' a treaty between the king and the whole people, not merely one class.⁸ Henry I. had insisted that the sub-vassals should share in the benefits of his charter; it was now the barons themselves who made this a prime condition. 'All the aforesaid customs and liberties that We have granted to be held in our kingdom, so far as pertains to Us, with reference to our vassals, all men of our kingdom, as well clerk as lay, shall observe, so far as pertains to them, with their men.' The language of the charter shows that all distinction of race had vanished, for there is not a word in it that recalls this distinction. (1) The church obtained a confirmation of the right of free election, a declaration that the Church of England is free, and a clause enacting that founders of religious houses should have the right of custody during vacancy. (2) The *tenants-in-chief* were protected from abuses of the

⁸ Stubbs, *Const. Hist.* i. p. 580; *Documents*, p. 288, seq.

feudal burdens, and from the oppression exercised in securing the payment of debts to the crown and to the Jews.⁹ (8) No scutages or aid besides the three great feudal dues (p. 51) were henceforth to be imposed save by the common counsel of the nation in an assembly summoned as follows for the express purpose forty days before the date of meeting: the prelates and the earls and greater barons by royal writ to each individually (*cf.* House of Lords); the tenants-in-chief of lower rank (*cf.* House of Commons) by general writ to the sheriff of each shire. In this assembly there was no representative element. (4) Private law-suits were to be determined at fixed places; suitors were no longer to be compelled to follow the king's court from place to place. Two judges were to go on circuit in each shire four times a year, assisted by four knights elected by the county. Penalties in the case of freemen were not to be ruinous, and were to be fixed by a jury from the neighbourhood; barons were to be tried by their peers, and the clergy were to be fined in proportion to their non-ecclesiastical property. (5) The power of the sheriff was still further limited (p. 58); the abuses of purveyance¹⁰ were remedied; greater freedom was granted to enter or leave the kingdom; the oppression of the forest courts was removed. Then came the precious enactment, the struggle to secure the due fulfilment of which lasted for four centuries and a half.¹¹ 'No free man shall be taken or imprisoned, or disseized, or outlawed, or exiled, or any wise destroyed; nor will we go upon him, nor send upon him, but by the lawful judgment of his peers or by the law of the land. To none will we sell, to none will we deny or delay, right or justice.'

It was the whole baronage which extorted the charter, especially the northern barons, who had refused to follow John abroad, and the official nobility of Henry I. and Henry II. John had with him only his foreign personal adherents. But the granting of the charter, like the submission to the Pope, to a great extent broke up the coalition. The barons connected by blood or marriage with the king, such as the Earl of Salisbury, came back to him. John, faithless as ever, provisioned his castles and gathered foreign troops in large numbers.

The Pope now came to his aid. He annulled the charter, sus-

⁹ The Jews lent money to the nobles, being the only money-lenders, for the Church regarded usury as a sin: the crown enforced payment, and established the Exchequer of the Jews for the purpose; and it then, as the price of its protection, made what calls it pleased upon them.

¹⁰ Wherever the king or the court went, there went before them the royal purveyors, with power to take provisions or demand services at nominal prices, or even without payment at all.

¹¹ *I.e.*, until the Habeas Corpus Act of 1679.

pended Langton, excommunicated the rebel leaders, and laid London under an interdict. John then took the offensive. With one army the Earl of Salisbury devastated the eastern counties; with the other he himself marched north, and, after driving out Alexander of Scotland, took his long-delayed vengeance on the northern barons. The whole north underwent a harrying as fearful as that of Yorkshire under William I., John aiding the work with his own hands.

In their extremity the barons offered the crown to Louis, son of Philip II., afterwards Louis VIII., who claimed it in right of his wife, Blanche of Castille (p. 78). His fleet sailed up the Thames in April, and, disregarding Innocent's excommunication, he himself landed, was welcomed in London in May, and received the homage of the barons, of Alexander, who marched right through the country to Dover, and of Salisbury, who again left the king. But difficulties soon arose. Louis became unpopular. The jealousy against foreigners was enhanced by his bestowal of honours or lands on his own followers, and by his evident want of capacity. Supplies were cut off by the sailors of the Cinque Ports, between whom and the French on the other side of the Channel there was constant war. Many barons, won by John's lavish promises, deserted to him, and he soon had the ascendant. But when his triumph seemed secure a strange disaster overtook him. On his march he had to cross the sands of the Wash: he himself, with the army, got safely across; but on looking back he saw his enormous baggage-train swallowed up by the advancing tide. Disappointment acted upon a frame enfeebled by debauchery. He fell ill with fever at the monastery of Swineshead, was borne thence to Newark, and there, after naming his son Henry, a boy of ten, his successor, he died on November 19, 1216, at the age of forty-nine. He was buried at Worcester.

The death of John was Louis's notice to quit. There was no longer any question of resisting tyranny; the legitimacy and innocence of Henry were in the boy's favour. The royalists were now the national party, and most of the great nobles came over to William the Marshal, earl of Pembroke. Henry was crowned on October 28, when he renewed the fealty to the Pope, and Pembroke was named regent and guardian of the king. For some time Louis and the barons who still stood by him fought the losing game. But he suffered a great defeat in a desperate street-fight in Lincoln, 'The Fair of Lincoln,' May 19, 1217; while in August Hubert de Burgh (the last of the great justiciars) completed his discomfiture by the

The Pope
annuls the
charter

Civil war

The crown
offered to
Louis

Unpopu-
larity of
Louis

Death of
John

Louis driven
out of
England

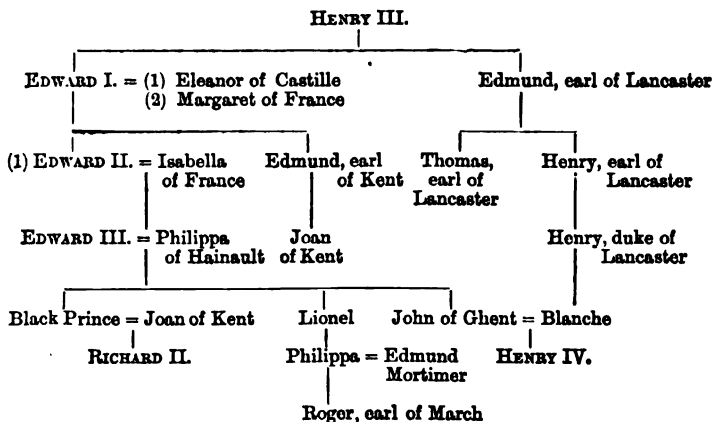
destruction of the French fleet in an action off Sandwich, where skill and coolness compensated for inferior numbers. On September 11 a treaty was concluded at Lambeth. Its terms were singularly moderate, but it was an emphatic assertion of 'England for the English.' Louis and his French followers were allowed to retire in peace. But Pembroke insisted that all towns, castles, and lands held by foreigners should be surrendered, and that the English adherents of Louis should pay homage and fealty to Henry. It is said that Louis further promised to restore to England, at his accession to the French throne, all the Angevin dominions of Henry II.

Treaty of
Lambeth,
1217

Principal Dates to Henry II., Richard I., John

	A.D.		A.D.
Acquisition of Anjou and Touraine	1158	Richard on Crusade	1190
Scutage	1180	Administration of William Long-	
Becket, archbishop of Canterbury	1162	champs	to 1191
Constitutions of Clarendon	1164	Administration of Hubert Walter	1198
Murder of Becket	1170	Loss of Normandy	1204
Great revolt against Henry	1178	Stephen Langton, archbishop	1207
Justices-in-eyre	1176	John does homage to the Pope	1218
Assize of Arms	1181	Magna Carta	1215
Revolt of Richard	1187	Treaty of Lambeth	1217

GENEALOGICAL TABLE IV



BOOK IV

THE STRUGGLE FOR THE CHARTERS

1217-1307

CHAPTER I

HENRY III. 1216-1272

SECTION 1.—*England for the English*

THE Earl of Pembroke, with Peter des Roches, the Poitevin bishop of Winchester, and Guala, the Pope's legate, kept good peace until Pembroke's death in 1219, when the justiciar Hubert de Burgh became the principal figure, though Peter des Roches acted as the king's tutor and gained an unfortunate influence over his weak nature.

First issue of the Great Charter. Nov. 1217 In November 1217 the great charter had been issued in its final form, the clauses regarding taxation and the appointment of the committee of 25 being omitted as hampering the government too much; while the equally popular charter of the forests did away with the more atrocious penalties hitherto attached to breaches of the forest laws, and annulled much of the vexatious legislation connected with them.

A constant struggle now went on between the English policy of Hubert de Burgh and the foreign influences represented by Peter des Roches. Hubert was determined to drive the foreigners from the royal castles; and in this, after an unflinching use of force, he succeeded. Peter des Roches left the country, and for a time the influence of the foreigners was at an end. A successful expedition however to Gascony, which was attacked by Louis, now king of France, led to an influx of Gascon nobles.

In January 1227 Henry was declared of age; and misgovernment began. He, too, seemed bent upon nothing but getting money. Exactions of Henry Scutage after scutage and carucage after carucage (p. 76) were levied. All acts passed during the minority were declared invalid, and large sums demanded for their confirmation. An unsuccessful war in Wales in 1223 caused further exactions. In 1224 a fifteenth of all movables was exacted for a confirmation of the

charters. In July 1230 Henry went upon an expedition to Poitou. It was inefficiently conducted and enormously expensive; and its only result was a scutage, the *Scutage of Poitou*, which the laity paid with murmurs, the church only after vehement resistance.

But extortion which raised far more opposition was that of the popes. The Pope Honorius, who was at war with the Emperor Frederick II., made frequent demands upon both laity and clergy. In 1226 the great council declared that the laws of England did not sanction such payments. When Gregory IX., on the deaths of Langton in 1228 and of his successor in 1234, insisted upon a large grant before giving his decision in the old quarrel which arose between the monks and

the bishops as to the right of election, the barons refused; though the clergy were obliged to give way. In each case Henry gave his support to the Pope. One form of papal influence was particularly obnoxious. By what were called the *Papal Provisions* the Pope claimed the right to nominate to vacant livings; and the English churches were being rapidly filled by Italian priests, who never became Englishmen in feeling, and many of whom, while drawing the revenues, never lived in the country. Somewhat later it was declared that the foreign clergy drew a sum out of the country far exceeding the royal revenue. In 1231 a secret association, calling itself the 'Commonalty of England,' under Sir Robert Twenge, who had been deprived of the right of nomination to a family living, set itself to cure the abuse. The Pope's messengers were murdered and his bulls trodden under foot; foreign ecclesiastics were taken prisoners and held to ransom; their harvests were swept off and publicly sold for the good of the poor. The method was rough, but successful. Twenge's right to his nomination was acknowledged, and the Pope agreed to confine the Provisions to livings in the gift of the church.

It was easier to attack Hubert de Burgh than the king, and the odium of all these abuses, and of the failures in Wales and Poitou, fell upon him. Richard, the king's brother, headed the party who were jealous of his power. Peter des Roches returned and gained his former evil influence. All the king's troubles, he told him, arose from the fact that it was Hubert, not Henry, who governed. Much expense might be saved by abolishing his office and governing by secretaries. Peter gained a still more favourable hearing when he induced the clergy to vote the king a fourth of all their movables. Henry dismissed his great minister in 1232. He was starved out of the sanctuary to which he had fled, taken in fetters to London, deprived of all his possessions and honours,

Fall of
Hubert de
Burgh

and imprisoned in Devizes Castle. But his twelve years' struggle to keep England for the English had not been without effect. 'Is that the true and great-hearted Hubert,' said the smith who put the fetters on him, 'who has so often saved England from foreigners, and restored England to England?'

For a time his aim was lost and the country was filled with Peter's foreign friends. But the evil brought its own cure. Richard Marshal, earl of Pembroke, the most powerful of the barons, left the court in disgust in 1233, and, with the help of Llewelyn of Wales, was soon in open revolt. He was joined by Hubert de Burgh, who, aware that Peter was plotting his murder, had escaped from Devizes. Henry found himself deserted by the English baronage. A monk named Robert Bacon preached to his face that there would be no peace 'until Peter and his son are gone.' When the king and Peter marched against Gloucester, he fell upon their quarters in the night and carried off all their horses and baggage.

And of Peter
des Roches By a shameful act of treachery Peter at last secured his murder. But the general rising of national feeling was supported by the remonstrances of Edmund Rich, the primate, and the pressure was so great that Henry did not care to resist when he heard that a castle within two miles of him had been sacked and burnt. Peter and the whole Poitevin 'gang' were dismissed, and in 1234 peace was restored. Unfortunately in 1236

The Queen's
relations Henry married a foreign wife, Eleanor of Provence, and the evil began again. Her relations were numberless, and each looked for a fortune in England. English officials were dismissed in their favour. Henry chose one of her uncles, William de Valence, president of his council. Another, Boniface of Savoy, actually became primate on the death of Edmund Rich, an appointment which had much the same effect as that of Robert of Jumièges by Edward the Confessor. The barons loudly expressed their disgust, and the king's brother Richard of Cornwall headed them. A tournament between English and foreign knights was changed into a sanguinary conflict. An attempt to assassinate Henry in 1238 was probably due to the same cause.

For many years the country was wretchedly misgoverned. The popes drained it unceasingly of money, and the abuses of the papal Misgovern-
ment. provisions went on with the connivance of the weak and priest-ridden king. The influx of foreigners continued: Poitevin ladies came over to be married to English heirs; Aymer de Valence, a relative of Isabella of Angoulême (p. 78), was made bishop of Winchester at twenty-two years of age. To satisfy these strangers

the king raised money by keeping the great offices vacant, borrowing from his brother Richard, and exercising many forms of irregular exaction. His treatment of London in particular was remembered by the citizens to his disadvantage. He was as incapable for war as for government. An expedition to Poitou in 1242, undertaken with a wild idea of winning back the empire of Foreign failures Henry II., ended in a disastrous defeat at Taillebourg, followed by an ignominious truce. Somewhat later Henry made peace with France, by which he relinquished all claims, except to Gascony, which was secured to him with Limoges, Cahors, and Perigord. In 1253 he went with scarcely better result to Gascony, threatened by Alfonso of Castille. The province was saved, not by arms, but by the marriage of his eldest son Edward to Alfonso's daughter Eleanor, followed by a fresh influx of foreigners, this time of Spaniards. Between pope, foreigners, and king, the people grew more and more angry and discontented, though for want of leaders—for Richard had married the queen's sister and had thrown in his lot with the court—there was as yet no general revolt. But reform was in the air. In 1244, after the Poitou fiasco, a joint committee of four prelates, four earls, and four barons had demanded a responsible ministry as hitherto, a justiciar, chancellor, and treasurer; and they promised that if the king would do this and carry out the measures they indicated, money should be given to be expended under their supervision. Another scheme proposed that the charter should be carried out by four elected councillors, called conservators—the justiciar and chancellor, and two others, by whom four of the judges were to be elected. During Henry's absence in Gascony, Richard, who was left deputy, called a great council at Westminster in April 1254, to which were summoned ~~four~~ knights, elected by the county court or shire moot, from each shire, with representatives of the clergy of each diocese.

In 1254 a new form of papal extortion was put in force. The Pope, anxious to have a friend in South Italy and Sicily, part of the dominions of his enemy the emperor Frederick II., who had just died, offered the crown to Henry's brother Richard, and, upon his refusal, to the king's second son Edmund of Lancaster. Henry accepted the offer, and borrowed money on all sides to support the enterprise. But he could not raise enough, and the Pope undertook the war himself, charging the expenses against Henry, who in this way found himself in 1257 the Pope's debtor for 135,000 marks. To escape from the bankruptcy Henry made the most exorbitant demands, even to one-third of the whole revenue of the country. The

Henry's
debts to the
Pope

S.S. 6.
276

discontent which this aroused was reinforced by his display of incapacity in a Welsh campaign, and by a failure of the harvests in 1257 so terrible that great numbers died of starvation. It was clear that all that was needed was a capable leader, and at the parliament of April 1258 such a leader had been found.

SECTION 2.—*Simon de Montfort, 'That which touches all should be allowed of all'*¹

Simon de Montfort was the second son of the constable of France. After a youth of perilous warfare he was driven from his country, and came to England in 1233. Through his mother he had a claim upon the earldom of Leicester, and this Henry conferred upon him in 1238. He then secretly married the king's sister Eleanor, and in 1248 Henry sent him to govern Gascony. On his return in 1253 a quarrel took place between the brothers-in-law; and he was henceforth regarded as the leader of the opposition. By his advice Henry was told plainly that for a while the government must be taken out of his hands. On June 11, 1258, the celebrated 'Mad Parliament' met at Oxford. The great tenants-in-chief alone were summoned, but the lesser tenants-in-chief accompanied them, and all came armed. The moment was favourable, as Richard was out of the country. A long list of breaches of Magna Carta was presented, and a committee of 24 was then chosen—12 by the king and 12 by the barons. Each 12 chose 2 from the other 12, and these 4 elected a body of 15, who were charged with the executive government, and were to meet thrice a year for discussion with a third 12 chosen by the barons to represent the people generally. This was no democratic scheme, but an aristocratic oligarchy, resting upon popular support. The plan of reform which was drawn up was known as the *Provisions of Oxford*.

One of its demands was that of Hubert de Burgh, the surrender of all the royal castles into native hands. Simon set the example by handing over Odiham in Hampshire and Kenilworth. Several of the foreigners resisted; their castles were besieged and captured, and all obnoxious strangers were ordered to leave the country. Another most important provision was that the sheriff was to become the officer of the people instead of the king, and was to be elected annually by the freeholders of the shire.

The Provisions of Oxford made a complete transfer of power from the king to the barons. But, just because it was so complete, it could be no more permanent than the vigilance committee of

¹ Prothero, *Simon de Montfort*.

Simon de
Montfort

'Mad Parli-
ment.' The
executive
taken from
the king

Provisions
of Oxford:
a too drastic
reform

John's days (p. 81). A king of England without power was an unintelligible thing. It is indeed remarkable that the arrangement lasted from 1258 till 1263. The barons soon split into two sections, those who wished to keep power to themselves, and were satisfied when the aliens were dismissed, and those who wished to go further and help the lower orders. The former were headed by Richard de Clare, earl of Gloucester, the latter by Simon. Between the leaders a fierce quarrel soon broke out; and in 1261 Henry took advantage of it. Like John with Magna Carta, he procured the papal absolution from the 'Provisions,' and changed the ministers appointed by the fifteen. Gloucester openly joined the king, and Simon for a time left the country. Henry then issued an appeal to the whole people against the barons, pawned the crown jewels and collected troops; the appointment of the sheriffs was submitted to the arbitration of the king's brother and decided in his favour; and Henry went to Paris to gain the support of Louis IX. But in 1262 the Earl of Gloucester died. Simon returned, and, joined by the young earl, Gilbert of Gloucester, rallied the reforming party. Before the year was out Henry was forced to confirm the Provisions of Oxford. The defiant attitude of Prince Edward at the head of a large mercenary force on the Welsh border, brought on an appeal to arms. Simon summoned an army, secured the Severn valley, and then marched south. London, where the majority of the citizens were estranged from the king (p. 88), and Dover, were soon in his hands; and the Provisions were again signed by both parties. It was agreed however to submit the whole dispute to Louis IX. By the *Mise of Amiens*, January 1264, Louis gave a decision which simply annulled every reform which the barons had accomplished. The Pope, as ignorant of England as Louis, confirmed this decision; and many of the barons went over to the king. But Simon at once declared that he and his four sons would fight the matter out.

In the northern midlands Henry and Edward were successful. But the wealthy parts of the country, the counties round London, were staunch to Simon. The king, passing by London, marched to secure them. Simon followed with an army of barons and Londoners, and at Lewes—all attempts at conciliation being rejected

by the counsel of the impetuous prince—a great battle was fought May 14, 1264. Edward routed and pursued the Londoners from the field, returning to find that in his absence Simon had gained a great victory. By the *Mise of Lewes* a new body of arbitrators was appointed; the king was bound to act by the

split in the
baronage

Simon de
Montfort re-
forms the
opposition

Mise of
Amiens

Battle of
Lewes
Mise
of Lewes

advice of his counsellors, to keep the charter, and live at a moderate expense. Edward and his cousin Henry, son of Richard of Cornwall, were hostages, and Simon was made protector—*republic*

Having arranged for the provisional government, Simon summoned the famous Parliament of January 20, 1265, at which the principle

Parliament
of 1265.
Representa-
tion of
cities and
boroughs

of representation received its vital extension. The towns, as taking no part in the election of knights of the shire, had hitherto possessed no share in the representation.

But Simon called to this Parliament, not merely two knights from each shire, elected by the county court or shire moot, *but two burghers from each city or borough*, with four from the Cinque Ports, since 'that which touches all should be allowed of all' When this Parliament met Simon's work was done; he had established the great principle of English political life. His provisional government, by which all power was in the hands of a committee of nine, formed again too drastic a change to subsist. He and Gloucester soon quarrelled. Gloucester gathered forces, and after exacting an oath from Prince Edward, who had escaped, to keep the land free of strangers, threw himself on the king's side. Simon—then on the Welsh side of the Severn—was taken by surprise. For a long time he was prevented from crossing the river. At length he forced a passage and marched towards London, whence his son Simon marched to join him. But Edward out-generalled them both. He cut young Simon's force to pieces at Kenilworth on August 1, 1265, and then

Battle of
Evesham

by a rapid movement fell upon his father at Evesham, August 4. 'Commend your souls to God,' said the earl to his followers, as he saw Edward's overpowering numbers, 'for our bodies are Prince Edward's.' His small army, formed in one close array, was attacked simultaneously in front, flank, and rear, and literally ridden down. The great earl, 'Sir Simon the Righteous,' died fighting, with his eldest son Henry. The external signs of his rule were at once removed, and his sheriffs deposed; London was fined, deprived of its charter, and otherwise humbled; forfeiture was pronounced against all the barons who had fought with him. But the work he had done lasted. He could not do more because he was not king. Fortunately he was succeeded by one who, besides being as great-hearted and as clear-headed as himself, stood on the vantage ground of the throne, and who entered at once into his labours, without causing the jealousy that necessarily followed Simon.² The royalist victory was not yet complete. Young Simon held out for a time; Kenilworth Castle, whither the forfeited lords had fled, stood a siege

² Gardiner. *Introduction to English History*, p. 75.

General
 of six months against the whole of Edward's force, and the *Dictum de Kenilworth*, October 27, 1266, contained the terms upon which they at length surrendered. A third stand was made at Ely, and a fourth in London by Gloucester, who had again taken up the popular cause. But all was quiet by June 1267, and the *Statute of Marlborough*, November 1267, granted everything for which the 'Mad Parliament' had asked, except the appointment of ministers and sheriffs. In other words, *Magna Carta* was recognised as the law of the land, but the attempt to rob the crown of executive power had failed.

The country rapidly emerged from disorder. Henry took care to create no new discontent. Genuine prosperity reigned. So settled was the state of things that Edward, with a large number of barons, felt free to sail to the Holy Land. There he heard of his father's death, November 16, 1272.

Henry was not a man of vices. He was pious, amiable, and cultivated; but he was a repetition of Edward the Confessor: a monk rather than a king, utterly wanting in the qualities of a great ruler, weak and easily led, a slave to his relatives and to the Pope. His very cultivation led him to prefer the more polished foreigners; he neither understood the people nor what constituted good government.

His reign had seen one memorable event in religious and social history. Hitherto there had been in England two orders of monks, the Benedictine and the Cistercian (p. 57). But now, about the time of Simon's coming to England, there entered an entirely new element into the ecclesiastical system, and one which had an effect of incalculable importance. This was the coming of the Mendicant Friars.³ Of these there were two orders, the Franciscans and the Dominicans. The Franciscans, so called from the gentle Italian St. Francis of Assisi, were vowed to relieve the wretchedness of the poor. The Dominicans, or followers of St. Dominic, the persecuting and learned Spaniard, the founder of the Inquisition, devoted themselves to teaching. They did not live, like the monks, in retirement, but like brothers (*frères* = friars) in the busiest haunts of misery or ignorance. They were vowed to absolute poverty, and to self-abnegation of every sort. No disease, however loathsome, could repel the Franciscan; while the Dominican rapidly became the great intellectual influence of the world. They were opposed by the secular clergy (p. 26) and by the monks, but they were encouraged by the Pope, for they were

³ Jessopp, *The Coming of the Friars*; *Essays in Ecclesiastical Biography*, Gardiner, *Introduction*, p. 72; Stephen, 'St. Francis of Assisi.'

submissive to Rome, and taught the faith of the church with greater purity than either, and both seculars and monks were speedily left by the majority of the people for the friars. The degradation into which they fell will be seen later on; but for a long time we shall have to notice only the vastness of their influence. One of their pupils was Simon de Montfort himself.

CHAPTER II

EDWARD I. 1272-1307

SECTION 1.—*The Legislation of Henry I. and Henry II. continued*

EDWARD showed his sense of security by the leisureliness of his return. He passed through Italy, where he met the Pope, secured the services of the Florentine lawyer, Accursi, and formed a connection with the bankers of Florence; took part in a local war in Burgundy; resided for a time with Philip III. in Paris; spent nearly a year in Gascony; arranged a good understanding with Flanders; and only arrived in England in August 1274. At his coronation Alexander III. of Scotland, his brother-in-law, and John of Brittany, did homage.

The reign of Edward I. continued that of Henry II. in its two great principles: the denial of the assumptions of Rome and the clergy, and the diminution of feudal privileges. His earliest act

Edward I.
continues
the work of
Henry II.

was to order a new survey, with a view of ascertaining what right the great nobles had to the local authorities and other privileges which they claimed. Its object did not appear until 1278, when the *Statute of Gloucester* ordered a writ of 'quo warranto' ('by what warrant?') to be issued to each; and is best seen in the reply of the Earl of Warenne. Throwing his sword on the table, 'Sec, my lords,' he said, 'here is my warrant. My ancestors came with William the Bastard, and conquered their lands with the sword; with the sword will I defend them against any one who wishes to usurp them. For the king did not subdue the land by himself, but our forefathers were with him as partners and helpers.'

But Edward's reign was more than a series of negotiations. It was a great time of positive reform, in which he himself took the lead. His habit was to summon barons, prelates, knights, or burghers separately: thus he found out clearly what was wanted in each direction, and gave effect to it by legislation. It was not, apparently, until 1295 that the different constituents met in one body.

This legislative activity began with his first Parliament, April 1275,

at which were present prelates, barons, and 'the community of the land.' By the *Statute of Westminster the First* the amount of the aid for the marriage of the king's daughter or the knighthood of his son was fixed; elections were to be free of undue pressure; the demands of the great charter, the Provisions of Oxford, and the Statute of Marlborough, were all revised and developed. For this the king received a permanent grant of the customs on the staple products of England—wool, skins, and leather. In 1278 he compelled all freeholders of an estate worth 20*l.* a year who were not knights, though owing knight services, to receive knighthood: a 'levelling up' which tended to diminish the power of the great lords—like the Salisbury decree of 1086—by bringing all such freeholders into direct personal relation with the crown, while it also enriched the king with the fees paid for the honour; and this was followed by many similar writs in later years.

By the famous statute *De Religiosis*, 1279,¹ a long-standing abuse, the holding of land in 'mortmain' (the 'dead-hand'), was forbidden for the future. When any one endowed the church with lands, he gave it to a body which did not fulfil the ordinary obligations of land tenure. In many cases feigned endowments were made on the understanding that the donor should receive the lands back as fiefs of the church, and be thus free of the feudal burdens. The effect of mortmain is seen in the fact that the clergy possessed nearly *one-half* of all the soil of England. The new law declared all lands which were alienated in mortmain forfeit in future to the lord of the alienator; if this were a tenant-in-chief they would fall to the king. Led by the primate, the clergy resisted, but gave way before Edward's threat of total confiscation. In 1281 the prelates attempted to exclude the royal courts from dealing with questions of patronage and the goods of the clergy, but failed; and in 1285 the writ of 'circumspecte agatis' ('mind what you are about') finally limited the jurisdiction of the church courts to spiritual matters only, such as offences for which penance was due, tithes, churches and churchyards, injuries to clerks, marriages and wills, and the like. Edward moreover utterly refused to pay Peter's pence (p. 42) to the Pope, or the 1,000 marks tribute promised by John; and the 'papal provisions' remained a dead letter.

In 1285 the *Second Statute of Westminster*, in its first article '*De donis conditionalibus*' ('concerning property given conditionally'), instituted the law of *entail*; that is, that when an estate is granted to a man *and his heirs*, the holder may not part

¹ Stubbs, *Constitutional History*, p. 106, &c., and *Documents*.

with it. The *Statute of Winchester* gave new life to the 'fyrd' and the Assize of Arms, and to those laws of Henry I. and Henry II. which had encouraged the people to be their own police. All highways between market towns were to be cleared of cover which might hide brigands for 200 feet on either side. Finally, in 1290, to make the land system still more a strength to the royal power, to keep up the amount of the feudal dues, to increase the number of persons in direct relation to the crown, and to prevent the subdivision of society, was passed the *Statute of Westminster the Third*, the great act 'Quia emptores' ('because purchasers'), by which in all transfers of land the purchaser, instead of owing the feudal dues to the seller (sub-*infodation*), owed them to the seller's lord.²

SECTION 2.—*Wales and the Scottish Succession*

Edward was bent upon putting an end to the incessant annoyance from the Welsh. Their constant inroads, their interference in all English difficulties, and the wide powers which it was necessary to give to the lords of the marches, were a serious menace to public peace and the authority of the crown. The reigning prince Llewelyn had absented himself from the coronation, and was ravaging the borders. But in 1277 Edward forced his way to the wilds of Snowdon, while the fleet captured Anglesey. By the winter Llewelyn submitted, but in 1282, with his brother David, he again revolted, captured Flint and Rhuddlan castles, and wasted all the land up to Chester. Edward came back in wrath. For the work among the hills he relied upon his mercenaries, mountaineers from the Basque provinces and Aragon. Llewelyn was slain in fight, 1282, and David captured in June 1283. David was brought to Shrewsbury, tried as a traitor by his peers, and executed. The part of Wales ruled by Llewelyn was then divided into counties. The old customs were retained, but with the English criminal procedure. On April 25, 1284, Edward's wife gave birth to a son in Carnarvon Castle, who in 1301 received the title of 'Prince of Wales,' ever since borne by the eldest son of the king.

Affairs called Edward to France in 1286, and he was away for three years. The danger of such absence was at once shown. The barons refused to pay grants till he should return; they collected large

² Thus, if the king granted a fief to A, and A sold part of his fief to B, B would henceforth be the immediate vassal, not of A, but of the king. So, if B held his fief from A, and sold part to

C, C would be the vassal, not of B, but of A. This tended to the interests of the great lords, but still more to that of the king, and prevented the incessant subdivision of society.

bodies of men ; the great Earls of Gloucester and Hereford waged open war upon one another ; the Welsh broke out once more ; the sheriffs exercised their powers oppressively. Edward hurried home, heard complaints, removed the offending sheriffs, and bound the Earl of Gloucester to the crown by giving him his daughter Joanna in marriage. By the end of 1290 all was quiet again.

The state of affairs in Scotland now gave him a welcome opportunity for an attempt to bring that country also under his rule.

The Scotch succession Alexander III. died suddenly in 1286, leaving no male heir. But his daughter Margaret had married Eric, son of the King of Norway, and to the children of this marriage he had bequeathed the kingdom. She died, leaving an infant daughter, also called Margaret, the 'Maid of Norway,' who was recognised as lawful queen.

The 'Maid of Norway' Edward hoped to marry her to his son, and so unite the kingdoms. The hapless child set off on her journey, September 1289, but died under the fatigue of the voyage. Thus the direct line of William the Lion was extinct. At once there arose no fewer than 13 claimants. Of these but two had serious pretensions.

David, brother of William, had three daughters—Margaret, Isabella, and

Claims of Bruce, Baliol, Hastings Ada. Margaret had left a grandson, John Baliol ; Isabella had a son, Robert Bruce of Annandale ; Ada had left a grandson, John Hastings. The right evidently rested between Baliol and Bruce.

Edward, to whom the Scottish regency had given a final voice in any dispute, at once went north. At Grantham his wife Eleanor, who never left him, sickened and died. For three days he was crushed with sorrow. Then he accompanied the body to London, erecting a cross at each halting-place. At Easter 1291 he held a conference of the two kingdoms at Norham, and asserted his

Edward claims the guardianship of Scotland right to the guardianship of Scotland, in virtue of the frequent acts of homage paid by Scottish to English monarchs.

He had taken care to ransack every depository of records for proofs of these acts, from the time of Edward, son of Alfred, to that paid to himself by Alexander.³ The claim was admitted, and he was called upon to dispose of the crown. By national custom Bruce, as son, though of the second daughter, had the better claim ; by English feudal custom, Baliol, as descended from the eldest daughter, though a grandson. The assembly was almost unanimous for the feudal claim,⁴ and Edward confirmed the decision, reserving his own

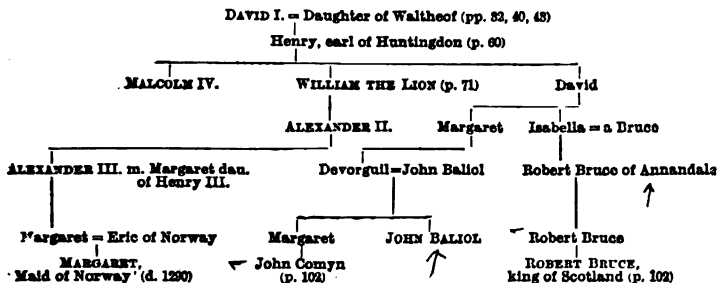
³ Freeman, 'Relations between of Norman origin, and many of them the Crowns of England and Scotland': who had lands on both sides of the border were anxious not to offend *Essays*, 1st series; and 'England,' in *Encycl. Brit.* Edward.

⁴ The Scottish nobility was chiefly

right as overlord. Baliol swore fealty, was crowned at Scone, and did homage for Scotland. But all the elements of disturbance were left in the ambition of Bruce, and in the insult given to national feeling by Edward's unwise demand that appeals should be heard by the English courts at Westminster. Baliol himself, a weak man, was summoned by Edward for injustice, and heavily fined.

Baliol's
claim
confirmed

GENEALOGICAL TABLE V



SECTION 8.—*War with France. Deposition of Baliol. Rejection of Papal Claims. Confirmation of the Charter*

Meanwhile England and France had been drifting into war. Edward never had any idea of reconquering the empire of Henry II., and in 1285 had relinquished all claim to Normandy for 10,000*l.* But, though there was formal peace, the rivalry between the sailors of the Cinque Ports and the opposite coasts led to continual warfare at sea. At length a challenge passed to fight out the quarrel. An empty ship moored off St. Mahé on the coast of Brittany marked the place; and on May 15, 1293, a fleet of English, Dutch, Irish, and Gascon ships met those of France, Genoa, and Flanders. A long day's struggle ended in the total destruction of the French fleet. Philip wrathfully demanded full restitution for his loss. Edward tried to settle the matter peacefully. He offered to marry Philip's sister, and ceded Guienne as her dowry. Philip obtained possession and then rejected the offer. Edward hereupon withdrew his allegiance for Aquitaine, and forbade all trade with France; took into his pay a great league of European states, and especially secured the friendship of Flanders. He had hitherto met with little opposition in his demands for money; he had indeed fallen back upon arbitrary taxation without much regard

Great naval
defeat of the
French

Philip
obtains
Guienne

for Magna Carta; he had increased the tax upon wool by his own decree. In dealing with the clergy, especially, his understanding with the Pope (p. 98) had borne good fruit. But now, when he demanded half their revenue, they asked for the repeal of the 'De Religiosis' act. The request was refused, and the money exacted on pain of outlawry. The merchant's stock of wool was seized. John Baliol gave the whole revenue of his English estates for three years. A vast armament sailed, and by 1295 Guienne was recovered. Edward himself was meanwhile occupied in suppressing a fresh and formidable outbreak of the Welsh. In the expedition he was in extreme danger; his baggage was surprised; his army cut in two. But, bearing all hardships exactly as his men, he extricated himself from the peril with great skill, and completely suppressed the revolt.

Troubles came thickly in 1295. Philip again captured Bordeaux. The expedition which sailed under the king's brother Edmund of

Failure at Lancaster failed completely, and Edmund died there. A national rising in Scotland, a rising of the people more than of the feudal nobles (p. 96, note), to which Baliol was forced to give his adhesion, drove the English out of the country, and an alliance was made between Baliol and Philip, the beginning of a permanent connection between France and Scotland. Edward concentrated his attention upon the home difficulty. Marching with 35,000 men, he took Berwick by assault, with fearful loss; and on the same day the Scotch were beaten back from the walls of Carlisle. Upon hearing of Baliol's breach of faith, 'The treacherous fool!' exclaimed Edward, 'if he will not come to us, we will go to him.' At Dunbar he inflicted a crushing defeat upon the Scots,

Subjugation of Scotland April 27, 1296. Edinburgh, Stirling, and Perth surrendered. Baliol gave up his crown, and was sent to the Tower; three years later he was allowed to go to his estates in Normandy, where he died in 1305. Edward then made a progress through the north. Returning by Scone, he carried away the regalia and the coronation stone, an object of Scottish reverence which is now in Westminster Abbey. No confiscation of estates was made. John Waronne, earl of Surrey, was left governor, and Hugh Cressingham treasurer.

The dangers of 1295 had brought about the summoning of the celebrated parliament of November, which was intended to be a model for future parliaments. The clergy were represented by the archbishops and bishops, the archdeacons, one representative for the clergy of each cathedral, and two for those of each diocese. There were, besides the tenants-in-chief, two knights

from each shire and two citizens for each city or borough. It was called because, almost in Earl Simon's words, 'it is very evident that common dangers must be met by measures concerted in common.'

At the parliament of 1296 began the final conflict with the Pope.

Boniface VIII. and 'Clericis Laicos' Boniface VIII., the most arrogant of popes, had issued the famous bull, 'Clericis Laicos,' which forbade the clergy to pay, or rulers to demand, taxation upon church property.

But the time for such assumptions was over. Edward coerced the clergy by a threat of outlawry. If they would not bear the burden they should not have protection. No mercy was shown to recalcitrants. They were stripped of everything, even their horses were taken from them on the highway. The primate and the Bishop of Lincoln alone were resolute, and Edward forfeited all the goods of the province of Canterbury.

He was now able to turn to the Continent. He determined to attack France himself from Flanders, while another expedition under the Earls of Norfolk and Hereford went to Gascony. But he

Opposition of nobles, clergy, and merchants, against arbitrary taxation was met by unexpected opposition from the great barons. They were not bound, they said, by their feudal duty to serve in Flanders. They refused to go even to Gascony, whither they were so bound to follow the king, unless he went too. 'By God! earl,' exclaimed Edward to Bigod the Earl of Norfolk, 'you shall either go or hang.' 'By God! king,' was the reply, 'I will neither go nor hang.'

It was really against arbitrary taxation that they were striking; and they were joined by the merchants, whose wool had been seized, and by the clergy. It was the voice of the united nation which now spoke. Edward however made terms with the clergy and sailed for Flanders, leaving Prince Edward as regent. That very day the two earls marched to London and forbade the collection of the imposts. A little later they demanded that before any grant was given the charters should be confirmed and completed. The prince gave way, and Edward, who was at Ghent,

The Confirmation of the Charters approved his action. The *Confirmatio Cartarum*, issued in 1297, really amounted to the insertion of the articles regarding taxation which had been omitted from Magna Carta as issued by Henry III. (p. 85). No customs duties, it was declared, were henceforth to be levied by the king, *except by common consent*.⁵ Edward felt bitterly the distrust shown of him. Heavy as his exactions had been, he had spent the money unselfishly for the good of the country.

⁵ Gardiner, *Introduction*, p. 79. provided by Magna Carta, but of the 'Common consent' would now mean whole nation in parliament. not that of the tenants-in-chief only, as

SECTION 4.—*William Wallace and Robert Bruce*

The Scotch had meanwhile found a new champion in William Wallace, a country gentleman famed for strength and courage. The people who had not yet lost heart came round him; and so daring and well timed were his attacks that the English were forced to keep within the walls of their castles. Gradually the feudal nobles joined him,⁶ and his irregular bands swelled to a large army. Warenne and Cressingham with 60,000 men approached Stirling, and Wallace gave them battle, September 11, 1297. The English advanced over the long narrow bridge. When only part had crossed he launched his whole force against them, slew 5,000 men, and drove the rest into the river; those on the other side turned and fled. Cressingham, who had earned special hatred, was killed, and his body flayed. One by one the castles surrendered; and Wallace was not only master of Scotland, but able to make a devastating raid through Northumberland.

Edward came back in haste from Flanders in 1298, and joined his army of vengeance at Berwick. Peace had been made abroad through the private mediation of the Pope. Boniface VIII. proposed two marriages, those of Edward and his son to Philip's sister and daughter; he himself holding Guienne until all was settled. The marriage of Edward took place in 1299; but Guienne was not restored until 1303. On July 22, 1298, Wallace was forced to battle at Falkirk. His spearmen were in four dense masses, with his archers between them, and his horse on the flanks. A morass protected his front. The first line of English rounded the morass and attacked in flank, while the second line picked its way across and fell upon the front. Wallace's horse and archers fled; but the spearmen stood impervious to Edward's cavalry, until the English bowmen⁷ made breaches in their ranks; then the knights dashed in, and a massacre ensued. With the loss of three knights and a few archers, the English slew more than 15,000. Wallace escaped to France. Edward then fortified the

Peace with
France

Defeat of
Wallace at
Falkirk

⁶ The interference of Edward in Scotch affairs, especially the summonses to Westminster, was making the feudal nobles constantly more Scotch and less English (p. 96, note).

⁷ In this battle the English archers first came into prominence. They were armed with the terrible long-bow, which is mentioned in the *Assize of Arms* of 1252; the Scots had only the short-bow. Up to 1281 the cross-bow, or arbalest, was the great weapon, and John's mer-

cenaries had used it effectively against the barons. Edward I. took the long-bow into favour. The archer could shoot three cloth-yard shafts against the cross-bowman's one. He drew his bowstring to the ear, not to the body like the Scots, and could kill, it was said, at 500 yards. An English archer boasted with truth that he carried twelve Scots' lives at his girdle.—Oman, *Art of War in the Middle Ages*, p. 98, &c.

Lowlands up to Stirling once more, but was obliged to return from want of provisions for his army.

He was now called upon to give the confirmation of the charters by word of mouth, upon the promise of which alone Norfolk and Hereford had joined in this last campaign. He gave it 'with reservation of our coronation oath and the rights of the crown.' These

words raised a storm such as Becket had raised with his 'saving our order.' Edward saw clearly where he must give way, and in March 1300, by the 'Articuli super Cartas' ('the articles upon the charters'), he re-confirmed them in parliament, with important additions and without reserve.⁸ 'From this moment it was plain that the government of England would rest, not on the king alone, but on the king in co-operation with parliament.' King and baronage moreover were now united in a memorable way. More than once Boniface VIII. had interfered in Scotch questions on the ground that Scotland was an independent see of Rome. He now demanded perfect freedom for her on all church subjects; as to other matters Edward must send deputies to Rome to obtain the papal decision. The king prepared the whole case with the utmost care, and in January 1301 laid it before parliament at Lincoln. The

baronage enthusiastically supported him. A letter, signed by 104 of them, was sent to the Pope. No king of England, it was there stated, had ever pleaded, or been bound to plead, before any judge ecclesiastical or secular, respecting his rights in the kingdom of Scotland, or other temporal rights: 'neither do we, nor will we, permit our aforesaid lord the king to do, or attempt to do, even if he wished it, any of the things aforesaid.' Edward had from this time no more trouble with the barons. Norfolk was submissive; Hereford died, and his son was married to the king's daughter Elizabeth.

Once more the Scotch difficulty broke out. Wallace had re-appeared, had captured Stirling and had cut an English force to pieces at Roslyn. In 1303 Edward, passing Stirling, marched unopposed to Perth, and wintered in Dunfermline. In 1304 Comyn and many others came in to him. Stirling fell, and on August 4, 1305, Wallace was betrayed. He was tried at Westminster Hall and condemned as a traitor, in spite of a noble defence. His head was placed on London Bridge, his quarters were sent to New-castle, Berwick, Perth, and Aberdeen. It must be remembered that, while to the Scots he was a national hero and patriot, to Edward he was a traitor and a bandit.

⁸ Gardiner, *Introduction*, p. 81.

Edward's end seemed attained, but again he was disappointed. At Baliol's death two men claimed the succession—Robert Bruce, grandson of Bruce of Annandale, and John Comyn, Baliol's nephew (p. 97). Bruce was thirty years of age; he had resided at Edward's court, had joined Wallace, had again submitted to Edward, and had fought against his own countrymen. He now came in haste from London, and had an interview with Comyn. It ended in a quarrel, and Bruce stabbed his rival in Dumfries church before the high altar. 'I doubt,' he said to his friends, Kirkpatrick and Lindesey, as he rushed from the church, 'that I have slain the Red Comyn.' 'You doubt,' was the reply; 'then I will make sicker (sure),' and Comyn was despatched as he lay. Then they seized the castle. The country rose to their new leader; the English were driven over the border, and Bruce, to win the clergy and nobles, was crowned at Scone on March 25, 1306, by the Bishops of Glasgow and St. Andrews.

Edward was deeply moved. It must be remembered that he had been acknowledged overlord of Scotland. He swore to avenge Comyn's death. Should he die before he could reach Scotland, his body was to be carried before the avenging host; should he survive the expedition, he would never again draw his sword against a Christian foe. The prince, on being knighted, vowed that he would not rest two consecutive nights in the same place until the Scots were subdued. Ere they set out, Pembroke had already surprised and defeated Bruce at Methven, June 28, 1306. Bruce himself narrowly escaped capture, reached Ireland with difficulty, and lay close during the winter. The prisoners this time were mercilessly dealt with. Among them was Bruce's youngest brother, Nigel, and Isabella, countess of Buchan, who had placed the crown on the fugitive's head. Nigel was executed; Isabella was placed inside a large cage in a room in Berwick Castle. The wife, daughter, and sisters of Bruce were sent to London. In the spring of 1307, Bruce landed again in the west, drove Lord Clifford out of Carrick Castle, and waged a successful guerilla warfare. Edward grimly made his way to the north. But incessant toil had at last told its tale, and it was evident that this would be his last campaign. He was scarcely able to sit his horse, and was generally borne by slow stages in a litter. With the utmost difficulty he reached Carlisle. Here he was attacked with dysentery. On July 8 the stern white-haired old man mounted his horse and rode two miles towards Scotland, and the next day two miles more. On July 6, 1307, at Burgh-upon-Sands, less than three miles

from the frontier, he died. He was thirty-six years of age when he began to reign, and like two of his predecessors, Henry I. and Henry II., he reigned thirty-five years.

One event of an isolated character in the reign was the expulsion of the Jews in 1290. Held in abomination by the church, and despised by all, they were hated by the class of small proprietors, because, when they had mortgages on the lands of their debtors, they sold these mortgages to the great nobles for their protection, and thus became instruments of oppression. In each town they lived in a special quarter, called the Jewry, carefully guarded, but in continual danger. To the crown they were very useful (p. 72), and in oppressing them Edward sacrificed his interest to his principles. In the first year of his reign he forbade them to erect synagogues, hold freeholds, or exact usury; any Jew over seven years of age was forced to wear a distinctive mark of yellow cloth upon his dress; all over twelve paid threepence a year to the crown. In 1278 no fewer than 298 Jews were hung for clipping the coinage, and their property seized. In 1287, under the influence of the queen-mother, who had driven all Jews from her own lands, the whole body lost their property, obtaining personal freedom only for a fine of 12,000*l.* In 1290 the king published an edict banishing them, to the number of 16,500, from the country, a cruelty for which he received a large grant from the clergy; and they did not again appear legally in England until the reign of Charles II.

King Edward was tall and spare. His arms were long and nervous; he was a splendid horseman, and to his last ride was noted for his upright carriage in the saddle. He stammered slightly, though never at a loss for words. His hair, jet black in manhood, had turned to silver long before his death. A peculiar droop of the left eyelid was inherited from his father. He was a great hunter and a famous breeder of horses: English horses were noted on the Continent in his reign. His private character was stainless; his religion deep and unaffected. As far as might be, he lived for his family. Never was marriage tie closer than between him and his first wife; and, while she lived, his temper was genial and joyous. To his second wife also he was a tender husband. He was not learned; but he was a benefactor to learning. Roger Bacon, a Franciscan friar (p. 92), was the greatest philosopher of England up to the time of his famous namesake. English poetry, which expressed the sorrows of the poor caused by the oppression of royal officials and of prelates, sprang up side by side with lyrical song, which treated of spring, and love, and joyousness, and with fable, in which the king figured as lion, the nobles as wolves, the priesthood as the fox.

SUMMARY

The ninety years covered by the reigns of Henry III. and Edward I. form a great epoch. The charter had been won, but, in spite of such men as the Earl of Pembroke and Hubert de Burgh, was in danger. Henry gave his country as spoil to his wife's foreign friends, and sacrificed the national church to the Pope, until Simon de Montfort, himself a foreigner, headed an oligarchy based on popular sympathies, and stayed the mischief. Since the Conquest the principle of representation had constantly been expressing itself; he adopted it and made it perpetual. But in doing so he was forced to take all power from the king, and for that the country was not ready.

Then a king, in the full vigour of manhood, enters into his labours: a king of strong purposes, of clear insight; a great organiser, a great lawgiver in an age of great lawgivers; a great warrior, though no vulgar fighter; loving power, but understanding his people's needs, and using his power nobly; a king who keeps faith¹—who, while he insists upon every legal right, and sometimes strains legality,² can give way; such a monarch as England was not to see until Elizabeth ruled. A thorough Englishman, he allows no foreigners to find place; comprehensive in idea, he seeks to incorporate Wales and Scotland; the state and church alike are made as independent of Rome as can be without a revolution for which the time has not come. The principle of the great earl, that 'what touches all shall be allowed of all,' is taken in its integrity; church, nobles, people, alike have their share in the making of laws; all are put in direct relation to the crown, government is thoroughly organised. The nation, acting for the exigencies of the moment, and without seeing clearly what was to be the end at which it should aim, had found its destiny under Simon and Edward. 'What under Henry I. was the effect of despotic routine, and under Henry II. the result of law imposed from without, becomes under Edward I. a definite organisation worked by an indwelling energy.' From the Conquest to the winning of the Charter forms one epoch; from the winning to the confirmation forms another; the third, which

¹ The motto, 'Pactum serva' ('keep faith'), which was placed on his tomb, was broken but once. Following the evil precedents of John and Henry III., he obtained, in 1205, a bull from Clement V. absolving him from the charters. Fortunately the Scotch war intervened and saved him from disgrace.

² As when, after the confirmation of

the charters, he retained, as not expressly forbidden, the right of exacting poll tax, or tallage, from the towns which, as being almost all on the royal demesne, not part of any fief, were on a different footing from the rest of the country. This was given up by Edward III., 1240 (p. 115).

lasts until 1689, broken by the despotism of the Tudors, and the attempted despotism of the Stuarts, contains the growth of the power of the House of Commons.

Dates—Henry III. and Edward I

	A.D.		A.D.
Final issue of Great Charter	1217	Subjugation of Wales	1283
Fall of Hubert de Burgh	1282	Baliol does homage for Scot-	
Provisions of Oxford	1258	land	1291
Battle of Lewes	1264	'Model' Parliament	1295
Representation of towns in parlia-		Confirmation of the Charters	1297-1300
ment	1265	Wallace	1297-1305
Battle of Evesham, and death of		Robert Bruce crowned	1306
Simon de Montfort	1265	Death of Edward I.	1307
Great legislation of Edward up to	1290		

BOOK V

CAUSES OF THE POWER OF THE COMMONS

1307—1399

CHAPTER I

EDWARD II. 1307-1327

SECTION 1—*Piers Gaveston and Thomas of Lancaster.
Bannockburn*

EDWARD II. had grown up idle, frivolous, and extravagant. 'He was the first king since the Conquest who was not a man of business.'

Piers Gaveston The early loss of his mother, and the incessant absorption of his father's time in business, had left him to the companionship of his foster brother, Piers Gaveston, a youth of Gascon descent. Gaveston was brave and skilful in arms; but so unfortunate was his influence that Edward I. had dismissed him from the country, and had made him swear never to return.

The king's first act was to recall him, and to shower upon him honours and wealth. The earldom of Cornwall, reserved by Edward I. for one of his younger sons, placed him in the first rank of the baronage. He was left regent of the kingdom when Edward went to France to marry Isabella; and at the coronation walked in the place of honour, bearing the crown before the king; old officials were dismissed for no other reason than for having opposed his extravagance in former days. Probably his scoffing treatment of the barons, the nicknames he attached to them, alluding to their personal appearance, and their defeats at his hands in the tilt-yard, had even more to do with their ill-will. Edward was forced by them to send him away for a time; but his dismissal was made an occasion for still higher gifts and honours. He was appointed governor of Ireland with almost royal state.

But the next year, 1309, Edward again recalled his 'brother,' greeting him with the most lavish affection. The barons at first refused to attend parliament while Gaveston was there. Then they brushed the king contemptuously aside, and forced him The 'Ordinances' to surrender the executive into the hands of a council of 21. In 1311 this council put before him their 'Ordinances.' Gaveston was to be banished, the royal extravagance checked, and all

power put into the hands of the barons, though parliament was to meet once a year.

Edward was forced to yield, and Gaveston was dismissed to Flanders. Within a few months the king had recalled him for the third time, though to keep him from the clutches of the barons he took him upon a campaign in Scotland, in which he showed himself a good soldier. This infatuated conduct was the favourite's death-warrant.

The most powerful of his enemies was the king's cousin Thomas, earl of Lancaster—the son of Edmund, Edward I.'s brother, who died in Gascony (p. 98)—a coarse, unscrupulous man, whom Gaveston had nicknamed 'The Hog.' Lord of a large part of the north and midlands, he was a serious rival to the throne. With Pembroke and Surrey he went in pursuit of Gaveston. After narrowly escaping capture at Tynemouth, Edward succeeded in shipping his friend to Scarborough Castle. Here he surrendered to Pembroke, upon a pledge of safety. But the Earl of Warwick, 'Black Dog,' dragged him from bed and carried him barefoot and bareheaded to Warwick. Pembroke was not there, and a proposal to keep his pledge was dealt with by the argument: 'You have caught the fox; if you let him go you will have to hunt him again.' Gaveston was condemned, and executed June 19, 1312, at Blacklowe Hill, near Warwick, and Edward was obliged to pardon all concerned in the deed.

During these years Edward had been the tool of Philip IV. in an act of gross injustice—the suppression of the Templars. In 1118 nine poor knights had been established by the Patriarch of Jerusalem in a community near the Temple, to watch the roads and protect pilgrims.

By degrees they increased in number; money and lands were bestowed upon them. At the close of the Crusades the Templars became indolent and corrupt. Wherever they settled, and especially in England under the patronage of Richard I. and John, they acquired vast wealth. In France Philip IV., greedy for their possessions, suddenly laid hands upon all their habitations, on the ground that the knights were guilty of sorcery and many abominable crimes, imprisoned and tortured them, and urged other princes to do the same. Easily influenced, Edward issued orders for their suppression. They were dissolved in 1311, their wealth confiscated, and assigned to the rival order of Hospitaliers, or Knights of St. John, who held Rhodes against the Turks, or placed in the treasury. Their churches, circular in form, may be seen in London, where the present Temple was their monastery, in Northampton, in Cambridge, and at Little Maplestead in Essex.

Meanwhile Robert Bruce was rapidly becoming master of Scotland. He captured Linlithgow in 1311 and Perth in 1312; in 1313 Roxburgh fell to James Douglas, and Edinburgh to Randolph, earl of Moray; Edward Bruce, brother of the king, captured Dundee and the Isle of Man. Then Stirling was so closely invested that its commander promised to surrender on Midsummer Day, if not previously relieved. This at last roused Edward. With the Earl of Pembroke he put himself at the head of 100,000 men and marched in June 1314 to the relief of Stirling.

With 40,000 spearmen, a few light troops, and less than 1,000 cavalry, Bruce awaited this enormous host. His right, under Edward Bruce, rested on a marshy stream, which also lay between the fronts of the two armies, the Bannock-burn; his left, under Randolph, upon the road from Edinburgh. To protect this wing from a flank cavalry charge he dug a number of pits, which were concealed with turf and brushwood. Walter the Steward, or Stuart, the son-in-law of Bruce, and James Douglas led the centre. Bruce himself was in reserve, with his cavalry on his right. The disposition of the English troops, on the other hand, was most unskilful.

No attempt was made to outflank the Scots. The 100,000 men were all crowded together for a front attack, the archers far in advance and unprotected on their flanks. The attempt of a body of horse to slip past the Scotch left and reach the castle was foiled by Bruce's watchfulness (June 23rd), and the same evening a skirmish, in which Bruce took part at great personal risk, ended in favour of the Scots.

On Monday, June 24th, the English archers began the attack. The Scots were falling fast, when Bruce sent his brother with the cavalry round the marsh, charged the undefended archers in flank, and rolled up their whole line with such slaughter that they took no further part in the battle. Then Edward launched his masses of cavalry upon the Scotch pikemen. But now there were no archers as at Falkirk to open a way into the square, and the English were driven backwards time after time. Bruce, seeing them waver, charged with his reserve. Suddenly, too, upon the rising ground in the rear of the Scots—since known as Gillies' Hill—appeared what seemed to be a fresh army. This was really the camp followers and baggage warders, unable to restrain their zeal. The English fled in confusion; hundreds fell into the pits and were slain there. Gloucester, Clifford, and William the Marshal were killed; Hereford was taken; Edward, with James Douglas hard in pursuit, galloped to Dunbar, whence he escaped by sea to Berwick. Stirling surrendered the next day. Scotland had won her independence, though it was not acknowledged for fourteen years (p. 112).



Longmans, Green & Co., London & New York.

F. S. Waller.



The effects of this defeat were far-reaching. The north of England up to York was speedily in Bruce's hands. Wales rose at the news. Edward Bruce landed in Ireland, and for two years, in alliance with the native kings, had great success against the English nobles. In 1316 he was joined by the king himself, but through his own rashness was defeated and slain on October 14, 1318. Robert had already returned to Scotland, leaving Ireland in utter anarchy.

SECTION 2.—*Revenge. Family Treason. The Despensers.*

But it was by Edward himself that the disaster of Bannockburn was most felt; for it left him discredited and powerless before the barons. Lancaster assumed the entire direction of affairs, and in 1316 became President of the Council on condition that Edward consulted him on all matters of importance, observed the Ordinances, and dismissed his evil counsellors.

England was meanwhile in a state which recalled the year 1087 (p. 47). The crops had failed, the sheep and cattle died in the fields from pestilence, and people were starving by hundreds on the roadside. The incessant rains spoiled the fruit crop. The great landowners dismissed their retainers, who betook themselves to brigandage. Fever and dysentery spread widely. Horses and dogs were the food of the starving wretches; it was even said that in their misery parents ate the bodies of their dead children.

Lancaster was no Simon de Montfort; he was no more capable of good government than Edward. The Scotch ravages went on unchecked; private war broke out among the nobles. New parties formed themselves. Pembroke, angry at the violation of his pledge to Gaveston, headed the personal enemies of Lancaster; Despenser, son of the justiciar who died at Evesham, rallied the friends of the king. All were for a short time united in an attempt to reconquer Berwick, which had fallen to Bruce. It failed completely; on the other hand, a battle took place at Mitton-on-Swale, September 1318, in which 8,000 English were slain. It was called the 'Chapter of Mitton,' from the large number of English priests who took part in the fight.

The Scotch campaign over, the nobles again fell asunder. Had Edward possessed ordinary prudence or capacity, he might now have escaped from Lancaster's tyranny. His ultimate ruin was owing to his own folly and weak forgetfulness of the past.

The place of Gaveston had been taken by Hugh Despenser, son of the Despenser just mentioned. He was married to Margaret, eldest

daughter of the Earl of Gloucester who fell at Bannockburn. He thus became possessor of part of his estates on the Welsh border, and soon quarrelled with the other great lords of the marches, who joined Lancaster against him. In 1321 the Earl of Hereford and Roger Mortimer, the two most powerful, refused to attend the court while the Despensers were there, and produced a long series of charges against them before parliament. Both father and son were condemned to exile, and the king was again forced to grant a full pardon to their opponents.

But the triumph of Lancaster and his friends was short. Mutual jealousies are sure to break out among men who have no object but the satisfaction of their own ambition or private hatred. An insult to the queen from one of Lancaster's adherents roused all the chivalrous feeling left in Edward. He marched to Leeds in Kent, captured the castle, and hung the governor who had offered the affront. Pembroke and the king's half-brothers, the Earls of Norfolk and Kent, with many of the barons, joined him. The Mortimers submitted. Lancaster fell back upon Scotland, with which country he was now in close alliance. But at Boroughbridge he was intercepted and captured by the governor of Carlisle. He was taken to Pontefract and executed, in revenge for Gaveston's death. Clifford and Mowbray, the two great barons of the north, suffered at York, and other executions followed. Edward then constrained the parliament of May 1322, at which Wales was for the first time represented by twenty-four members from each of its two divisions, to repeal the Ordinances, and to declare that henceforth no ordinances should be made except in parliament, 'by our lord the king, and by the consent of the prelates, earls and barons, and the commonalty of the realm.' The sentence against the Despensers was revoked, and the father made Earl of Winchester. The annulling of the royal power had failed again, as it had failed under John and Henry III. (pp. 84, 92).

Lancaster had no claim, such as had Sir Simon the Righteous, to respect or pity. Nevertheless, so wretched was Edward's incapacity that popular feeling soon regarded him as a saint; miracles were worked at his tomb, as at those of Becket and De Montfort; the table on which the Ordinances were signed was regarded as a holy relic. Another unsuccessful campaign in Scotland in 1323, in which Bruce, following hard upon the retreating king, nearly took him prisoner at Byland, revived the contempt of the barons. Rumours were spread that he was a changeling and no true son of Edward I. Roger Mortimer escaped from the Tower to France. Adam Orleton,

bishop of Hereford, became on personal grounds a bitter enemy. The king himself by his petulance alienated the church.

Weakness at home meant weakness abroad. Edward was suddenly called on to do homage to Charles IV. of France for Gascony, or forfeit the province. But, for the sake of the Despensers, he dared not leave the kingdom. In an evil hour he allowed his wife Isabella, Charles's sister, a bad woman, and a bitter enemy of the Despensers, to go to Paris to intercede with her brother. He then agreed to give up Gascony to Charles, to be restored when he had done homage; and he paid the expenses of the war. Once more the Despensers forbade him to leave. Feigning illness, he sent his son Edward, at Isabella's suggestion, to do homage in his stead. Wife and child, with Roger Mortimer, joined in a league against the Despensers, Isabella declaring that she would wear widow's weeds until they were banished; while Orleton organised the conspiracy in England.

In 1326 Isabella sought the aid of Count William of Hainault. By the betrothal of young Edward to his daughter Philippa she secured a large force, and on September 24 the expedition landed at Harwich. With the queen, the prince, and Mortimer were the king's relatives the Earls of Kent and Richmond. They were joined by the Lancastrian lords and the Earl of Norfolk; by the primate, and several other prelates; by all the eastern barons; and by the great towns in the east and south, which had close commercial connections with Flanders and Hainault. Edward fled with the Despensers to the west, and the queen entered London. To stop all attempts at reconciliation Orleton preached on the text, 'I will put enmity between thee and the woman.' Edward tried in vain to escape to Ireland. The Earl of Winchester, 90 years of age, was taken in Bristol, and executed with horrible barbarity. The son was captured shortly afterwards, and hung at Hereford, on a gallows 50 feet high, with a crown of nettles upon his head. Edward voluntarily gave himself up. Before a parliament¹ summoned by writs from the prince, the question was put, 'Will you have Edward or his son to reign?' Four bishops alone dissented from the general reply. 'The voice of the people,' said the primate, 'is the voice of God.' Orleton headed a deputation to Edward to receive his abdication, and his son was proclaimed king, January 24, 1327. The dethroned monarch, with an allowance of 30s. a day, was placed in the care of Henry of Lancaster, brother of Earl Thomas.

¹ At this parliament the Welsh were represented for the last time until Henry VIII.

But Isabella's contempt had become hatred. Lancaster was removed for her creature Maltravers. Edward was taken from castle to castle, until he found his final dungeon at Berkeley. Here his keepers murdered him, on September 22, in a manner which left no trace but the agonized expression of the features. He was buried quietly at St. Peter's, at Gloucester.

Everything was now done to satisfy the Lancastrian party, the commons, and the church. A prayer was sent to the pope for the canonisation of Earl Thomas. Henry of Lancaster was made nominal Isabella and guardian to the young king. But Isabella and Mortimer were sole rulers, and Orleton alone was in their confidence. A pension of 20,000*l.* was settled upon the queen; Mortimer was created Earl of March. And on January 25, 1328, Edward III. was married to Philippa of Hainault.

The inroads of the Scotch had at once to be met. Moray, Mar, and Douglas, poured over the border with 20,000 men in light marching order. In a night attack Douglas surprised the young king in his hut, and he was saved only by the presence of mind of his chaplain and servant, who covered him with their garments. A short and inglorious campaign was closed by the peace of Norham, March 1, 1328. Robert, 'by God's grace King of Scotland,' was freed from all claims of homage on payment of 20,000*l.* annually for three years. The Scotch regalia and documents carried off by Edward I., except the coronation stone, were restored; and Isabella's daughter Joanna was married to David Bruce, Robert's son. His work accomplished, the old king died June 7, 1329.

Already a natural reaction threatened Mortimer. His arrogance, rapacity, and undisguised connexion with the queen, united with the compunction of the nobles for the king's death and disgust at the Scotch peace, told rapidly against him. For a time he maintained himself by violence and fraud. When Henry of Lancaster refused to attend the parliament, Mortimer marched against him, wasted his lands, and forced him to submit with the loss of half of his estates. Edmund of Kent, half brother of Edward II., was deliberately drawn into conspiracy, arrested, tried by his peers, and executed. But the young king was now a man. He felt the shame of his father's murder and of his mother's adultery. With the help of Henry of Lancaster and Lord William Montague he determined to rule alone. The blow was struck when parliament met at Nottingham, October 1330. Edward and his friends made their way at night by an underground passage into

Independence of Scotland acknowledged

Death of Robert Bruce

the castle, seized Mortimer amid the entreaties of Isabella, and brought him to trial on November 26. No defence was allowed; he was condemned and hung on the common gallows at Tyburn, November 29. Isabella was allowed to retire to Rising, with an allowance of 3,000*l.* a year; and neither she nor Orleton took any further part in public affairs. Through the wisdom of Henry of Lancaster and Montague, now made Earl of Salisbury, everything was done to heal the sores of past years. The memories of the Despencers, the Earl of Kent, and even Mortimer were alike honoured. The land at length had internal peace, and the actual reign of Edward III. began.

CHAPTER II

EDWARD III. 1327-1377. THE HUNDRED YEARS WAR

SECTION 1.—*Crécy and the 'Black Death'*

FOR some years Edward was occupied chiefly with Scotland, where Edward Baliol, son of John Baliol, with Edward's connivance, invaded the coast of Fife in 1332, and defeated the patriot party at Dupplin Moor; but was then driven over the border. Edward came to his aid, routed the Scots at Halidon Hill, near Berwick, July 18, 1333, with the loss of 80,000 men, captured Berwick, planted it with London merchants, and allowed Baliol to be recognised as king by the Scotch parliament, on condition of the cession to England of all the rich part of the lowlands. But the Scotch as a nation never accepted these terms. In 1341 David Bruce returned to head the resistance. Edward Baliol was again driven out, and in 1342 Edward, engaged in a mightier contest, made peace.

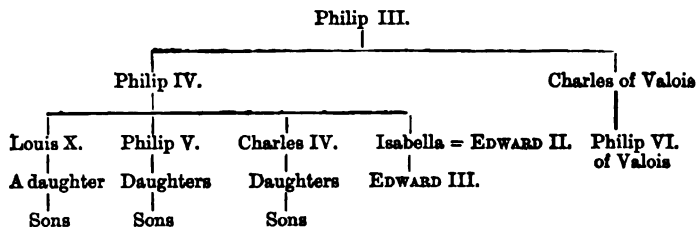
There were three leading causes for the war which Edward now began with France, and which with slight interruptions lasted for nearly a century. They were the continued aid which the Scotch received from France, the danger of Gascony, and the state of Flanders. The friendship of the great cloth-working towns, such as Ghent and Bruges, was of vital importance to England, for they were the market for English wool, just as England is now the market for Australian wool; they were also the market for our malt, the great product of the eastern counties. Led by Jacob van Arteveldt, they had quarrelled with the Count of Flanders, their feudal lord, himself a vassal of France; and the French king was preparing to assist him in crushing them. The

English wool trade would then be at the mercy of France; and Edward was therefore determined to uphold them.

The ostensible ground of quarrel was totally different. Edward claimed the crown of France itself. Philip IV. had three sons—Louis, Philip, and Charles—each of whom came to the throne and left daughters, but no son. He had also a daughter—Isabella—the mother of Edward III. By what was known as the ‘Salic Law,’ no female could wear the French crown.¹ But Edward argued that, though his mother had no claim, she could transmit one to her son. The French rejected such a doctrine with ridicule. Even had it been admitted, there were prior claimants in the grandsons of Louis, Philip, and Charles. The male heir was Philip of Valois, son of Philip IV.’s brother, Charles of Valois, and he now became Philip VI. Each monarch gathered allies. Edward had his brother-in-law the emperor, with his great vassal princes of Brabant, Guelders, Hainault, Juliers, and Namur. Philip had the kings of Navarre and Bohemia, the dukes of Brittany, Austria, and Lorraine, and the lesser German princes. The English merchants were eager for war, for the French cruisers swept the Channel; the nobles, for they longed for spoil. Parliament gave lavish supplies, which the king supplemented by many irregular methods. The wool bore the chief burden: in 1338 Parliament gave the king half the wool in the realm. He acquired, too, the right of pre-emption, that is, of buying the wool himself before export. He then sold it to Flanders at a high price, and divided the profits with the merchants whom he employed in the transaction.

The nation
eager for
war

GENEALOGICAL TABLE VI



In July 1338 Edward landed at Antwerp, and in 1389 besieged Cambrai. But the apathy of the allies led to failure, and he came home laden with debt. Before he left he had assumed the title

¹ There was really no such thing as a Salic law, which was heard of for the first time under Philip ‘the Tall,’ 1316. But for more than three centuries every king of France had been succeeded by

his own son, and thus the custom had become established. The *Salians* were a Frankish tribe.—Kitchin, *Hist. of France*, vol. i. pp. 72, 88, 385.

of King of France, by the advice of Van Arteveldt, with the motto of 'Dieu et mon droit,' and quartered the French lilies with the English lion. This was to give the Flemish towns a good excuse for openly joining him.

For the liberal supplies which they gave to enable Edward to begin a fresh campaign, the Commons² demanded many concessions. Edward was forced to surrender the right to exact tallage from the towns, which Edward I. had retained (p. 104, note), with irregular methods of taxation of all kinds.

In June 1340 he again sailed to Flanders, this time with the open assistance of the great Flemish towns. Philip had mustered a vast armament of vessels of unusual size in the harbour of Sluys. They carried turrets at their mastheads with huge stones to be dropped on an enemy's deck, and were fastened together by iron chains. Getting sun, wind, and tide at his back, Edward bore down undauntedly on their line, June 24.³ The French fleet was utterly destroyed, and 28,000 men perished. The Channel was cleared of French cruisers, and for thirty years England was mistress of the seas. But there was no corresponding success on land. St. Omer and Tournai were both besieged, but without success.

Without warning Edward suddenly appeared in London. He found the Tower unguarded and scarcely anyone at his post. He imprisoned the judges, deposed the chancellor and the treasurer, and filled the chief posts with laymen. A bitter quarrel ensued with Archbishop Stratford, brother of the chancellor, who claimed the right of answering charges brought against him in full parliament. He made his claim good, and an act was passed that peers, whether ministers of the crown or not, should not be brought to trial except before their peers in parliament. The Commons insisted also

Responsibility of ministers

that the auditors of the public accounts should be appointed by king and parliament; that ministers should be chosen by the king and the lords, and should be sworn in parliament

² The term 'Commons' now includes both knights of the shire and burgesses. This is very important. The knights of the shire were, by birth and standing, more connected with the baronage. By being politically joined to the burgesses a bond of union was formed between all three classes, and the towns and country too had common interest.

³ It must be clearly understood that there was no such thing as a 'Royal Navy,' as we understand it now. Edward III. did indeed support some

ships, and in his reign the size of warships greatly increased; but they were few. The real naval force of the kingdom was that of the Cinque Ports (Hastings, Sandwich, Dover, Romney, Hythe, with Winchelsea and Rye) which were the guardians of the narrow seas, and had very remarkable privileges. The 'Royal Navy of the Cinque Ports' was called out when needful.—Burrows, *The Cinque Ports* (especially chaps. v. and vi.), in 'English Historic Towns.'

to do right, and that they should resign and answer complaints at each new parliament. In other words, the doctrine of responsibility of ministers was clearly laid down.

The war was resumed in 1341 on a disputed succession in Brittany. To England it was important that Brittany should not be under French power, and Edward therefore espoused the cause of John de Montfort, the claimant opposed to Philip's nephew, Charles of Valois. Hostilities lasted until 1343, when a truce was made.

But since Philip VI. maintained that England should hold Guienne as a fief of France only, and Edward that it was his in full sovereignty, the truce could not become a peace. The murder of Arteveldt in 1345, and the consequent loss of Flemish support, compelled Edward to change his point of attack. He despatched two expeditions; one to Brittany, the other, under Henry of Lancaster, to Guienne. Lancaster was a brave and able man, and all Gascony was soon in his hands. In 1346 Philip sent an overwhelming force to crush him, and Edward made ready to go to the rescue. Suddenly, altering his plan, he threw himself with 40,000 men on the undefended coast of Normandy at La Hogue. Philip, taken by surprise, had but a small force with him; but by breaking down the bridges on the Seine he prevented Edward from attacking him until he had had time to collect a vastly superior army. When at length, out-manceuvring his enemy, Edward effected a crossing at Poissy on August 16, his only thought was escape. He turned northward, with the French hard in pursuit, and with a rapidly diminishing army reached the Somme, only to find the bridges there also broken down, except at Abbeville, where the defence was too strong to be forced. But a peasant guided him to a place below Abbeville, Blanchetaque, or 'White Shingle,' where at low tide the water was only knee-deep. There he fought his way across on the 24th, Philip's vanguard coming up just in time to capture some of his rearward line. The next day he reached the wood of Crécy, and turned to bay. A day's grace was given him by the unwillingness of the French to fight on the feast of St. Louis, and he used it well. At dawn on the 26th he and his son heard mass and took the sacrament, and then made them ready for battle.

The English army was on high ground, the right covered by the village of Crécy and the stream La Maye, the left by the village of Wadicourt. It was in three divisions. Of these, two were in one line—the left under the prince and Warwick, the right under Arundel. Each division had archers on both wings, and doubtless on the slope in front, with the men-at-arms in the centre. The archers were arranged in the manner of the points of a harrow,

The Crécy
campaign

Battle of
Crécy

so that each man in the second line could shoot between two of the first. Behind was Edward with the reserve. A fortification was made of the waggons on the left rear.

The French had marched confusedly from Abbeville, and attacked in the evening from the south-east. They had not intended to join battle until next morning, but the rear division pressed on the front, and all formation and restraint was lost. First came 15,000 Genoese crossbowmen, with the King of Bohemia and his son. Uttering three 'hurrahs,' they advanced up the slope. But a storm of rain broke in their faces, and then the level beams of the setting sun dazzled their eyes. Moreover, an English archer could shoot three arrows while a crossbowman discharged a single bolt. They wavered and fled. Then the second line of the French, riding down the crossbowmen, but falling by heaps before the flight of arrows, came on at a gallop. They reached the English line, and a desperate hand to hand fight took place. The prince, beaten to his knees, was saved only by the devotion of his standard bearer, and the timely succour of twenty knights sent by the king. At length the superior fighting qualities of the English prevailed. The French were hurled back with enormous loss. Neither Edward's reserve nor Philip's rearward line took part in the action. Philip fled first to La Broye, to the north-east, and thence to Amiens. The last hour's fighting had been by a clear moon, and it was deep night when the contest ceased.⁴

The final scene before next morning's pursuit was the meeting between the king and his son. Edward himself put on the spurs so worthily won, and gave the prince the honour of victory before the whole army. The next day the English fell upon a fresh body of French who, ignorant of the calamity, had marched during the night to join their comrades, and massacred them to a man; thousands of fugitives were butchered, and the second day's slaughter almost equalled that of the first.

The immediate result of the battle was the blockade of Calais. For nearly a year it made a brave but despairing resistance, and only ^{Capture of} surrendered August 4, 1347, when reduced to the last ^{Calais} extremity of famine. The inhabitants were driven out and were replaced—like those of Berwick—by English colonists. It was made the 'staple port' for English trade—that is, the only port at which English exported goods were sold; and thus the Flemish difficulty was overcome. Its capture, moreover, enabled an English

⁴ It has always been said that the motto of the Prince of Wales, 'Ich dien,' with the three feathers, was taken from the crest of the old king of Bohemia, who fell in this fight. But both motto and sign belonged to the prince's mother, Philippa of Hainault, and it was doubtless from her that he derived it. The kings of Bohemia had no such crest.

army at any time to march right into the heart of France. A truce was now made, and in October 1347 Edward returned to England, the most famous warrior in Europe.

While Edward lay before Calais good news had poured in. In Guienne his armies had conquered not only that duchy, but nearly all Aquitaine. David Bruce (David II.) had been met on October 17th, 1346, at Neville's Cross by the Archbishop of York and the great barons of the north, defeated with a loss of 20,000 men, and taken prisoner. He remained captive until 1359, when he was recognised as vassal king.

England now grew wanton on her spoils. The war had created a population unfit for anything but war. All classes, even the clergy, became extravagant, dissolute, shameless. Edward III., the representative of chivalry,⁵ with its follies, its fantastic codes of honour, and its immorality, joined to much that was noble and generous, led the general revel. It was now that he instituted the famous Order of the Garter. Tournaments were frequently held, which lasted for two or three weeks, and were scenes of prolonged debauchery. The nation seemed drunk with the glory it had won; and, like a drunken man, it had a rude awakening. In 1348 appeared that awful pestilence which, known as the 'Black Death,' had followed the western course of commerce from Asia. For two years England was a prey to its ravages. It is reckoned that more than one-third of the population perished.⁶ All classes suffered alike. In London 200 died daily; in Norwich almost the whole population was swept away; in Bristol 'the living were scarce able to bury the dead.' Parliament could not meet, the law courts were closed, the churches were not served. A Scotch army, which assembled to ravage the north, was attacked by the plague in its camp, and before they could disband 5,000 men were dead.⁷

SECTION 2.—*Supremacy at Sea, Poitiers, and Treaty of Brétigny*

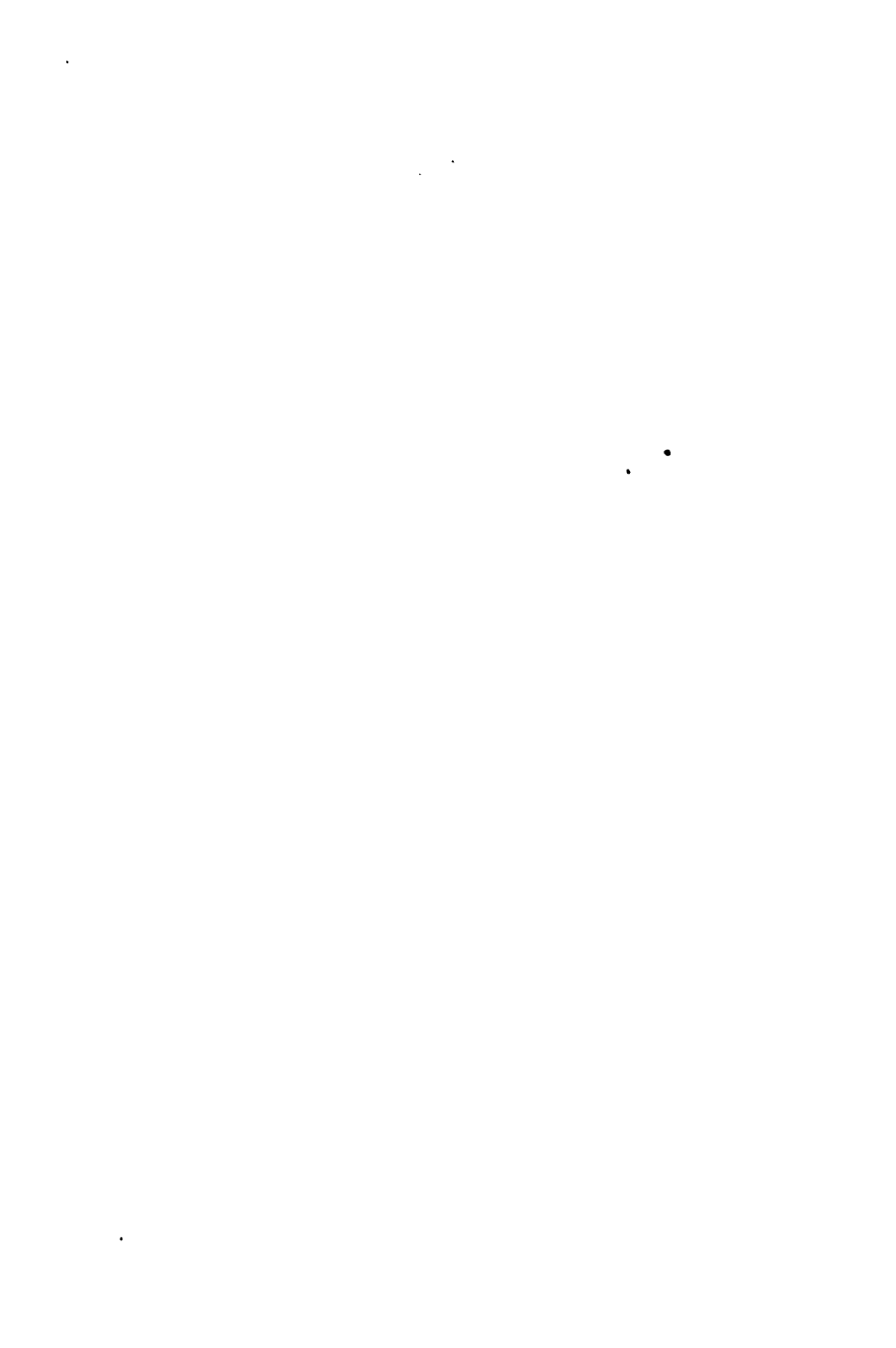
It was not for several years that war on a great scale could be thought of. One brilliant exploit there had been of Edward and the navy

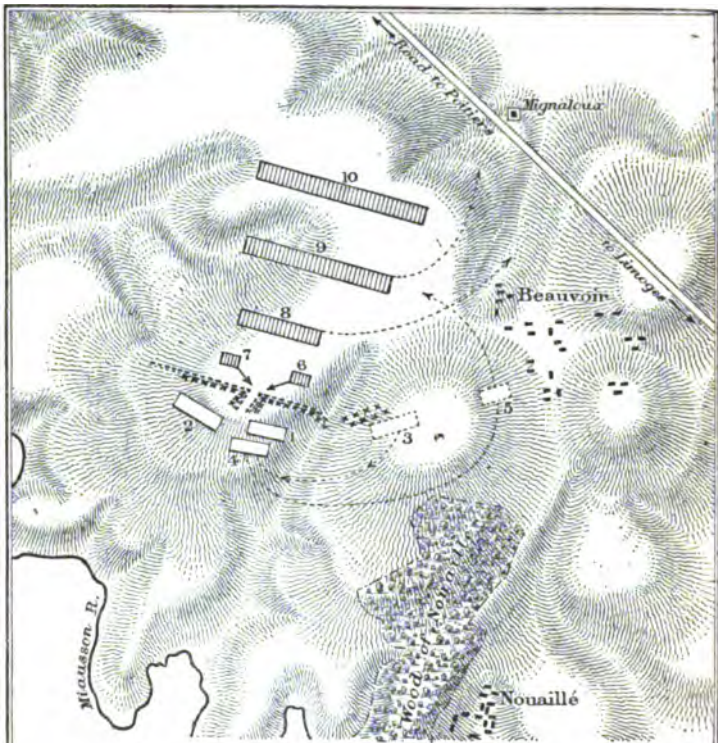
⁵ On chivalry see the last chapter of Hallam's *Middle Ages*.

⁶ For a most graphic account of the destruction read Jessopp, *The Black Death in East Anglia*.

⁷ In the midst of these horrors appeared the 'Flagellants.' Their mission was to expiate in their own persons the national sins. For 33 days, the number of years in the Saviour's life, they every morning stripped to the waist

and scourged themselves with knotted cords until the blood formed a pool in the street. Then, clad in sackcloth from the loins to the feet, and chanting a penitential hymn, they marched through the towns, prostrating themselves with their hands in the shape of a cross, while the 'master' flogged their naked backs and shoulders as they lay. Warburton, 'Edward III.' in *Epochs of Modern History*.





BATTLE OF POITIERS 1356,

adapted from Baker's Chronicle, ed. by E. Maunde Thompson for the Clarendon Press.

----- Hedge and ditch with gap.

XXXXXXXXXX English Archers.

1. Warwick

3. First position of Pr. of Wales

4. Second position of Pr. of W.

2. Salisbury

5. Captal de Buch

6. Andechs

7. Clermont

8. The Dauphin

5. Captal de Buch

6. Andechs

7. Clermont

8. The Dauphin

9. Orléans

10. King John

One English Mile.



Longmans, Green & Co., London & New York.

F. B. Waller.

in 1350, the defeat of the Spanish fleet, in what was known as the battle of 'L'Espagnols sur mer,' fought between Sandwich and Sluys. The conduct of Edward himself describes the whole fight. At the first onset his ship, the 'Cogge Thomas,' the same in which he fought at Sluys, was run down by a huge Spaniard. Her mainmast went by the board, and she began to fill; but Edward and his knights swarmed on to the enemy's decks, and with sword and axe hewed down the crew. Then in their prize they bore down on the rest of the enemy, while their own ship sank. So fought the Prince of Wales and all the English crews. Of the Spanish ships 20 were captured and not a man in them left alive. It was this exploit which gave to Edward his title of 'King of the Sea.'⁸

In 1355 Edward was ready for another invasion of France. The Black Prince sailed for Guienne, carried desolation from Bordeaux to the Mediterranean, and returned laden with spoil. Another force landed in Brittany. Edward himself marched from Calais to Amiens, but was recalled by a new inroad of the Scotch. Leaving the Duke of Lancaster, the son of Henry of Lancaster, now dead, to lead his men, he flew north, relieved Berwick, caused himself to be crowned King of Scotland at Bamborough, and then visited the Lothians with a devastation so fearful that February 1356 was ever afterwards known as 'Burnt Candlemas.'

Lancaster had meanwhile retired before King John into Brittany. The Black Prince, after a victorious and destructive raid from the Dordogne to the Loire, fell back towards Bordeaux. On Saturday, September 17th, near Poitiers, he found that John, with 50,000 men, was close upon him. He at once faced north, and got ready for fight with the confidence of unbroken victory, though he had less than 8,000 men. As at Crécy, a day's grace was given him by the accident of the next day being Sunday, which the cardinals persuaded John to keep unstained by bloodshed.

The English army was in three 'battles' under Warwick, the prince, and Salisbury. The position was a plateau sloping on the right into a marshy valley. A long hedge and ditch crossed the plateau and followed the slope into the marsh. Warwick's division was on the slope behind the hedge. Salisbury was to his left on the plateau, facing a gap in the hedge through which ran a road, flanked by the hedge on either side for a short distance into the English lines. The archers of both divisions lined the hedge and faced the gap. The prince's division took post on a hill on the opposite side of the marshy valley. The French were in three great

⁸ Burrows, *Cinque Ports*, ch. vi. p. 144.

' battles, one behind the other, led by the Dauphin, Orleans, and King John. They were all on foot, either in imitation of Edward at Crécy, or because of the slaughter which the English archery worked among the horses. In front were two small bodies of cavalry under Clermont and Andrehem. These made for the gap, but were plied by Salisbury's archers on both sides and in front, and in the rear by some of Warwick's men who had moved on to the slope of the hill to the right, and were shot down to a man. Then the Dauphin with the first great ' battle ' came on. The prince returned hastily from the hill on the right to strengthen Salisbury and Warwick, and a tremendous hand-to-hand struggle took place. It ended in the victory of the English, who, however, were carefully kept in hand, until not only the Dauphin's ' battle ' was shattered, but the second division under Orleans had fled without a blow. Then King John, with 20,000 men and all the great nobles of France, advanced. One of the prince's officers, Captal de Buch, now led a small force of cavalry and archers round the hill to the right, unseen by the French; and, while all three divisions of the English dashed over the hedge and ditch and engaged John's force in front, rushed down upon his flank and rear with all the weight of man and horse, the archers doing frightful execution.

The king, with his little son Philip crouching behind him, fought valiantly. Twice wounded in the face, he was at length beaten down and made prisoner with his son. The Archbishop of Sens, 40 barons, and nearly 2,000 knights, were also taken; the greater part of the French nobles lay dead. A truce of two years was made with the Dauphin Charles, and the prince returned to England with his prisoners. He rode with John through the streets of London, amid a scene of enthusiasm never before witnessed, to where Edward sat upon his throne; according to the chivalrous courtesy of the age the prince himself was mounted on a pony, his prisoner on a splendid war-horse.

The state of France was terrible. The treasury was empty, the nation humiliated, the government demoralised. The disbanded soldiers formed themselves into free companies, who lived by plunder, and were ready to sell themselves to the highest bidder. Some of these were commanded by Englishmen, of whom Sir Robert Knowles was the most famous. The ransom of the prisoners was paid by the oppression of the serfs, who were reduced to the deepest misery. Civil war broke out in Paris; and this was followed by the appalling revolt of the famished and despairing peasants, known as the ' Jacquerie,'⁹ to the cry of ' Death to all the nobles ! ' and by the still more fearful vengeance taken by their masters when they could gather strength.

⁹ So called from the nickname of ' Jacques Bonhomme ' given to the peasants by the gentry.

But France rallied gallantly. The extravagant conditions of peace demanded by Edward were rejected, and, though he marched right to the gates of Paris, he was there foiled, largely through the want of food in the ravaged and deserted country. The Norman sailors swept the Channel once more, and attacked our coasts. At length ^{Treaty of} ~~the~~ ^{Brittany} ~~peace~~ was made at Brétigny 1360. Aquitaine was ceded to England in full sovereignty, with Montreuil, Ponthieu, Calais, Guisnes, and their districts. Edward gave up his claim to the French crown and to all territories except those mentioned, *i.e.*, to all the possessions derived from Henry II. personally. The Black Prince at once took over the government of Aquitaine.

Edward had meanwhile been strengthening himself at home by the marriages of his sons. The Black Prince married his cousin, daughter and heiress of the Earl of Kent, murdered by Mortimer; Lionel, the second brother, married Isabella, heiress of the Earl of Ulster, and part heiress of both the Earls of Gloucester and Hereford; he was made Duke of Clarence and governor of Ireland; John of ^{Edward's} ~~sons~~ Ghent, the third, married Blanche, daughter and heiress of the Duke of Lancaster, the grandson of the St. Thomas of Edward II.'s time, and when the duke died from a recurrence of the Plague, succeeded to his title and vast possessions. Edward's object was to get all the power and territory he could into the royal family, and thus make himself strong against the baronage. Thomas of Woodstock, his youngest son, afterwards Earl of Gloucester, married one of the daughters and heiresses of the Bohuns of Hereford, and John of Ghent's son Henry, afterwards Henry IV., the other. The importance of these alliances, as creating a powerful body of kinsmen of the king, will be seen later.

SECTION 8.—*The Black Prince in Spain. Failure.*

Though there was now formal peace, fighting had not ceased. In Brittany it was especially severe, and the English fought several engagements and one pitched battle, Auray, to enable John de Montfort (p. 116) to secure his power there. Still more important was the conflict in Spain. The hatred aroused by the atrocities of Pedro the Cruel had enabled his illegitimate brother Henry of Trastamare to drive him from the throne of Castille. But Pedro was ^{Campaign of} ~~in~~ ^{Navarrete} in close alliance with Edward III., while Charles V. of France—for John had died in England—supported Henry. In January 1367 the Black Prince led 10,000 veteran troops over the snow-clad Pyrenees, and won a great victory, April 8rd, in a bad cause, against Henry's vastly superior forces at Navarrete, in the plain of the Ebro. But a catastrophe followed. Upon Pedro's pledge of repayment the

prince had borne the expenses of the war, and Pedro now failed him. He fell ill; his men were swept away by disease. Four out of every five died. Broken in spirits and constitution, and crippled with debt, he at length reached Bordeaux with the skeleton of his gallant force. In March 1369 Henry again raised the country upon Pedro, defeated him, and, in an angry interview, stabbed him dead. He then ascended the throne and founded a new dynasty.

To procure money the Black Prince taxed his subjects heavily. They appealed to Charles, who, since the formalities of the treaty of Brétigny had not been completed, was still technically the prince's overlord; and Charles, who had long been preparing the stroke, summoned him to Paris. In bitter wrath he replied that he would come, and at the head of 60,000 men. Charles formally declared war against England, May 1369.

Edward was now old and enervated, and the country had lost enthusiasm for the war. Expeditions were indeed sent out to Gascony and Normandy, but to little purpose. The Black Prince rose from his bed, and, borne in a litter, set out for his last campaign. The mere knowledge that he was in the field roused consternation. He captured Limoges, which had been surprised by the French; but incurred the one blot on his fame by the massacre which, savage with illness and disappointment, he permitted of 3,000 unarmed inhabitants. In 1371, leaving his eldest son dead behind him, he returned with his wife and second son Richard to England. Aquitaine slipped rapidly out of English hands.

A brilliant victory over the Flemish fleet in the French service was forgotten in the more signal disaster of 1372. John of Ghent claimed the throne of Henry of Castille in right of his wife, one of the daughters of Pedro the Cruel. In June a large Spanish fleet intercepted the English under the Earl of Pembroke, and after two days' fighting, ruinously defeated them. In 1373 the French overran Brittany. A splendid army, under John of Ghent, wasted all the north of France in revenge. Charles the Wise refused a pitched battle, but waged an effective guerilla warfare; and as winter came on, John of Ghent, whose retreat was cut off, helplessly marched his force into the defiles of the Auvergne mountains. The sufferings endured were terrible. A few half-starving men reached Bordeaux in the spring, which, with Brest, Cherbourg, Bayonne, and Calais, was practically all that remained to England. England, 'successful in battles,' had been 'thoroughly beaten in war.' The task of retaining a dominion in France was clearly hopeless. On June 27, 1375, a truce for a year was agreed to at Bruges. But Charles insisted

*Conqueror
with Edw
as to
Scotland
and Aquitaine*

The Black
Prince at
Limoges

Defeat at
sea. Failure
of John of
Ghent

Truce of
Bruges

upon the restoration of Calais and Guienne, and English pride refused a permanent peace on those terms. †

SECTION 4.—*Effects of the War. Legislation. John Wiclif. John of Ghent and the Commons*

For forty years the constant demands of the king for money for the war had thrown more and more power into the hands of the Commons.

Equally important was the increasing strength of the anti-papal spirit. The exactions of the Pope roused growing resistance; especially since, as an exile at Avignon, he was under French protection, and money sent to him really went to help France. The influence of Rome had, as under all weak kings, revived during Edward II.'s reign. Edward III. himself had allowed the Papal Provisions, with the old abuses, to come into force again. By exacting from his nominees one, two, or three years' income, the Pope was draining England of money. The country swarmed with papal collectors and lawyers. But in 1351 was passed the *Statute of Provisors*, which enacted that all persons receiving papal provisions should be liable to imprisonment, and that all the preferments to which the Pope nominated should be forfeit for that turn to the king. This however was to a great extent evaded by a private compromise between the king—who did not, like Edward I., head the nation in the matter—and the Pope; and the latter retained the nomination to sees vacant by translation—a violation of the rights of the chapters which caused such dissatisfaction that a congress was held at Bruges in 1374 to settle the question; in 1375 Gregory XI. annulled such appointments by himself and his predecessor, and in 1377 gave a verbal promise to interfere in this way no further.

In 1353, and again in 1365 in a stronger form, was passed the first statute of *Præmunire* ('Præmunire, i.e. præmonere, facias'—'cause to be warned'). This was directed against the power of the papal courts, and inflicted forfeiture, outlawry, and imprisonment upon all who sued in foreign courts for matters cognisable in those of the king. In 1366 all three estates refused to pay John's tribute of 1,000 marks, declaring that he had no right thus to pledge his country. Even Peter's Pence (p. 42) were withheld for a time. In 1362 Edward was compelled to assent to a law that no tax should be laid on wool without consent of parliament, and to another by which the right of purveyance (p. 82) was given up.

The anti-papal spirit was stimulated, not only by papal aggression, but by the greed, power, and ostentation of the prelates, who were now recruited largely from noble families, and still more by the fast rising antagonism to the Mendicant Friars (p. 92), who had sup-

planted the clergy and the monks as preachers, tutors, confessors, and office-holders in the universities, and who with prosperity had become ambitious, insolent, and hypocritical. To this feeling a voice was found in John Wiclif, Master of Baliol College, Oxford, and Doctor of Divinity. A learned, grave, simple, and earnest man, he was intensely national in spirit; he detested the friars, not only for their own faults, but as emissaries of Rome, and as representatives of a foreign system. He was equally severe upon the prelates. He was first employed to defend the course of parliament in the matter of the 1,000 marks; and in his pamphlet he laid down, nearly 200 years before it was recognised, the doctrine that king and parliament are supreme in all cases ecclesiastical as well as lay. His 'Poor Caitiff' was written 'to teach simple men and women the way to heaven.' He formed a brotherhood of 'Poor Priests,' dressed in russet gowns, with no settled abode—an anticipation of Wesley's lay preachers—who should counteract the friars. The Church of Rome, he declared, was no more head of Christendom than any other church. Wiclif is called the 'Day-Star of the Reformation,' because 'there is scarcely any doctrine now prominently set forth by the Church of England which was not insisted upon by him; scarcely an error against which the Church of England protests' against which he did not protest. He preached personal responsibility, the supreme authority of the Bible, salvation by faith; he denied the necessity of priestly mediation; he inveighed against pardons, indulgences, absolutions, pilgrimages, the worship of images or saints, in tract after tract, written in the tongue of the people. Finally he rejected the doctrine of 'Transubstantiation,' the cardinal doctrine of Rome—the miraculous change, that is, effected by consecration in the Lord's Supper—'the right to perform at which miracle raised the lowliest priest high above princes.'

But Wiclif was a reforming politician before he was a reforming theologian, and in 1371 he earnestly supported the petition to the king to appoint none but laymen to any great office of State. The holding of secular offices by priests was as objectionable to him, as a degradation of the sacred office, as to Hildebrand, or to Innocent III. (pp. 41, 76). It was for a very different reason that John of Ghent, who, in the feebleness of Edward and the illness of the Black Prince, ruled the country in alliance with Alice Perrers, the old king's mistress, took the lead in this question. He was the head of the reactionary aristocratic party, which looked with greedy eyes upon the riches of the prelates, and with hatred upon their power. In compliance with the petition, the celebrated William of Wickham, bishop of Winchester, was superseded as chancellor by laymen.

In alliance
with John of
Ghent

1 - regent
- 4
John
Wiclif

At the 'Good Parliament' of 1376 all the vexed questions came to the front. The Commons had found out that John of Ghent was the enemy of popular privileges. Encouraged by the Black Prince, who did perhaps his best service to the country by coming forward to neutralise his brother's influence, they retraced their late steps, and besought the king to employ churchmen again, and to do justice to those who misappropriated public money. Several of John's followers suffered in consequence, the first instance of the exercise of the right of impeachment (p. 131 *note*), and Alice Perrers was forbidden, on pain of banishment and forfeiture, to appear as was her wont in the courts of law to browbeat the judges. But on June 8, 1376, the Black Prince died. The alarm excited by the evident ambition of John of Ghent is shown by the petition of the Commons that Richard, the son of the prince, might be publicly recognised by the king before parliament as heir-apparent. Many other petitions were sent up, chiefly against the encroachments of the papacy. The dying king replied that what he wanted was not a further quarrel, but absolution.

The 'Good Parliament' was dissolved, and John of Ghent was master of the situation. He constrained the parliament of 1377 to revise all the measures of its predecessor, sent the late speaker to prison, and procured the deprivation of William of Wickham and his banishment from court. Wiclif was still his supporter, as the opponent of priestly influence. When the great reformer was summoned before the convocation at St. Paul's for heresy, John, with his principal supporters, went with him, insisted upon a seat being given him, and openly threatened the Bishop of London. But the next day the Londoners rose upon him so menacingly that he was compelled to flee to the protection of the widow of the Black Prince. That this outbreak was in no opposition to Wiclif is shown by the fact that when he was cited again before the primate for declaring that a church might justly be deprived by the king or lay lords of its property for neglect of duty, and that ecclesiastics should be subject to lay tribunals, it was the Londoners themselves who broke in and dissolved the sitting.

Edward III. died at Sheen, too late for his fame, on June 21, 1377. He was sixty-six years old, and had reigned fifty years. The decadence of his later years, and the dreariness of his death, formed a sad contrast to the gaiety and the movement of his career. Before life was extinct Alice Perrers had taken his jewels, even the ring from his finger, and had left the palace; the servants stripped the rooms; a single priest, who came unbidden, alone remained to give him the last consolation of religion.

12
130
r

140

Death of
Edward III

As a ruler Edward has little claim to respect; like Richard I. he looked to England primarily as supplying the money needed for war. Constitutional liberty grew apace, but it was not of his making; it was won by the people taking advantage of his necessities. He was, however, a genuine Englishman in his confidence in his soldiers, and his bad qualities have been hidden under the barren glories of Crécy and Poitiers. Commerce received a marked stimulus in his reign. The prohibition of the export of wool caused the settlement of Flemish weavers on the eastern coast. Trade with the Baltic sprang up. The great herring fishery was founded in consequence of the failure of the fisheries on the northern coasts of Europe. Merchants flocked every September from all the nations of Europe to the great Sturbridge fair at Cambridge, which lasted for three weeks.

The English language was now practically formed. In 1362 it was ordered that the proceedings of the law courts should be in English. In the same year—it is said, by a priest named *William Langland*—was published 'The Vision of Piers Ploughman,' the first true English poem, the translation into poetry of the deep discontent of the lower classes.¹⁰ Twenty years later *Geoffrey Chaucer* published 'The Canterbury Tales,' which illustrate the life of the time in every phase. Wiclif's Bible is the first great prose monument of the English tongue.

The Statute of Treasons of 1352 marks the necessity which the alternate executions of Edward II.'s reign had produced of defining the term. Treason was now interpreted to mean the compassing the death of the king, queen, or their eldest son; the violation of the queen, the king's eldest unmarried daughter, or his son's wife; levying war against the king in his realm; adhering to his enemies; counterfeiting his seal or money, or importing false coin; and the slaying of the lord chancellor, treasurer, or judges in the discharge of their duty. After the Peasants' Revolt, riot and rumour against the king were added. Further additions will be noticed in the reign of Richard II. (pp. 132-135), and especially in that of Henry VIII.

In 1367, during the government of Ireland under Lionel, duke of Clarence (p. 121), the famous Statute of Kilkenny was passed by a parliament of English colonists. This established what was afterwards known as the English Pale, a district, that is, varying in extent at different times, within which none but English law, custom, and language were to prevail; while beyond it no attempt was made to enforce English power. 'The idea of conquering Ireland was abandoned, and the idea of maintaining a colony on a definite part of Irish soil was substituted for it.'

¹⁰ Gardiner, *Introduction*, p. 91.

CHAPTER III

RICHARD II.—1377-1399

SECTION 1.—*Effects of the Black Death and of the War.
The Peasants' Revolt*

GREAT dangers surrounded the beginning of the new reign. The State was impoverished, the king's relations ambitious and powerful (p. 121), the Commons aggressive. Wiclif's teaching was working among the people. The French were harrying the coasts; the Scotch were beginning to move once more. The council of regency which was appointed was a compromise between the party of John of Ghent and John of Ghent and the Commons; but as soon as parliament met the latter showed their power. They granted money liberally, but on condition that its expenditure should be in the hands of two treasurers; and the first two were Walworth and Philpot, merchants of London. They insisted also that during the minority the great officers of state should be appointed by parliament. Alice Perrers was brought to trial, and condemned to forfeiture and banishment. But John of Ghent was not satisfied with any secondary part. He overrode these concessions to the parliament. He quarrelled with the Londoners by ousting Walworth and Philpot, and with the Church by his countenance of Wiclif and his open threats of spoliation. He showed the greatest incapacity in his conduct of the war, and led the country into vast expense. To meet this the Commons agreed, in April 1379, upon a graduated poll-tax from both laity and clergy, from 6*l.* 18*s.* 4*d.* on John of Ghent to 4*d.* on the poorest man. A new demand in 1380 was agreed to upon condition that the council should be dismissed as corrupt or incapable, and a committee appointed to retrench the expense of the king's household. In November 1380 a sum of 160,000*l.* was still wanted. To meet it parliament fell back once more upon a poll-tax of a shilling upon everybody over fifteen; and the attempt to raise this was the signal for the Peasants' Revolt.

The causes of this great movement were far deeper than the mere incidence of a single tax. We have seen that a great lord cultivated his land by the labour of villeins, who gave such labour service in payment for their own holdings (p. 12). But in the course of time this labour service had been very generally changed into a money rent, and the lord then cultivated his land by hired labour. The process of emancipation had also been continually going on, and even when this did not take place the practice of binding the villein to the soil had practically disappeared. Thus at

Causes of the
Peasants'
Revolt

the time of the Black Death there was a large peasant-farmer class, and a large class of free labourers.

The Black Death swept away at least one-third of each of these classes. This told upon the landowners in two ways. There were fewer farmers wanting farms, and therefore rents fell. On the other hand, there were fewer labourers to do the same amount of work as before, and therefore wages, and the price of everything which depended on wages, rose to double their former amount. Hired labour was now so difficult to be got that the plan of commutation of labour-rent for money-rent, which had formerly been advantageous to the landlord,

was now disadvantageous.¹ In 1349 therefore the land-lords secured the passing of the *Statute of Labourers*, which obliged the labourers to take farm-work at the rate of wages which existed in 1347, before the Black Death; heavy penalties were laid both upon any labourer who should demand, and any landlord who should

grant, more. In the second place, an attempt was made to abolish the free labourer altogether by forbidding him to leave his parish for better employment; runaways were to be branded on the forehead. Further, since labour was now relatively more valuable than money, it was determined to bring back the peasant farmers into villenage, that is, to the old labour service. The lawyers were set to work to find flaws in the agreements of the villeins with their lords; and as all disputes were tried in the manor courts, where the lord himself practically decided the case, this went hard for the villeins. Thus, when the poll-tax was imposed, there were two classes ripe for revolt—the labourers,

angry both at the lowering of wages and at being again tied to the soil; the villeins, who had paid money-rent, at being again compelled to pay labour-rent. Upon men in this state the teaching of the Lollards, who to Wiclif's advanced religious views had joined social and political views far more subversive than anything he had imagined, had enormous effect. John Ball and his fellows gave utterance to this spirit when they preached on the text, 'When Adam delved and Eve span, where was then the gentleman?' and poems like 'Piers the Ploughman,' and pamphlets which taught the equality of man before God, and inveighed against Rome, in whose monks the peasants saw their worst enemies—for the abbeys were great landlords—found eager readers. There was additional danger in the insolent bearing of the nobles who had returned from the war, unfitted for anything but war, and brutalised by conquest and slaughter, and in the swarms

¹ Rogers, *Six Centuries of Work and Wages*, ch. viii. and ix. Cunningham, *Growth of English Industry*, p. 355.

of discharged soldiers, who wandered through the country with ideas gathered from the Jacquerie of France and from the free democracies of Flanders. The causes of discontent were very various. In one place there was a cry against the clergy; in another against the monks; in another against the landlords. In London John of Ghent was the grievance; in other parts he was a favourite.

The rising began in Essex in May 1381, when the people, led by Thomas the Baker of Fobbing, drove out the judge and slew the jury called to assess the tax. The flame spread like wildfire through the eastern and midland counties. Other leaders sprang up under such names as Jack the Miller, Jack Straw, Jack Trueman. How the revolt was organised, how communications could pass between the different sections with such rapidity, is a mystery.² In the east and midlands the cry was for the abolition of labour service. In Kent, where villenage was unknown, the people rose for the suppression of the poll-tax, the death of the nobles and upper clergy, and better government. But they sympathised with the men of Essex, adopted their cry, put to death all the lawyers they could catch, and destroyed the rolls of the manor courts.

On June 5, in Dartford, John the Tiler (*i.e.* the bricklayer) struck down one of the collectors of the poll-tax who, in the pretended discharge of his duty, had insulted his daughter. On the 10th, under a certain Wat the Tiler, they took Canterbury, and released John Ball from the archbishop's prison; then, passing through Maidstone and Gravesend, crossed Blackheath to the number of 100,000 and occupied Southwark. Next day the London mob opened the bridge gates, and they poured into the city, broke open the wine cellars, set free the prisoners in Newgate, burned John of Ghent's palace at the Savoy, the Temple with its archives, and other buildings; and finally occupied Tower Hill. Meanwhile the Essex host reached Mile End; the Hertfordshire men lay at Highbury.

The next morning Richard left the Tower, rode to Mile End, and by a promise of full satisfaction of their chief demands induced the Essex men to disperse. In his absence Wat the Tiler and his men forced their way into the Tower, insulted the Princess of Wales, slew the archbishop—since, as chancellor, he was one of the hated lawyers—and the treasurer, who was chief commissioner for the poll-tax; foreign merchants also fell before their blind fury. Richard had taken refuge

² Possibly by Wiclif's poor priests; but there was a vast wandering population in England. See Jusserand's *Wayfaring Life in England in the Middle Ages*.

*Craney
Canterbury
Tales*

at Whitefriars. Thence, next day, he rode to parley with the rebels at Smithfield. So violent was Wat's behaviour that Walworth, then lord mayor, struck him dead with his dagger. The young king showed remarkable presence of mind. Riding up to the mob, who were bending their bows for vengeance, 'What, my friends!' he exclaimed, 'would you shoot your king? Do not grieve for the death of that traitor. Follow me; I will be your leader, and you shall have whatever you please to ask.' Upon his promises the men of Kent and those of Hertfordshire dispersed, and the danger was over.

All coherence being at an end, the nobles were emboldened for vengeance. Like the gentlemen of France with the Jacquerie, they hung and slew throughout Kent, Essex, and the south. 'Society' had been scared, and now took its revenge. By the autumn it was reckoned that 8,000 insurgents had died in fight or on the gallows.

It seemed as if the peasants' revolt had failed. All tenants were ordered to perform labour service. The charters by which the insurgents had bought safety were repudiated by the king. Then the law courts were set to work, and 7,000 more died by their sentence.³ Parliament met and declared that the king's concessions were invalid without its consent, since they altered the law. And yet the cause of the peasants was really won. The landlords had no mind for another revolt. Silently and gradually, and in spite of several reactionary attempts, all was granted; money-rent was accepted for labour; the free labourer was left free. The class of small holders grew continually during the next century, and wages rose.

But for the moment the failure of this social reform discredited religious reform also. A strong conservative reaction, as we should say, set in. The support given to Wiclif had come from John of Ghent and the baronage, so long as both were attacking the church only. But when Wiclif and his followers taught the nobles that they also had duties, and when the revolt showed the effect of the teaching, the common danger brought church and baronage together. John of Ghent abandoned the reformer. His followers were banished from Oxford, and all Lollard books ordered to be burnt. Wiclif himself was allowed to retire to his living of Lutterworth where, after opening the gateway of knowledge by his translation of the Bible, or, as his foes expressed it, causing the Gospel to be 'cast abroad and trodden under foot of swine,' he died in 1384. His followers, nicknamed Lollards,⁴ increased rapidly.

³ Froude, 'Annals of an English Abbey,' in *Short Studies*, 3rd Series.

⁴ Said to be derived from Low German *lollen*, to sing; their clerical opponents

But the outbreak had another effect. The frightened Commons turned upon the government as well as upon the rebels. They would impose no further taxes, and in 1382, so low had the credit of the crown sunk, the merchants refused to lend money except on the pledge of Lords and Commons—the first instance of parliamentary guarantee.

Parliamentary guarantee for loans to the crown

SECTION 2.—*Confusion*

In 1385 Richard created his ^{2 sons} uncles Edmund and Thomas dukes of York and Gloucester. Roger earl of March, grandson of Lionel duke of Clarence, was named heir to the throne (p. 136). With John of Ghent the king was on bad terms. He succeeded in getting rid of him until 1389 by sending him with a large expedition to prosecute his old claim upon the crown of Castille. But John again proved an incompetent general, and this attempt failed as that of the Black Prince had failed. From the pressure of his other uncles Richard tried to escape, like Edward II., through a favourite, Robert de Vere, earl of Oxford, whom he made governor and duke of Ireland; and through his able chancellor, Michael de la Pole, a man of merchant family, created earl of Suffolk.

During the absence of John of Ghent, the baronial party was reformed by Thomas of Gloucester and Henry of Derby, John's son. The failure of all foreign effort, the extravagance at court, the weight of taxation, were their cries. Backed by both clergy and Commons, they presented a long list of grievances in 1386, and demanded the dismissal both of Suffolk and the treasurer. When Richard petulantly replied that he would not dismiss a scullion at their request, they quoted an old statute that 'if the king, from any malignant design, or contempt, or wanton wilfulness, should alienate himself from his people, or should not be willing to be governed by the laws of the realm with the advice of the peers, it should be lawful for the peers, with the consent of the people, to depose him'; and they sent for the Act of Deposition of Edward II. Richard was forced to give way. The earl of Suffolk was impeached,⁵ sentenced, and imprisoned. A commission of regency was appointed, with Gloucester at its head. But Richard began a counter-plot.

In 1387 he summoned a council at Nottingham, and induced the judges to declare that the commission was unlawful, and its promoters guilty of 'treason' (p. 126); that parliament could proceed only at the

derived it from Latin *lolium*, tares, as if they were the tares in the wheat [Gardiner, *Student's Hist.* i. 289].

⁵ *I.e.*, charged by the Commons before the Lords, who gave judgment. For first impeachment see p. 125.

wealth
The industry
and the knowledge

Baronial
party
reformed

Commission
of regency

king's command, and had no power to remove ministers; that the sentence on De la Pole was illegal. This was countersigned by the Archbishops of York and Dublin, the Duke of Ireland, De la Pole himself, and three bishops. Gloucester, with the Earls of Warwick and Arundel, at once led a force to London. Richard submitted; his friends fled. The Duke of Ireland escaped to the Welsh border, raised an army, but was defeated by Henry of Derby at Radcot Bridge on the Thames, and escaped to France. In February 1388 the 'appellants'

The appellants as they were called—Gloucester, Derby, Nottingham, Warwick, and Arundel—throwing down their gauntlets, accused five of the king's advisers of treason, and they were impeached before the peers. When the judges declared this impeachment contrary to law, the peers asserted that in such high concerns parliament was above law; and the king assented. It is the case of the Provisions of Oxford and the Ordinances over again, taking a parliamentary form; the tyranny of an aristocratic parliament instead of that of the baronage. The five were found guilty; the laymen were hanged, the prelates deprived of revenues. The judges who had given the opinion at Nottingham were exiled to Ireland. Other executions and banishments followed in this 'Merciless,' or 'Wonderful,' parliament; the triumph of Gloucester and the baronial party seemed complete. Among its acts was one which made it 'treason' to procure the repeal of any of its decrees. For a year there was peace at home; on the sea the skill and valour of Arundel redeemed the fame of England in a great victory over a combined fleet of French, Flemish, and Spanish. To the north the year was long famous for the bloody and dubious fight of Otterbourn (August 9), in which Henry Percy (Hotspur) and Lord James Douglas fought through a long moonlight night. Douglas was killed, and Hotspur carried off prisoner to Scotland.

A dramatic change took place when Richard suddenly entered the council, May 3, 1389, and demanded to be told his age. 'Your highness is in your 22nd year,' was the reply. 'Then,' said Richard, 'I am capable of managing my kingdom myself.' His uncles were dismissed and the council remodelled. Gloucester, taken by surprise, yielded; the people applauded this act of vigour; and the counter-stroke was carried out without a hand being raised against it. The attempt to rob the crown of authority had failed for the fourth time (p. 110).

Richard assumes the government
Still more surprising was Richard's moderation. He neither recalled the exiles nor persecuted his uncles or the appellants. The Earl of Arundel was placed in command of all the forces, and his brother

Thomas was made primate; John of Ghent was created duke of Aquitaine; and Edward, the son of Edmund of York, earl of Rutland. For six years Richard governed as a constitutional king. The country was in profound peace; taxation was light; parliaments were held with which no dispute arose, and to which the ministers owned their responsibility; many important measures became law. In 1390 a more stringent Statute of Provisors was passed (p. 123); in 1391 the Statute of Mortmain or 'De Religiosis' (p. 94) was extended to all corporations, and guarded against evasions; in 1393 a fresh Statute of Præmunire (p. 123) imposed forfeiture of goods for obtaining bulls or other instruments from Rome. There was also an ordinance against 'maintenance' and 'livery' (p. 139), two formidable elements of confusion. The permanence of the social scare of 1381 is seen in two petitions of the Commons, which Richard rejected, that villeins might not acquire land or send their children to school, lest they should escape from their lords by becoming clerics (p. 67).

In 1394 Richard's queen, Anne of Bohemia, died childless. His whole mood seems to have changed at once. He quarrelled with Arundel, and went so far as to strike him in the face. In 1396 he was married again, to Isabella, the daughter of the French king, a mere child. The court was crowded with French nobles, priests, and ladies; the king lived at reckless expense. John of Ghent, who was now reconciled to him, was also married again, to his former mistress, Catherine Swynford, and the children she had already borne him were made legitimate under the name of Beaufort (p. 149), the eldest son being created earl of Somerset. Gloucester, jealous of this new family, threw himself again into opposition. But his old party was broken up, for Henry of Derby had joined his father in obedience to the crown. Richard now took his long-delayed vengeance. A parliament, carefully packed by the sheriffs, met at Shrewsbury in September 1398 in a mood to do whatever the king wished. The commission of regency of 1396 was repealed; Arundel, the primate, was impeached and banished. Then a fresh body of appellants demanded justice on Warwick, the Earl of Arundel, and Gloucester. A scene of violent recrimination took place. The Earl of Arundel was condemned and executed; Warwick was banished; Gloucester was secretly murdered at Calais, whither he had been sent. 'Treason' was made to include three fresh crimes: compassing the king's deposition, surrendering homage, or levying war against him. Then the king's friends were promoted in the peerage;

Constitutional government

Sudden change

The Beauforts

Richard's vengeance

Parliament of Shrewsbury surrenders its power

Special 241

Stand 252 261

the acts of the 'Merciless' parliament were reversed, and it was declared 'treason' to call this reversal in question; and parliament gave up both substance and form of power by granting to Richard the customs for life, and delegating its whole authority to eighteen members, special friends of the king.

SECTION 3.—*Despotism and fall of Richard*

The dramatic completeness of this triumph is matched only by the dramatic suddenness of its reversal. Henry of Derby, now duke of Hereford, and Thomas Mowbray, formerly earl of Nottingham, but now duke of Norfolk, mutually accused one another of treason. A court of chivalry decided that the quarrel should be settled by private combat. But Richard, glad of the opportunity of getting rid of two such powerful men, stopped the fight, and banished both—Norfolk for life, Hereford for ten years. This was his ruin. Norfolk indeed died in 1399, broken-hearted; but Henry lived, to watch and to plot.

Richard now gave free rein to his despotic instincts. He exacted large sums from his uncle Gloucester's friends, raised money in many irregular ways, and quarrelled with the church and the Pope. When John of Ghent died in 1399, Richard shamelessly took his lands into his own keeping, in violation of a promise to Henry. He then, amid gathering storms of discontent, especially in London, where Henry was a favourite, sailed to Ireland, where Roger, earl of March, the recognised heir, had just been killed.

This was Henry's opportunity. He had long been plotting with the nobles in England. With the exiled primate Arundel he planned a descent upon England, sailed in July, and landed at Ravenspur in Yorkshire, with the son of the executed Earl of Arundel and a few other followers. Northumberland and Hotspur, Westmoreland and Lord Willoughby joined him at once, with 80,000 men. He swore to them that he came, not for a crown, but to regain his inheritance. Edmund, duke of York, submitted to him. He then marched on Bristol, where he took and beheaded Scrope, earl of Wiltshire, the king's most hated agent. Thence he went to Chester, to watch for Richard's return from Ireland.

Adverse winds delayed Richard. When he landed he found himself without followers, and he fled, disguised as a Franciscan friar, to Conway. Enticed thence by Northumberland, he became Henry's prisoner. He was taken to Chester, and forced to issue writs for a parliament. From Chester he was led to the Tower, amid the jeers of the people. 'Long live the conqueror!'

Richard
deserted and
captured

Banishment
of Norfolk
and Henry of
Lancaster

Folly of
Richard

Return of
Henry

was the cry that greeted Henry. 'Now we have our revenge on the bastard!' ⁵ was that which met the ears of Richard.

Hitherto Henry had put forward no claim to the throne, although the death of Roger earl of March left the field much more open. But

London was for him, and Northumberland and Westmoreland, to whom he had pledged himself, had gone home.

Richard abdicates and is deposed

On September 29 Richard abdicated, 'as insufficient and useless, and for his notorious deserts not unworthy to be deposed.' Were it in his power, he said, to choose his successor, he would choose Henry, upon whose finger he himself placed the signet-ring.

Next day parliament met. When Richard's deposition had been pronounced, Henry stood forward, and, after signing himself with the cross on breast and forehead, claimed the crown as descended in the right line of descent from Henry III. (p. 84), both by father and mother, and assent by God to recover his right, when the realm was nearly undone by bad government. He could not claim as rightful heir, for Roger Mortimer had left a son, Edmund (p. 186). He had intended, therefore, to claim only by conquest; but this caused alarm, and he there-

fore artfully combined the two claims. Parliament assenting, Arundel led him to the throne, and with his brother archbishop, Scrope of York, seated him upon it as Henry IV.

Thus the representative of Thomas of Lancaster (p. 84), who had been slain at Pontefract (p. 110), entered upon the inheritance of Edward II., who had put him to death. The important thing was that the throne had been filled by a *parliamentary grant*. The old English custom of election had come back in another form.⁶

SUMMARY OF THE FOURTEENTH CENTURY

IN the reign of Edward II. we seem suddenly to sink to a lower level, and to live among meaner men, exchanging Stephen Langton and Simon de Montfort for Piers Gaveston and Thomas of Lancaster; the murder of Gaveston causes the murder of Lancaster, and starts an internecine warfare of two centuries. Then follows the long rule of Edward III., when the war dominates everything, giving opportunity for constitutional progress which is never lost; creating a society fostered upon war and unfitted for quiet life at home; causing infinite misery, but leaving England with a stronger sense of national unity. The Black Death alters all the relations between the land-owning and

⁵ This referred to a rumour that he was not the true son of the Black Prince.

⁶ The similarity between this revolution and that of 1688 should be noticed. A king, apparently very strong, suddenly

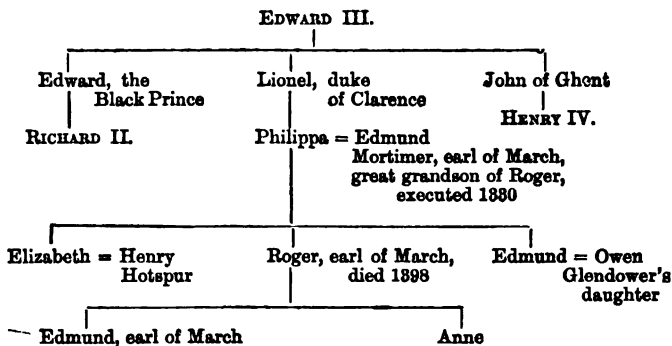
finds himself friendless and is deposed. A faction of nobles and churchmen have prepared the revolution, and the country has acquiesced. An infant heir of higher claims is superseded.

the labouring classes; and the teaching of John Wiclif sinks deep into the hearts of the people. The reign of Richard II., perhaps the most dramatic in our history, brings long-standing causes, and especially the failure to understand the lessons of the Black Death, suddenly to a head in the Peasants' Revolt. We see the ambition of the king's uncles; the alternate vigour and weakness of Richard, and the alternate triumphs and defeats of the baronage; until, for the sake of order, all classes accept a king whose right is, according to custom, absurd, and with whose accession the position of the kingship with regard to parliament is utterly changed. This century witnesses the practical assertion of parliamentary supremacy, as the thirteenth century had witnessed its theoretical assertion, and the House of Commons is the principal gainer of power.

Fourteenth Century dates

	A.D.		A.D.
Scotch independence acknow- ledged	1328	Peace of Brétigny	1360
The Hundred Years' War begun .	1338	Peasants' Revolt	1381
Black Death	1348	Deposition of Richard	1399

GENEALOGICAL TABLE VII



[The line of the Black Prince being extinct, that of Lionel, the next brother, contained the legitimate heirs. Roger Mortimer, who had been named successor to Richard II., was killed in Ireland, 1398. Thus his son Edmund was rightful heir.]

⁷ Stubbs, vol. ii. ch. xvi., but especially p. 307.

BOOK VI

THE HOUSES OF LANCASTER AND YORK. TESTING
OF THE PARLIAMENTARY SYSTEM

CHAPTER I

HENRY IV. OF LANCASTER. RESTORATION OF ORDER
1399-1413

THE weakness of Henry's title imposed moderation. The acts of the 'Merciless' parliament were re-confirmed, and many of the honours bestowed by Richard were taken away; but there was no general proscription of opponents. The obvious lessons of the past were acknowledged. The powers of parliament were not again to be delegated to a committee; treasons were henceforth to be decided in the law courts—not by appeals; the treason statute of 1352 was restored without the additions of the past reign.

Henry's success had been largely owing to the primate Arundel and the church. To the church therefore he had been forced to promise many things, especially the suppression of heresy. This pledge he redeemed, in 1401, by the first persecuting statute, *De Heretico Comburendo*. The reaction against Lollardry caused by the Peasants' Revolt was strong in parliament. The bishops gained the right to fine or to imprison in their own prisons anyone convicted of heresy or of possessing heretical books. Any heretic refusing to abjure, or relapsing, was to be burnt in a public place. The first English martyr, William Sawtré, a clergyman of King's Lynn, was burnt at Smithfield.¹

The most important act of Henry's first parliament was the *Act of Livery*, which strengthened Richard's ordinance of 1393. The evil

¹ The charges against him show what were the views of intelligent Lollards. Among them were that he would not adore the cross on which Christ suffered, but only Christ who suffered on it; that he would rather bow to a temporal king and worship a man, confessing and repentant, than the cross of

Christ; that after the words of consecration in the Eucharist the bread remains bread, but bread plus the body of Christ, holy, true, and the bread of life. The whole list is in Wylie. — *History of England under Henry IV.* p. 188.

against which it was aimed had become very serious. The nobles gathered troops of men from the swarms of disbanded soldiers, to whom they gave their 'livery,' or distinguishing badge, whom they protected or maintained in their outrages, and who were ready to serve them in their private wars, or accomplish any wrong at their will. It was the worst feature of feudalism restored. The act now passed forbade any subject, of whatever rank, to give or wear any 'livery.' The king alone might give such a badge, to be worn only in his presence, or abroad, or in time of border war.

The quiet of Henry's reign was soon broken. Richard's 'nurslings' began to move; many of them openly wore his badge, the white hart.

First conspiracy. A conspiracy to seize Henry was betrayed by the Earl of Rutland. The conspirators fled; but the country people Death of Richard II rose upon them, captured the leaders, and executed them without trial—an act which called forth an ordinance forbidding such a summary process in future. This rising sealed the fate of Richard.² The Commons had already clamoured to have him brought to trial, and Henry had refused; but upon the petition of fifty-eight peers he had removed him from London to Pontefract. How he died, or whether Henry actually ordered his death, is not known. But a month after the rising his corpse was brought to London, with the face alone uncovered, and buried at Langley.

The future was full of danger. The French king refused to give Henry the royal title, and was the more hostile because Henry would not send back Richard's child-wife, Isabella, whom he wished to marry to his own son. The Scotch were harrying the borders, and his counter-raid in 1400, conducted with far more humanity than hitherto, had to be abandoned from want of provisions. He was then called to repel the ravages of Owen Glendower of Wales. But here too he failed against the obstacles of ground, weather, and Owen's guerilla warfare; and he could only leave Henry Percy (Hotspur) to guard the Welsh marches, while his father Northumberland faced the Scotch inroads in the north.

Henry's constant difficulty was want of money: and this is the key to the action of the Commons. In 1401 was heard for the first time the demand that *redress of grievances should precede supply*. In 1404 the Commons insisted upon retrenchment in the household, and the dismissal of the foreigners who had come with the king's second wife Joan, the widowed duchess of Brittany. The money raised by a new land-tax was entrusted to four

² As afterwards unsuccessful revolts brought about the deaths of Lady Jane Gray and Mary Queen of Scots.

'treasurers of war' chosen from the citizens of London. In the 'Un-learned' parliament of 1404—so called because all lawyers, either as being chiefly ecclesiastics or because they used their position to favour their own clients, were excluded—a strong desire was evinced to rob the church by taking the whole land of the clergy for a year, and to resume all grants and pensions later than those made to Edward III.'s sons. In 1406 and 1407 the public audit of government accounts was again demanded; the sheriff was forbidden to have any part in the election of knights of the shire, in reference, no doubt, to the packing of the parliament of Shrewsbury (p. 138); and the

The Com-
mons the
source of all
money
grants

fact that the *Commons were the source of all money grants* was emphatically recognised in the adoption of the following course. The two houses were to deliberate separately on the needs of the kingdom. The Commons were to make, and the Lords to assent to, all grants; and the report was to be made by the speaker of the Commons.

The years 1401 and 1402 were times of great anxiety. Thrice Henry invaded Wales, and each time was driven back by the weather and poverty. In 1402 Owen Glendower inflicted serious defeats upon the English, capturing Hotspur's brother-in-law Sir Edmund Mortimer, uncle to Edmund, the heir to the crown (p. 136). Hotspur was grumbling at having to carry on the war at his own cost, and shortly resigned his post. A French invasion was impending. The king's popularity waned; the rumour spread that Richard was alive; risings took place. There was treachery in the household, and attempts were made upon his life. His nerves began to give way; he became suspicious and cruel. From the north, however, there came a gleam of success. The Percys gained a great victory over the Scots at Hambleton Hill, near Wooler, September 4, 1402, through the prowess of the archers; Douglas and the nephew of the Scotch king being taken prisoners.

The discontent of the Percys led to a great crisis. In the north they were almost irresponsible. Northumberland was, in fact, a rival king, and was a loyal Englishman, 'not from love to England, but from hatred to the Scot.' In spite of the fact that Henry won the crown in violation of the pledge upon which he had supported him, he had hitherto been faithful. But many quarrels had lately arisen, and Hotspur's refusal to give up Douglas had caused high words. When Henry, glad to keep so formidable a friend of the young Earl of March out of the way, refused to ransom Sir Edmund Mortimer, who had married Glendower's sister, Hotspur joined Glendower, and drew both his father and his uncle the Earl of Worcester into the plot. They

Battle of
Hambleton
Hill

Revolt of
the Percys

proclaimed the Earl of March, and went south with 14,000 men to join the Welsh. But Henry and the Prince of Wales intercepted their march

Battle of Shrewsbury at Shrewsbury, when a battle, lasting all day, and long remembered for its ferocity, was fought on July 21, 1403.

Hotspur was killed; Douglas, Worcester, and Northumberland were taken; 8,000 men were left on the field. Worcester was beheaded; Northumberland was pardoned, to plot again. In 1405, with Mowbray, son of Henry's old rival the Duke of Norfolk, Lord Bardolph, Sir William Clifford, and Scrope, archbishop of York, brother of the executed Earl of Wiltshire (p. 188), he collected a large force. Henry went hastily northwards. Upon assurances in his name the insurgents dis-

Second revolt.

Execution of the Archbishop of York

persed, leaving Mowbray and Scrope in his hands. They were executed without trial, in spite of Arundel's pleading, and in violation of his own ordinance of 1399 (p. 188). The execution of Scrope was a great blunder. Such an act had not been done since the murder of Becket. It alienated the clergy, and Henry, though his throne was safe, was henceforth a weary and broken man. He was in desperate straits for money, and parliament was ever more aggressive. Disputes raged in his own family between his sons and his half-brothers the Beauforts.

In 1408 there was a third and final revolt of Northumberland, who was defeated at Bramham Moor near Tadcaster, and killed. Inde-

Third revolt, and death of Northumberland

cisive war was carried on in France and Wales. With Scotland however Henry had obtained peace by the capture at sea, 1405, of James, the heir of Robert of Scotland.

Robert's brother, the duke of Albany, who had usurped the government, and was anxious that the young prince should be detained, was careful not to offend Henry. At home the anti-clerical party were so strong in the Commons that Arundel resigned the chancellorship in 1408, and in 1410 it was proposed to confiscate the lands of the bishops and religious corporations, on the ground that the sum would

Death and character of Henry IV

support 15 earls, 1,500 knights, 6,000 squires, and 100 almshouses. As Henry grew weaker the government was left chiefly in the hands of the Prince of Wales. From June 12, 1411, the king never left Westminster Palace. He died of an epileptic fit, March 20, 1413, and was buried at Canterbury.

Henry was an honest and diligent man, of capacity scarcely equal to his task. Always an invalid, the strain of rule broke him down. With a purely parliamentary title, he had to bow to a parliament stronger than it had yet been or was to be for two centuries. He owed his throne in a great measure to Arundel, and he had therefore to become the first persecuting king of England. He was never popular, and

his reign was a struggle to hold his own. His failures were doubtless owing largely to the poverty in which he was kept. He ruled in a thoroughly constitutional manner, and his reward was that treason never broke out within the walls of parliament. He restored order, established his dynasty by honest means, and left England stronger than he found it.

In the first year of his reign Henry established the Order of the Bath, to strengthen his position by uniting his principal adherents, and ^{The Order of} to supersede that of the Garter, of which many of his ^{the Bath} opponents were members. The knights of this new order were called 'Knights Companions of the Bath' from the custom of washing the body on the eve of great religious ceremonies. There was no fixed number, and the order had no statutes. Its emblem now consists of three crowns with the motto, 'Tria juncta in uno.'

CHAPTER II

HENRY V. (OF MONMOUTH). FOREIGN CONQUEST 1413-1422

SECTION 1.—*The Agincourt Campaign*

FROM the age of fourteen Henry V. had been actively employed on the Welsh marches; at sixteen he was in full command there, and his gallant conduct had done much to win the battle of Shrewsbury. He remained on this duty until 1408. He was then made constable of Dover, warden of the Cinque Ports, and governor of Calais, all important posts. He was also appointed guardian to the young Earl of March. In 1406 the succession had been settled upon him and his heirs, and in 1411 he was thanked by parliament for his services.¹ This confidence was now shown by a grant of the revenue from wool for four years; while both his security and generosity appear in his granting the Earl of March full liberty, reinstating Hotspur's son, and giving Richard's body a magnificent burial in Westminster Abbey.

Henry was convinced that he had two immediate duties—to win

¹ This disposes of the stories of a dissipated and vagabond youth, of which Shakespeare has drawn so vivid a picture. His chief friend was Sir John Oldcastle, a man of high repute, and a Lollard. The story of his striking the

Lord Chief Justice Gascoigne appears to be drawn from a similar and probable account of Edward II., and it is certain that, so far from retaining office, Gascoigne resigned at the beginning of the new reign. . . .

the crown of France and to expel heresy. The Lollards were showing themselves active. They had done much to place his father on the throne, and had been betrayed by him into Arundel's hands. One of their declarations, affixed to the doors of the London churches, asserted that 100,000 men were ready to rise in their cause. Their leader was the Sir John Oldcastle just mentioned. At Henry's accession he was dismissed from court, and, rejecting the king's private persuasions, was brought at last before Arundel. There he boldly upheld the doctrines of Wiclif, and ended by declaring the Pope to be the head, the prelates the members, and the mendicant friars the hinder parts, of Antichrist. He was sentenced as a heretic, but escaped from the Tower and reached Wales in safety. On January 4 a large body of Lollards met in St. Giles's Fields. It was given out that they purposed seizing Henry at Eltham during his new year's feast. Possibly the meeting was got up and the rumour spread by the church party to discredit the Lollards by showing that religious and political 'radicalism' were connected. Henry came upon them with an armed force; forty prisoners were hanged or burnt, and a price placed on Oldcastle's head. Fresh persecuting laws were passed; heresy was to be met by confiscation of the offender's goods; Lollard books were to be destroyed, and translations from the Latin were forbidden. In 1417 Oldcastle was at length captured. He was then taken to London, and executed by being hung in chains and a fire lighted beneath him. Henry himself had probably no part in this, as he was absent from the country at the time.

Henry now turned to his second duty. France was torn with dissensions. Charles VI. was of deranged intellect, and, with the Dauphin, was under the influence of the Duke of Burgundy. Opposed to them were the king's nephew the Duke of Orleans, whose father Burgundy had murdered, and Charles's faithless wife, Isabel of Bavaria. This party were called Armagnacs, because Orleans had married a daughter of the Count of Armagnac. Henry strove to secure the Duke of Burgundy, who was lord of Flanders. He made the most extensive preparations, got money from every quarter, by gift, loan, and pawning the crown jewels, and hired ships from Holland and Zealand. Then he sent a splendid embassy to Charles, successively claiming, first the crown and territory of France, then all which had belonged to Henry II., and finally the territory ceded by the peace of Brétigny (p. 121), with the king's youngest daughter Catherine in marriage, and the unpaid ransom of King John. To the French envoys who came to make terms he replied that he would 'in no wise retire his army nor break

Persecution
of the
Lollards

State of
France.
Burgundians
and
Armagnacs

Henry's
demands

his journey, but would with all diligence enter France, and destroy the people, waste the country, and subvert the towns with blood, sword, and fire, and never cease till he had recovered his ancient right and lawful patrimony.' Upon the head of the usurper Charles would rest the guilt of all the misery which might follow. In the summer of 1415 a splendid army was collected at Southampton, to the equipment of which Henry gave his personal care in every detail, even to the newly organised medical service. As in Edward III.'s time, all classes welcomed the chance of enriching themselves. While Henry regarded the enterprise as a kind of religious crusade, the nobles looked upon it as a commercial undertaking. Every noble and every soldier received handsome pay—a fact which practically changed a feudal levy into a modern army. It was agreed that each leader should have for his own any prisoner, with certain exceptions, whom he or his men might take. Of the booty two-thirds were to go to his followers; the other third was to be divided between him and the king.²

On the eve of starting Henry was stopped by the discovery of a conspiracy among his own relatives and friends. Richard earl of Cambridge, the son of Edmund duke of York, younger son of Edward III. (p. 152), with Sir Thomas Grey of Heton, and Lord Scrope of Masham, his chamberlain and friend, had formed a plot in favour of the Earl of March, whose sister Anne Richard had married. The conspirators were brought to trial, and Richard, Grey, and Scrope executed.

On August 11 Henry set sail with 80,000 men, of whom 23,000 were archers. Upon landing he reverently knelt and prayed for success. The strictest discipline was maintained; violence to non-combatants was punished with death. The siege of Harfleur, then the chief seaport of France, was at once undertaken, and was pushed on night and day under Henry's personal supervision. On September 22 it surrendered. In a splendid tent, his crown borne beside him on a lance, the king received the keys. Then, barefooted, he walked through the streets to offer his thanks to heaven.

But his situation was one of extreme danger. Harfleur had been won at the cost of half his army from dysentery. A mighty force was being mustered on the Seine. His councillors advised a return to England. He replied that, with God's help, he would march to Calais, 150 miles distant. The artillery³ was left

² One effect of these arrangements with the nobles was that the Statute of Liveries was entirely ignored; the results of this neglect were seen in the next reign.

³ Cannon had been used at sea even before Crécy. They were now used in sieges. Hand-guns and arquebuses did not attain any efficiency until the end of the century.

behind; Harfleur was garrisoned, and on October 8, with but eight days' provisions, the desperate venture was begun.

Henry reached Abbeville on the 18th. But the bridges were broken down and Blanchetaque (p. 116) guarded. He was forced to march nearly one hundred miles up the river to Bethencourt before he found a ford, October 19. Then he made for the sea-coast. On the 24th his vanguard came upon the enemy blocking the Calais road in overwhelming force. That night, by Henry's orders, every man had double rations, and straw to lay upon. Without fires, and hearing no sound but that of the drenching rain on the withered leaves, the little army lay down to rest. They were less than 12,000 hungry, shoeless, and wayworn men. In eighteen days they had marched 820 miles through an enemy's country in bad weather—one of the great forced marches of history.⁴ But their armour was in perfect order, and 10,000 of them were the unconquered archers, men of noted strength, drawn from that class which, ever since Henry II.'s Assize of Arms, had learned to fight, to trust themselves and one another.

At daybreak on the 25th, the feast of St. Crispin and St. Crispian, the king with his whole army heard mass. Then, in a coat embroidered with the arms of England and France, and wearing his golden crown, he rode among his men with joyful words, and took his post in the centre of the foremost line. His ground was well chosen. The front, barely 1200 yards wide, was covered by woods on either flank. The archers were two deep in front and in the woods. Behind, and all on foot, was the small body of men-at-arms, with billmen and pikemen on the wings. The few horses and the baggage were in the rear under a small guard.

The French host of 50,000 men lay 800 yards away. Among them there was neither discipline nor generalship. As at Poitiers, the cavalry were dismounted and drawn up in two deep 'battles,' with a small force of mounted men on either wing. Between these, and so placed as to be useless, were 4,000 cross-bowmen. In the third and rearward line were 20,000 foot-soldiers. The fields between the two armies were thick in clay, sodden with several weeks of incessant rain.

At 11 A.M. the French moved forward, and Henry bade his men advance 'in the name of God.' First they all knelt and took a morsel of earth in their mouths, in token of receiving the Sacrament before death. Then the grey-haired marshal, Sir Thomas of Erpingham, threw his staff into the air. The archers rushed forward with a shout, and planted before them the sharpened stakes which they had carried with them throughout the march from Harfleur,

⁴ Compare the march of Harold before Stamford Bridge.

to break the rush of the French. But the heavy-armed French could make no way through the clay. The archers pulled up the stakes, again rushed forward and planted them. At this close range began the deadly flight of arrows, both in front and from the woods on the flanks. A few of the French horse reached the stakes, to be shot down there; the knights on foot were slaughtered in heaps where they stood. The great mass staggered back upon the cross-bowmen and the second 'battle.' A terrible crush took place. As if moved by one impulse, the archers now flung their bows over their shoulders, and, taking their short axes, threw themselves upon the crowded mass, and, side by side with Henry and his knights, hewed their way by sheer superiority of physical strength through the press, 'beating upon the armour as though they were hammering upon anvils.' Henry and a few followers cut their way to where Alençon led the second line. The Duke of York (p. 158) was killed in the press; Alençon struck down Humphrey of Gloucester, Henry's younger brother; Henry himself was beaten to his knees by a blow from the Frenchman's sword which nearly crushed the helmet. But then Alençon fell, and the second line was routed. The third line fled without a blow. More than 10,000 French, of whom 8,000 were nobles, lay dead. Among them were two princes of the blood and the Constable and Admiral of France. The Duke of Orleans was taken prisoner. Of the English there had fallen 1,000 archers and 15 knights. One terrible event sullied the victory. In the midst of the fight a cry arose that the English were attacked in the rear, though it was only an attempt of some peasants to plunder the baggage. Henry, knowing how desperate was his chance, ordered the prisoners to be killed, that his men might have their hands free. The nobles flatly refused to kill any of gentle blood, because they looked for their ransoms (p. 144); and Henry was obliged to send 800 archers to do the bloody work. The common soldiers who were captured were killed at once, as being of no marketable value. The next day, after a solemn thanksgiving, when at the words, 'Not unto us, O Lord, not unto us,' the army knelt again upon the plain, the march to Calais was resumed. On November 16 Henry landed at Dover, the crowd rushing into the sea to greet their hero king. He first went to pray at Canterbury; then, amid a scene of enthusiasm which excelled that which welcomed the Black Prince after Poitiers, he entered London. He himself was plainly dressed. Modestly he forbade his dinted armour or the cloven helmet, of which all England was talking, to be exhibited. His first act was to pay his devotion at St. Paul's and at Westminster.

SECTION 2.—*The Conquest of France. Treaty of Troyes.*
Death of Henry V

But Henry's purpose was to conquer France. At present, besides part of Gascony, only Calais and Harfleur were in his hands. The French were attacking the coasts, and Harfleur was closely blockaded by land and sea. In August 1416 a fleet was sent to relieve the fainting garrison. On the 15th took place a desperate fight with the blockading fleet, which was won by the same tactics as those which won the victory of 'L'Espagnols sur mer' (p. 119), and Harfleur was saved. Henry now made alliances with Castille, Aragon, the German princes, the Hanse towns, and even the Genoese; and especially a treaty of neutrality with the Duke of Burgundy, which preserved the Flemish trade. Internally France was more distracted than ever. The Dauphin was dead, and the young Dauphin, Charles, was completely in the hands of the Armagnacs, who represented the party of national resistance to England, while the adulteress Isabella joined the Duke of Burgundy. In August 1417 Henry sailed with 16,000 men, equipped with the same care as before. Before the year was out the greater part of Normandy was in his hands. In the spring heavy reinforcements reached him, and in July 1418, having captured Pont-de-l'Arche above Rouen, he sat down before that great city. But the defence was as gallant as the attack was determined, and the siege went on through the winter. The English army, even the wild Welsh and Irish, were kept in the strictest discipline. The sorties were beaten back. Famine reigned in the city, and thousands were ejected to save provisions. But Henry, who shrank from nothing dictated by military necessity, refused to let them pass, and they died by hundreds in the ditches. New-born babes were drawn up to the walls for baptism, and then let down again to die on their dead mothers' breasts. At length a deputation came to Henry, declaring that unless he gave them terms the inhabitants were resolved to fire the town, fall upon the besiegers in one desperate mass, and cut their way through or die. He gave way, and the place surrendered on moderate conditions in January 1419.

Henry now entered into negotiations with Isabella. But not even the charms of Catherine made him swerve from his original demands. The Duke of Burgundy and the Dauphin therefore agreed to unite in resistance to him. He at once renewed the war and captured Pontoise, which opened the way to Paris; and in August 1419 his brother, the Duke of Clarence, appeared before the capital. The murder of the Duke of Burgundy at Montereau, before the eyes of the Dauphin,

Naval
victory at
Harfleur

Siege and
capture of
Rouen

threw upon Henry's side his son Philip and the whole Burgundian connection. The Dauphin was driven south of the Loire, and on May 21, 1420, the Treaty of Troyes was concluded, by which the Treaty of Troyes insane king acknowledged Henry as his heir, appointing him regent until his death, and gave him Catherine in marriage. Town after town fell before Henry, and on December 1 he entered Paris. The wearied people were glad of peace on any terms, and Henry ruled them well. But in England, too, there was much exhaustion, for no fewer than 100,000 men had left for the war; and in February, yielding to the express wish of his people, Henry returned to England. Within a few weeks he was recalled by the news that his eldest brother Clarence had been defeated and killed at Beaugé on March 28, 1421, the Scotch contingent in the French service having the honour of the victory. Moreover, Paris was unsafe, and the Dauphin's party was making head in the north.

In ten weeks Henry had regained all that was lost. But the Dauphin was not crushed; he held the centre of France, while the English held the north and south. Henry was again in the field in August 1422. But he was suddenly struck down by dysentery, aggravated by the intense heat. At Vincennes he took to his bed. Then he appointed his eldest brother, John, duke of Bedford, to be regent of France and Normandy if the Duke of Burgundy refused the office; and his youngest brother, Humphrey of Gloucester, to be regent of England, with his great uncle, Henry Beaufort, bishop of Winchester, and others as a council, and placed in their hands the care of his infant son, born in December 1421. He urged them to prosecute the war, to maintain the Burgundian alliance, and to keep the Duke of Orleans prisoner. Then he confessed, took the Sacrament, and received absolution. When the priest, reading the Psalms, uttered the words, 'Build thou the walls of Jerusalem,' he expressed for the last time the great desire of his life—to free the Holy City. In the early dawn of Monday, August 31, he passed away, as devoutly and courageously as he had lived. Just before death he was heard, as though challenging Satan, to exclaim, 'Thou liest! thou liest! My part is with my Lord Jesus Christ.' He was thirty-five years old.

Henry was above the middle height, strongly but sparsely built, with long neck and limbs. He excelled in every active exercise, and is said to have been so fleet of foot that he could run down a stag. He was never weary, on foot or in the saddle. His face was finely cut, his ears small, his teeth of remarkable whiteness. His hair was

brown and his complexion bright. His private life was without stain, his piety deep and sincere. He was liberal in alms-giving, careful to do justice to the poor and weak. To us the war on France and the persecution of the Lollards may seem evil deeds; to him they were the fulfilment of duties.⁵

His reign is like a burst of triumphal music. Constitutional history there is scarcely any to record; the nation was dazzled by his victories and ready to give him what supplies he wanted. His success was largely due to the distraction of his foes; but his capacity for war was splendid. He was no mere fighter. No one ever had a quicker eye in battle. No one ever gave keener attention to the details upon which the comfort and fighting spirit of an army depend. No one, until the time of Cromwell, ever maintained such discipline, without which Agincourt could not have been won or Rouen taken. His intense orthodoxy, thrown into war, gave the character of a crusade to aggression, and impressed upon a rapacious soldiery the bearing of an army of religious enthusiasts. His influence at the Council of Constance, 1415, which had been called to put an end to schism in the papacy, was great; and it was an English bishop who nominated the new pope, Martin V., before whom the rivals gave way. At this council John Huss, the Bohemian follower of Wiclif, was treacherously burned, and an order, carried out by Henry, was issued that Wiclif's bones should be disinterred and burnt.

CHAPTER III

HENRY VI. 1422-1461

SECTION 1.—*The Loss of Normandy*

SCARCELY was Henry V. dead when Charles VI. died also. The Dauphin was now joined by many who had hitherto acted with the English. On the other hand, the little Henry VI. was king of France by the Treaty of Troyes, and when Philip of Burgundy refused the office Bedford became regent. He secured both Burgundy and Brittany, by himself marrying one of Philip's sisters, while the brother of the Duke of Brittany married the other; thus the flanks of the English possessions

Bedford,
regent of
France.
Battles of
Crevant and
Verneuil

⁵ For a comparison of the wars of Edward III. and Henry V., see Freeman, 'Edward III.,' in *Hist. Essays*, 1st series.

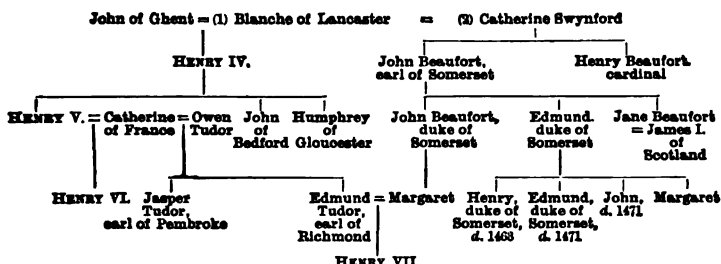
⁶ Parliament obtained a confirmation of their claim that no statute

should be valid unless enacted with their consent, and also that laws founded on their petitions should accurately reproduce the terms of these petitions.

were protected. The Dauphin held nothing north of the Loire, and in 1423 and 1424 was severely defeated in two great battles at Crevant and Verneuil. In each case the large Scotch contingent in Charles's service bore the brunt of the fight and fell almost to a man.¹ But dissensions at home prevented further progress, and the battle of Verneuil marks the high tide of English success.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE VIII

THE BEAUFORTS AND THE TUDORS



HENRY VII.

Margaret Beaufort, daughter of John, duke of Somerset, married (1456) Edmund Tudor, earl of Richmond, the son of Henry V.'s widow, Catherine, and Owen Tudor. Their son was Henry VII. Margaret had previously, at the age of nine, been married to John de la Pole, son of William, duke of Suffolk, but this marriage had been set aside. After Edmund Tudor's death (1456) she married (1) Lord Henry Stafford, son of the Duke of Buckingham, and (2) Lord Stanley, created Earl of Derby by Henry VII.

Bedford had inherited the steadfastness of Henry IV. with a strong sense of public duty. His brother Humphrey of Gloucester, on the other hand, with brilliant intellectual and social gifts, was selfish and unscrupulous. He had been named regent of England by Henry V.

on his death-bed; but the Lords refused to admit that a Bedford, Gloucester, king might thus delegate his power after death. He was and Beaufort however named 'Protector of the Realm and Church,' and president of a mixed council of Lords and Commons. His ambition was steadfastly resisted by his uncle Bishop Beaufort of Winchester, the chancellor; and though the acceptance by Beaufort of a cardinalate and legatine authority gave Gloucester a temporary advantage, since he could now point to his rival as the servant, not of England, but of Rome, his ability and integrity finally prevailed;

¹ To neutralise the danger of this Scotch support to France, the young king James I., who had been kept in honourable captivity since the end of Henry IV.'s reign, and who had married one of the Beauforts Jane,

daughter of the Earl of Somerset, was set free, on payment of a ransom, and a treaty was made that neither country should henceforth help the enemies of the other.

and at the coronation in 1429 Gloucester resigned office. His selfish folly had meanwhile done much harm abroad. In 1424 he had, under scandalous circumstances, married Jacqueline of Hainault, an heiress whose claims were contested by the Duke of Burgundy, and had invaded Hainault to make them good. The result was that after the battle of Verneuil Philip withdrew his forces from France; and Bedford was obliged to make a great sacrifice of territory in order to maintain even the formal alliance.

In 1428 it was determined to drive Charles beyond the Loire. The siege of Orleans was undertaken and carried on throughout the winter by Salisbury, who surrounded the town with sixty forts. On February 12, 1429, Sir John Fastolph was attacked by five times his numbers as he was conveying a train of salt-fish for the soldiers' Lenten rations to the camp. He entrenched his men behind the waggons, and the archers beat off the attack with murderous loss. This fight was known as the 'Battle of Herrings.' Charles now offered to give up the city to the Duke of Burgundy. In an evil hour Bedford replied that he was not the man to beat the bush that others might catch the birds. Orleans was about to be left to its fate, when the whole course of affairs was changed by one of the most remarkable events in history.

Jeanne Darc, or Joan of Arc, as she is wrongly called, was a young peasant-girl of Domrémy. As servant at an inn she had listened with growing indignation to accounts of the English oppression, until she became convinced that heavenly voices were calling her to deliver her country. By her importunity she induced the officer of the district to send her to Charles at Chinon; and after a ride of eleven days in man's dress through a country swarming with English soldiers she was brought into his presence. She then declared her commission to relieve Orleans and to lead Charles to be crowned at Rheims. A commission of lawyers and divines pronounced her inspiration genuine. She was furnished with armour, a white charger, and a sacred banner, and was placed at the head of a relieving force. Before setting out she insisted upon the soldiers taking the Sacrament; the camp was purified of all loose characters; and she sent a letter to Suffolk, who had succeeded to the command upon Salisbury's death, warning him that he was fighting against God. The convoy reached Orleans in safety. Then Joan headed four desperate and successful sorties. In the last she was wounded in the neck by an arrow. She drew it out, staunched the blood, and led her men in the final rush. In deep despondency, and in the full belief that Heaven was really

Siege of
Orleans
relieved

511. 1429
K. G. 1429
national
siege of
Orleans
relieved

against them, the English raised the siege on May 8. The Maid gave them no rest. Fortress after fortress surrendered; Jargeau was carried by assault on June 12 after a siege of ten days, and Suffolk taken prisoner. On June 18 Talbot and Fastolph were badly beaten at Patray, and Talbot also captured. Then Joan called upon Charles to follow her through the enemy's country to Rheims. With 10,000 horsemen the enterprise was accomplished, and on July 17 Charles was crowned in the cathedral. By Joan's advice he next attacked Paris. The assault failed; the Maid was wounded and rescued with difficulty. In the spring of 1430 she flew to the relief of Compiègne, then besieged by the Burgundians. She succeeded in entering the town, and on May 25 headed a sortie. It was beaten back; Joan was separated from her party, and dragged from her horse. A few months later she was sold to Bedford by her captors.

The disgrace of her treatment must be shared by all concerned. The French courtiers and generals were jealous of her influence, and Charles basely forbore to ransom or to try to rescue her. The churchmen were angry that her work had been done without their aid; the Inquisition claimed her as a heretic. Bedford, who appears to have honestly regarded her as an emissary of Satan, and Cardinal Beaufort, delivered her to Cauchon, bishop of Orleans Beauvais, as a sorceress. The trial was conducted with treachery, meanness, and cruelty. The end was that, having been handed back as a relapsed heretic to the secular arm for punishment, she was burned in the market-place of Rouen by the English on May 30, 1431, calling upon the Lord Jesus as she died.²

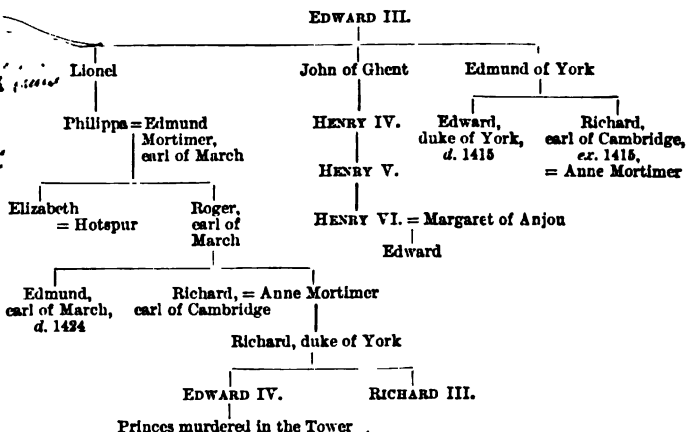
To balance the effect of Charles's coronation at Rheims, Henry VI. was brought by Beaufort to France and crowned at Paris in December 1431. But the English power was doomed. In 1432 Bedford's wife, sister of the Duke of Burgundy, died, and his marriage next year to a vassal of the duke broke up the friendship between them. In 1435 a magnificent but fruitless congress was held at Arras. When Bedford refused to acknowledge Charles VII. as king of France, Burgundy made a separate treaty with the young monarch. Heart-broken at the failure of his policy—for the Burgundian alliance was the backbone of the English strength—Bedford fell ill and died, September 1435. His successor was Richard, duke of York, son of the Earl of Cambridge, executed by Henry V., and of Anne, sister of Edmund, earl of March, who had died in the first year of the reign. An able leader, he re-

² Kitchin, *Hist. of Franco*, vol. i. p. 538.

covered much lost ground, and spread terror to the gates of Paris, which had returned to its allegiance to Charles VII. Through jealousy Richard, at court, he was recalled in 1437; but was again sent duke of York out in 1441 to check the rapid progress of Charles both in Guienne and in the north. In 1444, through the influence of the Duke of Orleans, who had been released for the purpose in spite of Henry V.'s dying command, a truce for two years was concluded.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE IX

DESCENT OF RICHARD OF YORK



Anne, daughter of Roger, earl of March, and great-granddaughter of Lionel, elder brother of John of Ghent, married her cousin Richard, earl of Cambridge, executed by Henry V., son of Edmund of York. Their son was Richard, duke of York, who was thus descended from Lionel by his mother and from Edmund of York by his father.

Confidence in Bedford had kept down the spirit of discord. But at his death we enter the shadow of the Wars of the Roses. There were two parties, that of concession and peace, led by Beaufort and William de la Pole, earl of Suffolk, a brave and experienced soldier, grandson of Richard II.'s chancellor, and the war party, led by Gloucester, who made the release of Orleans the occasion for a violent attack upon his rivals. But Gloucester was discredited by the scandals of his private life; the young king, whose life was a conspicuous example of the modest virtues, held him in aversion. Henry gladly listened to all the advocates

The peace and war policies

of peace. Suffolk's scheme was to marry Henry to Margaret, daughter of René of Anjou, a woman of great beauty and masculine temper. Her father's sister had married the king of France, and this alliance, therefore, promised peace, especially as another part of the scheme was to save Guienne and Normandy by ceding Maine and Anjou to France. The marriage took place in April 1445. Suffolk became the confidant of the young queen, who speedily acquired complete control over her husband. But Gloucester was still dangerous, for the war party was

Death of Gloucester in arms against the cession of Maine and Anjou. In 1447, therefore he was arrested at Suffolk's instigation, and died in prison a few days later. Popular feeling, which had always been in favour of the 'good Duke Humphrey,'³ openly accused Suffolk of his murder. But Suffolk was sheltered by the court. He challenged inquiry into his conduct regarding the marriage treaty, was exonerated by the council, and created a duke 1448. Scarcely six weeks

and of Beaufort after Gloucester's death he was followed by his rival Beaufort, who for forty years had been a great figure, with many faults and one deep disgrace, his share in the betrayal of Joan, but a faithful supporter of the Lancaster dynasty, lavish of his wealth in its cause, and a warm friend of peace.

The cession of Maine had been continually delayed. In March 1448, Charles therefore suddenly broke the truce and captured Le Mans.

Loss of Normandy Edmund Beaufort (p. 149), who had succeeded his brother as Duke of Somerset, was in command in Normandy; and he retaliated by suddenly seizing Fougères in Brittany. Charles straightway invaded Normandy. In quick succession Pont-de-l'Arche, Rouen, and other important towns fell before him; Fougères was recovered; an English army was disastrously defeated at Formigny⁴ in an attempt to relieve Caen. In April 1450, Cherbourg, the last English stronghold, surrendered, and all Normandy was lost for ever to England.

John of Gaunt
Edmund Beaufort
 SECTION 2.—Disorder: Loss of Gascony and Guienne

At home things were no better: 'maintenance' was rife⁵ (p. 148, note); the Percies and Nevilles in the north were at open war. The parliament of 1449 met in anger at the incompetence of govern-

³ This was his title among the lower classes, for whom an anti-concession policy had its usual charm. In opposing Beaufort, too, he seemed to be opposing papal influence. His grace of manner had much to do with his popularity.

⁴ For a graphic account of this battle, and its place in the history of warfare, see Oman, *Art of War*, p. 118.

⁵ For the social causes leading to the Wars of the Roses see Gairdner's Prefaces to the *Paston Letters*.

ment, demanded redress of grievances before supply, and discussed the state of the nation for a whole month. Mutinies broke out among soldiers and sailors. Bishop Moleyns, who had been employed in the negotiations regarding Maine and Anjou, was murdered at Portsmouth when he went to distribute pay. Suffolk was impeached. The charges against him were wildly improbable; but he shrank from trial, and threw himself on the king's mercy. Henry merely ordered him to leave the country for five years. But the people were not to be baulked. Narrowly escaping from their fury in London, Suffolk embarked at Ipswich for Flanders; but the crew of a ship of the royal navy overtook him, held a mock trial, and then beheaded him at sea, May 2, 1450. His body was thrown on the Dover sands, and lay there until buried by Henry's orders.

The government was helpless, and disturbances took place in several counties. In Wiltshire Bishop Ayscough was killed. A formidable rising in Kent and Sussex was headed by Jack Cade, who gave himself out as a Mortimer and cousin to the Duke of York. The rioters demanded the banishment of Suffolk's friends and the employment of the Duke of York.⁶ Cade led a large force towards London, but withdrew before Henry. At Sevenoaks he turned upon a detachment of the royal troops, routed them and slew their commander, Humphrey Stafford. The king's army melted away, and he retired to Kenilworth, while London admitted Cade's men. Lord Say the treasurer, and his son-in-law, the sheriff of Kent, were seized and beheaded in Cheapside. London was given up to pillage for three days. But on the fourth the citizens took heart; the commander of the Tower attacked the rebels on London Bridge, and a running fight went on through the night. The next morning Cade's force dispersed upon an offer of pardon. He himself forfeited it by further excesses, escaped to Rochester, and thence to Sussex, but was there captured by the new sheriff of Kent, Alexander Iden, and died of his wounds. This rising served to emphasise the need of a strong hand in the government. There were two claimants for power now that Suffolk and his friends were gone—the two nearest kinsmen of the king, York and Somerset; and from the badges of white and red roses worn by their followers the civil wars which followed took their name. Somerset, a grandson of John of Ghent, was the representative of the House of Lancaster after Henry VI. (p. 149).

⁶ This rebellion was 'the first move in the struggle between the Houses of York and Lancaster.'—Gairdner, 'Jack

Cade's Rebellion' (*Fortnightly Review*, October 1870).

But Richard was the direct heir, both of Edmund, duke of York, and of Lionel, duke of Clarence (p. 152). Should Henry VI. leave no son, his succession was practically certain; even now he could claim the throne on the ground of the usurpation of Henry IV. As heir of the legitimate line he was not likely to yield to Somerset, the heir of the bastard, though legitimatised, Beauforts. For these reasons he was the object of Margaret's jealous hatred, while Somerset, who had been a conspicuous failure in Normandy, took Suffolk's place in her confidence. York was supported by the Nevilles, viz., the Earl of Salisbury his brother-in-law, Salisbury's sons the Earl of Warwick and Lord Montague, and his nephew Mowbray, the Duke of Norfolk. Somerset had on his side the rivals of the Nevilles in the north, the Percies and Cliffords.

Almost at the same moment Richard arrived from his government in Ireland, and Somerset from Normandy. Richard marched on London and forced Henry to promise a new council, of which he was to be a member. Somerset was attacked by the peers and arrested. But Margaret's influence soon released him, to be loaded with fresh honours; and for another year he was in control of the government.

But in 1451 Charles VII. conquered Gascony and Guienne almost without a blow, and by the end of the year Calais alone remained to England. All eyes were once more turned to Richard, whose claims began to be openly talked of. In 1452 he again marched towards London. Avoiding the royal troops, he crossed the Thames at Kingston, and reached Dartford with 17,000 men. But the country was not yet ripe for civil war. Henry again promised the dismissal of Somerset, and, as soon as Richard disbanded his force, again broke his word. Richard was saved from Somerset's revenge only by the advance of his son Edward with 10,000 men.

A final attempt was now made at reconquest in France. Talbot, earl of Shrewsbury, retook Bordeaux and overran Guienne. But in 1453 Charles VII. set himself resolutely to drive out the English once more; and Talbot could offer no effectual resistance. At Castillon on the Dordogne he imprudently attacked a superior force in a strongly fortified camp, protected by artillery. His army was totally defeated; he himself, covered with wounds, fell in the thick of the fight. Bordeaux surrendered October 17, and Guienne and Gascony passed finally to France, which now reached the Pyrenees.

This ruined Somerset, as the loss of Normandy had ruined Suffolk.

Two other events hastened the crisis—the birth of Henry's son Edward, and the mental malady, doubtless inherited through his mother from Charles VI., which attacked the king and rendered him unfit to govern. Thus the peaceful accession of Richard after Henry's death was barred, while he was at once brought into competition with Margaret for the regency.

SECTION 3.—*Wars of the Roses. Triumph of House of York*

Strife began forthwith. Somerset was impeached, and for a year lay untried in the Tower, while Richard received a commission from parliament to act as the king's lieutenant, and, as Henry's derangement became more serious, was made Protector, an office revocable by the king, should he recover. At Christmas the king was well and Richard's power lapsed; Somerset was set free, and again became sole adviser. Richard was deprived of the government of Calais, and, with the Nevilles, driven from all power. This made war inevitable. In May 1455, Richard, Salisbury, and War-

Civil war begins; battle of St. Alban's and death of Somerset

wick marched to a council at Leicester, with 3,000 men. They were met at St. Alban's by Somerset and the king on May 22. A half-hour's struggle in the streets was decided by Richard's archers. Somerset, Northumberland, Stafford, Clifford, and other Lancastrian lords were slain and the king wounded. Henry then ruled by Richard's advice, until he again fell ill in November; Richard was reappointed Protector, the commission this time being revocable by parliament alone. In February 1456 the king again recovered; but Richard retained power. Warwick had the government of Calais; the primate, Bourchier, was secretly in Richard's interest. But the queen would not give way; she intrigued both with the King of Scotland, who as the son of Jane Beaufort (p. 149) favoured the Lancastrians, and with the King of France. The former ravaged the borders, the latter the southern shores. An agreement between the queen and York, or open war, could alone put an end to such a state of things. The former was first tried. In February 1458 the parties were reconciled at a great ceremony,

Reconciliation

in which Yorkists and Lancastrians walked in pairs, the queen leaning on the arm of the Duke of York. Peace was kept for a year. But the certainty of war paralysed government. The queen had no policy but hatred of York. No parliaments were held. The quarrel entered into every family, and even divided the monasteries. Livery and maintenance were rampant (p. 144, note), the country was swarming with disbanded soldiers, and the nobles, no longer able to plunder France, were ready to plunder one another.

Margaret took the first overt step by sending a force to arrest Salisbury; but he overthrew it at Bloreheath on September 23, 1459, and then joined Richard and Warwick on the Welsh borders. Henry with unwonted energy marched upon them with 60,000 men, offering pardon to deserters. The Yorkists dispersed; the leaders fled: Richard and his second son, Edmund, earl of Rutland, to Ireland; Edward, with Warwick and Salisbury, to Calais. In November 1459 the whole Yorkist party was *attainted*⁷ of treason, and an oath taken to support the king's infant son as heir to the throne.

This sweeping attainder compelled the Yorkists to fight on. Communication was kept up between Ireland and Calais; the field was prepared by the harsh measures of the government at home, and in June 1460 Edward, Salisbury, and Warwick landed at Sandwich, and were welcomed by London and by the primate. Marching straight upon the king, they defeated him with great slaughter on July 10 at

Northampton in another half-hour's battle. The future character of the war was settled by Warwick's orders to spare the common soldiers, but to give no quarter to the nobles. Buckingham, Shrewsbury, and many others fell in the fight; Henry was taken and brought to London; the queen fled to Scotland; the attainders were reversed; and Richard came over in haste from Ireland. On October 16 he formally made a claim before the Lords to the crown. The Lords referred it to Henry himself, and he referred it back to them. They then declared that Richard's title could not be gainsaid. But they would not deprive Henry of his crown. The cases of Stephen and Henry II., and of the treaty of Troyes, furnished precedents. Henry was to remain king for life, and Richard and his heirs were to succeed. Large grants of lands were made them to support their new dignity.

But Margaret fiercely repudiated this arrangement, and the North rallied to her call. A great force was collected at Wakefield, and Richard, attacking at disadvantage, December 30, 1460, was routed and slain. The example set by Warwick at Northampton was improved upon. The 'black' Lord Clifford, in revenge for his father's death at St. Alban's, murdered Edmund, earl of Rutland, a boy of eighteen, in cold blood after the battle. Salisbury was captured and beheaded next day. The head of Richard, by Margaret's orders, was adorned with a paper crown and

⁷ 'Attainting' means corrupting the property. It entailed forfeiture to the blood, and deprived the attainted person of the right to possess or to transmit crown, and, as a rule, death.

placed on the walls of York. It is even said that the prisoners were paraded before the Prince of Wales, who was bidden to choose the death which each should die.

But never was victory more barren. Margaret indeed reached St. Alban's, where on February 17 she defeated Warwick and regained the king; the usual executions followed. London was now within her grasp. But her wild northern followers thought only of pillage. Meanwhile Richard's son Edward had marched from Gloucester to Shrewsbury, turned aside to crush the king's half-brother, Jasper Tudor, earl of Pembroke, in a bloody battle at Mortimer's Cross, February 2, 1461, and retaliated for the Wakefield murders by that of his father, Sir Owen Tudor. While Margaret lingered he slipped past, entered the capital, where the citizens were furious at the ravages of Margaret's men, summoned a council, and claimed the throne. Henry was deposed, and on March 4 Edward was proclaimed king.

There was no parliamentary recognition. The election was in the old fashion. The people came together in the open air, and were asked whether they would accept Edward as their king. They answered with shouts of 'Yea! yea! King Edward!' It was a 'legitimet' restoration, as would have been that of the Stuarts, had the young chevalier hunted George II. from the throne.

Henry VI. was deposed, as Stephen, Edward II., and Richard II. had been deposed, for incompetence. The House of Lancaster had deserved well of the country; it had restored order and constitutional government; it had made England illustrious in war; its kings had been pious and pure. But the need for order outweighed all else, and Richard of York, with the great houses of Neville and Mowbray at his back, had seemed the only guarantee for order. London and the wealthy counties, which had in former times upheld Simon de Montfort against Henry III., and Henry IV. against Richard II., now upheld the House of York on this ground; while the turbulent and half-civilised north and west supported Margaret, who, by her intrigues with France and Scotland, had presented the Yorkists not merely as the party of order, but as the national party.

In this reign the Commons obtained a law exempting members from arrest while parliament was sitting. The conservative social reaction was illustrated by the restriction of the franchise to freeholders of the yearly value of 40s.; hitherto all free-men had voted for knights of the shire. This lasted until the Reform Bill of 1832. Candidates had in future to be knights or of knights' wealth.

Second
battle of St.
Alban's

Battle of
Mortimer's
Cross.
Defeat of
Lancastrians

Deposition
of Henry VI.
Edward IV.
elected

Causes of
triumph of
the Yorkists

Restriction
of the
franchise

CHAPTER IV

EDWARD IV. TRIUMPH OF THE HOUSE OF YORK. 1461-1483

EDWARD had yet to fight for his crown. He marched with Warwick forthwith against Margaret. A skirmish at Ferrybridge on the Aire, near Pontefract, on March 27, was followed by the murderous struggle ¹⁴⁶¹

Battle of Towton at Towton, about 10 miles from York, which closes the first period of the Civil War. Each side had about 80,000 men.

From four in the afternoon of March 29, all through the night and until the next afternoon, the fight hung in the balance. Then the Yorkists were reinforced, and the Lancastrians broke and fled. No quarter was given; the ground was strewn with the dead to the gates of York. On the field itself 28,000 corpses were counted. Snow had fallen heavily, and, as it melted, every furrow ran with a crimson stream. Of the Lancastrian lords, Northumberland and Dacre, with many more, fell in the fight; others were executed. Henry and Margaret fled to Scotland. On June 28 Edward was crowned, and his brothers, George and Richard, were created dukes of Clarence and Gloucester. Parliament confirmed his claim in November, and an act of attainder was passed against the whole Lancastrian party. The queen alone refused to accept defeat. She purchased

French aid by promising to restore Calais as soon as it should be in her power, and that of the Scots by giving up Berwick. She twice invaded England, once by sea and once from Scotland; but Edward and Warwick were too strong for her, and she fled to Philip of Burgundy. By the beginning of 1463 Harlech in Wales alone held out for Henry VI. One more

effort was made in 1464 by the young Duke of Northumberland at the head of a body of Scots, while Henry and Somerset, the son of the late duke, also crossed the border. But Montague successively

Battles of Hedgely Moor and Hexham defeated Northumberland at Hedgely Moor, April 25, where the duke was killed, and Henry and Somerset at Hexham, May 14. Henry was captured next year and placed in the Tower. Somerset also, with many others, was taken and put to death. Montague was rewarded with the earldom of Northumberland and the Percy estates.

Edward had won his crown mainly by the help of the Nevilles, who in turn expected him to be ruled by their advice. But at the outset he showed his intention of shaking off an irksome tie and of raising up a circle of friends dependent only on himself. The widow

*Earl of Northumberland
George Neville
and Montague = a ...*

of the regent Bedford had married Woodville, Lord Rivers. Their beautiful daughter Elizabeth, the widow of an attainted Lancastrian, Edward's marriage: Sir John Gray, threw herself at the king's feet, and prayed that the attainder might be removed. Edward was fascinated by her attractions, and secretly married her, May 1, 1464. He shortly acknowledged her as queen, and showered wealth and honours on all her relations. Her father was created an earl, lord treasurer, and high constable; her brothers and sisters married into the most powerful and wealthy families in the country. But the Earl of Warwick was the greatest nobleman in England. His retainers were numbered by thousands, and he was popular from The Earl of Warwick his vast wealth and unbounded hospitality. One of his brothers was Earl of Northumberland, another Archbishop of York and chancellor. His idea was to strengthen the crown and secure European peace by an alliance with France. But Edward followed the traditional English policy of favouring Flanders, England's best market, and for that purpose he offered his sister Margaret to Charles the Bold, son of Philip of Burgundy, the overlord of Flanders. The marriage took place on the death of Philip, to the delight of the London merchants and the bitter disappointment of Warwick, from whom Edward had carefully concealed his design. *see also the inheritance*

The jealousy caused by the elevation of the Woodvilles, the estrangement of Warwick, and the disloyalty of Edward's brother, Clarence—who now married Warwick's eldest daughter, Isabella, and joined his father-in-law—revived the hopes of the Lancastrians. Ever since 1466 the shrine of St. Thomas of Lancaster (p. 110) had been sweating blood and working miracles. An insurrection Lancastrian revolt broke out in Yorkshire, fomented though not avowed by Warwick. The insurgents routed the royal troops at Edgecote near Banbury with the loss of 5,000 men, captured Earl Rivers and one of his sons, and put them to death. Upon the news of this success Warwick and Clarence threw off the mask, and by a sudden surprise took Edward himself prisoner. He was released upon condition of a general pardon, and of the future marriage of his infant daughter Elizabeth to George Neville, Warwick's nephew. But in March, 1470, Sir Robert Welles, again at Warwick's instigation, raised Lincolnshire for Henry VI. Edward treacherously put his father, Lord Welles, to death, and then fell upon the rebels at Erpingham, in Rutlandshire. In their haste to escape they flung away their coats of mail, and the flight became known as 'Lose-coat Field.' Warwick and Clarence, implicated in the con-

fessions of the leaders, escaped with difficulty. They first went to Calais, but were refused admission by Warwick's own deputy. They then sought refuge with Louis XI. at Paris, where Margaret was residing; and Louis easily brought about a reconciliation between the former enemies. Warwick agreed to lead an army into England to restore the Lancastrian dynasty, if Henry's son Edward would marry his second daughter, Anne. Failing issue to this marriage, Clarence was to succeed to the throne. With a fleet provided by Louis XI.

they landed on the south coast on October 3. Edward, given up to self-indulgence, had foolishly entrusted the royal forces to Warwick's brother Montague, who had a private grievance of his own; for Edward had compelled him to restore the earldom of Northumberland and its estates to the Percies, and to accept a barren marquissate in return. A rising in the north, arranged by Warwick for the purpose, drew Edward from London. Montague and his men threw off the white rose—the badge of the House of York. Left with but 800 men, Edward rode hastily to Lynn, and, with a small following, reached the court of his brother-in-law, Charles of Burgundy; while his queen took sanctuary at Westminster, where she gave birth to the future Edward V. Warwick had fairly earned his title of 'king-maker.' Parliament restored Henry VI., settled the succession upon his male heirs, or, in default, upon Clarence, and repealed the attainder of the Lancastrians. Clarence was also made heir to Richard of York, instead of Edward IV., and appointed Protector conjointly with Warwick.

But Burgundy, the enemy of Louis, was as ready to help Edward as Louis had been to help Edward's foes. The story of Henry IV. was almost literally repeated. On March 14, 1471, Edward

landed at Ravenspur, where Henry had landed, declaring, like Henry, that he had come for his dukedom—not for the crown; and at York he expressly abjured any intention of claiming the throne. But when he found himself at the head of 60,000 men he renounced his oath and marched upon London, offering Warwick and Montague battle at Coventry. He was joined on the route by 'false, fleeting, perjured' Clarence, whose prospects of the succession were too vague to keep him steadfast to Warwick. London was for him, and he again obtained possession of the person of Henry VI. Taking him in his train he marched north, and fought Warwick and Montague at

Barnet on Easter Sunday, April 14. Both armies were enveloped in a dense fog. One portion of Warwick's army mistook another for the enemy, and fired upon it. A panic spread through his ranks, and after six hours' carnage the brothers were

killed. No quarter was given even to the common soldiers; many nobles were taken and put to death.

On the same day Margaret landed at Weymouth with a French force, and was welcomed by the south-west. The battle of Barnet made any advance upon London hopeless, and she therefore marched north, intending to gain Wales. But at Tewkesbury Edward caught her, and won a decisive victory (May 4). Margaret was taken prisoner; the Prince of Wales was either slain in the fight or murdered directly afterwards. Many Lancastrians, including the male survivors of the Beaufort family, took sanctuary; but Edward after two days broke open the church, dragged them out, and slew them all. An attempt upon London by one of Warwick's sea-captains was beaten off by the citizens; and, on May 21, Edward again entered in triumph. On that same night Henry VI. died in the Tower—whether by murder or of natural causes is unknown. There now remained but one possible Lancastrian claimant. This was Henry Tudor, earl of Richmond (p. 150), grandson of Owen Tudor and Catherine, the widow of Henry V.—who had fled with his uncle, Jasper Tudor, the earl of Pembroke, to Brittany. His mother was Margaret Beaufort, daughter of John, duke of Somerset, who, with her cousin of the same name, alone represented the great Beaufort family.

That Edward and Charles the Bold should make war on France was the natural result of what had happened; and a treaty was made by which they were to have respectively the northern and southern portions of the kingdom. Parliament supplied the king with pay for 18,000 archers, and he obtained still larger supplies by subscriptions from the rich—nominally voluntary, but really compulsory—called 'benevolences.' These were an evasion of the law that there should be no taxation without parliamentary consent (p. 99). Probably the people who lent the money acquired monopolies, that is, the sole right to sell certain articles, in return. Vast sums were acquired by attainers and fines from the defeated Lancastrians. With a splendid army Edward set sail in June 1475. But Charles for France was at the time fully occupied with difficulties nearer home; and Edward soon found he had no mind to play the part of Henry V. Louis XI. was lavish with his money. The end of all this preparation was a truce for seven years, a large payment with an annual pension to Edward, and gifts to each of his advisers. The Dauphin was to marry Edward's eldest daughter, Elizabeth, so soon as she should be of fit age; and Edward released Margaret.

Triumphant over dynastic foes, the House of York was now a prey

to domestic dissension. A fierce quarrel arose between Clarence and Gloucester, the latter of whom married Warwick's younger daughter, Anne (p. 160). But then Clarence quarrelled with Edward himself. His wife had died, and he asked for the hand of Mary, stepdaughter of Edward's sister Margaret, and heiress of Charles the Bold, who had fallen at Nancy, 1477. Edward, jealous lest his brother should become a great Continental prince, with Flanders in his hands, and remembering that by Act of Parliament he had been made heir after the late Prince of Wales (p. 161), suddenly arrested Clarence in 1478, and impeached him for his former treason in 1470. He was found guilty by the Lords, and killed in the Tower in some mysterious way.

The country now had rest. Edward was popular from the good order he kept, the absence of extraordinary taxation, his encouragement of commerce, and not least for his handsome person, affability, and gallantry. His chief maxim was to favour the people at the expense of the nobles. But debauchery rendered him incapable of becoming a really great king. In many ways—in his occasional fits of vigour, his customary sloth, his shrewdness, and his immorality—he may be compared with Charles II.

The intrigues of Louis brought about war with Scotland in 1480. Gloucester marched as Edward's lieutenant to Edinburgh, conducting his operations with great skill, and peace was made in 1482 upon the restoration of Berwick to England. The war is notable because the establishment of relays of couriers to carry the despatches between Gloucester and Edinburgh seems to have been the germ of a postal system.

In 1482 Edward was completely outwitted by Louis. That king, it has been seen, had gained peace by promising that the Dauphin should marry Edward's daughter; but he now evaded the promise, and secured for the Dauphin the hand of Margaret, daughter of Mary of Burgundy, who had married Maximilian of Austria, with a large dowry of Burgundian territory. The disappointment sunk deep into Edward's mind, and he died suddenly, April 9, 1483, at the age of forty-one. Edward had secured his throne by unsparing slaughter, and he was a selfish and cruel man. He comes down to us with an evil reputation for every kind of baseness. But it must be remembered that the chroniclers who wrote his story were chroniclers of the Tudor dynasty, and therefore favourable to the Lancastrians.

CHAPTER V

FALL OF THE HOUSE OF YORK

SECTION 1.—*Edward V. (so called)*

THE young prince was at Ludlow, among his mother's relations. But of them the old nobility was intensely jealous, and an order from the council forbade him to be attended to London by more than 2,000 men. His uncle Gloucester especially was bent upon getting rid of the Woodville influence. He came in haste from the north to overtake the prince, who sent back Earl Rivers and Sir Richard Gray to compliment him. In concert with Henry Stafford, duke of Buckingham, the head of the English nobility, descended from Edward III.'s youngest son Thomas and the Beauforts (p. 165), Richard arrested them and Lord Dorset, a son of Elizabeth by her first marriage, accused them before their nephew of a design to usurp the government, and in spite of the boy's tears lodged them in Pontefract castle. The queen fled to sanctuary at Westminster. Richard was declared protector, and a parliament summoned for June 20. In the interval he filled London with his adherents; and on June 18 suddenly arrested Lord Hastings, the chief friend of Edward IV., for showing his dissatisfaction at the duke's evident ambition, and beheaded him on the spot without trial. Rivers and Gray were executed at Pontefract on the same day, and Bishop Morton of Ely, the tutor of Edward's sons, and Archbishop Rotherham of York, were imprisoned.

Gloucester's object was now to secure both the young princes. The little Edward V. was already in his power. The primate was sent to the queen to demand his brother Richard. With tears and forebodings the poor woman gave up the boy, and he was at once placed with Edward in the Tower. The duke's aim was soon made clearer. On June 22 a sermon was preached at his command from St. Paul's Cross on the text (Wisdom iv. 3): 'Bastard slips shall not take deeproot.' It was here asserted that Edward IV. had been contracted to another woman before his marriage with Elizabeth, and that her children by him were therefore illegitimate; and a hint was given that Edward IV. himself was no child of Richard of York. Two days later Buckingham addressed a meeting of citizens in the same sense, and claimed the throne for Richard; and the following day, with several lords, gentlemen, and citizens, he carried a petition to Richard, asking him to accept the crown, and declaring the illegitimacy of Edward's children. After an affectation of reluctance and of loyalty to his nephew, he yielded 'to the voice of the people.'

Richard of
Gloucester
declared
protector

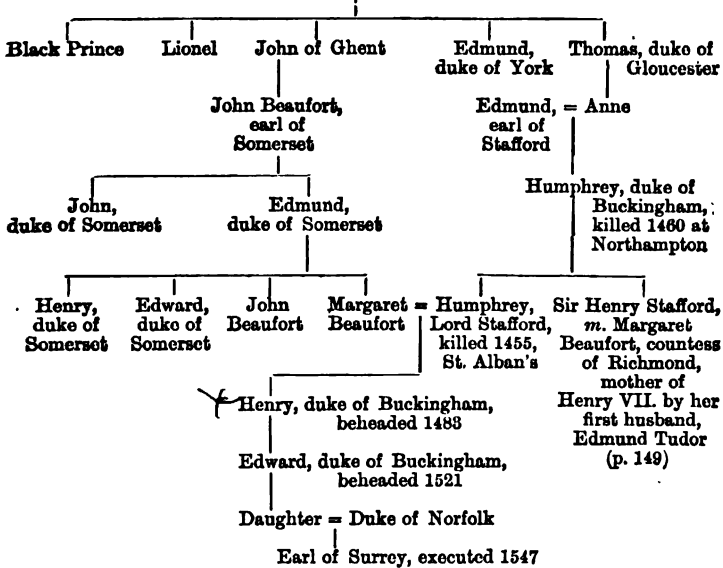
Claims the
crown

The next day, June 26, he took his seat in Westminster Hall, asserted his right as hereditary and elected king, and proclaimed forgiveness of all previous offences; thence he went to St. Paul's, where he was received by a procession of the clergy, and on that day began to reign.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE X

THE STAFFORDS

EDWARD III



SECTION 2.—Richard III. 1483—1485

Richard III. was abundantly endowed with intellectual gifts, though, from his nickname of 'crookback,' he appears to have been afflicted with some slight deformity of person; and he was brave, resolute, and clear sighted. His government of the north during the past years of Edward's reign had marked him out as the one man of ability in the country. But of moral virtues he was destitute. He was crafty and unscrupulous; the disregard of human life or of family ties, of mercy or of faith, which the Wars of the Roses had engendered, reached Character of their climax in him. He was at once calculating and Richard III ferocious; he never showed love or gratitude or trust; he never made a friend, or conciliated an enemy.

Jealousy of the Woodvilles, and the desire to see a strong man in power, not love for himself, had given Richard the throne. He indeed affected to believe the latter; in his progress he refused benevolences, declaring that he would rather have his subjects' hearts than their money. But already there were signs that while the young princes lived he was not secure; even Buckingham was at the head of a movement for their liberation. Richard therefore went resolutely on in the career of murder. The innocent boys were killed in their sleep, and

buried at the foot of a staircase in the Tower; and Richard himself is said to have proclaimed their death. What had been his part in the black deed was not known until twenty years later; but enough was guessed to cause grief and indignation.

Bishop Morton, who had been placed in Buckingham's custody, had formed a plan for the removal of the dynastic rivalries, by marrying Henry Tudor (p. 168) to Elizabeth, daughter of Edward IV.; and Buckingham entered eagerly into the scheme, which was approved by the mothers of both Henry and Elizabeth. Henry was urged to make a descent from Brittany on England, while his friends raised insurrections in the south and west.

On the appointed day risings took place; Buckingham himself raised his standard in Brecknockshire. But Richard had been forewarned, and in a few days was at the head of a large force at Grant-ham. Unsupported by Henry, who sailed too late and was obliged to return to Brittany, the revolt collapsed. The Bishops of Salisbury, Exeter, and Ely escaped; Buckingham was betrayed into Richard's hands, and put to death, 1483.

For the moment Richard was safe. Parliament confirmed his title, January 1484, and passed an attainder on Richmond and all his friends. The lords took an oath to the king, and to his son as heir-apparent. A few months later this son died, and Richard named his nephew, John de la Pole (p. 168), son of his sister and the Duke of Suffolk, in his place. To win general support he sanctioned an act declaring the illegality of benevolences.

Meanwhile his opponents were busily gathering strength. All the personal enemies of the king, all the Lancastrians, all who believed him the murderer of Clarence and the princes, all the friends of Hastings and Buckingham, the whole Gray and Woodville connection, and all who, to whatever party they belonged, wished like Morton to see the civil troubles at an end, flocked to Richmond. At Christmas he swore to them

in the cathedral of Rennes to marry Elizabeth when he had secured the crown. To meet the coming danger Richard intrigued with the Duke of Brittany for the betrayal of Henry, who, forewarned, fled

Murder of
the sons of
Edward IV.

Bishop Mor-
ton's scheme

Revolt and
death of
Buckingham

Benevolences
declared
illegal

Henry Tudor
in Brittany.
Swears to
carry out
Morton's
scheme

to Paris; and he won over the mother of the murdered princes. He endeavoured to excite popular feeling against Henry by declaring that he had promised to surrender Calais should he become king. He was indeed in great straits. He had not a friend upon whom he could rely; his treasury was empty, and he had recourse to the hated benevolences which he had himself condemned. And thus, when Henry landed with a small fleet equipped with Louis's help 27 July
 at Milford Haven on August 7, 1485, in a country always favourable to the Lancastrian cause, and especially to the house of Tudor, he found the ground well prepared. 1485

Richard was on the alert, and expressed delight that at last he should meet his foe face to face. But desertions became ominously frequent; the loyalty of Lord Stanley, the steward of his household, who had married Richmond's mother, was so doubtful that Richard detained his son as hostage. Henry meanwhile reached Shrewsbury with 5,000 men. Richard, advancing from Nottingham, encamped at Bosworth on August 21 with twice that number. But Lord Stanley and Sir William Stanley his brother secretly assured Henry of their support when battle was joined, though to save the life of young Stanley they held off to the last moment. On the 22nd Richard

harangued his troops with well-assumed confidence in a certain victory. But he knew that treason was busy. On the previous night the Duke of Norfolk had received a rude scrawl which ran thus:—'Jack of Norfolk, be not too bold, for Diccon thy master is bought and sold.' The battle which followed was for a long time doubtful. But in the heat of conflict Lord Stanley joined Henry, while Percy, earl of Northumberland, looked on without taking part. Norfolk was slain; his son Surrey taken prisoner. Still Richard felt that if he could strike Henry down victory might still be his. Savage

at the desertion of Stanley, he flew alone, and with desperate courage, upon Henry's body-guard, slew two with his own hand, and had almost reached his foe, when Sir William Stanley, at the last moment, interposed with a fresh force. Fighting desperately, and shrieking 'Treason!' he at length fell, covered with wounds. Stanley picked up the crown and placed it on Henry's head. The body of Richard, stripped naked, was thrown across a horse, with a halter round the neck, and so taken to Leicester, where it was buried without honour in the church of the Grey Friars.

SUMMARY.—The thirteenth century had seen the winning of the Charter. The fourteenth had seen the successful struggle to maintain the Charter and the establishment of the power of the House of Commons. The fifteenth has seen this power constantly making itself more definite; but it does not witness expansion so much as reassertion

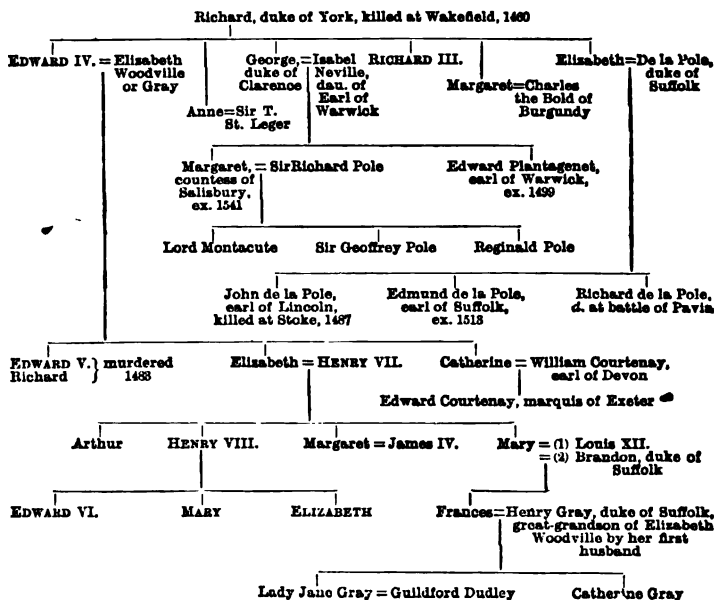
of it. The reign of Henry IV. contains the restoration of order and of constitutional government, and the beginning of religious persecution; that of Henry V. the conquest of France. Then come a minority and a weak king. France is lost again; dynastic rivalry works itself out in bloodshed until Richard III. falls dead at Bosworth. The nation, longing above all for order, willingly gives power to a strong king, without altering the form of government, and unconsciously accepts a despotism.

Principal dates. Lancaster and York

	A.D.		A.D.
Act De Heretico Comburendo	1401	Loss of Gascony and Guienne	1458
Act against livery and maintenance	1401	First battle of the Civil War	1455
Commons originate money grants	1406	Battle of Towton	1461
Battle of Agincourt	1415	Marriage of Edward	1464
Treaty of Troyes	1420	Battle of Barnet	1471
Siege of Orleans	1428	Richard III. proclaimed king	1483
Loss of Normandy	1450	Battle of Bosworth	1485

GENEALOGICAL TABLE XI

THE HOUSES OF YORK AND TUDOR



BOOK VII

THE TUDOR DESPOTISM

CHAPTER I

HENRY VII. AND ORDER. DESPOTISM CREATED

1485-1509

SECTION 1.—*The Struggle to keep the Throne*

HENRY VII. recalls to us Henry I. He was a steadfast, patient man, ruthless in carrying out his purposes, though never wantonly cruel; a true Lancastrian in the virtues of his private life; straight-forward in action and careless of popular applause; severely economical, for he knew that money meant power; filled above all with the spirit of order. Such a character was exactly suited to the work. The nation longed above everything for order, an end to feudal riot and oppression; and it was glad to place vast power in the hands of any ruler who would give them these things. The past anarchy had taught people to think little of the constitution which had permitted it. The great nobles were hated by the rapidly rising middle class, and parliamentary government was discredited. Thus Henry entered upon a vigorous prerogative, willingly granted; illegal imprisonments and forced loans were lightly regarded when they came with real and efficient rule.

On the question of the succession, however, parliament took a memorable step. In his address to the speaker of the Commons

Henry claimed the throne by inheritance and the judgment of God. But parliament wisely ignored claims which were of course contested by the whole Yorkist party. It was declared simply 'that the inheritance should be, remain, and abide in the most royal person of the then sovereign lord, King Henry VII., and the heirs of his body lawfully coming . . . and in none other;' and they prayed him at once to marry Elizabeth, whose bastardy (p. 164) was repealed. This he did in January 1486. The Pope indeed acknowledged Henry's right by war and inheritance; but, so far as England was concerned, the right of the people to elect their king had again been asserted.

The Commons had granted Henry tonnage and poundage, with the customs on leather, for life. To gain immediate funds thirty Yorkists were attainted, the reign being antedated one day in order to include those who fought at Bosworth; and all grants made since the capture of Henry VI. at St. Alban's were resumed by the crown. For the safety of his person, and for the impression it conveyed, a select body of 50 archers, under the name of the 'Yeomen of the guard,' was formed as a permanent guard for the king's person; and they were the only armed men receiving pay in England. For his chief ministers he chose churchmen—Morton of Ely, the author of the marriage scheme, who next year became primate, and Fox of Exeter—a prudent and economical step, since churchmen were less moved by personal ambition than laymen, and could be rewarded by richer bishoprics without expense to the treasury. His stepfather Lord Stanley was made Earl of Derby; his uncle Jasper Tudor, Duke of Bedford; and Sir William Courtenay, his brother-in-law, Earl of Devon. Henry then made a progress through the northern counties, which were strongly Yorkist, and near York met and dispersed a body of insurgents under Lord Lovel, who escaped. The two Staffords, sons of the Stafford killed by Cade in 1450 (p. 154), who attempted a rising in Worcestershire, were taken prisoners, and Humphrey, the elder, executed.¹

In three quarters there was danger to the new reign. Margaret, the dowager duchess of Burgundy, the sister of Edward IV. and Richard III., was eager for revenge. Edward, earl of Warwick, son of Clarence and nephew of Edward IV., was the heir favoured by the Yorkist party; he had been placed by Henry in the Tower, and the king secured the vast Warwick estates which he had inherited through his mother. There were also the De la Poles, the sons of Elizabeth, sister of Edward IV., of whom the eldest, John, earl of Lincoln, had been recognised by Richard III. as heir (p. 166). So long as Henry had no child the Yorkists kept quiet; but the birth of Arthur in September 1486 was the signal for the first serious disturbance. Ireland, where the people, and especially the Earl of Kildare, the deputy, were strongly Yorkist, on account of the gentle rule of Richard of York in 1459 and of the Duke of Clarence from 1461, was made the scene of the first enterprise. A priest named Richard Simons landed at Dublin with a boy of eleven, whom he gave out to be the Earl of Warwick, escaped from

¹ The strong Yorkist feeling in the country, and especially in the north and in London, arose from the discredit of the loss of foreign empire under the Lancastrians, and from Edward IV.'s

favour to commercial interests. Richard III. lost his crown because of his crimes, not because of any popularity of Henry VII. or favour for the cause of Lancaster.

Early
measures

Dangers to
the new
reign

the Tower, but who was really the son of a mechanic, and was named Lambert Simnel. Kildare accepted the story without enquiry, and the boy was proclaimed as Edward VI. He was speedily joined by the Earl of Lincoln, who used him as a stalking-horse for his own designs, with 2,000 Germans provided by Margaret, under the command of Martin Schwartz. To expose the cheat, Henry had the real Earl of Warwick brought from the Tower and shown to the citizens of London; he was then kept with the court. The queen dowager and her son Lord Dorset were placed in confinement; a full pardon was issued for all former offences; and Henry fixed his headquarters at Nottingham, like Richard III. before Bosworth, to command the roads from the north, the new spirit of order being shown by the severe discipline maintained in his army. Meanwhile Lincoln, Schwartz, and the pretender, with Kildare and his Irish, had landed at Furness. At Stoke, near Newark, they were met by Henry, June 16, 1487, and utterly routed; Lincoln, Schwartz, and half their army were killed; Lovel again escaped, but was no more heard of. Simons and Lambert Simnel were taken. The priest died in prison; Lambert was wisely treated with compassionate ridicule; he was placed in some menial post in the household, and in time rose to be falconer. Henry then conciliated Yorkist feeling by the public coronation of Elizabeth, which he had hitherto delayed from the same feeling as that which made William III. afterwards refuse to rule in England as his wife's 'gentleman usher.'

Besides a large grant and a fresh attainder which still further enriched him, Henry obtained the most important act of his reign.

This was the establishment of the Star Chamber, a court which afterwards earned an evil fame as itself the engine of tyranny and extortion, but which at the time struck heavily against the various forms of oppression exercised by powerful men upon their weaker neighbours. It recognised that the king, as the fountain of justice, might act not only through the ordinary courts, but through the privy council. The chancellor, treasurer, and keeper of the privy seal, or any two of them, along with a bishop, a lay peer, and two judges, formed a court from which there was no appeal. This court gained its name, though at what period is uncertain, from the *Camera Stellata*, or room decorated with stars,² in which its deliberations were held. The chief danger to the public peace arose from the general disregard of the law of maintenance and livery (p. 139), which had begun under Henry V. (p. 144, note); from the partiality of the sheriffs,

² Or so called because the Jewish bonds, or 'starres,' had formerly been kept there.

and the browbeating of juries by powerful nobles. The new court had power, which it exercised freely, to summon delinquents from the remotest parts of the country to Westminster, and it showed the determination of the government to make itself supreme over every form of lawlessness. Its scope was constantly extended until by Henry's last parliament in 1504 almost every kind of crime had come under its cognisance. Other laws were passed in the same spirit. It was made a capital crime to carry off heiresses or rich widows; trials for murder were to follow the crime at once, instead of being delayed a year and a day; power was given to justices of the peace to decide summarily and without a jury all offences except treason, murder, and felony.³

Henry's attention was now called to Brittany, which Charles VIII. was seeking to incorporate with his kingdom. Parliament urged him to give active help to its young duchess Anne; for Brittany was our market for linen and canvas, and there was no wish to see French power extended along the coast. But Henry did not intend to impoverish himself by foreign war. He cleverly used the outcry to secure large grants from successive parliaments; and when the clamour for war increased after an English volunteer force had been cut to pieces at St. Aubyn, he merely landed 6,000 men in Brittany, and another body of 2,000 men in the north-east of France. These were carefully kept in inaction until peace was made, and the supplies of parliament, swelled by gifts both from Charles and Anne, safely stowed away. But in 1489 Charles gained his object, and excited the bitterest feeling in England, by a forced marriage with Anne. Henry hereupon formed an alliance with Ferdinand of Arragon, of which one condition was that his son Arthur should in due time marry Ferdinand's daughter Catherine; he joined a great league formed by Spain, the Pope, and the emperor against France, and he again affected to be bent upon war. To gain supplies he first had recourse to benevolences, sanctioned, not by parliament, but by a great council of lords and leading commoners, on the plea that the statutes of Richard III. (p. 166) were illegal, since he was a usurper. 'Morton's fork' Archbishop Morton, the chancellor, is famous for the device known as 'Morton's fork.' 'If a man lived at great expense he was,' said Morton, 'clearly able to subscribe handsomely; if he lived sparingly he must have saved, and could afford to pay out of his savings.' Parliament, in addition, laid heavy taxes for the expected war. In 1492 Henry landed in France with 1,600 men-at-arms and

³ Hallam *Const. Hist.*, ch. i. The whole council, with two judges, which power of the Star Chamber in later sat as a separate court under that reigns silently fell into the hands of the name,

25,000 infantry, the first genuine 'regular army' ever raised by a king of England; the strictest rules were made both for its discipline and for the punctual payment of the men, at the rate of sixpence (now six shillings) a day. This expedition was, however, again a mere feint, for terms had been already made with Charles. By the treaty of Étaples, November 1492, peace was guaranteed until a year after the death of

the survivor, while Charles promised Henry a payment of
 Peace with France 150,000*l.* in half-yearly sums. Discontent at taxation was

now the chief danger. Both in 1489 and 1492 risings took place. But government now was not what it had been at the time of Jack Cade, and they were easily crushed. The case was more serious when a handsome youth, who gave himself out as Richard, duke
 Perkin Warbeck of York, the younger of the two sons of Edward IV.,
 Warbeck landed in Cork in 1491, and was welcomed by the citizens.

Thence he went to France, where he was acknowledged as rightful king. By the treaty of Étaples Henry secured his dismissal. He then went to Margaret of Burgundy, who had a practically independent government in her jointure lands. She treated him as her nephew, and gave him the title of the 'White Rose of England.' He in return promised to repay all the expenses she had already incurred when he had secured the throne, and to restore her lost property in England. He was supported too by the Pope, by James IV. of Scotland, by Charles VIII. of France, and by the Duke of Savoy. But Henry's spies had found out that his real name was Perkin Warbeck, and that he was the son of poor parents at Tournai; and his surrender was demanded from Philip, who had inherited Burgundy and the Netherlands from his mother Mary, daughter of Charles the Bold by Isabella of Bourbon. But Warbeck had promised to hold England under Philip, who therefore refused. As a retort, Henry made Calais instead of Antwerp the staple port for the cloth trade, which had now so much developed in England as to allow of export. His spies had also discovered Warbeck's friends in England. They were arrested, and the chief of them put to death; among them were Sir William Stanley, who had placed the crown upon Henry's head at Bosworth; his enormous wealth, with that of twenty others who were attainted in the next parliament, went to the royal treasury.⁴

Philip was now anxious to rid himself of a guest whose presence had caused so great a loss to the trade of his subjects. Warbeck therefore made an attempt upon Deal, but was driven off, and forced to return to Flanders; 169 prisoners were hung on the sea-shore. Before Warbeck could attempt anything more Henry had done much to

⁴ Gairdner, 'Henry VIII.,' in *Twelve English Statesmen*, p. 108.

secure the stability of his power. The success of two pretenders in Ireland led to the appointment of Sir Edward Poynings as deputy, with a strong force, in the place of Kildare, who was arrested and attainted. Poynings called a parliament at Drogheda, at which two acts were passed, one that all English laws then in force were to be obeyed in Ireland, and another, known as Poynings' law, which remained in force for three centuries, by which no bill could be submitted to the Irish parliament until the king and the English Privy Council had approved of it. These acts placed the Irish parliament completely under the control of the crown. Henry also suppressed the 'Fraternity of St. George,' a military force which had been established in Ireland to deal with the anarchy caused by the Wars of the Roses, but which the king now thought dangerous to his authority. Another law of extreme importance, both now and in the future, was that which, taking account of the alternate attainders and executions of many years, and of the consequent unwillingness of the nobles to serve the king, lest by a fresh revolution they should lose their lives and fortunes, enacted that a king *de facto* was henceforth to be king *de jure* as well; that no one who should attend the king for the time being should on that account, whatever might be the fortune of war, incur the penalties of high treason.

Henry and Philip now came to terms. On condition that no rebel should find protection either with Philip or Margaret, Henry re-established the trade with Flanders by the *Intercursus Magnus*, or Great Treaty of Commerce,⁵ which secured freedom of trade in all commodities, without passports or licences, between the two countries, so closely united since the days of Edward III. Warbeck at once sailed to Cork, and attempted the siege of Waterford. But the king's measures had already borne fruit; and the adventurer crossed to Scotland, where he was warmly welcomed by James IV., who gave him his relative, Catherine Gordon, in marriage. They made a raid across the border together in 1496, on the understanding that Berwick should be given up to James, but returned after some fruitless ravages. As usual, Henry took the opportunity to levy fresh taxes, and this was again followed by revolt. The miners of Cornwall rose, and marched tumultuously, to the number of 16,000, under Lord Audley and Thomas Flammock, to Kent, where, remembering Cade's rebellion, they hoped to find friends (June 1497). On Blackheath they were attacked by the royal forces and dispersed with the slaughter of 2,000 men. The leaders were executed. But the lesson was not lost upon Henry,

⁵ Moberly, 'The Early Tudors,' in *Epochs of Modern History*, p. 49.

and this was the last time that he applied to parliament for a tax of importance.

Once more James and Warbeck ravaged the north, but retired at the approach of Surrey with 20,000 men, and a truce was then made for seven years. Warbeck left Scotland, touched Cornwall again at Cork, and finally landed in Cornwall. There he gathered 6,000 men, and attempted to carry Exeter by assault. At Taunton he was met by Henry. His heart failed him, and on the night before the battle he fled to sanctuary at Beaulieu, in Hampshire. His followers dispersed; the leaders were taken and hung; his wife was made an attendant on the queen. Upon promise of his life Warbeck gave himself up. But in June 1498 he escaped, was recaptured, and was forced to sit in the stocks on successive days at Westminster and Cheapside, and there to read his confession aloud. He was then lodged in the Tower with the Earl of Warwick. A renewed attempt at escape enabled Henry to rid himself of both, Warbeck suffered on November 16, 1499, and Warwick, the last dangerous representative of the Plantagenets, twelve days later. This severity was prompted by a fresh plot hatched in the French court, in which a boy named Walford, tutored by a friar called Patrick, had again personated Warwick. They were arrested in Kent. Walford was put to death; Patrick died in prison. The Tudor dynasty was now safe, and Tudor despotism could begin. Henceforward Henry ruled without parliaments until 1504.

SECTION 2.—*Beginning of the Tudor Despotism*

Secure at home, Henry now established a great European position. Both Spain and France were, through mutual jealousy, eager for his alliance. Louis XII. of France, who wished to be free to attack Spain in her Italian dominions, made a fresh treaty and paid the Étapes subsidy punctually. Spain was united to England in 1501 by the marriage of Arthur and Catherine of Aragon. Catherine brought a dowry of 200,000 crowns, which she resigned to the king, and of which half was paid down. As Philip of Burgundy had married Mad Joan, Catherine's eldest sister, this alliance brought with it a closer friendship with Philip's dominions in the Netherlands, and, upon the death of Joan's mother Isabella, with Castille, which Joan inherited from her. Four months later Arthur died; at the desire of Ferdinand, who wished to have England on his side in case of war with France, she was contracted to Arthur's younger brother, Henry. But Ferdinand refused to pay the second half of the dowry, and Henry therefore

would not allow the marriage to take place, though he detained Catherine in England. In 1503 the friendship of Scotland, and the possible future union of the two countries—realised when James I. succeeded Elizabeth—was secured by the marriage of Henry's eldest daughter, Margaret, to James IV. Meanwhile Elizabeth had followed her son to the grave. Henry at once looked out for a second, and a wealthy, wife. He even proposed to marry his own son's widow; but her mother, Isabella, declared that such a marriage was 'too wicked to be so much as named in Christian ears.' Finally he turned his eyes on Margaret of Savoy, sister of the Archduke Philip. A storm drove Philip and his wife Joan on to the English coast, and Henry detained them, under hospitable pretence, until Philip had promised his sister, with 800,000 crowns, to himself; had consented to the marriage of his infant son Charles—destined to rule over half the known world—to his youngest daughter, Mary; had signed a new treaty of commerce, so favourable to England that in the Netherlands it went by the name of the *Intercursus Malus*; and had agreed to give up Edmund de la Pole, duke of Suffolk, brother of the Earl of Lincoln who fell at Stoke, and the last possible claimant to the throne (p. 168), on condition that his life was spared.⁶ Shortly afterwards Philip died. Henry at once proposed to marry his widow, Joan; but her pronounced insanity, and Ferdinand's jealousy lest Henry should thus acquire Castille, as well as great influence in the Netherlands, prevented their union.

Henry had, meanwhile, never ceased to amass wealth. He sold court offices, bishoprics, and pardons to the Cornish rebels; in 1503, one year after Arthur's death, he exacted an aid due on making him a knight, and another for the marriage of Margaret to James IV.—feudal dues which had not been heard of since the knighting of the Black Prince. His chief agents for extortion were Sir Richard Empson and Edmund Dudley, two barons of the exchequer. Their method was twofold. They revived all the dormant and obsolete claims of the crown under the feudal system,⁷ and extended the feudal services unconstitutionally. Secondly, they revived old statutes which had created many offences punishable by fine, imprisonment, and forfeiture, and exacted penalties from officials who had failed to take notice of violations of these statutes. This created a host of informers; hundreds of persons were brought before Empson and Dudley, and, if they refused to pay a fine, a packed jury at once gave a verdict against them for the crown; if they did not appear, they were outlawed, and the outlawry reversed only upon heavy

⁶ Henry did not break his word, but should be executed by his son.
he left orders at his death that Suffolk

⁷ Moberly, *The Early Tudors*, p. 61.

payment. In many cases Empson and Dudley committed persons to prison on their sole authority. The judges—the guardians of liberty under the Plantagenets—became now the mere tools of the crown. It illustrates the strength which Henry had acquired, and the dread of a return to anarchy, that although discontent rose so high in 1504 that the king was forced to forgive many offences and to disavow his agents, yet no actual disturbance began; nor, although the course of oppression was soon resumed, was there any until his death, when he had amassed the enormous sum of 1,800,000*l.* Henry himself, if the story be true, actively seconded Empson and Dudley. Upon leaving the Castle of Hemmingham, where he had been entertained by the Earl of Oxford, one of his warmest partisans, he noticed a number of men in the earl's livery drawn up to do him honour. Upon his inquiry, his host told him that they were his retainers. 'By my faith,' returned the king, 'I thank you for your good cheer; but I may not endure to have my laws broken in my sight. My attorney must speak with you;' and the earl was fined 15,000*l.* It is very probable, however, that this was collusion, that it was done to impress others, and that the fine was not intended to be exacted.

This constant acquiring of money was not mere avarice. Henry knew that to be secure he must be rich, and that money would enable him to rule without a parliament. He kept his own household with frugality, and, for the first time since the accession of Henry III., the expenses of the crown were less than the income. But when necessary he spent freely. He erected and endowed many religious institutions; and the chapel at Westminster remains to show his taste, wealth, and munificence. Henry did not try to make England great, but safe and prosperous; it was no light matter that under him food was plentiful and cheap. He kept as far as possible out of foreign war, while he asserted England's right to take part in Continental affairs. He found England in confusion, isolated, and weak; he left her orderly, strong, and a European power. In every way he favoured commerce, not only for the sake of the prosperity it brought, but because Edward IV.'s policy in that direction had helped to make the merchant class Yorkist.⁸ Merchant shipping was greatly encouraged by an act insisting that wine should come in by English vessels only. His reign closes the period of feudal riot, and begins that of strong monarchy—a monarchy strong because of the previous riot, and because of the weakening of the nobles by death and attainder—which was to test to breaking point the parliamentary system. But, if it was an epoch for England, it was still more so for Europe at large, and may be said to be the beginning of modern history. It was the consolida-

⁸ Moberly, *The Early Tudors*, p. 71.

tion of the great European monarchies; the disappearance of the old methods of warfare through the use of gunpowder; the rapid spread, from Italy, of the revival of classical learning which followed the sack of Constantinople in 1453, and of which the development of colleges at Cambridge and Oxford were one symptom; above all, it saw the development of the art of printing and the discovery of the New World. Gutenberg of Mainz had already found out the method of printing by movable types in 1449. In 1477 Caxton set up his press in England. His first book printed in England was 'The Dictes of the Philosophers,' in that year; 'Robin Hood' (1489), 'Chevy Chase,' 'The Nutbrowne Mayde,' and 'The Ship of Fooles' (1508), were among the earliest triumphs of the art. Caxton died in 1491. In 1492 Columbus discovered the West Indian Islands; in 1497 Cabot, under Henry's protection, sailing in an English ship from Bristol, reached America, and Vasco de Gama found the route to India by the Cape of Good Hope. In this way the great trading centres of Europe were transferred from the shores of the Mediterranean to Spain, Portugal, England, and Holland.⁹

CHAPTER II

HENRY VIII. 1509-1547. TUDOR DESPOTISM CONFIRMED BY PARLIAMENT

SECTION 1.—*Henry and the Continent. Wolsey and the 'Balance of Power'*

HENRY VIII. was eighteen years old when he ascended the throne on April 22, 1509. In person he was said to resemble his grandfather, Edward IV., who was noted for his handsome presence. He Person and character was tall and strong, with bright complexion and short golden hair. He was an adept in all manly exercises and highly educated. His state papers show keen perception and great power of expression. He spoke four languages; he knew much of music, medicine, engineering, and shipbuilding; he was widely read in theology. An intense love of pleasure and high spirits concealed during two years of revelry an invincible self-will and an inexorable temper which no thought of mercy or justice could affect.¹

⁹ For the conditions and extent of English trade, and the measures taken by Henry VII. to encourage it, and for all matters connected with the self-government and corporate life of trading towns, see Mrs. Green's *Town Life in*

the Fifteenth Century.

¹ 'He is sure a prince of a royal courage,' said Wolsey, on his deathbed, 'and rather than he will want any part of his will or appetite, he will put the loss of one-half of his realm in danger.'

Almost his first act was to arrest Empson and Dudley. They pleaded legal justification for their acts. But they were attainted upon the charge of conspiring to seize the government at the death of Henry VII., and Henry was forced to yield to the popular cry for their blood. The Star Chamber was kept in vigorous action against all forms of riot and violence; gambling and games of skill were forbidden to all except those of noble birth by a law which is still in force; rough games, such as football, were prohibited as tending to violence; but in their stead everyone between the ages of seven and sixty was ordered to practise archery at the range of 220 yards at stated times. To the navy Henry gave much personal attention.³

But the young monarch soon began to long for distinction in actual warfare. An opportunity came when the pretensions of Louis XII. to the kingdom of Naples and the duchy of Milan and his attack upon the Pope, brought about the 'Holy League' of 1511. Henry joined it; he was proud of his orthodoxy; flattered by the titles of 'Head of the Italian League' and 'Most Christian King'; and his affection for Catherine of Aragon, whom he had married two months after his accession, placed him under the influence of Ferdinand. Urged by the national hatred of France, and neglectful of the warning of his council that the use of firearms had robbed England of the advantage of her supremacy in archery, he formed a separate treaty with Ferdinand for a joint invasion of Guienne. The failure of the expedition caused him the deepest discouragement, from which, however, he was roused by a gallant feat of arms off Brest by his fleet under Sir Edward Howard. In 1513 he made a second treaty with Ferdinand and the Emperor Maximilian, whom he took into his pay, and he landed in France with 25,000 men. Catherine was left regent, and, to secure her against disturbance, Edmund de la Pole, duke of Suffolk, was executed in accordance with the will of Henry VII. Terouenne was besieged, and an action took place at Guinegate, August 22, which from the precipitate flight of the relieving force of French cavalry, ever afterwards bore the name of the 'Battle of Spurs.' The place surrendered, and in September Henry captured Tournai. It was then agreed that for 200,000 crowns the emperor should renew the war in June 1514, and should consent to carry out the marriage of his grandson Charles and Henry's sister Mary (p. 176): an insignificant result for an expenditure equal to seven and a half millions of our money.

³ Moberly, *The Early Tudors*, p. 100.

It was in the preparations for this war that Thomas Wolsey first came into prominence. He was born at Ipswich in 1471 of well-to-do parents, and was sent to Oxford at eleven, taking his bachelor's degree four years later. Favour and ability rapidly raised him to a royal chaplaincy under Henry VII.; he was employed in delicate missions to Maximilian and James IV., became dean of Lincoln in 1508, and was introduced by Fox to Henry VIII., in the hope that he would succeed in leading him to adopt peaceful councils. His knowledge of foreign politics, his versatility, his ability for business, his learning and wit, and his ready companionship in the king's more frivolous pleasures, soon gave him commanding influence. His great idea was that in the quarrels of the Continent England should preserve an armed neutrality so strong that she might at any moment reap the utmost advantage from the rivalry between France and Spain which he saw must henceforward be a chief factor in Continental politics. He was the first diplomatist England had produced, the first who realised the idea of allowing no one power to gain overwhelming force, expressed in the modern phrase 'the balance of power.' At home he saw in the royal strength the only guarantee for national union and for stability in the changes which were coming; in his eyes the king alone could give expression to the national will.

While Henry was still before Tournai great news reached him. In August 1513, James IV., now the active ally of France, invaded England with 100,000 men. He crossed the Tweed at its confluence with the Till, and when the Earl of Surrey advanced to meet him took up an impregnable position on Flodden Edge. Surrey crossed the Till, followed its right bank until he was between the Scots and their own country, then recrossed at Twissel Bridge, and marched against James from the north. The Scots thereupon, unperceived by Surrey, took up a fresh position on Branxton Hill, further to the north. The day was misty, and on a sudden the English found themselves at the foot of the hill, with the Scots barely a quarter of a mile off, rushing down the steep slope to the attack. Each army was in four distinct bodies. The extreme English right under Edmund Howard was broken by the charge of Home's spearmen; but it rallied, and a dubious fight was at length determined for the English by the charge of Lord Dacre and 1,500 horse. Next to the left, Thomas Howard, Lord High Admiral, after a desperate struggle routed the 7,000 Scots who assailed him. Surrey was attacked by James himself, who had hewn his way to within a few yards of the royal standard, when Sir Edward Stanley, who on the extreme left had broken

the Highlanders of Lennox and Argyle, and had chased them over the hill, turned about and charged down upon him in rear. This decided the fight. It had lasted barely an hour; but James himself, nearly the whole Scottish peerage, and 10,000 men had fallen. For a long time the dread of Flodden lay so heavy upon the Scots that, although they made one or two expeditions over the border, the news of the approach of an English force was alone needed to send them hastily home. Surrey, the son of the Duke of Norfolk who fell at Bosworth, was now restored to his father's title; his son, Lord Thomas Howard, became earl of Surrey in his place; Brandon, the king's intimate friend, was made duke of Suffolk; Lord Herbert, earl of Somerset; Sir Edward Stanley, Lord Monteagle. Wolsey received the rich bishoprics of Tournai and Lincoln, and was shortly afterwards created archbishop of York. His position was now extraordinary. His wealth was enormous, for Henry was a lavish master, and Charles, Francis, and the pope gave handsome presents to secure his favour. He appeared abroad with the utmost pomp, and maintained a household rivalling that of the king himself, in which young nobles were proud to serve. The whole business of the country was in his hands. Henry had persuaded the pope to make him first cardinal and then legate; and as such he was superior even to the primate. As chancellor he presided both at the Chancery and the Star Chamber, and showed himself an upright judge. There was nothing more for him to aim at but the papacy. When Leo X. died in 1522, Henry, who hoped to use Wolsey in Christendom as Henry II. had hoped to use Becket in England, pressed for his election, but Charles secured that of his own tutor Adrian; and he was again disappointed when Adrian in turn died and was succeeded by Clement III. All absorbing as it was, Wolsey's power hung by a thread, the caprice of his master; it contained indeed the seeds of its own destruction. Immersed in business, he was forced to give up that intimacy with the king in his lighter pleasures by which he had largely acquired his influence. Henry began to choose his intimates among the nobles, and the nobles to a man were the jealous enemies of the middle-class upstart. Meanwhile the policy of the balance of power was steadily maintained by Wolsey.

In August 1514, when Maximilian and Ferdinand both refused to continue the war, it led to the marriage of Louis XII., fifty-three years old, with Henry's sister Mary, then sixteen. But Louis died in the following January, and Mary, who had married him to please Henry, now declared that she would please herself, and became the wife of her former lover Brandon, the duke of Suffolk, and by him the ancestress of Lady

Marrriage of
Mary,
Henry's
sister, to the
Duke of
Suffolk

Jane Gray. In 1519, by the deaths of Ferdinand and the Emperor Maximilian, Charles became master of Austria, Germany, Spain and her colonies, Italy, the Netherlands, Sicily, Artois, and Franche-Compté. Three despots—Charles, Francis I., and Henry—the eldest of whom was not yet thirty years of age, divided Europe between them. They became competitors for the vacant imperial title, and Charles secured it. Francis, who was bent upon gaining northern Italy for France, at once sought Henry's alliance, and a meeting took place between the two monarchs near Calais, ever since known as the 'Cloth of Gold,' from the extravagant magnificence displayed. But Charles had not been idle; he had already secretly visited Henry at Canterbury, had overcome the jealousy caused by his elevation, and had arranged terms with him which made the treaty with Francis a mere farce. War broke out between Charles and Francis in 1521, and Henry was asked to arbitrate. Wolsey had charge of the negotiations; but Henry's keen jealousy of Francis, in whom he saw a rival in every form of personal prowess, Catherine's affection for her nephew Charles, and the intense anti-French feeling of the whole nation, dictated the decision. Wolsey's policy of armed neutrality was swept to the winds, and Henry agreed with Charles to attack Francis in concert, on receiving his promise to marry the little Princess Mary when twelve years old.⁵ Two desolating but futile raids were made in the autumn of 1522 through the north and north-east of France. The war then went on between Charles and Francis; but in February 1525 Francis was disastrously defeated and captured at Pavia; among the slain was Richard de la Pole, the last Yorkist claimant, brother of the Earl of Lincoln who fell at Stoke, and of the murdered Duke of Suffolk (p. 179). Henry now proposed to Charles that they should meet at Paris and divide the kingdom, he himself becoming king of France, while Charles took the Burgundian provinces.

But money was sorely needed, for the treasure of Henry VII. had long been exhausted. In April 1523 the king called a parliament, and Wolsey came down in state and demanded 800,000*l.* But the Commons behaved with spirit. They refused to discuss the matter until Wolsey left the house; and after a debate of fifteen days they

⁵ As Catherine had no son, Mary was the destined successor. To show the earnestness of his alliance, Henry now struck down the Duke of Buckingham, the head of the English nobility, and allied to other great houses, who, as descended from Edward III. by his younger son, Thomas of Woodstock

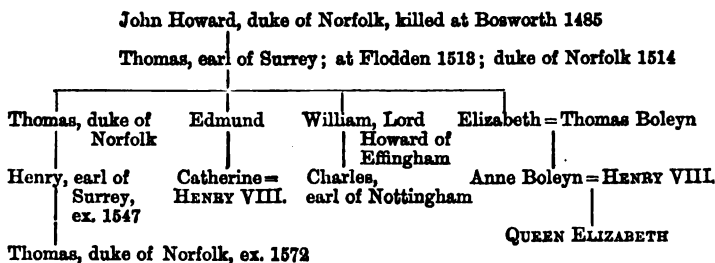
(p. 165), would be heir to the throne if her succession were denied. For a long time he had been carefully watched, and at length it was declared that he had used words which showed his purpose to seize the crown on Henry's death. In 1521 he was suddenly arrested, condemned by his peers, and beheaded.

and the clergy made such limited offers that Henry determined to raise the money by prerogative. He demanded, as an 'amicable loan,' from the clergy a quarter, from the laity a sixth, of their property. But the clergy resisted obstinately; Magna Carta was appealed to; in Kent 4,000 men rose in arms, and Henry was obliged to give way.

The needs of Charles were equally great. Other causes of difference arose, and he refused to co-operate in the suggested enterprise. Henry's self-love was wounded, and he allowed the policy of the balance of power to be revived. For his offer of an active alliance the French government, in their king's captivity, promised an enormous ^{Alliance} subsidy, the repayment of Mary's dowry, and a large pre-^{with France} sent to Wolsey; the Dauphin, instead of Charles, was to marry Henry's daughter Mary; Boulogne was to pass into the hands of England, and war was to be made jointly upon Charles. Francis secretly ratified these terms both in captivity and after he had with the utmost duplicity secured his release by promises to Charles in exactly the opposite sense.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE XII

THE HOWARDS



SECTION 2.—*The Revival of Learning, and Luther. The Divorce, and Fall of Wolsey*

Meanwhile two great intellectual movements were preparing the way for wide political change. The revival of the study of the Latin ^{Revival of} writers and Greek philosophers, as opposed to the chief ^{learning} study of the middle ages, that of theology, was widening the bounds of mental knowledge, as the discovery of America widened those of physical knowledge. The revolt against monkish asceticism was complete. Every form of art was keenly cultivated; to make the present life enjoyable became the great object. Discovery led to

curiosity, to inquiry and criticism. On the Continent this brought about a rapid decrease in the strength of the old religious beliefs, far more rapid than in England. The English 'humanists,' as they were called—scholars like Colet, Sir Thomas More, Archbishop Warham, Bishop Fisher, and, to a great degree, Wolsey—were men of deep religion, and welcomed the new learning as helping to raise the general standard of life and duty. The great chief of the humanists, Erasmus, came to England in the reign of Henry VI., and it was under his influence that Fox founded grammar schools instead of monasteries, and that the Lady Margaret, Henry VII.'s mother, established colleges at Cambridge.

Closely connected with this movement, as part of the general attack upon all modes of thought, was the great protest of Luther in 1517 against the corruptions of Rome. His doctrines soon excited attention in England; but they received no favour at court. His books were publicly burned at St. Paul's Cross. Wolsey, as pope's legate, of course opposed the new views. Henry earned from Leo. X. the title ever since borne by our sovereigns of 'Defender of the Faith,' by his treatise against Luther in 1521, and an angry correspondence passed between the king and the Reformer. Nothing seemed less likely than that the king should waver in his orthodoxy. But at this moment other influences began to act decisively upon his mind.

The plain facts were that he was tired of his wife, and that he had been captivated by the sparkling beauty of Anne Boleyn, a granddaughter of Thomas Howard, duke of Norfolk, who, when earl of Surrey, had won the battle of Flodden (p. 180). Catherine's conduct had been blameless, but she was now over forty, she had borne Henry no son, and she had not concealed her anger at the breaking off of the alliance with her nephew Charles. Wolsey, though it was known that he utterly disapproved of Henry's intention, was not great enough to oppose it, and he shamefully lent himself to one device after another for securing a divorce, on the ground that Henry's marriage with his brother's wife was against the Levitical law. But public opinion ran vehemently in favour of Catherine and of the alliance with Charles, as master of the Netherlands; and an appeal for a favourable decision from the English divines had little success. Francis also, whose son was to marry Mary, Catherine's daughter, was not likely to favour what would make his destined bride illegitimate. The pope, the final arbiter, was in great straits. He was in the power of Charles; he had just witnessed the sack of Rome by that monarch's troops, and he dared not risk his further anger by such an

Protestant-
ism

Divorce of
Catherine of
Aragon

Difficulties
of the pope

outrage on his aunt. On the other hand, he did not wish to drive Henry to an open breach with the papacy by a refusal of his application for a commission with power to decide the matter. He compromised by appointing his legate, Campeggio, to act with Wolsey, but without plenary power.

Campeggio tried to induce first Henry and then Catherine to give way. Failing with both, and having exhausted all methods of delay, he opened his court in June 1529. Catherine protested against the jurisdiction of the court. Henry then demanded judgment. After a dignified appeal to his better feelings, Catherine appealed to Rome. On July 28 Campeggio found an excuse for adjourning the commission for two months. Before the interval expired the pope was freed from the need of conciliating Henry by the agreement of Charles and Francis at the Peace of Cambrai, August 1529, to support him. He recalled Campeggio, and transferred the hearing of the cause to Rome.

To Wolsey this meant ruin. He had only maintained his position by subservience to Henry and Anne. All the king's wrath at the failure of his design was vented upon him. He stood alone. Anne regarded him as the author of the delay in her elevation, and, with the old nobility, headed by Norfolk, did all in her power to maintain Henry's resentment. He was suddenly served with a writ of *præmunire* (p. 123) for exercising legatine authority derogatory to that of the king, though this had been in direct obedience to Henry's command. On October 16 the great seal was taken from him, and he was banished the court. He made an abject submission, and gave up all his temporal possessions to the king, leaving himself destitute. Sir Thomas More⁴ became chancellor; Gardiner, Anne Boleyn's chief agent, took his bishopric of Winchester; and Norfolk and Suffolk were placed at the head of the council. Their incapacity caused a partial restoration of Wolsey; in February 1530 he was pardoned and replaced in his archbishopric. But Anne and his other enemies were unsatisfied. The funds he had collected for his college at his native town of Ipswich were forfeited, and he barely succeeded in saving that which he had established at Oxford, called Cardinal College, now Christ Church. It was found out that he had applied to Francis for his intercession, and this led to his final disgrace. On November 4 he was arrested and brought on his way to London. At Leicester, worn out with disease and disappointment, he

⁴ His celebrated work, the 'Utopia,' wealth, the bitterest satire upon the or 'Nowhere,' conveys, under the form actual state of things in England. of a description of an ideal common-

died, November 1530, a lonely and unlamented man. His best epitaph is that 'it would be difficult to find in modern Europe an instance of a country worse governed than England was during the generation that elapsed between the fall of Wolsey and the death of Mary.'

SECTION 3.—*Separation from Rome. The Commons the Instrument of Despotism*

But before Wolsey died he had seen momentous changes. He knew that the church needed reform, and he had hoped to reform it without injuring its framework: But the nobles were as eager as they had been under John of Ghent (p. 125) to see the power of the church swept away, and to spoil it of its revenues. By their side was a body of politicians with still more drastic aims, of whom Thomas Cromwell Thomas Cromwell⁵ was the guiding spirit. Cromwell, a man of low origin, had, after a life of obscure adventure, become Wolsey's confidential agent. He had lived long in Italy, and had imbibed the principles of political statecraft set forth in Macchiavelli's 'Prince.' He had won golden opinions by his spirited defence of his master in his last days, and it was upon Wolsey's recommendation that he had been taken into similar confidence by Henry. He soon became the king's secretary and government leader in the House of Commons; and, as his advice fell in more and more with Henry's bent, he rapidly acquired, like Wolsey, the whole administrative power. His principle simply was, as with Richelieu in France in later days, to raise the king to absolute authority upon the ruin of every rival influence, and in especial to abolish all independence on the part of the church—so often the great check to despotism. This he intended to do by the hands of parliament itself; parliament was to be the tool of the crown, no longer a check or a danger to it. Of the church, as owning allegiance to Rome, the layman Sir Thomas More, Bishop Fisher, and the monks of the Charterhouse were the representatives. There were also the doctrinal Protestants,⁶ among whom Wiclif's principles were still maintained, and against whom the other parties were united, and who were known only as heretics, scanty in number, powerless for political action, a mark for abuse, scorn, and unsparing persecution. Since the reign of Henry IV.

⁵ For the whole career of Thomas Cromwell, read Green, *Hist. of England*, book v. ch. iv.; or *Short Hist.* ch. vi. sec. vi.

⁶ Neither Henry nor anyone else except the Protestants had any idea of change in the *doctrines* of the church.

Protestant began to be the name given to an upholder of Luther's doctrines in 1529. The Protest from which the word is derived was that presented by the Lutheran princes to Charles V. at the Diet of Speier in that year.

the laws against heresy had been strictly enforced. Several persons had died at the stake under Henry VII.; it was death to be detected reading Wiclif's Bible (p. 180), of which a few copies were secretly treasured up. But about 1525 an Oxford student, named

Tyndale's
New Testa-
ment

William Tyndale, fled to the Continent, where, under Luther's direction, he translated and annotated the New Testament in 1526; and he sent an edition of 8,000, with

other Protestant books and tracts, to England, to distribute which a few poor men and lower clergy formed the 'Christian brotherhood.' Wolsey, though not of a persecuting spirit, did his best to put them down. Many fled abroad; the universities were purged of the heretics; and Tyndale's works were solemnly burnt at St. Paul's cross. Wolsey's fall brought no relief. The Protestants were regarded as common enemies; the bishops increased their activity, and burnings became a common sight at Smithfield.

In 1529 Henry called a parliament, whose work, lasting until 1536, was to be memorable. The House of Commons was carefully

Parliament
of 1529-1536

packed with crown nominees; while the abbots, who formed about a third of the Lords, were 'excused' from attendance.

Henry appeared before them a bankrupt, and their first act was to release him from the repayment of all the money he had borrowed.⁷ Then they fell to their chief work—the absolute destruction of the church system. Englishmen generally, who had always fought against papal assumptions, were now especially bitter when they saw their king cited to Rome (p. 187), and were more than ever ready to enforce the independence of the crown. Convocation and the church courts were first attacked, and acts were passed against their power and abuses. Excessive fees for religious services, lay employments of clergy, pluralities, non-residence, and benefit of clergy were forbidden, and the law of mortmain (p. 94) strengthened. The church resisted, and Henry wavered. But Cromwell was ready to point out that so long as the church was independent, England was a 'monster with two heads.' He had already urged Henry to settle the divorce, which underlay the whole controversy, by his own supremacy. He now advised him to threaten the whole clergy with a *premunire*—the

Henry the
supreme
head of the
church

weapon with which he had already overthrown Wolsey—for having acknowledged Wolsey's legatine authority. Panic-stricken, convocation, early in 1531, offered 120,000*l.* to wipe out its offence, and then reluctantly admitted the claim of Henry to be 'the singular protector and only supreme governor of the

⁷ This was repeated in 1544, with the provision that if he had repaid any the creditor or his heirs should refund.

English church, and, as far as the law of Christ allows, its supreme head.'

The threat of *præmunire* had fairly opened the campaign against the pope. In May 1531 Henry was summoned to Rome for the trial of the divorce. He replied by an act—for which he had forced convocation itself to petition—utterly abolishing all power of independent legislation on its part; by another forbidding appeals to Rome; and by a third suspending the payments to Rome of first-fruits and tenths—the whole income, that is, of the first year of all beneficed clergy, and a tenth of each year's income of both bishops and clergy. Thus all judicial and financial connection with Rome was broken off. Sir Thomas More resigned the chancellorship in protest.

Henry was vigorously seconded not only by Cromwell but by Thomas Cranmer, a clergyman whose time-serving character has been forgotten in the pathetic greatness of his end, and who, by writing in favour of the divorce, contending for it at Rome, and obtaining opinions in its favour from the English and foreign universities, had become king's chaplain, and in 1533, though married, archbishop of Canterbury. He had taken the oath of obedience to the pope—who was bribed into sanctioning the appointment by a half promise that the annates should, after all, be paid—but only after promising to uphold the royal authority and the desired reforms. In November 1532 Clement had threatened Henry with excommunication if he did not restore Catherine; but, in January 1533, the king secretly married Anne. Convocation was forced to declare his first marriage illegal, and in May Cranmer held a court at Dunstable, at which the marriage with Anne Boleyn was declared valid. In July the pope reversed Cranmer's decision. The conflict went on with increasing vehemence until, in 1534, the admission of convocation was followed up by the *Act of Supremacy*, which made the king 'the only supreme head on earth of the church of England,' and vested all ecclesiastical authority solely in the crown. In 1535 he took the title, 'On earth supreme head of the church of England,' and made Cromwell his vicar-general, who thus, since he was also chancellor, was absolutely supreme. In 1534 the 'Nun of Kent'—a peasant-girl named Elizabeth Barton—who in her true or pretended trances denounced Henry's measures, had been executed, with a number of monks; while More, Fisher, and the Countess of Salisbury—the niece of Edward IV. (p. 168)—had been thrown into prison for corresponding with her. Another act in 1534 still further subjected the church. Nominally bishops were elected by the chapters of the cathedrals; really their appointment had for a long time been

made by the pope on the nomination of the crown. But now the pope's power ceased; the freedom of election was verbally restored to the chapters; but they were really forced by the *congé* Election of bishops given to the crown *d'élire* (p. 79) to choose the candidate nominated by the king, under pain of *præmunire*, and this continues to the present day. All authority over monasteries was taken from the bishops and handed over to the crown. Elizabeth, the infant daughter of Anne Boleyn, born September 1533, was then declared successor, and an oath to her succession imposed on all subjects. Finally it was declared that England did not 'decline or vary from the articles of the Catholic faith of Christendom, or from anything declared in the Word of God to be necessary for salvation.' The church remained Catholic, while it became anti-papal and purely national; the change was one of allegiance, not doctrine; the legislation which began with the Constitutions of Clarendon, and had been carried on by the acts of Edward III., reached its climax in 1534. This great change and the growing ruthlessness of Henry, supported

Execution of More, Fisher, and the monks of the Charterhouse .

by the determination of Cromwell, were emphasised in a terrible way. In May 1535 Haughton, the prior of the Charterhouse, and many of his monks, suffered the terrible death of traitors for refusing the oath of succession. Two of the best of living Englishmen, More and Fisher—the latter a cardinal—who refused to acknowledge the royal supremacy as defined in 1534, and who, though they were ready to acknowledge the power of altering the succession, would not swear to the invalidity of Catherine's marriage, also died in June and July of the same year.

This was the work of Cromwell. Bloodshed without a purpose was as foolish as any other act of policy without a purpose; but, with a purpose, it gave him no scruples. In carrying out his reign of terror he struck, utterly without passion or personal feeling, wherever his blows could have most effect. 'If he struck at the church, it was through the Carthusians, the holiest and most renowned of English churchmen. If he struck at the baronage, it was through Lady Salisbury, in whose veins flowed the blood of kings. If he struck at the new learning, it was through the murder of Sir Thomas More.' Upon the king he kept his hold by working upon his dread of conspiracy. Plots, genuine or feigned, were constantly discovered and suppressed by his care. His spies were everywhere. In the words of Erasmus, it was 'as if a scorpion lay sleeping under every stone.' Not an idle word or murmur escaped his vigilance. Even in silence there was no safety; a law was passed which obliged men to reveal their very thoughts on pain of their silence being punished as treason. Under the same terror juries and judges

Examinations how many

were coerced into giving the verdicts and sentences which he desired. When this failed, the terrible weapon of acts of attainder was used without mercy. Never before or since did England pass through so terrible a time.⁸

SECTION 4.—*The Dissolution of the Monasteries*

But danger was now threatening Henry. Conspiracy was detected in the north; Ireland broke out in rebellion. Charles V. and Francis were likely to attack him in concert; and he knew that the Pope had drawn up a bull for his deposition. He was anxious to conciliate the Catholics, and, as Catherine was dead, he might do so if Anne were out of the way. Cromwell therefore made up his mind to sacrifice Anne to the political exigency. He was glad to be free of a rival influence. Henry was tired of her, and she had borne him no son. In April 1536 she was suddenly brought before a packed court on charges of adultery, incest, and conspiracy against the king. The charges were manifestly false; but on May 15 she was found guilty, her uncle Norfolk being one of her judges. Cranmer declared the marriage null and void from the first, which, of course, made the charge of adultery absurd; and, on May 19, the unfortunate woman was beheaded. The next day Henry married Jane Seymour, who bore him a son in 1537, but died a few days later. But his unpopularity with the Catholics was undiminished, while he seemed now ready, under Cromwell's influence, to break with them doctrinally. He had planned an anti-papal league in northern Europe; in 1535 he had thought of joining the 'Confession of Augsburg,' the embodiment of Lutheran views. But the momentous step was the order that in every church in England there should be placed a copy of the Bible, which, when the bishops demurred, he employed Miles Coverdale to translate. For this, after his habit, he secured a petition from convocation itself. No blow had been struck for individual freedom which could compare with this since the Assize of Arms of Henry II. (p. 71). In 1536 he published the 'Articles to establish Christian quietness,' in which he leans to the Protestant doctrine of justification by faith, and attacks those of purgatory and indulgences. To the pope's bull of deposition he had already replied by the dissolution of the monasteries.

This idea was as old as the Lollards. Henry V. had confiscated the alien priories—those subordinate to abbeys on the Continent. Henry VII., Wolsey, and Henry VIII. had also, with the pope's sanction, dissolved a large number of insignificant priories, convents,

⁸ Green, *History of the English People*, vol. ii. p. 164; or *Short. Hist.* p. 341; Hallam, *Const. Hist.* vol. i. pp. 29, 30, sm. ed.

and monasteries, the funds of which had gone to the foundation of colleges at Oxford and Cambridge, and of Eton. Many more were swept away in 1529 to provide for the building of new cathedrals.

Cromwell's visitation of the monasteries
 Cromwell now made use of the power of visitation which had been surrendered to the crown in 1534. In 1535 he sent visitors to every religious house in England. Their reports were laid before parliament, amid shouts of 'Down with them!' and, in February 1536, Henry was prayed to confiscate to the crown the revenues of all the houses with an income of less than 200*l.* a year. The remainder were placed under rules so onerous that many surrendered of their own accord.

The real object of this suppression, on the part both of Henry and the courtiers, was to get money; the ostensible ground was that the monasteries had become the homes of corruption and immorality. Undoubtedly, they had grievously fallen from their former standard of purity and industry; though, since the commissioners were expected to make out a case against them, and since in four months they were expected to examine into the state of more than a thousand houses, no fair estimate can be formed. But they per-

Use of monasteries in England
 formed so many functions in English life that this sudden destruction caused widespread confusion and distress. From their superior education, the 'religious' had almost all the practice of business in their hands. 'The advisers and teachers of all, they had the work now undertaken by the guardians, the relieving officer, the parish doctor, and the schoolmaster.' They held free schools within their walls, supported scholars at the universities, and young clerics up to ordination. They formed the only agents of poor relief. By the almsgiving, which was the fundamental religious duty, they may have created mendicancy, but they also relieved genuine distress. They established hospitals; no sick man, however loathsome might be his disease, was turned away; the peasant woman in labour could go for her time of peril to be nursed in a nunnery (p. 15). To the poor the change must have been terrible. Those who were before poor now became paupers. Their ranks were swelled by the monks and nuns and servants who were turned adrift. For one beggar in the early years of Henry there were a hundred in the early years of Elizabeth. As if foreseeing the distress, an act was passed to collect voluntary subscriptions in each parish for the relief of the poor. Moreover, the monasteries had been kindly and indulgent landlords. The new owners rack-rented the farms and enclosed the common lands, upon which a poor man had been able to keep a cow or a few sheep, or to grow a little corn. The rich grew richer, the poor poorer; class feeling was

embittered. Many convents had appropriated benefices, and derived their revenues from parochial tithes. These now became the property of those to whom the dissolved houses were granted; and thus began the system of lay rectorships. These lay patrons for the most part kept the money, and made no provision for the spiritual needs of the parishes. The old schools for the poor were turned into upper-class schools. In every way the poor suffered.⁹

It is not surprising, therefore—though Cromwell had prepared the way by appointing preachers to persuade the people that the monks were bad men and worse landlords, and that if their revenues were taken taxation would be lightened—that fierce resistance was made by the people. At Hexham the commissioners were driven off by the monks themselves. At Louth, in Lincolnshire, a serious rising took place. But upon the arrival of Suffolk, with an overwhelming force, the insurgents dispersed; fifty of them were hung, with two abbots and many priests. Their chief complaints had been that the king had kept for himself the payments formerly made to Rome; that a commission had been appointed to inquire into the life of every priest and dismiss him at will; that Cromwell and others ‘of poor birth and small repute,’ with Cranmer and such as ‘subverted the faith of Christ,’ had been promoted. At the same time the reaction against Cromwell and his policy came to a head in the great movement in Yorkshire known as the ‘Pilgrimage of Grace.’ Under the command

Resistance.
The Pilgrim-
age of Grace

of a young lawyer named Robert Aske, 80,000 men of the better classes marched to York and restored the monks; and soon all Yorkshire, except Skipton and Scarborough castles, was in their hands. They demanded simply the undoing of what had been done, with the punishment of Cromwell, Cranmer, and the reforming bishops. Upon large promises from Henry, however, they dispersed. Cromwell then struck hard at the northern nobility, the highest among them were hanged or beheaded; six abbots, with many priests and rebels of lower degree, were hanged; Lady Bulmer was burnt. An important result was the institution of a Lord President and a Council of the North, which sat for four months each year at York, Newcastle, Durham, and Hull. The recurrence of partial risings in 1537 gave Henry an excuse for severity; and all the larger abbeys which had been spared in 1536 were suppressed, the friaries following in 1538. The abbots of Glastonbury, Reading and Colchester were hung for treason. The dissolution was completed by an act vesting the lands in the king and his grantees, and declaring

⁹ See Gasquet, *Monasteries under Henry VIII.*, for the account of their uses and destruction, from the Catholic side.

that they had all been surrendered voluntarily. The bent of Henry's mind at the moment is shown by the authorised publication of the 'Institution of a Christian Man'—a work drawn up by Cranmer and Fox, and known as the 'Bishop's Book.' In this the idea of passive obedience—obeying the king as God's representative—was first expressed.

From these confiscations Henry realised a sum equal to fifteen millions of our money, as well as all the plate and ornaments. About 34,000*l.* was given in pensions to ejected 'religious,' who had submitted quietly. Five new bishoprics were formed, and a few schools endowed; the ships, harbours, and royal palaces were repaired; more than half a million went ostensibly for military purposes; and nearly 300,000*l.* for the household. But it seems certain that the greater part was given to the nobles—which accounts for their willing concurrence—or sold at an absurdly low price. Large numbers of our wealthiest families first became wealthy then. During the last eight years of his life Henry gave 420 monasteries to courtiers. Two effects of the utmost importance resulted, neither desired nor foreseen. The large decrease in the number of the lords consequent upon the exclusion of abbots, made them less able to withstand the course of the Reformation; while the establishment of a new territorial aristocracy out of the spoil,¹ pledged to support the antipapal policy which had enriched them, reformed the barrier against the royal prerogative which the Wars of the Roses had swept away.

SECTION 5.—*Reaction. Fall of Cromwell*

The church had acknowledged the royal supremacy, and had surrendered the power of making laws and canons by her own authority. The election of bishops was in the hands of the crown, and the monasteries were dissolved. The parish clergy alone remained, and Cromwell, recognising the power of the pulpit, now put out a series of injunctions which turned them into mere mouth-pieces of the royal will. No priest might preach without Cromwell's licence. Even then both the topics of his sermons and the method of treatment were clearly prescribed. Theological controversy was utterly forbidden; but every bishop and parish priest was required to preach against the papal claims and in support of the royal supremacy. The bishop was held responsible for the clergy, and the sheriffs for the bishops.

But though Henry had thus enslaved the church, several things made him anxious once more to conciliate Catholic opinion. A general break-up of religious observances, a flood of ribaldry and violence, had

¹ Such as the Cavendishes, Russells, Seymours, Cecils, Dudleys.

followed the late measures. He set to work to show that he was no 'patron of heretics,' and himself pronounced sentence of death upon them. In 1538 a plot broke out in which were concerned the last representatives of the House of York, Edward Courtenay, the Marquis of Exeter, grandson of Edward IV.; the Countess of Salisbury, Clarence's daughter; and her three sons, Lord Montacute, Geoffrey Pole, who betrayed the plot, and Reginald Pole, a deacon, who shortly became cardinal, and who, in his book on 'The Unity of the Church,' had attacked Henry's policy. Montacute and Exeter were executed in 1539, and the aged Countess of Salisbury in 1541. But it appeared that both Charles V. and the pope were cognisant of this plot, and Henry became the more anxious to make his orthodoxy clear. He issued an exhortation for 'decency in externals,' and then made parliament impose the famous 'Six Articles,' the complete negation of Protestantism. The first of these made death the penalty for the denial of Transubstantiation.² Open speech against either of the others was felony; the publication of contrary opinions in writing entailed imprisonment and confiscation for the first and death for the second offence, and severe penalties were enjoined against any breach of the third and fourth acts. Under these acts, though Henry said more than he meant, and though Cromwell was opposed to them, some thirty lives were taken. Men went to death on the one hand for denying the royal supremacy, on the other for denying Transubstantiation. Cranmer was forced to dismiss his wife; bishop Latimer lost his see.

Henry's despotism was uncontrolled. He had reduced parliament to absolute subservience; and parliament now crowned all by an act giving to his proclamation the force of laws. None the less, it must never be forgotten that it *was* parliament which did all this; the law of Edward III. (p. 126) was widened to include many new treasons; men were murdered by attainders without trial; Cromwell could order persons 'to be tried and executed;' life and property were without any practical safeguard; but all this was nominally by the will of parliament. The substance of liberty was gone, but the form and machinery remained; and thus, when times came more favourable for liberty, there was no difficulty

² The others were, (2) The communion was to be 'in one kind' to laymen—*i.e.* the cup was not to be given, as the Protestants wished. (3) Priests were to be unmarried. (4) Vows of chastity were to be observed—*i.e.*

monks and nuns were to remain so, although monasteries and nunneries had disappeared. (5) Private masses were to be maintained. (6) Auricular confession was expedient and necessary.

in restoring it. Had parliament been less corrupt, it would probably have been swept away, and a permanent despotism established.

Cromwell had now to fall, like the vizier of some Oriental despot, at a breath of caprice. The old nobility whom he had eclipsed were headed by his bitter foe, the duke of Norfolk. All whom the Reformation had injured were his enemies. The courtiers, gorged with plunder, had no further interest in supporting him; Henry, incapable of gratitude, had no further work for him as in the past. He fell like Wolsey, though his fall was even more dramatically sudden, at the first moment when his advice clashed with his master's passion. Honestly attached to Protestantism, he urged Henry to marry Anne, sister to

Marriage
with Anne
of Cleves

the powerful Protestant Duke of Cleves; to unite with France and the German princes against Charles V., and thus to stop the Catholic reaction in Europe. But on her

arrival Henry took a profound disgust to her person. The alliance, too, was unpopular as threatening our trade with Flanders. But he dared not draw back for fear of driving the duke into alliance with Charles and Francis against him; and the marriage took place, January 6, 1540. As late as June Cromwell's favour seemed firm; he was created earl of Essex and knight of the Garter. But on June 10 he was

Fall and
death of
Cromwell

suddenly arrested at the council table. Norfolk, expressing in that one action the whole aristocratic hatred, leaped up and tore the order of St. George from his breast. The garter

was taken from him; he was lodged in the Tower, and charged with encroaching on the royal authority, protecting heresy, and conspiracy. The reign of terror had left him without a friend. He had 'tortured words into treason,' and he was treated now with the same measures. He was forbidden, according to the opinion of the judges which he had formerly secured, to make any defence. 'He shall be judged by the bloody laws he has himself made!' was the cry. The terrible weapon of attainder which he had perfected was used against him, and he was executed on July 28. The last marriage was then annulled as extorted by external circumstances; Anne was divorced by act of parliament, and remained in England with 8,000*l.* a year. On the day of Cromwell's death Norfolk carried a bill for the better observance of the Six Articles; several who opposed them were burnt; while at the same time several priests who would not acknowledge the supremacy were hanged. Parliament brought the doctrine of the supremacy to its logical conclusion by an act enabling the king to declare the judgment of the English church on all theological questions, and in 1543 it was made death to disagree with his opinions. In the same year it was ordered that the Bible should be printed without note or comment,

and many restrictions, enforced with heavy penalties, were laid upon reading it. In 1544 Cranmer, though protected by Henry, was vehemently attacked, and 'The Necessary Doctrine and Erudition of a Christian Man,' generally called 'The King's Book,' as Catholic in tone as the 'Bishops' Book' (p. 193) was Protestant, was published, and remained the only standard of orthodoxy until the next reign.

SECTION 6.—*The Close of the Reign*

In Scotland, as in England, the Reformation had been supported by the nobles through greed for the church lands. They looked for support to England against their king, James V., who, having married Mary of Guise, was in alliance with France, and was the champion of the church. War thus came about between the two countries. The burden of Flodden still lay upon the Scots, and at Solway Moss, November 25, 1542, 10,000 of them fled in confusion before the charge of a few hundred English borderers, leaving behind them all their baggage and artillery. The blow killed James V.; on his death-bed he heard of the birth, December 7, 1542, of a daughter, the ill-fated Mary. Henry determined to secure her for his son, and he made a treaty to that effect with Arran, the leader of the reformers. But Cardinal Beaton, the leader of the French Catholic party, carried the child off; a great reaction took place, and Arran deserted his party. Beaton, however, was murdered in 1546, and an English force entered Scotland, burnt Edinburgh and Leith, and ravaged Fifeshire.

In 1536 Wales was legally joined to England, divided into counties, and sent thirty-seven members to parliament. A committee of the privy council, like that for the north (p. 192), was established for Wales, and sat at Ludlow. In Ireland a Catholic revolt broke out, in which demands were made similar to those made by the insurgents in the Pilgrimage of Grace, but was easily suppressed, and in 1542 Henry took the title of 'King and Emperor of the realm of England and of the land of Ireland,' instead of the former one of 'Lord of Ireland.'

In October 1540 Henry married Catherine Howard, cousin of Anne Boleyn, and, like her, granddaughter of the victor of Flodden. But it was discovered that her life before marriage had been licentious, and she, with her friend, Lady Rochford, was attainted of high treason and executed February 12, 1542. In 1543 took place Henry's last foreign war. He had once more joined Charles V. against Francis, having agreed that Mary, his daughter by Catherine of Aragon, should be restored to the succession

in place of Elizabeth, and the old scheme (p. 182) was brought forward of dividing France. In 1544 he landed in France with 40,000 men and took Boulogne, but then returned to England, and Charles and Francis made peace. The French retaliated by attacking Portsmouth and the Isle of Wight, and peace was not made until 1547, when Francis promised the arrears of the 1525 pension, and the cost of maintaining Boulogne for eight years. To pay for this war forced loans were again resorted to, and stern measures taken with recalcitrants. Reed, an eminent citizen of London, for instance, was sent to the border, with directions to the commander to use him according to the 'sharp discipline militar of the northern wars.' From 1543 to 1546 the coinage was debased until it represented one-third of its proper value; all the 'chantries,' or private religious endowments, were confiscated, with 500 hospitals, or almshouses. Worst of all, the guilds, or voluntary associations, partly trades unions, partly benefit clubs, to the number of 80,000, were robbed of their funds; 'the whole machinery of self-help, which had been at work from time immemorial, was absolutely extinguished,' and pauperism again vastly increased.³ Enormous subsidies were exacted in 1543 and the two following years. That all this was borne without clamour points at once to the subservience and prosperity of the people.

The reign closed, as it had begun, in blood. Henry's nature was rendered still more savage by illnesses so painful that he was unable even to sign his name. Norfolk's son, the Earl of Surrey, grandson, by his mother, of Buckingham, and thus of royal descent (p. 165), a faithful servant, and one of the most brilliant scholars of his day, the first of modern English verse writers, and the inventor of English blank verse, who had been guilty of offences similar to those which had brought his grandfather to the block, suffered the same fate (p. 182, note). His father also was condemned, but was saved by Henry's death, January 27, 1547, a few hours before his execution. Catherine Parr, a widow whom Henry took for his last wife, and who was a kind stepmother and a patient nurse, saved herself from a heretic's death only by shrewdness and good sense; she told Henry that when she had differed in opinion from him it was because she saw that in argument he forgot his pains, and in order that she might herself be instructed.

By Henry's will Mary was named successor after Edward, and then Elizabeth, provided they married only with the royal consent. Next were to come the heirs of Mary of Suffolk (p. 181); lastly those

³Jessopp, 'Something about Village Almshouses,' *Nineteenth Century*, June 1890,

of Margaret of Scotland. The government was left in the hands of a council of regency headed by Cranmer.

Dates of the Reigns of Henry VII. and Henry VIII.

	A.D.		A.D.
Revolt of Lambert Simnel	1487	Fall of Wolsey	1530
Establishment of Star Chamber; Treaty of Étapes	1492	Divorce of Catherine of Aragon	1529-1532
Poyning's law	1494	Act of Supremacy	1534
Revolt of Perkin Warbeck 'De Facto' law	1491-1497 1497	Execution of More and Fisher	1535
Marriage of James IV. and Margaret	1503	Dissolution of the monasteries and Pilgrimage of Grace	1536
Accession of Henry VIII. . . .	1509	The Six Articles	1539
Battle of Spurs; battle of Flodden	1513	Fall of Cromwell	1540
Royal Supremacy declared	1529	Battle of Solway Moss	1542
		Death of Henry VIII. . . .	1547

CHAPTER III

DESPOTISM IN ABEYANCE

SECTION 1.—*Edward VI. 1547-1553.—Nominal Protestantism discredited by bad government*

By Henry's will the members of the council, 'new men' with a few conservative churchmen, were to have been equal in authority. But the majority took for their chief Seymour, earl of Hertford, the Duke of Somerset the king's uncle, and he was made Protector. He was popular with the masses, had complete control over Edward, acted in full accord with Cranmer, and soon drove from power everyone who opposed him. Under a schedule, declared to have been drawn up by Henry, he and his friends helped themselves liberally, not only to titles,¹ but to ample portions of church lands.

Edward VI. was the first of our kings who succeeded not by election, but by an act of parliament passed before his accession. At the coronation an important change was made in the form. Hitherto the king had sworn before election to preserve the liberties of the realm. The order was now reversed, and Edward was told by Cranmer that his oath in no way affected his right, which came from God alone. Cranmer and many of the bishops

¹ Hertford made himself duke of Somerset, and his brother lord Seymour; Lord Parr, marquis of Northampton; John Dudley, lord Lisle, earl of Warwick; Russell, earl of Bedford;

Wriothesley, earl of Southampton. Many of their supporters also had peerages, and thus the House of Lords was in their hands.

asked for new commissions as bishops, an emphatic statement of the supreme headship of the church.

The doctrinal reformation went on apace. The clergy were placed under a fresh set of royal injunctions, rigorously enforced. Ceremonies were simplified, the painted windows broken, images pulled down, frescoes whitewashed. Cranmer's anti-Catholic homilies were read in every church, and each parish was bidden to provide a copy of Erasmus's paraphrase of the New Testament. The sacrament was administered in English, the stone altars were broken up and replaced by wooden tables in the middle of the church, the distinctive doctrines of the Roman church were forbidden themes in the pulpit. Gardiner, the ablest of the conservative prelates, and Bonner, bishop of London, were imprisoned; they took their stand upon Henry's settlement, and resolutely opposed, as invalid, changes made during a minority, though ready to agree to any further settlement made by a king of full age.

A parliament, so carefully packed that there was no need to change it throughout the reign, met in November 1547. It at once overthrew much of Henry's legislation. The cruel laws of treason and felony, with the Six Articles, and the prohibition against reading the scriptures, and printing or selling Protestant writings, were repealed; royal proclamations were no longer to have the force of laws. The old heresy laws disappeared; but a denial of the royal supremacy was made felony and treason. The election of bishops (pp. 79, 189) was now transferred completely to the crown, and all documents which formerly ran in the names of the prelates ran henceforward in that of the king. Further confiscation of church property took place, and that of the guilds (p. 197), except in London and in one or two other places where they were very strong,² was now carried out. A part of the funds thus obtained was spent upon grammar schools, but by far the greater part went, as before, to the enriching of the courtiers.

Cranmer now published his Catechism and the 'Book of Common Prayer,'³ founded upon the Catholic missals and breviaries, but avoiding the special tenets most obnoxious to the reformers. In spite of revisions, the Prayer Book now in use is practically the same book. An Act of Uniformity, January 7, 1549, abolished all other forms, under penalty of imprisonment for life for the third offence. Though the heresy

² Dixon, *Hist. of the Church of England*, vol. ii. p. 460.

³ On the significance of this title see Green, *Hist.*, vol. ii. p. 266.

copy of the book
of it with

statutes had been repealed, burning for heresy still remained the common law, and Cranmer showed little mercy. Joan Bocher of Kent was burnt for denying the incarnation, and a Dutchman named Van Paris for denying the divinity of Christ. Many foreign divines, both Lutheran and Calvinistic, driven out by the triumph of Catholicism in Germany, settled at this time in England. The chief were Peter Martyr and Bucer, appointed to teach theology at the universities, while John Knox had a commission to preach in the north. The Lutherans rapidly succumbed to the greater aggressiveness of their rivals.⁴

Somerset had secured from the Scotch reformers a renewed promise (p. 196) that Mary should marry Edward, and they agreed to surrender some castles in pledge. But Arran, at the head of the French Catholic party, rejected the scheme. Somerset thereupon invaded Scotland with 20,000 men, of whom a large part were foreign mercenaries.⁵ On September 10, 1547, a battle was fought at

Battle of
Pinkie-
cleugh

Pinkiecleugh, on the Eske, six miles east of Edinburgh.

The Scots, though for a time they had the upper hand, could not contend against the improved arms of the mercenaries, and were completely routed, with the loss of 8,000 men, of whom a large part were nobles. But, fearful lest Scotland should become a dependency of England, they still refused to agree to the suggested marriage, and sent Mary to France instead, with the offer of her hand to the dauphin. Barbarous but ineffective war went on until 1549. Meanwhile the power of Somerset was being rapidly undermined. He had incurred just odium by the attainder and exe-

Discontent

cution of his brother, Sir Thomas Seymour, lord high admiral, who aspired to the hand of the Princess Elizabeth,

had supplanted him in the affection of the young king, and was engaged in treasonable conspiracy. The mass of the people looked with distaste upon the violent course of the Reformation, with its wanton destruction of so much that they had deemed sacred. The debasing of the coinage, and the influx of gold and silver from America, had caused a general rise in prices, but neither the wages of the poor nor the rents of the landowners rose in proportion. The conversion of arable land into grass land for sheep rearing had thrown large numbers out of work. The absorption of the common lands,

⁴ The sources of future controversy appeared in the opposition of the more advanced reformers to the wearing of the old priestly robes; John Hooper consented to accept a bishopric only on condition that he should not wear what

he called the livery of the 'Harlot of Babylon' at his consecration.

⁵ Henry VIII. had begun this system. They wore better armour than was known in England, and were armed with the modern arquebuse.

which Somerset had in vain attempted to stop, the rackrenting by the new owners of church property, and the abolition of the guilds, added to the distress. In many counties the people rose in formidable strength. In Devonshire and Cornwall the rising was on the religious question; ⁶ in the east it was agrarian. In Norfolk, Ket, a tanner, was at the head of 20,000 men. Under the Oak of Reformation, on Moushold Hill, near Norwich, he summoned obnoxious landlords to answer before his Courts of Chancery, King's Bench, and Common Pleas. But the Devonshire men were cut to pieces at St. Mary's Clyst, near Exeter, and 4,000 died in the fight or on the scaffold. Warwick fell upon Ket, and slew more than 8,000. Ket and ten other leaders were hung.⁷ The mercenaries had saved the government, but their use only increased Somerset's unpopularity.

Revolt The country, too, was humiliated at seeing Henry II. of France capture every English post but Calais and Boulogne. **Fall of Somerset** The erection of Somerset House⁸ brought the protector's rapacity and extravagance prominently before the people, and his arrogance in council alienated his colleagues. In October, 1549, Dudley, earl of Warwick, son of Henry VII.'s minister, accused him of fomenting discord and of intending to make himself supreme. Finding himself without a friend, he yielded at once to the blow, and retired from the council with the loss of property and office. His power passed into the hands of Warwick.⁹

Warwick, now duke of Northumberland, at once made peace with France, upon humiliating terms. Boulogne was given up for a small sum. At the French demand the Scotch castles held by England were restored, and Scotland was admitted as a party to the treaty. Edward was betrothed to a slenderly dowered French princess. The coinage was again debased, and fresh loans exacted. Gardiner, Bonner, and two other bishops, were deprived, and the revenues of several other sees diminished, the spoil going to Northumberland and his friends. He was of course dependent upon the reformers for his power. The Princess Mary alone made head against them. Until the French peace she had been left unmolested, lest her cousin, the emperor, should join France in her support. She was now called upon to obey the law, and she refused. When her chaplains were forbidden to say mass, she simply said that

⁶ The insurgents demanded the old church service, the six articles, Cardinal Pole in the council, and the erection of two abbeys in each county.

⁷ It was this danger which gave rise to the institution of lords-lientenant of counties (p. 58, note).

⁸ Compare Wolsey and Hampton Court, and Clarendon and 'Dunkirk' House.

⁹ In January 1552 he was executed upon a charge of conspiracy to kill Warwick.

in that case she would have no service at all, for she would not listen to the reformed one. The probability that she would soon be queen prevented further pressure. But great severity was used with those who overstepped the lines laid down.¹ The idea of toleration of heresy was as foreign to the Reformers as to the Catholics.

In 1552 parliament, still further packed by the creation of new constituencies for Northumberland's nominees, passed three important measures. An attempt to stem the growth of vagabondage (p. 191) had already been made in 1529, by an act of terrible severity.² This was now followed by one empowering churchwardens to exact collections in their parishes for the support of the poor.³ The Prayer Book was revised to meet the views of the Calvinist foreign divines. The result is known as the 'Second Prayer Book of Edward VI.'⁴ A fresh Act of Uniformity accompanied it. The grosser injustices of trials for treason were removed. Hitherto the prisoner had not met his accusers. It was now ordained that two witnesses on oath should be necessary, and should be brought face to face with the prisoner. To give a final form to the faith of the Church of England, Cranmer set forth the forty-two 'Articles of Religion.' Part of these deal with doctrine, part with ceremonies and discipline, a distinction which must be borne in mind. The Prayer Book had been a link with Catholicism; the Articles were a link with the reformed churches of the Continent. Every clergyman, churchwarden, and schoolmaster was compelled to subscribe them. The final seal had been placed upon the Reformation.

The health of Edward was now visibly failing. Northumberland, aware that from Mary he could expect nothing but disfavour, made up his mind to a bold game. By the marriage of his children he had allied himself with several of the great families. His fourth son, Guilford Dudley, had married Jane Gray, granddaughter of Henry VIII.'s sister, Mary, duchess of Suffolk. He induced Edward to sign a document annulling Henry VIII.'s will in favour of Mary and Elizabeth, and settling the succession upon Jane.

¹ Green, *Hist.*, vol. ii. p. 234.

² The vagabond was branded on the breast with a V, and given to the informer as a slave for two years; he was to be fed on bread, water, small drink, and refuse meat, and made to work by beating or chaining. If he ran away he was branded on cheek and forehead with an S, to show that he was a slave for ever. A second attempt was felony. Somewhat lighter terms were imposed

upon 'religious' vagabonds. This law, however, was repealed two years later.

³ Nominally voluntary, but practically compulsory; under Elizabeth failure to comply was punished by the justices.

⁴ In it the priest has become 'minister,' the altar is the 'table,' the eucharist is a 'commemoration' only, and the sign of the cross is omitted in the consecration of the elements.

He dared not ask for parliamentary sanction, but by bribery and coercion he induced the judges, the council (who were moved by the same fear as himself, but who would have preferred Elizabeth), the lay officers, and even Cranmer, to sign the deed, and he awaited with confidence the death of Edward, which took place on July 6, 1553.

The state of England throughout this reign was pitiable. The nation was brought low in the eyes of Europe. All sympathy between rich and poor had gone, through the fault of the former. Old institutions had been overthrown with heartless violence; new men had made enormous fortunes by unchecked robbery; an amount equal to five millions of our money had gone to the friends of Northumberland and Somerset; religious, political, and financial chaos reigned throughout. Somerset's administration had been bad, that of Northumberland was worse. The people saw in their leaders only selfish adventurers, who held their power by foreign soldiers. The bishops, men of humble origin, were the noblest element in the nation. Cranmer pleaded for grammar schools; Ridley for the guilds; Latimer preached for a grasping nobility on 'Restitution or Damnation.' The majority of the people were still attached to Henry's system, mass without the pope. They had yet to learn that mass without the pope was impossible. Thus everything pointed to a great reaction should the opportunity occur.

SECTION 2.—Mary, 1553–1558. *Nominal Catholicism, discredited by Cruelty and National Disgrace*

Northumberland immediately secured the Tower, and coerced the lord mayor and city council to swear to maintain Edward's will. He then caused Lady Jane Gray to be proclaimed. But the attempted *coup d'état* was frustrated by Mary's promptness. Riding night and day, she reached Kenninghall, in Norfolk. The Earls of Bath and Sussex, the squadron in Yarmouth Roads, and the people in the east, declared for her. Northumberland, indeed, marched hastily against her with 10,000 good troops. But at Bury this force melted away, and he fell back upon Cambridge. Then he learned that the council had deserted him, and had proclaimed Mary amid great enthusiasm; a letter followed ordering him to disband. Seeing the game was up, he himself proclaimed Mary in the market-place. The next day he was arrested. On August 3 Mary entered London. She was met by Elizabeth, whose right had been equally threatened, with 500 followers, and the half-sisters, between whom it was impossible that either affection

or confidence could exist,⁵ rode side by side through the shouting streets. Mary was now thirty-seven years old; her figure was short and not graceful, her face dark and sallow, her features sharpened by bad health; but her eyes were piercing and full of intelligence, her voice peculiarly deep and masculine, her bearing dignified. Elizabeth, then twenty years of age, was tall, well-made, and handsome.

Mary's council was formed from her own friends, and from those who had deserted Northumberland. Gardiner, created Gardiner and Paget chancellor, led the old Church party. He wished to see a Catholic, but exclusively English, church, triumphant over all forms of dissent. Lord Paget, a man of conspicuous ability, led the lay nobility.

Three matters were foremost for settlement—the punishment of the conspirators, the queen's marriage, and the restoration of Catholicism. On all these Mary sought the advice of her cousin, Charles V., whose agent, Renard, was her chief confidant. Northumberland and Punishment of the conspirators his eldest son, the Earl of Warwick, Northampton, and four others, were brought to trial. All pleaded guilty, and Northumberland and Warwick were executed. They died expressing their devotion to the Catholic church; and their apostasy so discredited the Protestants that Mary was able with safety to hear mass in St. Paul's.

There were two serious pretenders to Mary's hand. The first was Edward Courtenay, earl of Devon, the representative of the Plantagenet line (p. 168). The second was Philip of Spain, the son of Charles V. Her Spanish blood and intense Catholicism were at once his advocates. Moreover, the political danger of the marriage of Mary of Scots and the dauphin was in favour of this counter-alliance. Charles was eager for a match which must throw England decisively upon his side against France. To remove English objections he promised to give Flanders to the issue of the marriage. But Gardiner remonstrated on the ground taken by the Scots against

the marriage of their queen to Edward VI.; England Plans for Mary's marriage would be dragged into dependence upon Spain. Moreover, it would probably lead to war with France; it would need a papal dispensation, and interference from Rome would not be heard of. As the head of conservative England, he wished to preserve the anti-papal attitude, and the system of Henry VIII. He urged Mary to marry Courtenay, imprison the Protestant Elizabeth, and extirpate heresy. Paget and his party, equally bent against foreign interference,

⁵ Mary was not likely to forget that she had been forced to act as attendant upon the child. Elizabeth's mother had supplanted her own, and that when Elizabeth was born

wished to leave her choice open so long as Elizabeth's succession were secured. But Mary took neither advice. Her mind was made up to marry Philip, to acknowledge the papal supremacy, and never to recognise Elizabeth's right to succeed.

The restoration of Catholicism began forthwith. The deprived bishops were reinstated; Ridley, Hooper, and the other Protestant bishops put out; the mutilated sees reformed; the foreign divines dismissed. Cranmer and Latimer were sent to the Tower. The old service was resumed by the people themselves, the married priests driven away, the images replaced, the altar restored to the east end of the church. Elizabeth professed herself ready to listen to argument.

Parliament met on October 5. It first swept away all the treasons and felonies created in the last two reigns, and asserted Mary's legitimacy. Then, by 850 to 80, it restored the ancient service. There was no hypocrisy in this, for the accepted doctrine of the time was that the ruler of a country had the right of determining what should be its religion. Several omissions, however, grieved Mary. The supremacy of the church was still left to the crown; no penalty was attached to nonconformity; not a word was said about restoring the church lands. The 40,000 families who had battered upon the spoil of the Reformation had no mind to disgorge. The queen was then prayed to choose an English husband. She coldly answered that she would act for the welfare of her people. Already she had declared at the foot of the altar, in the presence of Gardiner and Renard, that she would marry Philip or no one. Gardiner then insisted that Philip should have no royal title in England, no rights of succession, and no legal influence.

The downfall of the hopes of the Protestants, the fear of persecution, and still more the anxiety of the nobles for their possessions, brought about a formidable conspiracy. Courtenay, with the Earl of Suffolk and many others, encouraged by France, determined upon revolt. Suffolk and his three brothers set out to raise the Midlands; Sir James Crofts, late lord deputy of Ireland, for Wales; Sir Peter Carew for Devonshire and Cornwall, where Courtenay had much influence; Sir Thomas Wyatt for Kent. But Gardiner had drawn the secret from Courtenay himself. Suffolk, with his brothers John and Thomas, and Crofts, were arrested; Carew escaped to France. Wyatt alone was successful. He was soon at the head of 1,500 Kentish men. To save England from Spain was his cry; the squadron in the Thames declared for him. The force sent against him under Norfolk went over to his side in a body,

Restoration
of the
Catholic
service

But not of
the papal
supremacy
or church
lands

Unsuc-
cessful
revolt

crying, 'A Wyatt! We are all Englishmen!' He then marched upon London. Nothing but Mary's coolness and undaunted bearing saved her. She refused either to flee or to take refuge in the Tower; and a speech delivered in her deep voice at the Guildhall, in which she promised to give up the Spanish marriage unless approved by parliament, roused enthusiasm among the citizens, who had heard of Jack Cade, and had no mind to see London again in possession of an armed mob, or a return to aggressive Protestantism. Men were enrolled in haste, the drawbridge on London Bridge raised, and a reward was set upon Wyatt's head, a step which he answered by wearing his name upon his cap. Unable to cross London Bridge, he made for Kingston. But here the Kentish men began to drop off. At what is now Hyde Park Corner his force was cut in two by Pembroke's cavalry, and the rear portion taken prisoners. He himself went rapidly past St. James's Palace, along the present Pall Mall, and reached Ludgate, which friends within had promised to open to him; foiled here, he fought his way back through fast gathering foes to Temple Bar, and there was compelled to surrender.

The immediate result was the sacrifice of Lady Jane Gray and her husband, who, with Cranmer, had already been condemned for treason.

Its results. Her life had been hitherto spared as a pledge for the loyalty Execution of of her father, Suffolk. She died, only sixteen years of age, Lady Jane Gray and her with sweet dignity, and constant to her faith, a contrast husband to the craven behaviour and the apostasy of Northumberland. Elizabeth, too, was accused of complicity, and her life would have been taken but for the firmness of Paget and his friends. Wyatt, Suffolk, and one of his brothers, with sixty more, were executed; Crofts was pardoned; Sir Nicholas Throckmorton was acquitted against the directions of the court, an assertion of independence for which the jury were imprisoned and fined.⁶ Many young Cornish and Devon gentry implicated in the rebellion fled to France and became pirates under the flag of Condé, the leader of the French Protestants. The second result was that, since Wyatt's rebellion had made opposition to the marriage disloyalty, parliament gave way, though with the strongest safeguards against Spanish interference in English concerns, and against England being dragged into the war between the emperor and France. Mary for a long while idolised her husband, a cold-hearted, coarse, and brutal man. He was never popular, and the general feeling was manifested by fierce riots in the streets between his retinue and the people.

⁶ The liberty they claimed was not finally established until the case of Penn in the reign of Charles II.

The restoration of the papal supremacy, and of the church lands, was ever in Mary's mind. But it was so clear that the former would not be listened to unless all thought of the latter was banished, that the pope himself issued a bull declaring that no attempt of the kind would be made. Gardiner now, with the moderate Catholics, gave up the hopes of Catholicism without the pope. On May 6 a fresh parliament met, in which, by dint of court influence, he had a large majority. Its first step was to reverse the attainder of Cardinal Pole, whom the pope had appointed his legate in 1553, but whom Mary had hitherto not dared to allow to land. He at once entered the kingdom, and with full legatine pomp took possession of Lambeth. Then, almost unanimously, both houses passed a vote for reunion with Rome, and on St. Andrew's day, November 30, 1554, knelt before the legate and were absolved from their former sin. Pole thereupon announced that all foundations, during the schism, of cathedrals, churches, hospitals, or schools; all marriages and judicial proceedings; all transfers of church property would be maintained. Parliament at once made sure of this by bills in the same sense, and then by the 'Grand Bill' of January 4, 1555, restored everything to its condition previous to 1529, so far as the crown, the pope, and the bishops were concerned. In other words, the rich men of England nominally gave up one form of religion with which they had no sympathy, for another which had at least the claim of tradition, on condition that their plunder should remain in their pockets.⁷ The act reviving the Lollard statutes was passed after a struggle, and the jurisdiction of the bishops' courts restored. The Catholics thus had their foes at their mercy, though, in the interests of Catholicism itself, and from the desire to have all England on their side against France, Charles and Philip both restrained the persecuting spirit. On one point only, but one of supreme importance for the future, Paget and his party had held their own, both in this and in the preceding parliament⁸—Elizabeth's rights were studiously declared to remain in force.

During the sixteenth century the idea of religious toleration did not exist. Catholics, Lutherans, and Calvinists alike maintained that heresy implied not only the loss of a man's own soul, but danger to

⁷ A new pope, Paul IV., utterly repudiated the concessions, and insisted upon complete restoration of church lands. But the nobles as vehemently refused; they would keep their lands, they said, as long as they had a sword by their side; and it was only by a small majority, and after a

prolonged struggle, that the first fruits which had been given to the crown as supreme head of the church were now handed back to the pope, since he and not the crown was now supreme head.

⁸ For Paget's action see Froude, *Hist. of England*, small edition, vol. iii. pp. 393, 396, 467, 497.

others; it was therefore the plain duty of a ruler to put the heretic out of the world. Cranmer had persecuted when he had the power; it was now the turn of Gardiner, Bonner, and Pole. Religious intolerance Mary, especially, a true Spaniard, believed intensely that she was doing her duty in extirpating heresy. The moral guilt must rest upon the careless upper class. Of all the persecutors, the worst was a lay noble, Paulet, marquis of Winchester. The most painful feature of the terrible time which followed was that it fell only on the weak. The upper clergy, indeed, were not spared; but no nobleman was touched. The victims were chiefly poor men and women.

It was not until 1555 that Mary felt strong enough to begin the work. On January 28, Rogers, a prebendary of St. Paul's, a fellow labourer of Tyndale and Coverdale; Hooper the deprived bishop of Gloucester; Saunders, rector of All Hallows; and Taylor, vicar of Hadleigh, in Suffolk, were burnt where they were best known. Ferrar, bishop of St. David's, suffered at Carmarthen. By the end of April twelve more had become victims.⁹

Whatever pain Mary inflicted upon others, she was probably the most unhappy woman in her kingdom. She had persuaded herself that she was about to have a child, but the symptoms of unhappiness of the queen were really those of mortal disease. In her disappointment she discerned only a divine punishment for having left her duty against the heretics incompletely fulfilled. A quickening letter was sent in May to the bishops, and in the next three months fifty persons were burnt. Her life was made still more bitter by the absence of Philip, to whom his father, worn out with toil, had ceded the greater part of his world-wide empire, and by the knowledge that the man whom she longed to reverence was consoling himself in Madrid with coarse and brutal excess.

Seconded by Pole, with whom alone she held converse, she determined to propitiate the Deity by the long-delayed sacrifice of the arch-heretic Cranmer. Mary had other causes for hating Cranmer. It was he who had annulled Catherine's marriage and thus made herself a bastard; and he had joined in Northumberland's attempt to exclude her from the throne. As an archbishop who had received the *pallium* (p. 52) from the pope, his judgment lay with the pope, and eighty days must elapse before it was declared. Deaths of Ridley and Latimer Ridley and Latimer, who had never been bishops in the papal sense, were meanwhile tried and condemned, and on October 16 were burnt in Oxford at the same stake. 'Be of good comfort, Master Ridley,' cried Latimer, as the

⁹ The persecution was chiefly in more than all before or since in London, Kent, Sussex, and the eastern England, but less than in many a single counties. 250 died before Mary's death, day's work in Spain or France.

faggots were lighted; 'play the man; we shall this day light such a candle, by God's grace, in England, as I trust shall never be put out.' The bishops' prisons were crowded with victims, who died there, and were thrown out to lie unburied in the fields.

On December 14, Paul IV. convicted Cranmer of heresy, pronounced deprivation and degradation, and delivered him to the secular arm. He, too, was hereupon condemned to death by burning. He was not a man of consistent strength of character, and he broke down under the strain. He made five recantations, each more ample than the last; in the fifth he accepted the papal supremacy and all the cardinal doctrines of the Catholic faith, and declared that outside the Catholic church there was no salvation. A month later he made a sixth, still more abject. He hoped to save his life. But his judges had no such thought. Their victims hitherto had been the defenceless, and for the most part the poor and unlearned, and all these had died constant to their faith. They now looked forward to see the spiritual leader of the Reformation cover his creed with disgrace by recanting at the stake. On March 21 he was led out to die. In the shadow of death he trampled down his weakness. He was urged to save his soul by public confession of his sin. When he spoke it was to retrieve himself in the eyes of posterity. In language of sincere self-abasement he uncompromisingly withdrew his recantation. Stretching his right hand into the flame, he held it there, crying, 'This was the hand that wrote it, and this shall first suffer.'

Scenes such as this—and there were many—caused intense popular disgust. Every death won adherents; the frequent acts of violence, the scurrilous pamphlets which were scattered abroad, the insults to priests and images, testified to the revulsion. 'Bloody Bitesheeps' was the mildest term for the bishops. Bonner of London especially became the mark of execration. 'The very Papists themselves,' he was told, in an anonymous letter, 'begin now to abhor your bloodthirstiness. . . . Every child can say "Bloody Bonner is bishop of London." . . . You have lost the hearts of 20,000 that were rank Papists within this twelve months.'

During 1556 and 1557 there were abortive conspiracies, worse than useless, since their failure and the encouragement they received from France discredited Protestantism. Every effort was made by Mary's friends to ruin Elizabeth, or at least to secure a declaration of her illegitimacy, by implicating her in the various plots. But she found an unexpected protector in Philip, who feared lest, if she were out of the way, Mary of Scots would be the

heir, and, as the dauphin's wife, would unite England, France, and Scotland against him.

In 1557 war was renewed between France and Spain. For a time Philip's endeavours to drag England into the war were vain (p. 207). But the help given by France to a descent upon the coast at Scarborough by Thomas Stafford, grandson of the Duke of Buckingham who had been executed by Henry VIII., forced the hand of the council, and 7,000 men were sent to join Philip. On

August 10, 1557, the French were routed at St. Quentin. This defeat of their allies discouraged the Scots, who as usual had seized the occasion to invade England, and they dispersed upon the first advance of the English troops.

Vexations now came thick upon the desolate queen. Her husband and the pope had quarrelled. Pole, her sole support, was recalled by Paul IV. on an accusation of heresy, and a new legate appointed. But Mary's loyalty to her friend proved greater than her devotion to Rome, and, with a flash of her father's masterfulness, she refused to allow his successor to enter the kingdom. But the bitterest trouble was the loss of Calais. Under Henry VIII. its fortifications had been kept in good repair, but they had latterly been allowed to fall into decay. On January 7, 1558, Calais fell to a sudden and well-arranged attack by the French, and a few days later the outpost of Guisnes surrendered after a still fiercer struggle. On January 10 a relieving fleet was almost annihilated by a tempest. The blow, only partially lightened by the success of a fresh fleet at Gravelines in July, in union with the Spanish land forces, crushed Mary's spirits. She felt that Heaven had decided against her; she felt keenly the national humiliation, and is said to have exclaimed that when she died the name 'Calais' would be found upon her heart. Her distress was matched by the anger of her people, and when John Knox, from Geneva, issued his famous 'First Blast against the Monstrous Regiment of Women,' in which Mary was denounced as a Jezebel, a traitress, and a bastard, it had eager readers. She could but fall back upon a renewed attempt to propitiate Heaven by setting the fires of persecution at work more busily than ever.

The country bore with Mary because it looked past her to the Protestant Elizabeth. Her death would put an end to England's troubles, and this was rapidly approaching. She was half-maddened by a fresh disappointment of child-bearing, by the desertion and infidelities of Philip, by the quarrel with the pope, the death of Gardiner, the illness of Pole, and the knowledge of her people's hatred; most of all by her failure to extirpate heresy. Un-

skilful medical treatment hastened her end, and she died, peacefully and resignedly at the last, on November 17, 1558. A few hours later Pole died also, and with them died the persecution.

Mary's private character was stainless, her court pure. She was liberal to the poor and distressed. Her intellect was acute, vigorous, and highly cultivated; she understood Italian, French, and Spanish, and spoke Latin with gracefulness and ease. She might have been a great queen, for, Spanish as she was in her bigotry, her heart was English. But the interests of the nation were sacrificed to those of her church, and, as 'Bloody Mary,' she left behind her a hateful and abiding memory. Had she been less sincere she would probably have succeeded in her great design. She failed, and utterly, from the very intensity of her purpose. It was owing to her fierce Catholicism that England became a Protestant country; that the Church of England, as it now exists, sprang at once to life; that more than a century later hundreds of innocent Catholics died on the word of Titus Oates; and that to this day the slightest assumption of her creed in England threatens to raise a storm. Probably no book besides the Bible has ever affected the temper of a nation as has Foxe's 'Book of Martyrs,' published in the next reign.

Dates. Edward VI. and Mary

	A.D.		A.D.
Battle of Pinkiecleugh	1547	Marriage of Mary	1554
First Prayer Book and Act of Uniformity	1549	England becomes Catholic.	1554
Second Prayer Book	1552	Catholic Persecution	1555
Death of Edward	1553	Burning of Cranmer	1556
Catholic Service restored; Wyatt's Revolt; Execution of Lady Jane Gray	1553	Loss of Calais	1558

CHAPTER IV

ELIZABETH. 1558-1603. DESPOTISM WITH THE WILL OF THE PEOPLE. DUEL WITH ROME

.SECTION 1.—Religious Compromise. The Church of England

THE task of Elizabeth was that of her grandfather, Henry VII.; to undo the evils of a generation of misrule, to remove the causes and the calamities not indeed of civil, but of religious war, and to make England strong among other nations. She, too, in spite of many grave faults of character, vanity, dissimula-

Elizabeth's
character
and policy

tion, irritability, and ingratitude, was admirably fitted for the task—clear-sighted, cautious, and strong-willed; firm of purpose, if wayward in detail; and intensely national in spirit. To nothing was her success more due than to her choice of servants, the chief of whom, Sir William Cecil, retained her confidence throughout her reign.¹ Above all, she was no bigot. She had already conformed to three modes of worship. She knew what intolerant Catholicism had meant; she knew what intolerant Protestantism had meant. She knew that the mass of Englishmen were free from strong religious bias, and were longing only for peace. Upon them she determined to throw herself. She resolved to establish a system in harmony with a government popular for other things than its religious policy, and thus to rally the people to the cause of national greatness, and not the triumph of a creed. But whatever she might intend, the keynote of her reign was struck when the pope declared her illegitimate, and the Catholic Mary of Scots lawful queen; and when Mary, at the instigation of her uncles, the Guises, assumed the royal title, and quartered the English arms with those of Scotland and France.

The plans of Elizabeth were kept secret, but the bishops caught the alarm, and with one exception refused to officiate at the coronation. Their fears were justified when parliament met. The religious statutes of Mary were swept away, those of Edward VI. re-enacted, and the first fruits given back to the crown (pp. 188, 207, note). The *Act of Supremacy* was the reply to the pope. All beneficed clergy and crown officials were obliged to take an oath against the papal authority on pain of death for the third offence. By the *Act of Uniformity* the Prayer Book² was ordered, under crushing penalties, to be read by every minister, and a fine of a shilling was affixed to every absence from church

Acts of
Supremacy
and Uniformity. The
Church of
England

¹ Cecil was a yeoman's son, who had been employed by Somerset, Northumberland, and Mary, and had become Elizabeth's confidant before her accession. He was now secretary, and shortly was made lord treasurer. His brother-in-law, Sir Nicholas Bacon, was lord keeper of the seals. Besides these there were at different times Francis Bacon, son of the lord keeper, Knollys, Smith, Throgmorton, and Walsingham, who succeeded Cecil as secretary. All were commoners, and only one, Cecil himself, was raised to the peerage as Lord Burghley. The queen was always chary of titles. It is noticeable that after 1572 there was not a single duke in England. The devotion of her servants

is the more remarkable because of the extreme ingratitude she displayed to them.

² This Prayer Book was formed by blending the two books of Edward VI., so as to avoid as far as possible giving offence to Catholic, Lutheran, or Calvinist. Thus the prayer for deliverance 'from the bishop of Rome and all his detestable enormities' was struck out, with such words as 'heretic,' 'papistical.' How successful was the compromise in language is shown by the fact that the pope offered to accept it if his supremacy was allowed. The act was only carried by three votes after two bishops had been imprisoned and other severe measures taken.

on Sundays and holy days. These two acts settled the character of the Church of England. A commission of laymen saw that they were carried out. All the bishops³ but one refused the oath. With most of the higher clergy they were deprived, and their places filled by the primate, Matthew Parker, formerly Anne Boleyn's chaplain, with the more moderate of the returning exiles; but the bulk of the clergy were never put to the test, and out of 9,400 only 189 were deprived. The spirit of compromise rapidly gained ground. 'A priest would celebrate the prescribed mass at his parsonage for the Catholics, and the prescribed communion in church for the Protestants.'
 Religious compromise With the compromise came also much confusion, neglect, and indifference. The state of the lower clergy, and of the universities, morally and intellectually, was throughout the reign very bad. But religious chaos is better than religious persecution, 'and at the close of 1559 England seemed to settle down in a religious peace.'

SECTION 2.—*Elizabeth and Mary of Scots.*

Security from external danger had still to be gained. Philip of Spain remained friendly for the old reasons (p. 209), in spite of Elizabeth's refusal to marry him. By the practical abandonment of all claims to Calais, and by a promise not to assist the Scotch Reformers against Mary's mother, Mary of Guise, who had been left regent, peace was secured with France at Câteau Cambrésis, April 12, 1559, and the danger of a hostile alliance of France and Scotland removed. But Cecil had no intention that the latter condition should be kept. He meant to use the Reformers to secure Mary's renunciation of her claim and the dismissal of French troops from Scotland. His chance came when the 'Lords of the Congregation,' the Scotch nobles who, under the influence of John Knox, had formed a covenant⁴ to embrace the Calvinistic creed and church system (p. 280), rose in arms. Elizabeth herself naturally sided with a sovereign against rebels, hated Knox as the instigator of rebellion and as the author of the 'Monstrous Regiment of Women' (p. 211), and had no mind to see a Presbyterian church on her border when she was enforcing an opposite system in her own country. But she gave way before the danger of a French occupation of Scotland

³ Under Edward and Mary the bishops had been rapidly gaining power. But to her very death-bed Elizabeth showed the utmost jealousy of them, and, while regarding them as useful for keeping order, never allowed

them the least scope beyond her instructions.

⁴ They had at first asked for the English Prayer Book; but Knox forced Calvinism upon them in its entirety.

and the open assertion of the claims of Mary and her husband, the dauphin; and an English fleet turned the scale at the moment when the rebels were on the point of being crushed by the French troops.

Elizabeth and the 'Congregation'
 By a treaty with the 'Congregation' at Berwick (January 1560), Elizabeth agreed to maintain an army in Scotland until the French were expelled, the Scots promising never to consent to the union of the crowns of Scotland and France, and to aid her with 4,000 men in case of invasion. But shortly afterwards the regent died. Francis and Mary—now king and queen of France by the death of Henry II.—at once made peace (June 1560), both with the Congregation and with Elizabeth. The French troops left Scotland, and Mary and Francis pledged themselves to give up the arms and style of England, and acknowledge Elizabeth's right. But in August the Scotch parliament accepted Calvinism and forbade the exercise of the old religion on pain of death for the third offence. Francis and Mary hereupon refused to ratify the treaties, and Elizabeth reformed her bond with the Congregation. The sudden death of Francis solved the difficulty for a time. The queen mother, the famous Catherine de Medicis, became regent of France. Her policy was to balance Catholic and Protestant, and for this she needed peace. The likelihood of Mary attacking Elizabeth with French help thus vanished for a time.

But in August 1561 things had so far changed in Scotland⁵ that Mary left France, and, escaping the English cruisers, was received with the wildest enthusiasm. Her prospects were very bright. She was sure of French help if Catholicism prevailed; she was the hope of the Catholics in England, and she was the nearest heir to the English throne. For the moment she determined to conciliate. For her principal ministers she took her natural brother James Stuart, earl of Murray, and others of the Congregation; and while remaining firm to her own religion, and refusing to confirm the establishment of Calvinism, she gave toleration for the support of a united kingdom. But she was soon emboldened by the decisive overthrow at the end of 1562 of the Huguenots,⁶ who had again revolted, at Rouen and Dreux, in spite of Elizabeth's aid. She secretly pledged herself to the pope to restore Catholicism, and offered herself in marriage to the son of Philip II. Elizabeth and Cecil could only wait and watch for mistakes on Mary's part, and this they did for six years more.

⁵ In consequence of the refusal of the nobles to give up to the reforming clergy the church lands they had seized.

Creighton, 'Age of Elizabeth,' in *Epochs of Modern History*, p. 66.

⁶ The origin of the name is uncertain.

The collapse of French protestantism and Mary's success made it difficult for Elizabeth to adhere to compromise. She had already, May 1561, ranged England decisively on the Protestant side by refusing the pope's invitation to take part in the Council of Trent, which finally settled the Catholic faith. Pius IV. hereupon forbade the Catholics to obey the Act of Uniformity. Parliament met this attack in March 1563 by the *Test Act*, which extended the Act of Supremacy, with the penalties of *præmunire* (p. 128) for the first, and death for the second, offence, to every one except lay peers. The Articles, reduced to thirty-nine, were forced upon all clergymen. These acts were however passed against great opposition, and were leniently exercised. The sword was only held over the heads of the Catholics *in terrorem*. This was justified by the religious truce in France, and by the renewed weakness of Mary's power in Scotland. In her case also compromise had broken down, and she was being hard pressed by the Reformers. Her marriage with her cousin Henry Stuart, Lord Darnley, July 1565, excited Elizabeth's utmost jealousy, for Darnley was not only the head of the English Catholics, but was grandson of Margaret, the eldest sister of Henry VIII., by her second marriage with the Earl of Angus (p. 282). Elizabeth therefore urged the Protestant lords, headed by Murray, to renewed revolt; but Mary rallied her friends and drove them over the border. She then secretly took steps for constraining her parliament to recognise Catholicism as the law of the land.

But at the moment of execution her scheme was overthrown by a tragic event. Darnley's worthless character had made him the object of his brilliant and high-spirited wife's unconcealed contempt; and he had become insanely jealous of her Italian secretary, David Rizzio. He therefore joined the malcontent lords on condition that he should receive the royal title, and be declared Mary's successor. On March 9, 1566, when she was in the seventh month of her pregnancy, a band of nobles, under Darnley's guidance, burst into Mary's room, tore Rizzio from her side, and murdered him. Mary was placed in Stirling Castle until she should establish Protestantism by law and satisfy Darnley. She now made use of all her powers of dissimulation. In spite of the outrage he had inflicted upon her, she enticed back her weak husband, escaped with him to Dunbar, was joined by James Hepburn, earl of Bothwell, with 8,000 men, and once more defeated her foes. With great self-control she relinquished the Catholic design and pardoned Murray. But her victory cheered the English Catholics; while the birth of a son, May 27, 1566,

Attack of
the pope.
The Test
Act—the
English
reply

Marriage of
Mary with
Darnley

Murder of
Rizzio

Mary's
success

added strength to her position by giving the prospect of an assured line of succession if her own claim to England was recognised.

The English parliament therefore urged Elizabeth to marry and name her successor. She had already in 1559 coldly waived the same request.⁷ She now angrily replied that she would consult a few wise men, and not a body of hair-brained politicians. The commons thereupon withheld supply, and the dispute went on for eight months. A fresh petition was met by the imprisonment of a member. But the anger this aroused warned her to give way. She released him, and gave up her threatening tone. The commons then sullenly granted a supply, and were dissolved with a good scolding from the queen. In her refusal to name her successor, Elizabeth was wiser than the commons. There were two possible claimants—the Catholic Mary and the Protestant Catherine Gray, sister of Lady Jane Gray. Had Elizabeth proclaimed Mary, the Protestants would have revolted; had she proclaimed Catherine, the Catholics would have been driven to despair.

Meanwhile Mary had come to terms with the leaders of both parties. The death of Darnley was the immediate consequence. The nobles were alienated from him. He was the object of Mary's disgust, for he was afflicted with a loathsome disease brought on by debauchery; and he was no longer of use to her. A bond was signed by all the principal lords but Murray to put him out of the way. On the night of February 9, 1567, the Kirk of Field, in which he was lodged, was blown up, and his body was dragged from the ruins. Whether Mary was innocent or not can never be known. Bothwell was accused, and was undoubtedly guilty. But he overawed the capital with his troops, and, Darnley's father not daring to appear at the trial, was adjudged innocent. Mary was now obliged to confirm the conspirators in enormous grants of crown and church lands, and to consent to the legal abolition of Catholicism.

Only three months later, May 15, they forced her, though probably she was a willing victim, to marry Bothwell. Nothing could better have served Elizabeth. The marriage with the suspected murderer of her husband discredited her with all decent people; the marriage with a Protestant and the acknowledgment of Protestantism discredited her with all good Catholics. Both-

⁷ Her suitors were numerous; Philip of Spain, his cousin Charles, archduke of Austria, Eric of Sweden, Adolphus, duke of Holstein, the Earl of Arran, the Earl of Arundel, Robert Dudley, earl of Leicester, and later the Duke of Anjou,

brother of Charles IX. of France. For Dudley she had a passion; but he met with the vigorous, though concealed, opposition of Cecil and her other advisers.

well's own associates soon rose against him, and drove him out of the kingdom, to die many years later in a Danish prison. Mary was confined in Lochleven Castle, and forced to abdicate the crown and appoint Murray regent for the young king, James VI., July 24, 1567. But she escaped and faced her enemies once more. Elizabeth urged Murray to come to terms; Cecil secretly pressed him to strike hard. **Battle of Langside** The battle of Langside, May 13, 1568, destroyed Mary's hopes. Two days later she fled to England, confident that Elizabeth would uphold a queen against rebels. To Elizabeth her presence was a sore embarrassment. In England she would be a centre of disaffection; to let her go, as she wished, to France, was to increase her power for harm. Mary was called upon to clear herself of the murder of Darnley, of which Murray declared he had proofs; but she refused to plead, or to acknowledge Elizabeth's right to sit in judgment upon her. For the present she was confined in Tutbury Castle in Staffordshire.

The effect of her presence soon appeared. It was proposed by her friends to secure her divorce from Bothwell, marry her to the Duke of Norfolk, the head of the English nobility, name her successor to the throne, and restore her to Scotland, if she would admit Elizabeth's present right, and conclude a perpetual league with England. The scheme had the support of many English nobles; but Elizabeth refused to entertain it, and sent Norfolk to the Tower, and his supporters from the court.

Trouble caused by Mary's presence in England

SECTION 3.—*Elizabeth, the Pope, and the Puritans*

The struggle between the two creeds was going on over all Europe.

Failure of Protestants in France and the Netherlands
Catholic rebellion in the north

In Flanders the great towns had risen against the tyranny of Philip and the Inquisition. In 1567 Philip sent the Duke of Alva with a choice army to suppress the revolt, and he accomplished his task with merciless severity.⁸ In France the Huguenots rose in despair, but were terribly routed in 1569. These events had an immediate effect in England. In November, 1569, the three great Catholic families of the north, the Cliffords, Nevilles, and Percies, were in rebellion.

⁸ One result was that 80,000 Flemish weavers fled to England. They were welcomed by Elizabeth, and settled in Sandwich and Norwich. Every Fleming had to employ an English apprentice. Thus we learned cloth making, silk making, and dyeing, and no longer exported wool to Flanders to be woven. Indeed, we now exported our cloth for sale in Flanders. Elizabeth, while re-

fusing Cecil's advice to put herself at the head of a Protestant coalition, and break openly with Spain in favour of the Netherlands, sent money and arms both to them and to the Huguenots in France, and a second mission to support the Prince of Orange; and she hampered Alva's movements by seizing his money ships, which had sheltered in English ports.

They had long been corresponding with Mary and the pope. They now demanded her freedom and restoration.⁹ At Durham the Prayer Book and Bible were burnt; at Ripon mass was said. The rebels then marched upon Tutbury Castle, whence Mary was hastily removed to Coventry. But Elizabeth's patient adherence to compromise stood her in good stead. The revolt was confined to these families; the Catholic population of the north stood aloof, or joined her forces. The rebels broke at the first appearance of the royal troops, and the leaders fled first to Scotland, and thence, all but Northumberland, escaped to the Continent; while hundreds of bodies hanging from gibbets in every town and village in the north showed the determination of the government to meet any attack with a swift and terrible retort.

This failure roused the pope to declare open war, and in March 1570 he excommunicated Elizabeth, absolving her subjects from allegiance. Norfolk was known to be intriguing with Mary and the pope. Catholic refugees were collecting at Antwerp, Elizabeth and a plot to assassinate Elizabeth had come to Cecil's ears. Murray had already been shot dead in the streets of Linlithgow. The Protestant reply, in April, 1571, was an act which declared: (1)

The English reply *against Mary*, that anyone laying claim to the throne should be thereby incapable of succeeding; (2) *against the pope*, that it was treason to introduce bulls from Rome, to call Elizabeth a heretic, schismatic, infidel, tyrant, or usurper, or name anyone as her heir except her children; (3) *against the refugees*, that they should return in six months or forfeit their property. Norfolk and Northumberland were tried and executed in 1572, and the question of bringing Mary herself to the block was discussed.

While striking with one hand against the Catholics, Elizabeth had with the other been resisting the extreme or 'Puritan' Protestants.

Elizabeth and the Puritans The original disputes had arisen over the retention by the church—alone among reformed churches—of vestments and of ceremonies, such as the cross at baptism (p. 202, note).

Opposition to these 'popish rags' led to opposition to the Prayer Book, and then, since the prelates carried out the queen's wishes, to prelacy itself. The Puritans refused to be bound by anything which was not expressly insisted upon in the Bible; the opposite theory was that on all matters not expressly *forbidden* there the head of the church might decide; and that for the sake of peace the vestments and

⁹ The rising was as much an aristocratic revolt as religious or political; these great nobles had the same jealousy of Cecil and his colleagues (p. 212, note) that had been felt against Wolsey and Cromwell, and they demanded their dismissal.

ceremonies were better retained.¹ The Puritans rapidly grew in strength. In convocation they were defeated by the casting vote alone. But the queen disliked them intensely; for their aggressive independence, their violence in the pulpit, even to her face, and their abuse of anything which savoured of the old ritual, threatened her policy of compromise. She therefore insisted on uniformity; and 87 out of 98 London ministers, the venerable Coverdale among them, were ejected from their livings for 'scrupling the habits.' The prelates, and many leading men at court, among whom were her favourite Robert Dudley, earl of Leicester, and even Cecil himself, were opposed to this high-handed action.

But Elizabeth was resolute. Unable to get what they wanted within the church, a few London clergy in 1568 gathered congregations, and established in them a government of their own. They were put down; but 'zeal for discord' grew rapidly; and the demands of the extreme section soon reached to a complete overthrowing of episcopacy in favour of Presbyterian church government (p. 280).

The Puritan clergy then set up, with the sanction and under the control of their bishops, what were called 'prophesyings,' meetings for expounding and discussing particular texts of scripture. But Elizabeth dreaded the political tendency of these meetings, and in spite of the opposition of Grindal, Parker's successor, and of the bishops, insisted that they should cease.

Still the new opinions spread. The universities, especially Cambridge, under the leadership of John Cartwright, whose 'Admonition to Parliament' exercised great influence, and parliament itself, were deeply imbued with them.

In 1571, after the northern rebellion, seven bills had been introduced for further reformation. Strickland, their promoter, was ordered by Elizabeth to absent himself from the house. Loud complaints of breach of privilege forced her to withdraw the order. But she utterly refused to pass the bills, though she assented to one which released clergymen from subscribing the articles on discipline and ceremonies.

In 1583 Whitgift, an honest but narrow man, became primate. By the queen's command he forbade all preaching, reading, or catechising, in private houses, when more than the family were present,

¹ The great literary exponent of this view was Richard Hooker, who published the first part of his 'Ecclesiastical Polity' in 1594. He appealed to human reason and general principles, as well as to the Bible. He held that while no

certain form of church government can be found in the Bible, episcopacy was an apostolic institution. By identifying the church with the nation he vindicated the royal supremacy.—Green, *Hist. of England*, vol. iii. p. 80.

exacted subscriptions from the clergy to the truth of *all* the articles, doctrinal as well as others, in breach of the act of 1571, and insisted on the wearing of the 'habits.' A large number of ministers left the country in consequence.

The great engine of power was the High Commission Court. Any three of its forty-four members, of whom one must be a bishop, could deal with all branches of the ecclesiastical law, punish any offences which formerly came under the bishops' courts, alter the statutes of schools, colleges, cathedrals, or other foundations, and tender the oath of supremacy, which was as obnoxious to a Presbyterian as to a Catholic (*Appendix*). It introduced a practice unknown to English law, of compelling a suspected person to criminate himself by answering on oath—the *ex-officio* oath—any questions put to him; and in 1590 Cartwright and several others were committed to prison for refusing this oath. The Puritans took up another weapon. Anonymous pamphlets against episcopacy, printed at a movable press, which for a long time evaded discovery, were spread throughout the land. The most famous bore the signature of 'Martin Mar-Prelate.' At length Penry, a young Welshman, and Udal, a Puritan minister, were arrested. Penry was executed for libelling the government, Udal died in prison. The commons too had to submit. In 1575 they obeyed the queen's message to meddle no more with religion. In 1580 and 1587 they renewed the contest, but in vain. The events of 1588 emphasised the need of national unity, and the force of Puritanism declined until the folly of James I. caused it to revive. In 1593 an act was passed to imprison any one over sixteen who kept away from church for a month. Those who persisted in refusal were to leave the realm, and to suffer death for returning without leave. Under this law large numbers fled to Holland. It did not indeed affect the great mass of the Puritans, who remained members of the church; but it struck hard at the Catholics and at those who separated and established independent churches. These were called 'Brownists,' from their founder, Robert Brown, and were the first of those now known as Independents or Congregationalists.

That Elizabeth had so far held her own was doubtless due to her good government. A bold reformation of the debased coinage (p. 197) had laid the foundation of reviving prosperity. By the Poor Law of 1562, which received its final form in 1601, she had temporarily solved a great social difficulty. Taxation was light; peace and social order were well kept; her statue

High Commission Court. The *ex-officio* oath

Martin Mar-Prelate

Decline of Puritanism after 1588

Elizabeth's good government

in the London Exchange testified to the belief that she was the author of the growing prosperity. Her thrift enabled her to keep a fairly filled treasury. Her hand was strong in every department. When Grindal asked her not to interpose her authority in church matters; she suspended him from office and threatened the whole bench of bishops with deprivation if they failed to obey. A generation was rapidly growing up to feel that government, though in peril, was in strong hands; that Elizabeth was showing a bold front to all her enemies. Day by day the nation was becoming more confident, and prouder of the queen who could say 'Nothing, no worldly thing under the sun, is so dear to me as the love and goodwill of my subjects.'

SECTION 4.—*Elizabeth, the Netherlands, and the Jesuits*

In 1572 the Netherlands rose again, hoping for aid from their fellow Protestants in France. But upon them a crushing blow had fallen.

On St. Bartholomew's day Catherine de Medicis, having enticed their chiefs into Paris, sought to close the religious struggle by a massacre, in which, repeated as it was in many of the principal towns, not less than 100,000 victims are said to have perished. At the news the taciturn Philip, who was scarcely known to smile, burst into an exulting laugh; the pope went in procession to attend the 'Te Deum' at St. Peter's. A different scene took place in England. The French ambassador was received in silence by the queen and court, all clad in deep mourning. The projected marriage with the Duke of Anjou, the French king's brother, was broken off.

Hitherto Elizabeth had shrunk from committing England irrevocably, but the national outcry against this great crime forced her to accept the headship of the Protestant cause. The crushing of the Huguenots enabled Alva to beat down all resistance in the southern Netherlands, though the northern, the present Holland,

held out. But in 1576 the Pacification of Ghent bound all the states to expel the Spaniards. In 1577 5,000 English volunteers supplemented the niggard help sent by the queen; while the London merchants sent no less than 500,000*l.* The end was that, while Spain won back the ten southern provinces by conciliation, William of Orange was able to form out of the seven northern the Protestant Union of Utrecht. In 1580 Philip conquered Portugal, thus vastly increasing his power of attack. The seven provinces here-

upon declared the Duke of Anjou their sovereign in order to secure French help. But Anjou soon quarrelled with his new subjects, and was sent back. It was clear that Elizabeth and the Protestant states would be without allies whenever Philip should choose to attack them.

St. Bartholomew's day

The effect in England

The Netherlands

Isolation of England and the Netherlands

A new force had entered into the contest. With the pope's approval, Ignatius Loyola, a Spaniard, had formed the order of Jesuits.

The Jesuits They accepted no regular clerical work, but they were the greatest missionaries, both in Europe and in every foreign land, however remote, that the world has ever seen. Admitting only the high born, the educated, and the wealthy, they rapidly gained immense influence, and their schools became famous throughout Europe. Abandoning every worldly tie, they gave unquestioning obedience to the will of their superior; they threw themselves with unconquerable zeal into the conflict with the rising tide of Protestantism. The pope determined to use this splendid body of irregulars to attack England.²

After a careful training on the Continent, English Jesuits came back to work in their own country. The first and most famous were **Their work in England** Parsons and Campion, fellows of colleges at Oxford. The effect of their energy was marked. The Catholic gentry, who were learning to conform, began to refuse to attend church. Conversions were frequent among the upper classes. The government at once struck back and struck hard. Mass was forbidden even in private houses, and the fine for absence from church was increased to 20*l.* a month, or, in default, two-thirds of the delinquent's goods. All persons pretending to any power of absolving subjects from their **England's reply** allegiance, or practising to withdraw them to the Romish religion, with all so absolved or reconciled, were declared guilty of high treason. Any one giving shelter to Jesuits was to suffer a year's imprisonment and whipping. The houses of Catholics were ransacked for the priests. Parsons escaped, Campion and others were taken and hung. During the next twenty years 200 were executed, and many died in prison. The policy of compromise had vanished.

The duel between Rome and England soon assumed a still sterner form. In 1584, after a previous attempt, William of Orange was murdered. In the same year a conspiracy was discovered in England to kill Elizabeth, and to make Mary queen. Francis Throgmorton, the chief agent, was executed, and the Spanish am-

² His first attempt had been made in Ireland. In June, 1579, a Spanish force landed at Smerwick, near Kerry, and took the fort; and in 1580, when the Earl of Desmond revolted against Elizabeth, reinforcements joined them. But Lord Grey de Wilton, the stern deputy of Ireland, forced the garrison to an unconditional surrender, and then slew every man. The lesson was learnt, and even during the peril of the

Armada not a hand was raised in Ireland against England. See the chapter on Ireland in Church's 'Spenser,' in *English Men of Letters*. In Scotland, too, through his cousin Esme Stuart, one of the faction of the Guises in France, the pope tried to secure the young king, James VI., but failed against the opposition of the nobles, who kidnapped the king and banished Stuart.

bassador, who was cognisant of the plot, was dismissed from England. The counter-thrust was the formation of a voluntary association, to prosecute to the death not only any who should make an attempt upon the queen's life, but all in whose behalf such an attempt should be made. In other words, if the queen fell by Mary's partisans, Mary herself should die. A statute far severer than the last was also passed, that any Catholic priest, born in the queen's dominions, and found in the realm after forty days, and all who helped him, should be liable to death; anyone withholding knowledge of such a person should be fined and imprisoned at the queen's pleasure; all seminary students who did not return within six months would be regarded as traitors, and those who sent them money would lose their goods; while anyone who sent his children abroad was to be fined 100*l.*, and the children made incapable of succeeding him.

SECTION 5.—*The Crisis*

Month by month the purpose of Philip to attack England had been growing clearer. The pope had been urging him (compare pp. 83, 80) to go forth as the avenger of Rome against the heretics. For three years he had been getting ready. The time was favourable; for the subjection of the Netherlands by his great general the Duke of Parma seemed imminent, and the league which he formed with the extreme Catholic party in France under the Guises, the uncles of Mary of Scots, made him safe from interference from thence. His scheme was that his fleet should sail to the Netherlands, and there take on board Parma and his picked troops; that with them England should be conquered; that Parma should then marry Mary, and govern England as a Spanish viceroy. Elizabeth, on her side, had done her best to keep Philip occupied. She had aided Henry of Navarre, the antagonist of the Guises, with money, and had allowed volunteers to flock to his standard. At the end of 1585 she sent Leicester with 6,000 men to help the Dutch. But Leicester was an incapable commander. He did next to nothing, and he quarrelled with the Dutch. His force was engaged but once, at Zutphen, an action famous for the death of Sir Philip Sidney, the highest type of the gentleman of Elizabeth's court. Leicester returned in November, 1586.

But Philip had worse injuries to avenge than this help to the Dutch or Elizabeth's refusal to marry him. The chief source of his wealth was the New World, and for years the English 'sea-dogs,' unavowed by the government, had been breaking through his monopoly there. As early as 1568 John Hawkins, the founder of the negro trade, and

Francis Drake, had been caught on the Mexican coast, and had barely escaped with the loss of three of their five ships, vowing revenge. Hawkins had since made three voyages to Africa, had again crossed the Atlantic, fighting the Spaniards wherever he met them, and had come safe home. Drake, in 1572 and the following years, had thrice sailed to the West Indies, and had ravaged the Spanish settlements in the Gulf of Mexico. In 1577, with but 160 men, he sailed through the Straits of Magellan, the first Englishman who had done so, swept the coasts of Chili and Peru, ravaged the Moluccas, weathered the Cape of Good Hope, and, after thus completing the circuit of the globe, reached Plymouth in 1580 with spoil to a vast amount. All England was proud of the feat, and Elizabeth herself met Philip's complaints by knighting the gallant seaman upon his own vessel, the 'Golden Hind.' Frobisher had tried for a North-West passage to India; Raleigh and his half-brother Sir Humphrey Gilbert had taken Newfoundland, and Raleigh had planned the colonisation of Virginia. In 1585, as a retort to the seizure by Philip of the English shipping in Spain, Drake had sailed with twenty-five ships, destroyed San Domingo and Carthagena, raided along the coasts of Florida and Cuba, and returned in July 1586.

But to all her foes England bade a still sterner defiance. A fresh scheme of invasion and a fresh plot for the murder of Elizabeth had been hatched at Rheims, and approved by the Spanish ambassador in France. Anthony Babington, long devoted to Mary, was the agent of the plotters in England. But the spies of Cecil and Walsingham were everywhere; the man who took letters between Babington and Mary was in their pay. When compromised beyond escape, the conspirators were seized and executed. Cecil and Walsingham were now determined to rid themselves of Mary, and she was tried at Fotheringay. When at length she consented to plead, she admitted being privy to the plan of invasion, but not to that of assassination. Sentence of death was pronounced. Elizabeth long hesitated to sign the warrant, but parliament petitioned that the 'seed plot' of so many conspiracies should be removed, and at length she gave way; that instant a courier was sent off to Fotheringay, and before the queen could recall the warrant the chequered life of Mary had closed, February 8, 1587, in the castle hall. The bells were rung for joy throughout England; a heavy weight seemed lifted from the nation, for the presence of Mary as a rallying point for Catholic disaffection had been a constant danger.

The challenge thus thrown in the faces of the pope, Philip, and the

English
enterprise
against
Spanish
colonies

Drake sails
round the
world

Execution of
Mary of
Scots

Guises, was taken up at once. But before Philip could move, Drake, outstripping the orders for his recall, had performed the famous *Drake* 'singeing the Spanish king's beard' (p. 80), March 1587. 'singes the Spanish king's beard' Dashing into Cadiz harbour, he destroyed fifty store-ships, then ravaged the Portuguese coast, and returned to England, capturing on his way the great East India treasure-ship, which paid the expenses of the expedition.

It was not therefore until May 30, 1588, that the great Armada,³ under the Duke of Medina-Sidonia, set sail for the Netherland coast, where Parma was to join it with 80,000 men. It consisted of 130 ships, carrying, besides 11,000 sailors and rowers, some 20,000 men, an armed with 2,500 cannon. Elizabeth had in the royal fleet but thirty-four ships; but every seaport sent forth its contingent, every rich merchant or nobleman fitted out a vessel. Their crews numbered probably more than 18,000 men, of better physical quality than the Spaniards.⁴ Their sailors were mere drudges to the soldiers, but the English, typified by Drake, were both soldiers and sailors, and full of daring confidence. The militia were collected at Tilbury; every man between eighteen and sixty was enrolled. Harsh measures were taken to keep the Catholics from rising; but they were not needed. Now that Mary was dead Philip was to them merely a foreign aggressor. It was a Catholic, Lord Howard of Effingham, who led the fleet.

On July 19 the Armada, which had been sorely shattered by a gale in the Bay of Biscay and compelled to refit, was seen off Plymouth. Instantly the whole country was warned by beacons on the hill-tops. In every port of the south coast vessels were waiting to dash out. Howard allowed the Spanish fleet to pass; then he pursued, hanging on the rear, 'plucking out its feathers one by one,' and, having the wind, able to sheer off or come to close quarters as he pleased. For a week this running fight went on. Off Calais the fleets faced each other, and a long day's battle was fought. The Armada anchored, to wait for Parma and his army, but the Dutch held the mouth of the Scheldt with ninety ships, and Parma was prevented from embarking his men. On the night of Sunday, the 28th, Howard sent fire-ships down the wind. The Spaniards cut their cables, and, driven by a fierce

³ It was never called the 'Invincible Armada' in Spain, but the 'Grand Fleet.'

⁴ It is generally said that the Spanish ships were much larger. But this was not the case. The tonnage of a ship in our fleet was much the same

as in the enemy's. The English were far superior in their guns and gunners. The Spanish flagship was of 1,000 tons, with 177 seamen and 800 soldiers; the English flagship was of 800 tons, with 800 seamen and 125 soldiers.

southerly gale, fled northwards in wild panic. On the 29th another general engagement took place off Gravelines. Then the English ceased attacking, for every charge of powder had been shot away. But the gale continued, and the Spaniards were driven helplessly northwards up the east coast of England and Scotland. In the wild Orkney seas such storms blew that it was not until October that fifty-three shattered vessels, with 10,000 out of more than 80,000 men, reached Spain, leaving the shores of Norway, the Orkneys, Scotland, and Ireland, strewn with wrecks and corpses. Spanish supremacy at sea had vanished. 'The Lord sent His wind and scattered them,' was the inscription on the medal struck to celebrate the victory. The glory must be shared by queen and people. At the moment of fight, indeed, it was the daring and devotion of individuals which supplied the defects caused by her niggardliness in fitting out the fleet. But, on the other hand, 'she had won the victory by her patience and moderation, by her refusal to lend herself to the fanaticism of the Puritan or the reaction of the Papist, by her sympathy with the mass of the people, by her steady and unflinching preference of national union to any passing considerations of safety or advantage. For thirty years, amid the shock of religious passions at home and abroad, she had reigned, not as a Catholic or Protestant queen, but as a queen of England; and it was to England, Catholic and Protestant alike, that she could appeal in her hour of need.' But the invasion had been a Catholic invasion, and the conduct of the Catholics did not save them. Many executions took place at once; numbers were fined, branded, or whipped. England now retorted sharply on Spain. It was as though an attempt to board had been repulsed, and the enemy themselves were pouring into the attacking ship. English privateers swept the 'Spanish Main' at their will, facing any odds, while Drake and Norris sailed with a large fleet to Lisbon and attacked Spain on her own soil.

From France also England was now safe. In 1589 Henry III., who had freed himself from the tyranny of the Guises by murder, was himself assassinated. For a long time the heir, Henry of Navarre, tried to secure his crown as a Protestant. But he was as devoid of bigotry as Elizabeth was, and his aim was the same as hers, to form a united nation. 'Paris is worth a mass,' he said. He became a convert to Catholicism and received at once the loyalty of the whole moderate party, kept the Huguenots quiet by complete toleration, and by 1595 was so strong that the pope thought well to give him absolution. Spanish influence was driven out of France, and Elizabeth was sure of Henry's support. In 1596 Philip captured Calais; but a joint expedition, under Howard

and Leicester's stepson, Robert Devereux, earl of Essex, retorted by sacking Cadiz and destroying the ships in the harbour.

SECTION 6.—*The Close of the Reign*

Now that the danger was over, Elizabeth and Cecil, created Lord Burghley, wanted peace. But the more ardent party, headed by The Earl of Essex Essex, longed for the distinction and wealth to be gained by war, and for fresh opportunities of colonisation. Essex was the last of Elizabeth's favourites. She was more than thirty years his senior, but she treated him with the passionate and capricious tenderness of a lover. He was handsome and accomplished, but vain and intemperate. In 1597 he commanded an expedition to cut off the Spanish West India fleet, and in 1599 was sent to crush a rebellion in Ireland which had broken out in 1595 under O'Neale, earl of Tyrone.⁵ In both commands he proved himself hopelessly incapable. On his return from Ireland he was attacked in the council, brought before the Star Chamber, deprived of all his offices, and dismissed from court. His failure in Ireland, and execution He began to plot with Catholics and extreme Puritans, and to correspond with James. In 1600 he was refused a renewal of his valuable monopoly of sweet wines. Believing in the strength of his popularity among the masses, he marched with a few friends into the city, calling upon the people to rise. He was arrested and brought to trial. Upon the urgency of Burghley, Elizabeth reluctantly consented to his death, and he was executed February 25, 1601.

The closing scenes of Elizabeth's reign were sad. She had outlived her time and had lost touch with the people. She longed for peace with the weariness of old age; they, with their game as it were in sight, were bent upon war. Abolition of monopolies The Commons were in ill humour at the frequent calls for money. In 1601 she was forced to yield to their demands for the abolition of monopolies, which she had given recklessly to her favourites. After the death of Essex she became moody and irritable. In March 1603 she took to Death of Elizabeth her bed. On the 28rd she was speechless. On the next day, at the age of seventy, after a reign of forty-six years, she died, having feebly intimated her wish that James should succeed her.

SUMMARY.—The reign of Elizabeth was the critical period in the great religious conflict throughout Europe. When it closed, England had finally become Protestant, but her church was a church of

⁵ There were frequent rebellions in Ireland, caused by anger at the confiscation of lands to English settlers. These lands belonged not to the chiefs but to the clans.

compromise. Scotland also had become Protestant; she had accepted rigid Calvinism in creed and system (see Appendix). A third Protestant power had arisen in the Netherlands, and extreme Catholicism had died away in France. The balance of power had been profoundly changed in Europe. At the accession England was a third-rate power; after forty years of incessant conflict she was in the first rank. The overwhelming preponderance of Spain had vanished, and England and the Dutch were about to divide her maritime supremacy and colonial empire. In England the last trace of feudalism had passed away with the northern rebellion. Commercial and naval enterprise had brought wealth and a sense of power to all classes; the standard of comfort had been greatly raised. Brick and stone for wood in building, glass windows, better food and furniture, beauty in domestic architecture, richness of dress, variety of amusements, were all signs of growing prosperity. The new poor law of 1601, which erected houses of correction in every county, and provided for the poor by a compulsory rate to be collected and distributed by overseers, had done much to clear the country of beggars. This law was made permanent at the Restoration, and lasted until 1834.⁶

But, apart from political triumphs, the pride of the Elizabethan age was its literature. The enterprise of men like Drake had its counterpart in the speculations of Francis Bacon, and in historical writings such as Raleigh's *History of the World*. The imitation of Italian style caused by the growing influence of Italian culture reached an almost ridiculous affectation in 'Euphuism,' so-called from Lyly's romance of 'Euphues' (1579). Then, with less of affectation and with great beauty and dignity, came Sidney's 'Arcadia' and 'Defence of Poetry.' The universal passion for adventure is represented by Hakluyt's 'Collection of Voyages' (1582). English verse, silent since Chaucer, was heard again in the 'Faerie Queen' (1590) of Edmund Spenser, who united the spirits of Puritanism and loyalty. But at a time when personalities are vivid, action strong, and national pride high, drama is the aptest vehicle for emotion. Plays had

⁶ One law, dealing with labour, had been disastrous. This was the *Statute of Labourers*, passed in the fifth year of the reign, which practically made the labourer the slave of the employer. One provision was that the justices should fix the rate of wages in all employments; another limited the number of apprentices who might be employed; a third forbade the combination of

labourers. The result was that wages were brought down to starvation point by the justices for their own ends, that the number of the purely labouring class was increased, and that wages had to be supplemented by the poor-rate, which was paid by all occupiers. There was thus a constant tendency for wages to fall and the poor-rate to go up.

already been common at court revels, among the lawyers of the Inns of Court, and at the universities. In 1576 the first public theatre was erected in Blackfriars; before 1600 there were eighteen theatres in London alone. Among the Elizabethan dramatists the most famous were Nash, Greene, and Marlowe. Shakespear was born in 1564, and published his first work, 'Venus and Adonis,' in 1593. In his historical plays he concentrates, as none but Chatham among statesmen and Nelson among fighters have concentrated, that pride and belief in his country which was the noblest outcome of the reign of Elizabeth.

Summary of the Sixteenth Century

The fifteenth century had left the country prepared to accept a despotism; the sixteenth contains the course of that despotism in its various phases. Henry VII. restores strong government, of which the Star Chamber may be taken as the symbol, and makes his dynasty permanent through the deaths of possible claimants. Then comes the long tyranny of his son, a reign of terror, during which England transfers to the crown with excessive violence, robbery, and bloodshed, the nominal allegiance which she has hitherto owed to Rome. But the constitution is saved by the fact that though there is no will but his, he works through the old forms; parliament is enslaved, but continues to exist and act. Then for a time England is delivered to the misrule of greedy and unscrupulous nobles. Catholicism disappears and is succeeded by Protestantism, which is discredited by the manner of its entrance. The reaction follows at once. Nominal Protestantism, brutally imposed, gives place to nominal Catholicism, still more defaced by cruelty, and accompanied by national failure. Between the bigots of either party is the great mass of the nation, once more willing to accept any settlement which will make England self-respecting and strong. Upon them Elizabeth confidently throws herself, and by steadfast adherence to them recreates a great nation and leaves it a foremost power in Europe. She, too, is a despot; but her despotism is one granted by the people, because she is in harmony with them. Catholicism attacks her by violence and by treachery; and at the end of her reign England is Protestant to the core, and monarchy and the Church of England are inseparably united. From her training it has followed that despotism, contentedly borne, is at an end for ever.

APPENDIX

Religious Parties from Elizabeth to Charles II

FROM Calvin were derived a system of *doctrine* and a system of *church government*. The former is called Calvinism; its leading tenets were predestination, justification by faith, and the verbal inspiration of the Bible. The latter is called Presbyterianism, that is, the rule of 'presbyters,' or elders. England accepted Calvinism, but not Presbyterianism; Scotland, the French Huguenots, the northern Dutch, &c., took both.

In Presbyterianism all the clergy were of equal rank. There were no bishops. Each congregation had its kirk session, composed of the minister and lay elders. A number of kirk sessions sent their ministers and a lay elder from each to form the presbytery of the district, which had authority over each kirk session. Above the presbytery were the provincial synod and the general assembly of the kirk, formed of ministers and elders chosen from the presbyteries.

The private life of the people was free from episcopal interference in England. But the essence of Calvin's system was that it had to do as much with discipline and manners as with purely church matters. Life in every detail was in Scotland under the jealous supervision of the kirk session; and this became later a crushing social tyranny. Probably on this account it never took root in England.

Under episcopacy the church owned the headship of the crown and the authority of parliament. But the kirk owned no headship but that of Christ. No one could belong to the state who did not belong to the church. The first duty of the civil power was to support the church, whose authority and organization were completely independent of it. It formed an *imperium in imperio*—an empire within an empire. To its ministers the kings were but 'God's silly vassals,' as Andrew Melville called James I. They claimed 'to treat in an ecclesiastical way of greatest and smallest, from the king's throne, that should be established in righteousness, to the merchant's balance, that should be used in faithfulness.' No king who wanted power could favour Presbyterianism. This is the meaning of James I.'s maxim, 'No bishop, no king.'

The Presbyterian hated episcopacy; but he hated still more the Brownists or Independents, with the other sects which held that each congregation ought to have complete control of its own affairs without reference to any higher body, and that the civil power ought to

have nothing whatever to do with religion or matters of conscience, or the congregation with the civil power.

Each of these three, Episcopalian, Presbyterian, and Independent, thus divided on *church government*, might, and in Elizabeth's time did, hold precisely the same *doctrines*, namely, those of Calvin. They sometimes forgot their differences in a common hatred of Catholicism. Each form carried with it a corresponding set of *political* ideas.

(1) With the Episcopalian the king was supreme head of the church; the priesthood was a separate class, arranged in carefully graduated ranks, and, while casting off Rome, he retained respect for traditions in forms and ceremonies.

Correspondingly he was attached to monarchy, and disposed to uphold its divine right; he held by a system of social and political gradations, and displayed a general conservatism in political matters.

(2) The Presbyterian acknowledged no supreme head of the church, and no law but that of the Bible; his priesthood was not a separate caste, nor were there differing ranks; he had no respect for tradition in ceremonies, &c. So, too, he denied the divine right or absolute authority of monarchy; he made comparatively light of social gradations, and, as opposed to the Episcopalian, was not conservative.

(3) With the Independents, &c., the doctrines that conscience was man's principal guide, and that the civil power had nothing to do with religion, had their counterpart in rejection of political restraint, tendency towards republicanism, and hatred of religious persecution.

[For the Puritans, Marsden, *Early and Later Puritans*, and Neal, *History of the Puritans*, should be consulted; for the struggle of Episcopalians, Presbyterians, and Independents, up to the Restoration, portions of Masson's *Life of Milton*; for Presbyterian tyranny, Buckle, *History of Civilisation*, ch. iii., and 'Presbyterianism,' in *Encyclopædia Britannica*. Barclay's *Inner Life of the Religious Societies of England* is very instructive.]

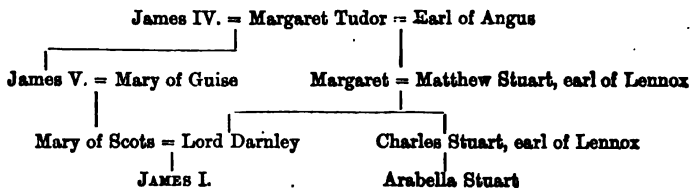
Dates of Elizabeth's Reign

	A.D.		A.D.
Acts of Supremacy and Uniformity	1559	St. Bartholomew's Day	1572
Test Act and Articles of the church	1563	The Jesuits in England	1580
Mary of Scots driven to England	1568	Assassination plot	1584
Northern rebellion	1570	Execution of Mary of Scots	1587
The pope excommunicates Elizabeth	1570	The Armada	1588
		Death of Elizabeth	1603

THE STUARTS
GENEALOGICAL TABLE XIII.

(1)

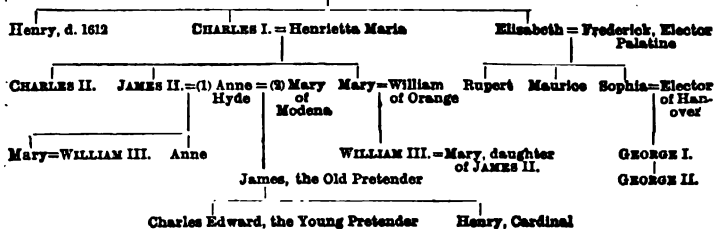
DARNLEY AND ARABELLA STUART



(2)

THE ENGLISH STUARTS

JAMES I. = Anne of Denmark



BOOK VIII
PARLIAMENT AND PREROGATIVE

CHAPTER I

JAMES I. 1603-1625. THE QUARREL DEFINED

SECTION 1.—Revival of Puritanism

A CONFLICT between parliament and prerogative was certain. Individual confidence and activity had been bred in Englishmen by fifty years of successful struggle. The rapid increase of wealth Certainty of change had made the Commons far more powerful and independent. Above all there was the effect of the Calvinistic faith. The doctrine of justification by faith alone, which places each soul singly before God, strengthened the spirit of individuality. That of predestination, which teaches at once the equality and the insignificance of man in God's sight, dwarfed all other distinctions, and greatly tempered the awe with which men regarded earthly authority. There was an absolute surrender to God, and therefore less surrender to man.

The crown had acquired by law two engines of power: the Star Chamber, produced by the struggle with the nobles, and the High Commission, produced by the struggle with the papacy; these violated the principle of trial by jury. In other ways—by irregular methods of raising money, arbitrary arrest, detention of prisoners without trial, the assumption of the right to levy tonnage and poundage without special sanction—the crown had encroached upon the constitution.

How the story of change would read depended upon the character of the great queen's successor. This was one who was practically a foreigner, with his mouth full of maxims of divine right and royal exemption from law.¹ He had barely entered England when he showed his ignorance of English tradition by hanging a thief without trial. Shrewd of judgment, he had no decision of character. With stores of learning, he was pedantic and conceited, at once the

¹ In his 'Basilicon Doron' ('royal gift') and in his 'True Law of a Free Monarchy,' he had displayed monarchy as the true pattern of divinity, the duty of passive obedience, and the entire freedom of the sovereign from the law.

'Although a good king will frame all his actions to be according to law, yet he is not bound thereto, but of his own will, and for example giving to his subjects.'

'British Solomon' and the 'wisest fool in Christendom.' He was undignified in person, a lover of buffoonery and of coarse and bestial talk. Though perhaps not himself of immoral life, he allowed his court to become a by-word for corruption. Drunkenness was especially shameless, and extended even to the ladies of the court.

All this had still to be found out. James came to his throne with universal welcome. Statesmen could shake off the fear of danger from Scotland. Catholics looked for favour from the son of Mary Stuart. The Puritans trusted in one who had declared Presbyterianism to be the purest form of religion. Churchmen reckoned upon his hatred of a system which had kept him for years in humiliating bondage. The will of Henry VIII., postponing the Scottish line to that of Mary Brandon, duchess of Suffolk (p. 197), was ignored, the principle of hereditary right was endorsed by his first parliament, and his possible rivals joined in ready allegiance.³

The king's first act was to confirm Robert Cecil, the second son of Lord Burghley, as secretary. Possessing much of his father's capacity, Cecil inherited the policy of his later years, peace with Spain and the Elizabethan church system. The former implied the depression of the war party formerly headed by Essex (p. 227). Raleigh, as its foremost member, was disgraced and turned out of offices and emoluments. James desired peace, both from dislike to war and from the wish to save expense. But Spain needed it more than England, and Cecil was able to make his own terms. England was practically left free to help the Dutch. Spain admitted her right to trade with India and America. English merchants were henceforth to be exempt from the power of the Inquisition.

Several Scotch nobles were placed upon the council. But for the legislative union which James desired the country had to wait a century. All hostile laws between the two countries were abolished in 1607; but parliament utterly refused to grant free trade; and all that James could secure was the naturalisation in both countries of persons born since he came to the throne.

Before his accession James had promised favour to the Catholics.

³ Among them was Isabella, eldest daughter of Philip II. of Spain, whose title, though absurd, was supported by the more violent Catholics; Lord Beauchamp, son of Catherine Gray, sister of Lady Jane Gray; and Arabella Stuart, also descended from Margaret Tudor, niece of Lord Darnley, and born in England.—Gardiner, *Hist. of Eng-land*, 10 vols., vol. i. p. 78. The fate of Arabella Stuart was very sad. In 1610 she secretly married Lord Beauchamp's second son, William Seymour. This naturally roused James's jealousy, as combining two titles to the throne. Both escaped from imprisonment, but Arabella was recaptured, and died in prison in 1615.

But the opposition of Cecil and the Council forbade it. Furious at this breach of faith, Watson, a Catholic priest, with George Brooke, 'Bye' and brother of Raleigh's friend Lord Cobham, and others, formed 'Main' plots a wild project for kidnapping James and exacting from him equal rights for Catholics. The plot came to the ears of the Jesuits, who were hostile to Watson, and was by them communicated to the government. James's gratitude for the betrayal of the plot was greater than his anger at its conception; and upon the pressure of the French ambassador he gladly remitted the fines for recusancy. But when the pope refused to excommunicate turbulent Catholics, when every ship brought missionary priests, when the number of recusants daily increased, and the fines fell away from 10,000*l.* to 800*l.* a year, he became alarmed, and issued a proclamation banishing the priests.

Brooke's connection with the 'Bye' plot, as it was called, threw suspicion upon Cobham and Raleigh. It was proved that Cobham had held treasonable discourse with Arenberg, the agent of the ruler of the Spanish Netherlands, and that he hoped to place Arabella Stuart^a on the throne. This gave Cecil a chance of ruining Raleigh. There was nothing brought against him worthy to be called proof of even remote participation in this second—the 'Main'—plot. But trials for treason were then scandalously unfair, and he was convicted and thrown into the Tower, where he remained for thirteen years. Watson and Brooke were executed for the 'Bye' plot; Cobham and others became Raleigh's fellow-prisoners for the 'Main.' The two plots had no connection: one was a Catholic, the other a Protestant movement.

With the Puritans James had already dealt most unwisely. In their 'Millenary'³ petition (1603) they had urged many reforms in the Prayer-Book and in the discipline of the church.⁴ To the Puritans avoid giving an answer at the time, James ordered a conference to be held between divines of both parties; and it met at Hampton Court, January, 1604. The king displayed his learning and his insolence. He contrasted his position now with what it had been in Scotland under Presbyterian tyranny, where he was 'a king without state, without honour, without order, where beardless boys would brave me to the face.' The prelates seized the opportunity. 'Undoubtedly,' said the primate, 'his Majesty spoke by the special

³ So called because purporting to be signed by 1,000 ministers. Actually it was signed by 825. It was presented as he came from Scotland.

⁴ It must be remembered that these Puritans had no idea of tolerating any difference of creed; nor had they any idea of separating from the church.

assistance of God's spirit.' The Bishop of London, on his knees, thanked God for sending them 'such a king as since Christ's time the like had not been seen.' The alliance between James and the Elizabethan church was complete. The Puritan demands, with minor exceptions, were rejected;⁵ and James closed the conference with the threat, 'I will make them conform, or herry them out of the kingdom.' To emphasize the breach between the Puritan wing of the church and the Elizabethan prelacy, he threw into prison ten of the ministers who presented the petition, the Star Chamber having pronounced it tending to sedition and rebellion. The only benefit which the conference brought was the resolve to retranslate the Bible; the result was that noble monument of the English language which until a few years ago remained the authorised version.

SECTION 2.—*James, Parliament, and the Favourites*

James had to listen to a different voice from that of the prelates when on March 19, 1604, he met his first parliament. A proclamation laying down rules for the election of members, and ordering the Court of Chancery to determine the validity of elections, at once brought about the assertion of a claim, never since disputed; that parliament should be sole judge of its own elections.⁶ James was instructed that three things were needed for the passing of any law; the agreement of the Commons, the accord of the Lords, the assent of the crown. The old feudal burdens were attacked. Angry at the result of the Hampton Court conference, the Commons brought forward measures for church reform, and refused to confer with convocation. That body had, with James's approbation, framed a new set of canons for the clergy, in some cases affecting the laity also, directly opposed to Puritan feeling. Among them was one which broke the Elizabethan compromise by insisting upon subscription to every word of all the articles, doctrinal or not (p. 220). To be binding upon the laity, however, they needed an act of parliament—and that was not passed.

⁵ They asked for permission to restore the 'prophecyings' (p. 219), and that all disputed points should be referred to the bishop and his presbyters. Hitherto James had been moderate; but now he exclaimed: 'A Scottish presbytery agreeth as well with monarchy as God and the devil. There Jack, and Tom, and Will, and Dick shall meet, and at their pleasure censure me and my council and all our

proceedings' (Appendix, p. 280).

⁶ The case of a member named Shirley, who had been imprisoned for debt, gave rise to the first legislative recognition of 'privilege.' It was established that no member could be arrested except for treason, felony, or breach of the peace, and that the Commons might inflict punishment upon any one procuring an arrest in breach of privilege.

But upon the clergy they were binding, as passed by convocation; and some 800 ministers were deprived for refusing obedience.⁷ Parliament was now at odds with the church. The Catholics fared no better. A royal declaration expressed the king's hatred of popery; missionary priests were again banished; the penal laws were rigorously executed; and the 20*l.* fines with arrears were exacted.

The 'Apology' of the Commons in the middle of the session was as remarkable as the address at the beginning. That they formally asked at the beginning of each session to be allowed to enjoy their rights and privileges was, the king was told, merely an act of manners, which did not affect the rights themselves. No court in the land had authority which could stand against theirs. If James had been told that kings of England had power to make laws concerning religion, he had been misinformed. On their part they utterly disclaimed any 'Brownist' spirit (p. 221), and assured the king that he would possess their hearts if he would remove the burdens of which they complained.⁸ James in reply prorogued parliament with a scolding speech to the Commons upon their factious and inquisitive temper.

The enforcement of the penal laws, and the sight of the fines becoming the perquisites of the king's Scotch followers, goaded the Catholics to desperation. Robert Catesby revived a design of destroying at a blow all the authors of their misfortunes by blowing up the Houses of Parliament at the opening of the session of February, 1605; and when the peace with Spain in 1604 brought no relief, he set to work with four comrades, of whom one was Guy Fawkes, an officer of a regiment of English Catholics in the Spanish service. They hired a house close to the House of Lords, and in December 1604 began to pierce the wall, nine feet thick, into the vaults. After the prorogation, they took some rest, but during the interval they brought in other accomplices, and in February 1605 began work again. Hearing however that an adjoining cellar which ran under the parliament-house was empty, they bought the lease, made a door between the house and this cellar, and placed in

⁷ In 1606 a fresh body of canons was drawn up, but not approved by James, in which the doctrine of passive obedience was distinctly set forth.—Gardiner, vol. i. p. 290.

⁸ Among these was the possession of monopolies by the great trading companies. James had at his entry suspended monopolies of individuals. But they were retained by the companies, and jealously exercised. Such

were the Russia Company, the Eastland or Baltic, the Merchant Adventurers, from the Cattegat to the mouth of the Somme, the Levant Company for Venice and the East Mediterranean, the West African for the Cape, and the East India Company. The Commons passed a bill by a large majority, throwing open trade to all, but the Lords rejected it upon technical points.

penal laws
so
polit.
monopolies
factious

it twenty barrels of gunpowder, covered over with faggots. At this point money ran short; for their designs went much further than the blowing up of parliament. They had planned an insurrection, in which, the king and his eldest son Prince Henry having been killed, either Charles or Elizabeth was to be placed on the throne, on condition of protecting the Catholics. Catesby applied to three Catholic gentlemen for funds. One of these, Francis Tresham, pleaded that warning should be sent to his brother-in-law, Lord Monteagle. On October 26 an anonymous letter told Monteagle that parliament would receive a terrible blow, and yet should not see who hurt them. Cecil had already received mysterious warnings from abroad. On the evening of November 4, Suffolk, the lord chamberlain, and Monteagle visited the cellar, betraying no suspicion when they found Fawkes there. But in the night a guard entered and seized Fawkes. He confessed that the purpose was 'to blow the Scottish beggars back to their own country,' but made no further disclosure. On the news of the arrest his comrades fled; but the country rose upon them. In the court of Holbeche House they were either shot dead, or taken and reserved for torture and the gallows.⁹ The first act of parliament was to order November 5 to be kept for ever as a day of thanksgiving.

Fresh laws followed against the Catholics. They were compelled to receive the Sacrament from Protestant ministers. The king was empowered to refuse the monthly fine of 20*l.* for absence from church, and to take two-thirds of the offenders' rents, or all their goods if they had no lands (p. 223). Recusants were practically deprived of all civil rights. They were pursued even to their graves; for, if they were buried in any but a Protestant graveyard, their executors were fined 20*l.* A new oath of allegiance, under the penalty of *præmunire*, distinguished between those who upheld and those who denied the pope's deposing power; and when the pope condemned the oath, James replied by the execution both of priests and laymen.

Coming from a poor country, James had imagined his resources to be boundless. He had showered gifts upon his Scotch friends, and had wasted enormous sums upon idle extravagance. In addition to a debt of 785,000*l.*, partly a legacy from Elizabeth, his annual expenditure of 500,000*l.* exceeded his revenue by 180,000*l.* The Commons now, with many murmurs, gave 250,000*l.* But James by his own authority had, in imitation of Mary and Eliza-

⁹ Cecil (now earl of Salisbury) used jealous, to ruin the latter, as he had the relation of Percy to the Duke of before ruined Raleigh through his Northumberland, of whom he was friend Cobham.

beth, imposed duties on imports and exports, in spite of the *Confirmatio Cartarum* (pp. 81, 99). A merchant named Bate refused to pay an increased duty on currants. James obtained a decision from the Court of Exchequer in favour of the crown, on the ground that all customs duties are the effect of foreign commerce, which is solely in the king's hands. The Commons for the moment accepted the decision, and the duties were levied without difficulty. New impositions were then laid, and in 1608 a 'book of rates' was framed, by which the crown obtained an additional 70,000*l.* a year.

But in 1610 James was again obliged to summon parliament. The action of the High Commission Court in removing causes Parliament of 1610 from the judges to itself, and the support given to it by James, had meanwhile caused great offence; for such action robbed the subject of legal protection. The Commons were irritated also by a book called 'The Interpreter,' in which Dr. Cowell, of Cambridge, maintained that to make laws was a royal prerogative; and they feared that by the right to levy impositions the king might make himself independent of parliament. When therefore James demanded 600,000*l.* at once, and a permanent increase to the revenue, they offered 200,000*l.* increase after much demur, and only if old feudal dues, such as wardship and marriage (p. 52) and the power of imposing rates, were abandoned. But before the agreement became 'The Great Contract' law each party was dissatisfied with the bargain. The Commons made fresh demands, especially that James should give up his practice of creating new offences by proclamation, and making infractions of these proclamations punishable by the Star Chamber; until James, declaring that he had not 'asinine patience,' dissolved the parliament, retaining debt and deficit, but also the feudal dues, purveyance, and the right to levy impositions. The 'Great Contract' had been Cecil's favourite plan; its failure killed him. He died in 1612, having lived to see king and nation at enmity.¹⁰

Two important events now took place in the royal family: the sudden death of the king's eldest son, Henry, who was endowed in the popular belief with every virtue, and the marriage of the Princess Elizabeth, a girl of singular beauty, to Frederick, the Protestant Elector Palatine, grandson of William of Orange, who ruled over the land known as the Palatinate, stretching from the Moselle to Bohemia. This

¹⁰ Gardiner, 'The Puritan Revolution,' *Epochs of Modern Hist.*, p. 18. This volume should be at hand throughout the period. For a summary of the causes of estrangement, see Hallam, *Const. Hist.*, ch. vi. p. 331, ed. 1876.

marriage, afterwards so important for England,¹¹ was the last work of Cecil.

At Cecil's death James determined to be his own minister. Neither lord treasurer nor secretary was appointed; the council was not consulted. But he soon found that he could not transact the business alone, and for the first time since Edward II. a reign of favourites was introduced. The first was Robert Carr, a Scotch youth with no merit but that of personal beauty, upon whom James showered honours, wealth,¹² and power, and whom he created Viscount Rochester, and afterwards Earl of Somerset. Until 1615 he was supreme, in spite of all opposition. Then James wearied of him; the queen's jealousy, the hatred of the nobility, and his open favour to Spanish interests aided his downfall, which however was finally brought about by the scandal of an atrocious murder, planned by his wife, whose divorce from her first husband, the Earl of Essex, James had furthered by the most disgraceful measures. Meanwhile a new favourite had won the foolish king. This was George

George Villiers, duke of Buckingham

Villiers, son of a Leicestershire baronet, of higher personal graces and far more character than Somerset. Though ignorant, greedy, and proud, he was resolute and quick-witted, and devoted to his master's interests. His bearing was frank and open, his personal courage undoubted. Before long he had become Marquis of Buckingham, Knight of the Garter, and Lord High Admiral of England. He was afterwards raised to a dukedom. By the king's prodigality, and the sums he received for his favours, he amassed a vast fortune. His relatives prospered, his opponents were struck down. The council found that they had but exchanged one master for another. In 1614

James again met parliament. 'Undertakers' undertook to secure a favourable house; but in vain. The Commons refused to touch anything but grievances; they attacked the undertakers, the impositions, and the proclamations.

After two months James angrily dissolved them, and imprisoned five of the most active members. Not an act was passed, and this was therefore known as the 'Addled' parliament. For six years longer

James ruled without a parliament. To get money he sold offices, gave back for 300,000*l.* the towns which the Dutch had handed over to Elizabeth for her help, continued the impositions, levied benevolences, gave peerages for 10,000*l.* apiece, and exacted heavy fines in the Star Chamber for breaches of

¹¹ George I. was directly descended from Elizabeth (p. 232). was robbed of almost his last estate for his benefit.

¹² Raleigh, a prisoner in the Tower,

his proclamations. Oliver St. John was fined 5,000*l.* and imprisoned during pleasure for refusing to pay the benevolence and giving his reasons somewhat roughly in writing. For opposing the king in this course Lord Chief Justice Coke was disgraced. A grievous blow was thus dealt to confidence in the judges, who were felt to be but the king's creatures. In 1617 Sir Francis Bacon became keeper of the seals, and in 1618 lord chancellor, with the title of Baron Verulam, and later that of Viscount of St. Alban.

In foreign affairs James had not been unsuccessful. In concert with Henry IV. of France¹³ he had, in 1609, mediated between Spain and the Dutch, and secured a truce of twelve years; and he had joined the league of France, the Dutch, and the German Protestants in rescuing the Duchy of Juliers, which in Catholic hands prevented communication between the States and Protestant Germany, from Catholic Austria, which had seized it.

Into the religious strife which broke out among the Dutch James threw himself with eagerness. Calvinism had there been established with great rigour. But Arminius, a professor of Leyden, had led an intellectual revolt by putting forward the doctrine of free-will and good works as less repugnant to reason and charity than that of predestination and justification by faith alone. One of his followers, Vorstius, having gone still further, James attacked him in print, and compelled the Dutch, as the price of his friendship, to banish him from Leyden and oblige him to recant. Still the new opinions spread, chiefly among the merchants and lawyers of Holland and Zealand, and the religious controversy soon became political. A synod was held at Dort in 1619, to which James sent deputies for both the English and Scotch churches. There the Calvinists triumphed. The works of Vorstius were condemned; Barneveldt, the chief of the Arminian party, was put to death, and 700 leading families holding his opinions were banished.

While thus upholding the Calvinistic faith among the Dutch, James was actively suppressing the Presbyterian form of church Government in Scotland (*Appendix*, p. 230). By intrigue, bribery, and force, he had, in 1610, partially re-established Episcopacy there in the teeth of popular feeling. He had imprisoned and

¹³ Henry IV. had become a Catholic. But his great object was to unite France against the Spanish house. One branch of this house ruled over Spain, another over Austria; and these two, both venemently Catholic, always held together. As opposed to them the interest of Catholic France was the same as that of Protestant England or the Dutch. The assassination of Henry IV. made no difference to French interests.

exiled Knox's great successor Andrew Melville, with other Presbyterian leaders. In 1618 he went in person to Scotland, taking with him William Laud, bishop of St. David's, and by using the jealousy between nobles and clergy, and by a threat of seizing the stipends of the ministers, secured the acceptance by the general assembly of the kirk at Perth, and in 1621 by the Scotch parliament, of the Five Articles of Perth, which brought the Scotch kirk into something like uniformity with the Church of England.

On his return from Scotland James found a fresh subject of controversy opened; and this he settled in a manner which, though perfectly just, was most distasteful to the sterner Puritans. By their The Declaration of Sports Sunday was regarded as identical with the Jewish Sabbath, to be kept undisturbed alike by work and amusement. But hitherto Englishmen had regarded Sunday afternoon, after the close of service, as the right time for amusement. Thus, when the Puritan justices tried to suppress the village sports, they met with angry resistance. In Lancashire especially, where there were many Catholics, this was the case; the people appealed to James, and James decided in their favour. Then they turned the tables upon the Puritans, and disturbed their services by revelry outside the church doors. To stay both abuses, and to give due liberty to each, James issued the Declaration of Sports, which permitted any 'lawful recreation' to be indulged in after divine service by all who had attended such service, and forbade any disturbance of the congregation during the hours of worship. The Declaration was a wise measure; James's mistake was in publishing it, not only in Lancashire, where it was needed, but throughout the kingdom, in the form of a circular to the justices and of orders to the clergy to read it in the pulpit. So strong was the feeling roused that this order was shortly withdrawn.

At the death of Elizabeth, Ireland was a conquered country. No chieftain claimed independence of the crown; the king's garrisons held the strongholds; assizes were held by his judges in Plantation of Ulster every county. The two great earls of Ulster, Tyrone and Tyrconnel, lived in loyalty to the government until 1607. Then they fled to the Continent under suspicion of treason. This was the opportunity for the grasping English. The earls were attainted, and not only their private property, but that of all the clans over which they ruled (p. 227, note), that is, all Ulster,¹⁴ were 'planted' with English or Scotch. Smaller plantations were made in Leitrim, Wicklow,

¹⁴ The larger plots were granted to English and Scotch 'undertakers,' especially to London companies; the smaller to the officers of state and officers in the army; a few of the worst to natives; and a large amount to the church.

Wexford, and elsewhere.¹⁵ Up to that time the people in Ireland had practically all been Catholics, those of English blood who supported English rule, and Irish Catholics who hated the English. But the plantations introduced a loyal Protestant population; and, by means of the seventeen new counties and forty new boroughs which were founded, the government acquired a majority in parliament, which passed act after act solely in favour of the Protestants. The old English Catholics were thus driven to ally themselves to the Irish Catholics in defence of their faith, a change which soon had disastrous effects.

James's irregular methods of obtaining money had all proved insufficient. He therefore revived an old scheme, rejected by Cecil, of marrying his son Charles to the Infanta of Spain, and thus securing a rich dowry; and to assist the negotiations he released no fewer than 4,000 imprisoned Catholics. But the national hatred of Spain was as strong as ever; and it had been rendered keener by the cruelties practised on the crews of captured English merchant-ships. Of this feeling Raleigh, a prisoner in the Tower, was the foremost representative. Raleigh had, in 1584, received from Elizabeth a patent to colonise any vacant lands on payment of certain dues to the crown. In 1596 he attempted to discover El Dorado, the fabled golden city of Guiana, and he sailed sufficiently far up the Orinoco to stimulate curiosity. He was now set at liberty at Buckingham's request, with permission to try again, his sentence of death remaining still valid. But Gondomar, the Spanish ambassador, protested, and James forbade Raleigh to touch Spanish territory or to hurt a single Spaniard. With twelve ships he reached the Orinoco in November 1617. Falling sick, he sent his eldest son with an expedition up the river. They found a Spanish town on the banks, established since the former expedition, which they attacked and plundered, Raleigh's son being killed in the fight. On his return in 1618 Raleigh was again imprisoned. An attempt to escape failed, and on October 29 he was executed, as a concession to Spain, upon the old sentence: an act of subservience which roused the bitterest feeling in a nation which remembered how Elizabeth had knighted Drake (p. 224).

The outbreak in Bohemia of the Religious Thirty Years' War¹⁶ now, after sixteen years of peace, threatened to drag James into war. His son-in-law Frederick accepted the crown from the Protestants

¹⁵ The expense of the military force needed to carry out the change was defrayed by the creation of baronetcies. Two hundred were sold to gentlemen of landed property of at least 1,000*l.* a year for 1,095*l.* apiece.

¹⁶ It lasted from 1618 until the Peace of Westphalia in 1648.—See Gardiner, 'Thirty Years' War,' in *Epochs of Modern History*.

there in rivalry to the Catholic Emperor Ferdinand, and England called upon James to help him.¹⁷ The whole court, the Prince of Wales, Buckingham, and the clergy, all wanted war. A voluntary loan was raised, and a regiment of 2,000 volunteers went to aid in securing the Palatinate from attack. More the king would not do. He

disliked war, and he had no money; he honestly thought Frederick in the wrong, and he was intimidated by Spain.

In 1620 Frederick was driven not only from Bohemia but from his own Palatinate by Austrian and Spanish troops. In hopes of recovering the Palatinate by means of Spain, James pressed on the marriage treaty. He secretly agreed to give the Infanta the free exercise of her religion, and to make the lot of the Catholics easier. Upon the pope's pressure for an earnest of his intentions, he ordered, July 1622, that pardon should be granted to all who applied during the next five years.

Parliament meanwhile met once more in 1621. They had in their minds all their former grievances, reinforced by the imprisonment of

their members at the close of the last session, Raleigh's execution, the disasters of Frederick, and suspicions of the king's dealings with Spain. The redress of grievances,

fresh resolutions against the Catholics, and a demand for the full recognition of the right of free speech, were at once put forward. They attacked the owners of monopolies, reviving for the purpose the ancient right of impeachment, disused since that of the Duke of Suffolk in 1450. This was really directed against Buckingham, who avoided the blow by giving up the monopolies he held and inducing James to abandon the system entirely. Many others were severely punished. The chief victim was Bacon, lord chancellor, through whose skilful management the king had been enabled to tide over

the last six years. He was impeached for receiving bribes, fined 40,000*l.*, imprisoned during pleasure, banished from court and parliament, and prohibited from taking office again.¹⁸ He

died in May 1626, having been succeeded by Williams, bishop of Lincoln. Then the Commons turned to the Palatinate. When ordered by James to adjourn themselves, they first passed a unanimous vote, 'lifting up their hats in their hands as high as they could hold them,' to sacrifice their fortunes and lives for Frederick.¹⁹ When the session

¹⁷ Green, *History of England*, vol. iii. p. 27.

¹⁸ Bacon's offence was not so bad as it seemed. The salary of his office was nominal, and his payment came chiefly from presents made by suitors after a case was decided. There is no proof

that his decisions were affected by the practice.

¹⁹ For the temper of the Commons at this time, see their proceedings in the case of Floyd, who spoke slightly about the Elector and Elizabeth.—Hallam, *Const. Hist.*, vol. i. p. 860.

was renewed the quarrel had deepened. The Palatinate had been overrun by Spanish troops. Many Catholics had been released. James had imprisoned several ministers who preached against Spain. Spread of Arminianism Arminian doctrines were spreading in the country, and James was now so far showing sympathy with them that he had ordered that no minister should preach on the cardinal doctrines of Calvinism. People went in crowds to the churches to pray against the Spanish marriage. The Commons prepared a petition to James Anger of the Commons and of James urging him to make war on Spain, to marry Charles to a Protestant, to execute the penal laws, and to insist upon the children of Catholics being educated as Protestants. James angrily forbade them to meddle with affairs of state. They entered a formal protest against his order on their journals. In weak petulance he sent for the journals, tore out the protestation in presence of the council, and dissolved parliament. For the first time he had been opposed by some of the peers; and the Earls of Oxford and Southampton, with several members of the Commons, were imprisoned and otherwise punished for their conduct.

James still went on with the marriage treaty. In January 1623 he consented to allow the Catholics to worship in private houses. At this moment, in accordance with a plan formed between Buckingham Charles and Buckingham at Madrid and Gondomar, Charles and the duke disguised themselves, and, under the names of John and Thomas Smith, went in person to Madrid to do the wooing. There the prince signed a secret treaty providing that the penal laws should be dropped, private worship allowed, and no attempt made to seduce the Infanta from her faith. Charles was an ardent lover, and Bristol, the English ambassador, did all he could to make the negotiations successful. But difficulties soon arose. The Infanta took a violent dislike to Charles, and her piety was scandalised at the idea of marrying a heretic. Buckingham, jealous of Bristol, began to oppose him. He shocked Spanish propriety by his dissoluteness, and he quarrelled with Olivares, the prime minister. The court of Madrid, above all, could not bring itself to weaken the union of the two branches of the Austro-Spanish house (p. 241, note). The result was that Charles and Buckingham left Madrid, Bristol was recalled in disgrace, The Spanish marriage broken off and the marriage treaty was broken off. The prince and the duke returned amid wild delight, for the people regarded the failure of James's scheme as a national victory.

Buckingham was now resolved to force on a war with Spain. He put himself in touch with the popular feeling by appearing at the first session of the new parliament, in February 1624, and giving a

narrative of the Madrid visit. He made James acknowledge the Commons' right to touch affairs of state, by laying the late negotiations before them, and promising in future to consult them on foreign matters. James then demanded an enormous supply, to enable him to defend the Palatinate. But the Commons had no confidence in him, and they gave him only enough for national defence, for refitting the fleet, and for helping the Dutch. At the same time they extorted a proclamation putting the penal laws more rigidly than ever in force.

Buckingham's position was now remarkable. He was at once royal favourite and leader of an opposition parliament. Bent upon war with Spain, he overthrew all who opposed it. Among these was the Earl of Middlesex, lord treasurer. He was impeached for bribery, oppression, and neglect.²⁰ His trial was marked by an advance in justice. Hitherto the impeached person had not been allowed the aid of counsel or furnished with a copy of the indictment. The Lords ordered that both these injustices should cease (see p. 202).

It was now proposed that Charles should marry Henrietta Maria, daughter of Henry IV. of France, whom he had seen on his way to

The French marriage. Dishonesty of James and Charles Madrid. To quiet the opposition of the Commons to any Catholic marriage, Charles and James both promised that no pledge of favour to Catholics should accompany it.

But Louis XIII. insisted upon such a pledge. Buckingham, eager only for French aid against Spain, persuaded Charles, and Charles persuaded his father, to break the promise, and the marriage treaty was signed. With the knowledge of this lie, Buckingham dared not let parliament meet. But he sent 6,000 men to help the Dutch, the twelve years' truce (p. 241) having ended in 1641; he

Protestant league formed a Protestant league of Sweden, Denmark, and the German princes, in their hatred of the Spanish house. Count Mansfeld, a military adventurer, who upheld Frederick's cause, came to England; 12,000 men were pressed for his service; they reached Holland, but in a few weeks 9,000 were swept away by disease and hardship.

Before the French marriage could be concluded, James fell ill.

Death of James He died on March 27, 1625, meeting his end with more dignity than he had showed during his life. He was fifty-nine years old, and had reigned twenty-three years.²¹ He left the quarrel

²⁰ The shrewd old king saw to what all this must lead. 'You will live,' said he to Buckingham, 'to have your bellyful of impeachments.'

²¹ For a vivid summary of this reign see Green, vol. iii. p. 120, or *Short History*, p. 493.

undetermined, but well defined. It had to be fought out upon the right of parliament to free speech, Puritanism, and the claim of the king to levy money without parliamentary consent.

The chief dream of Raleigh's life had been the colonisation of Virginia, and it was accomplished while he lay in prison. In 1606 a charter was granted to Judge Popham to make two settlements between 35° and 45° N. lat., both to be governed by a council in London, nominated by the king. The northern expedition failed utterly; the southern, after desperate hardships and almost complete annihilation, held its ground through the genius of John Smith, one of the most remarkable men of the age, and the able conduct of Lord Delaware; and from 1611 onwards it prospered. In fifteen years the colony had 5,000 inhabitants.

At the end of Elizabeth's reign many Brownists (p. 220) had fled to Holland, and had established a church at Amsterdam, which was later joined by the Baptist John Smith. In 1608 two of the Pilgrim Fathers the ministers turned out by the canons of 1604 (p. 286), Clifton and John Robinson, with others, succeeded, after having been stopped by the government in a first attempt, in reaching Amsterdam also. Finding the exiles there distracted with quarrels over the most trivial points, they removed to Leyden, and remained there until 1619, when, in spite of the tales of hardship from Virginia, many determined to emigrate to America, and obtained a patent from the Virginia Company to establish a settlement near the mouth of the Hudson. In July 1620, the 'Mayflower,' of 180 tons, lay ready at Southampton, while the 'Speedwell' was sent to bring the emigrants from Holland. In these two vessels 120 pilgrims embarked and set sail; but they were compelled to return on account of the leaky condition of the ships, and on September 6 the 'Mayflower' set sail alone. On December 11 the founders of a great empire landed, 102 in all, on the coast of Massachusetts, and gave the name of New Plymouth to the spot. As this was outside the limits of their patent, they were left to form their own government. They, too, were soon reduced to utter distress through cold, famine, and disease; for ten years they barely held their own, and at the end of that time numbered only 800. In 1630 they were joined by 1,000 Puritans under John Winthrop, escaping from the severity of Charles and Laud; in 1631, 700 more followed. The Virginian colonists had been 'broken men,' wild or lawless adventurers; those who sailed on the 'Mayflower' were of the poorer class; but these last were of higher standing, men of the professional and middle classes, and Puritan farmers from Lincolnshire and the eastern counties, who left their country sadly, not for

adventure, but for religious freedom. As persecution grew in England, emigration went on faster; within ten years from Winthrop's sailing 20,000 Englishmen had landed in New England. The limits of their ideas of religious freedom should be carefully noticed. They went to escape persecution, but they were in no sense tolerationists. They abolished Episcopacy and the use of the Prayer Book. They refused to admit to office any who were not members of their churches. As time went on their intolerance grew even more bitter, and no persecution at home was more keen than that which the Puritans of Massachusetts inflicted upon the heretics whom they found in their midst.

Intolerance
in New
England

They refused to admit to office any who were not members of their churches. As time went on their intolerance grew even more bitter, and no persecution at home was more keen than that which the Puritans of Massachusetts inflicted upon the heretics whom they found in their midst.

CHAPTER II

CHARLES I. TO THE CIVIL WAR. 1625-1642

SECTION 1.—*First Struggle with Parliament, 1625-1629.*

CHARLES, now twenty-five years of age, was a complete contrast to his father. He was religious, reserved, and decorous, a lover of art, expert at knightly exercises. He earnestly desired to be a good king. But his theory of kingship led him to speak with mental reservations, and this at times degenerated into the belief that deception was justifiable when what he believed to be his rights were violated.

Parliament met in anger at the French marriage, which was celebrated at once, at the relaxation of the penal laws which followed, and at the growth of Arminianism. Of the Arminian party, William Laud, bishop of St. David's, was the leader. He held that men should be appealed to through the senses as well as through the intellect, by music, architecture, and ceremonial; and that, to bring order to the church, uniformity in ceremonies was necessary. The Commons would grant no freedom of doctrine: he would grant no freedom of ceremony.

Charles favoured the Laudian clergy, and they naturally magnified the prerogative. 'Defend thou me with the sword, and I will defend thee with the pen,' wrote Montague, one of the royal chaplains. 'The power which resides in the king is not any gift of the people,' said Laud to the two Houses, 'but God's power as well in as over him.' 'Parliament,' added Charles, 'is for counsel, not for control.' Parliament met this doctrine by demanding the execution of the penal laws and by arresting Montague. They

Close union
of the clergy
and the
crown

gave Charles an inadequate supply, and voted him tonnage and poundage, the chief part of his revenue, not for life, but for a year only. The Lords refused to concur, on the ground that this was a breach of custom as old as Henry VI., and Charles therefore lost even this supply. The quarrel grew daily more acute; and when

Buckingham interposed, he was threatened with impeachment. Charles at once dissolved parliament. He then levied tonnage and poundage on his own authority, made demands on the richer gentry, left salaries unpaid, and exercised the closest economy at court. He was thus enabled in October to despatch an expedition against Cadiz, which however ended in a complete disaster. But Charles had another quarrel on his hands. Some vessels which his father had lent to Louis XIII. had been employed, contrary to the English intention, against the revolted Huguenots in Rochelle; and he felt that in honour he was bound to go to their aid. More than ever, therefore, a favourable parliament was necessary. He resolved to violate his marriage treaty by executing the penal laws, as he had before violated his promise to parliament by relaxing them; while, to prevent his chief opponents sitting as members of parliament, he had recourse to the trick of making them sheriffs of their counties.

This showed how little he knew the temper of the country. The opposition was led by Sir John Eliot, formerly a friend of Buckingham, but who now regarded him as the worst of traitors. Eliot held that the Commons ought to have complete 'control,' not merely 'counsel;' that they were literally the collective wisdom of the nation; and that 'whoever tendered other counsel than the House of Commons had to offer was a divider and a traitor.' Three committees were formed—for evils, causes, and remedies. Buckingham was named as the cause of evils, and his impeachment as the remedy. In vain Charles threatened to dispense with parliaments altogether. He made matters worse by quarrelling with the Lords. He had violated their privileges by imprisoning Lord Arundel while parliament was sitting; and, to prevent Lord Bristol (p. 245) from making damaging disclosures about the Madrid journey, had withheld his writ (p. 82) to attend parliament. On both points he was forced to yield; and Bristol at once sent in charges of falsehood and misconduct against Buckingham. The duke had meanwhile been impeached in the Commons. One charge was that on his own authority he had administered medicine to James in his last illness. Charles was falsely informed that the same charge had been made against himself. In a fury he com-

Dissolution
of the first
parliament.
Failure at
Cadiz

Sir John
Eliot

Dissolution
of the second
parliament.
Failure at
Rochelle

mitted Eliot and Sir Dudley Digges to prison. Forced to withdraw from this breach of privilege, he showed his contempt for both Lords and Commons by bestowing fresh honours on Buckingham, dissolving parliament in order to put an end to the impeachment, and sending Bristol and Arundel to the Tower.

The dissolution was again followed by irregular levies of money. Forced loans were exacted on a scale laid down by the royal commissioners; and the seaports were ordered to provide ships for the navy. The clergy were instructed to preach obedience; and Chief Justice Crewe was dismissed for declaring this illegal. Charles met with a general refusal, even among the peers. Many persons were imprisoned or punished by having soldiers billeted upon them; the poorer defaulters were pressed for service. The money was spent on war with France. Charles had quarrelled with his imperious wife, who bitterly resented his failure to keep the marriage treaty; and this led to an open breach with Louis. In July 1627 Buckingham landed with 7,000 men on the Isle of Rhé, commanding the harbour of Rochelle. For eleven weeks he attempted to capture the castle of St. Martin. At the moment of surrender it was relieved; a general assault failed; the English were vigorously attacked in their disorderly march to the ships, and cut down by hundreds. Buckingham returned, more than ever discredited, with but 3,000 of his force. The natural outcry only goaded on Charles to another attempt; and to obtain supplies for this he was obliged to call a fresh parliament, March 1628.

A third
parliament.
Sir Thomas
Wentworth.
Contrast
with Eliot

This time Eliot's leadership was shared by Sir Thomas Wentworth, the head of an ancient and noble house in Yorkshire.¹ His talents were splendid; he was devout and unselfish; his temper was generous, but hasty and arbitrary; his will unconquerable. For the moment he and Eliot could work together. But the union could not be permanent. Eliot was a fervid Puritan, with an intense conviction in the right and ability of parliament to govern as well as to legislate. Wentworth hated Puritanism, and held that the executive must be in the hands of the king, upheld by a parliament which did not aspire to govern.

Eliot and Wentworth both shared in drawing up the celebrated Petition of Right, to which they demanded Charles's assent before granting him a supply. This document—a reassertion of Magna Carta and the *Confirmatio Cartarum*—forbade: (1) Forced loans and other unparliamentary taxation; (2) arbitrary arrest and detention; (3) the billeting of soldiers in private houses, leading to robbery and violence; (4) the exercise of martial law upon

¹ Gardiner, vol. iv. p. 238, and vol. v. p. 186.

soldiers and sailors for offences punishable by the ordinary courts. Charles was prepared to yield, except on the crucial point of arbitrary arrest; and in making a stand here he was supported by a half-hearted decision of the judges that the express command of the king might override the law. He therefore returned an evasive reply.

The storm which at once burst forth was so menacing that he was for the moment cowed. He gave his assent in the old formula, 'Soit droit fait comme est désiré,' a victory for the Commons which was greeted in the city with the wildest joy.² The Commons having Charles as they thought at their mercy, now that he had promised not to raise money by prerogative, pushed their victory. A Remon-
The Remon-
strance strance was presented against Popery and Arminianism, the late naval failures, and the retention of Buckingham in power. But Charles avoided further discussion by proroguing parliament.

The Commons had meanwhile not neglected religious questions. The High Commission Court had been directly attacked. Arminian sermons were noticed; Mainwaring, who had preached absolute obedience on pain of damnation, was impeached, imprisoned, during the pleasure of the Lords, fined 1,000*l.*, and made incapable of ecclesiastical office. For this sentence Charles showed his respect by giving Mainwaring a pardon, a valuable living, and shortly a bishopric. Laud was made Bishop of London, and
Parliament
and
Puritanism Montague of Chichester. Puritanism was rapidly being driven from the church. All the more the Puritan spirit and the parliamentary spirit became identified.

A notable defection now took place in the ranks of the Commons. Wentworth had proposed the Petition of Right because Charles was violating the ancient constitution. But he regarded the Remonstrance as an aggression on the part of the Commons still more unconstitutional and dangerous to strong government. Like Elizabeth, he believed in a few wise men, not a number of 'hair-brained politicians' (p. 216). He quarrelled bitterly with Eliot, and he now formally left the opposition. He received a peerage, and was promised the
Wentworth
joins the
king presidentship of the Council of the North. To those who thought with Eliot he naturally was, and ever remained, the 'dark-browed apostate,' the object of their detestation and fear.

² The clause preventing arbitrary imprisonment was a great advance. It still remained to see that trials should be fair. Against this there were two obstacles, the courts of Star Chamber and High Commission, and the dependence of the judges on the crown (p. 82).

The third expedition to Rochelle, under Buckingham, was now ready to sail. But on August 28, at the moment of setting out, the duke was struck dead by an officer named Felton, a man soured by loss of promotion. It showed the temper of the nation that the crime was heard of with rejoicing, and that Felton was escorted to the Tower amid the blessings of the people. Nevertheless the fleet sailed; but again there was neither capacity in the commander nor enthusiasm among the men. The result was a third failure, and Rochelle capitulated on October 28.

Parliament reassembled in a spirit more bitter than ever. Among a host of grievances was the fact that Charles had called in all copies of the Petition of Right, and had issued an edition with the first evasive answer. The Commons had supposed that tonnage and poundage were included in the Petition of Right. Charles maintained, as the Lords had previously maintained, that by the constitution they belonged to the crown, and were therefore outside its scope. Eliot vehemently opposed this doctrine. On March 2, 1629, after a short adjournment, the house received the king's order to adjourn again. An uproar arose, for the Commons had never acknowledged the king's right to order

this. It was reported that Charles was about to dissolve parliament. The door was at once locked. The Speaker then tried to end the sitting by leaving the chair. He was thrust back and held in his seat by Holles and Valentine, while Holles put to the vote from memory some resolutions which Eliot had drawn up, but in his anger had thrown into the fire. These were that whoever brought in innovations in religion, whoever advised the levy of tonnage and poundage without a grant from parliament, or voluntarily paid those duties, was an enemy to the kingdom and a betrayer of its liberties. Then the doors were thrown open. Parliament was dissolved, and did not meet again for eleven years. Eliot, Holles, Valentine, and seven other members were arrested, brought before the King's Bench for stirring up sedition, fined, and condemned to imprisonment during the king's pleasure.³ All but Eliot, Valentine, and Strode submitted and were released. Three years later Eliot died in the Tower at the age of thirty-eight. Valentine and Strode remained in prison for eleven years.

³ The proceedings disclosed one omission in the Petition of Right—namely, of the conditions under which a prisoner ought to be admitted to bail; and Charles refused to allow them to be bailed. The question of breach of

privilege was overruled on the ground that, since the order to adjourn had been given, the House was not really in session: a curious illustration of Charles's want of ingenuousness.

SECTION 2.—*Government without Parliament. 1629-1640*

The opposition, unable to express itself in parliament, now rapidly broke up. Noy and Littleton, who had been members of the opposition, became attorney and solicitor-general. Wentworth was admitted to the council, and promised to 'vindicate monarchy for ever from the conditions and restraints of subjects.' Laud, the real ruler of the church, sedulously marshalled it in support of the prerogative.

Desertions to the crown These two, Laud and Wentworth, with Weston, the lord treasurer, ruled the country. To avoid the necessity of a parliament, Charles made peace with France and Spain, while for his ordinary expenditure he provided by a bold use of the prerogative. (1) Tonnage and poundage were levied as before; and, as trade increased with peace, resistance died away.⁴ (2) Heavy fines were laid upon all who, possessing the due property qualifications, had refrained from taking knighthood at the coronation (p. 94). (3) Monopolies were granted for large sums to corporations. (4) Frequent proclamations were issued (p. 239), and infractions of them met by fines; old and obsolete laws were revived (p. 177).

Money raised by prerogative (5) Large sums were exacted by the Star Chamber, which had extended its scope over every department of life. (6) The plantations in Ulster held by the City were resumed by the crown on the ground of mismanagement. (7) A survey of the forests⁵ showed that encroachments had been made for centuries by the landowners on their borders, until they formed only a small portion of the original possessions of the crown. All these in-taken lands were now forcibly resumed, or enormous fines imposed upon their owners, to the ruin of many hitherto wealthy people.

While Charles was thus alienating 'interests,' Laud was busy with 'consciences.' The Puritan strength was in preaching, and Laud now suppressed all preachers who had no cure of souls. He forbade the clergy to preach upon deep matters of doctrine; but offenders of the Puritan party chiefly were punished. For a pamphlet called 'Sion's Plea against Prelacy,' a Presbyterian minister named Leighton was brought before the Star Chamber, and sentenced to a fine of 10,000*l.*, the pillory, a whipping, to have one ear cut off and his nose slit, and to be branded in the face with S.S., 'Sower of Sedition;' he was then thrown into prison, where he

⁴ Richard Chambers, for declaring before the Privy Council that not even in Turkey were men so 'screwed and wrung' as in England, was fined 2,000*l.*

and imprisoned.

⁵ Hallam, vol. ii. pp. 10, 85; Gardiner, *History of England*, vol. vii. p. 363.

remained until the Long Parliament. In 1633 Laud became primate. Much needed activity was displayed in church matters. Churches were repaired and beautified. St. Paul's was no longer allowed to be a market-place, a lounge, and the haunt of disreputable people. Laud's 'visitations' were real things; submission was insisted upon from high and low alike, and observances most hateful to the Puritans were rigidly enforced. Many ministers were deprived for refusing to read the 'Book of Sports.'⁶ All ties with other reformed churches were severed, since they rejected Episcopacy; the Huguenot and Flemish congregations in England were suppressed; English Puritan churches abroad were broken up. A special commission took the colonies under its care; and emigration was checked lest error should thus be spread. But Laud did all in his power to remove abuses from the church itself. Ordination was refused to unqualified persons. Residence was enforced upon the bishops. Jobbery of all kinds was put down. Celibacy was encouraged, that the priesthood might become a separate caste. Hitherto the clergy had been in the eyes of the gentry only a lower sort of dependents. Laud encouraged them now to take a very different position; and, as one means, he forbade them to act as private chaplains.

Meantime the Catholics were treated with the utmost leniency. The penal laws had been mitigated; the pope's envoy to the queen was favourably received at court; Catholic doctrines were preached without rebuke. One bishop, Montague, was suspected to be a Catholic; another, Goodman, died confessing this faith. It was reckoned that of a population of about five millions the Catholics numbered 150,000. In contrast with this was the treatment of aggressive Puritanism. In 1634 William Prynne, a barrister, suffered Leighton's fate. He had written violently against many fashionable follies, and in 1632 had published his 'Histriomastix,' or 'Scourge of Players,' which attacked the stage and dancing, and appeared to reflect upon the queen. Prynne received no sympathy. The stage was extremely popular; even Milton, a Puritan of Puritans, but imbued with classical learning, showed in his 'Comus' that the drama could be pure and beautiful. But before long it was seen how great a change had been worked by Laud in the popular temper. In 1636 Henry Burton published 'For God and the King,' and in 1637 John Bastwick printed his 'Litany;' in both of which Laud and the bishops were attacked in unmeasured language. The usual savage sentences were inflicted. With Prynne, again sentenced for a fresh offence, they went to their punishment and to

⁶ 'Brethren,' said one clergyman of God and the law of man; choose who complied, 'ye have heard the law which ye will serve.'

prison along a road strewn with flowers, and with every mark of popular sympathy. 'Comus' was followed by 'Lycidas,' in which the Laudian despotism was sternly rebuked.⁷

In 1635, Weston the lord treasurer died. By Laud's advice he was succeeded by Juxon, bishop of London, whose administration is famous for the great question of ship-money. In 1634, Noy, the attorney-general, had suggested the revival of the plan, formerly in operation, of taxing the maritime counties to assist the seaports in providing ships (p. 250), on the ground of protecting English commerce from the Algerian pirates, though the real reason for raising a fleet was the growth of the naval power of France and the Dutch. In 1635, Noy being dead, Chief Justice Finch urged the obvious reasonableness of making the levy on the whole country. The first levy was made with little resistance; but when, in February 1637, in answer to Charles's questions, ten out of twelve judges decided that: (1) the king might impose ship-money upon the whole nation, and compel payment by law in time of national danger; (2) the king was the sole judge of national danger: the matter became more serious. The king was now authoritatively declared to be possessor of resources which made him free of parliaments. An abiding distrust of the judges sprang up, as mere creatures of the crown.⁸

John Hampden John Hampden, a Buckinghamshire country gentleman, who had already been imprisoned for refusing the forced loan of 1627, now refused ship-money, as contrary to Magna Carta, the *Confirmatio Cartarum*, the statute 'De Taliagio non concedendo' of Edward III. (p. 115), and the Petition of Right. He was sued by the crown before the whole bench; and the case was argued by the ablest lawyers in England. Seven out of the twelve gave a verdict for the king; but the arguments of Hampden's counsel were read throughout the land, and sank deep into men's hearts.⁹ The country, however, was growing rich: the Continental wars had thrown trade into English hands; manufactures were springing up;

⁷ From the conflict men fled in different ways. Those who loved the orderliness of worship and beauty of ceremonial encouraged by Laud, but who hated controversy, buried themselves in remote country parishes, and led lives of saintly seclusion. Such were George Herbert at Bemerton, and Nicholas Ferrar at Little Gidding. The Puritans emigrated (p. 247)

⁸ They had shown independence in other things. They had resisted the desire to torture Felton, as illegal; they had refused to regard spoken words as treason, and to delay trials at the

demand of the High Commission Court. It must be remembered that they were entirely dependent on the king.

⁹ Wentworth's opinion showed what was at stake. A tax lawful for the navy would be lawful for the army too. That which was law for England would be law for Scotland and Ireland. The king would soon be absolute at home and formidable abroad. If he would keep from war for a few years, until the people were accustomed to the tax, he would be more powerful than any of his predecessors.

waste lands were being reclaimed; noble residences testified to the prosperity of the upper classes. There is always a danger that people will rest content under any system which brings them wealth, and this was the case now.

Meanwhile Wentworth had been sent as lord deputy to Ireland, where a strong hand was needed to bring the government out of the chaos into which it had fallen. With ceaseless labour he bent the whole force of his imperious will to the task. Constitutional restraints were ignored. The policy of 'thorough,' as it was always named in his letters to Laud, that is, 'thorough earnestness, thorough self-abnegation, thorough suppression of all who did not fall in with his views,' was carried out in every detail. 'I know no reason,' he wrote to Laud, 'but you may as well rule the common lawyers in England as I, poor beagle, do here.'¹⁰ Before long the army was under strict discipline, the fortresses repaired and garrisoned, piracy suppressed, commerce largely developed, linen and other manufactures established. He secured for Ireland the victualling of the Spanish fleets for America, and obtained the reduction of duties upon Irish exports. By putting up the taxes to auction he greatly increased the revenue. He induced the king to cease rewarding his favourites by grants on the Irish exchequer, though Charles left him to bear the odium of refusals. Corrupt or incompetent officials were dismissed; the haughtiest nobles, hitherto well-nigh independent, were taught to acknowledge, by the reverence he exacted to himself, the immeasurable distance between them and the royal authority. At every step he made powerful enemies; but he went on his way without turning aside for fear or favour.

The Irish parliament, well packed, met in July 1634. Relying on former promises made by Charles to the Catholics—the 'graces'—it had granted sufficient subsidies to maintain the army; this done, it was at once dissolved. Wentworth then felt free for still more drastic measures. The Protestant church was violently brought into uniformity with that in England. The 'graces' were but partially fulfilled; the system of plantations especially was ruthlessly carried out, and all resistance was borne down by sheer terrorism. With the cordial support of Laud, Wentworth went on with his work in the face of loud complaints from Ireland, opposition in England, and royal ingratitude. When he asked for an earldom, as a sign of Charles's confidence, he was coldly refused; Charles did not like being asked for favours. Wentworth's masterful nature had made him many enemies

¹⁰ His own letters and despatches may be found in every large library. They are of the most vivid interest.

at court, and they found support in the jealous queen. He was at length summoned to England to answer for himself. The merits of his rule were however incontestable, especially the fact that he had doubled the Irish revenue. He returned in triumph to his government, and so completely was he master of the country in 1638 that he was able to assure Laud that 'the king is as absolute here as any prince in the world can be.'

SECTION 3.—*The Revolt of Scotland and its Consequences.* 1639

England was quiet and Ireland completely under control. It was to his attempt to bring Scotland into similar submission that Charles's misfortunes and downfall were owing. There, also, opposition had been growing. The nobles were sore at a partial resumption of the church lands (p. 216), the Presbyterian middle classes were alarmed lest an attempt should be made to enforce a new Prayer Book. This alarm deepened when, on the king's visit in 1633, the coronation was performed by the prelates in their 'popish rags,' with full ritual; when parliament confirmed all the ecclesiastical measures of James, and gave the king the power of ordering the apparel of judges, magistrates, and clergy; when an order was issued that the clergy should wear surplices; and when Laud's nominees were appointed to all vacant posts. The king then chose as his counsellor on Scottish affairs the Marquis of Hamilton, a man distrusted by his countrymen; appointed the Archbishop of Glasgow chancellor, and admitted seven other bishops to the privy council. In 1636 and 1637 he made revolt certain by a new set of canons, which established Episcopacy on the English model, and enforced the English Prayer Book. On July 23, 1637, in the church of St. Giles, the Dean of Edinburgh began to read from the hated volume. At once a riot broke out in the church. The windows were smashed by the crowd without; the bishop barely escaped with life. Still Charles persisted; and the result was a national rising. Edinburgh was crowded with Presbyterians from all parts of the kingdom. They demanded from Charles a fair trial of their charges against the bishops, and they were supported by the mass of the nobles. Four committees, or 'Tables,' were formed, of nobles, gentry, clergy, burghers respectively: a supreme committee bound all together. These resolved that the Prayer Book and canons must be revoked, and the High Commission Court abolished; the authority of bishops must disappear; every act of council to which they had been parties must be annulled. On

His success

Charles and
Laud in
Scotland

Riot in St.
Giles'
Church

The National
Covenant

February 27, 1638, the famous Covenant was accepted by the ministers of Edinburgh. The following day it was signed by nobles and gentry in the Grey Friars' Church, on the 29th by the clergy and magistrates, on the 30th it lay open on a stone in the churchyard while multitudes of people pressed forward to sign their names, or make their mark. In remote parts of the country it was circulated for signature. Charles's offers of concession were refused. The General Assembly declared for the deposition of all bishops and episcopal clergy, and for a pure Presbyterian kirk.

Each side forthwith prepared for war. Scotch merchants from abroad sent ammunition; the nobles coined their plate; soldiers of fortune came back from abroad in large numbers, the most famous being Alexander Leslie. Every man able to bear arms was trained under these officers. From France, where Richelieu, the great minister of Louis XIII., was delighted at anything which weakened England, came money and 6,000 stand of arms. The fortresses rapidly passed out of the king's hands. In April 1639 Charles advanced from York to Berwick with 20,000 men, collected with difficulty and devoid of enthusiasm or discipline. Across the Tweed lay Leslie with an equal force of highly trained men, burning with religious zeal. Charles saw his own weakness, and was anxious to come to terms. The Scots had no desire to invade England, lest they should alienate English sympathy; and they feared that the Irish army would be brought over to attack them. On June 17, therefore, the Treaty of Berwick was concluded, by which Charles promised to submit to the General Assembly and to the Scotch parliament all ecclesiastical and civil questions; whilst the Scots agreed to disband the 'Tables' and the army, and to restore the fortresses.

The General Assembly met on August 12, and again declared for the abolition of Episcopacy. In the parliament, the Earl of Argyle, who led the middle classes, the organisation of which against both crown and nobles had been the great political result of Presbyterianism, brought forward bills to give effect to this, to levy money even from royalists for the war, and to entrust the royal castles to none but Scotchmen chosen by themselves. Parliament, not the king, was to rule in Scotland.

Charles could not but resist. But both Wentworth and Laud, deceived by the quiet which reigned in England, advised him first to call a parliament. He gave way only when the council promised that if parliament should prove untoward they would raise the money he needed. As an earnest of loyalty, they subscribed 200,000*l.* at once.

For example's sake it was resolved to hold a parliament in Ireland

first. With the earldom of Strafford, and the title of lord-lieutenant, Wentworth went thither, secured an enthusiastic vote of money, and then returned, though racked with pain, to Charles, leaving orders that 8,000 men should be got ready for service.

Wentworth,
earl of
Strafford

On April 13, 1640, after eleven years of personal government, the 'Short Parliament' met. Charles had hoped to secure their goodwill by releasing Valentine and Strode (p. 252), and by disclosing the Scotch dealings with France, of which he had knowledge. To his bitter vexation, they began, under the leadership of John Pym, with the discussion of grievances, exactly where they left off in 1629. On May 5 he angrily dissolved them. The people were furious, and riots took place, during which Lambeth Palace, the residence of Laud, was attacked. Convocation was more compliant. They voted a large sum, and issued new canons, one of which, to be read from the pulpit every quarter, upheld the divine right of kings and passive obedience; while another imposed upon the clergy an oath, known as the '*et cetera*' oath, binding them 'never to consent to alter the government of the church by archbishops, bishops, deans, and archdeacons, &c.'

In June the Scotch parliament passed Argyle's bills. Ireland, in Strafford's absence, had fallen back into confusion. Charles could raise no money. His troops were discontented and ill-disciplined. The Scots, on the other hand, were fully prepared, and on August 20 Leslie crossed the Tweed at Coldstream with 26,000 men, proclaiming that they were marching, not against the people of England but against the 'Canterburian faction of papists, atheists, Arminians, and prelates,' to punish the 'troublers of Israel,' and then to return home.

The Scots in
England

Strafford, who was lying helpless with pain at York, ordered Lord Conway to dispute the passage of the Tyne. But on the 28th the crossing was effected at Newbourn, about four miles from Newcastle. Newcastle was hurriedly deserted, and the English retreated to Yorkshire, leaving Durham and Northumberland to the invaders. It augured ill for Charles that the news was received in London with joy; the Scots were regarded as the defenders of English liberty, and 5,600*l.* a week was levied upon the northern counties for their support, to be repaid by the king out of the first grant from parliament. Charles again negotiated. To avoid a parliament, he summoned to York a great council of peers. But the peers themselves, the Scots, and the citizens of London alike insisted upon a parliament being held, and Charles was forced to issue writs for November 3. He then, in spite of Strafford's fierce

Charles at
York

protest, opened a formal treaty with the Scotch commissions, first at Ripon and then at Westminster, whither he went to open parliament.

SECTION 4.—*The Long Parliament*¹¹

On November 8, 1640, the most famous of English parliaments met, and Charles saw that, so long as the Scots were on English ground, with their overwhelming army and their demands for money, he was in its hands. Pym was again the leader. The Commons first passed severe resolutions against Catholicism, an alarm of which had been caused by the appointment of Catholics to posts in the army, and the familiarity of Charles with the envoys of the pope. Then Laud's work was in part undone. All deprived ministers were restored. Prynne, Bastwick, and Burton were brought from their distant prisons, and entered London in triumph; their sentences were reversed, and each of their judges ordered to pay 5,000*l.* The supply given by Convocation to the king, and its power to bind either clergy or laity by canons without the consent of parliament (p. 287), were declared illegal. The Commons next attacked arbitrary power; the Councils of the North and of Wales (pp. 192, 196) were abolished; monopolists were ejected from the house; and all late exactions—especially ship-money—were declared illegal. Lastly, they turned to the punishment of offenders, and they began with the 'great apostate.' On November 11 it was ordered that Strafford should be impeached; he was at once thrown into the Tower, whither Laud shortly followed him. Parliament then arranged with the Scots, on payment of their expenses and an additional grant of 425,000*l.*, to remain in the country until the work of reform was complete.

The impeachment of Strafford opened in Westminster Hall on March 22, 1641.¹² Treason (p. 126) technically meant an overt attack upon the royal person or authority, and none could uphold that Strafford was guilty of that. Pym therefore had recourse to the doctrine of 'constructive treason;' Strafford, it was argued, had undermined the laws and had thus exposed the king to disaster. In Ireland especially he had arrogated to the crown illegal authority. An injustice was done him at the outset by the order to examine privy councillors, whose advice was supposed to be 'privy'—that is, given in confidence—as to

¹¹ On the work of the Long Parliament see Hallam, *Constitutional History*, ch. ix.

¹² There is a minute and graphic

account of this trial by an eye-witness, Robert Baillie, in his *Letters and Journals*, beginning vol. ii. p. 814.

his words at the council table; and the heaviest charge was that after the close of the Short Parliament he had advised the king in council that he was now justified in acting 'loose and absolved from all rules of government,' and, further, that he might use the Irish army for the subjection of 'this kingdom.' Pym assumed that 'this kingdom' meant England; but the words clearly meant Scotland, for they were spoken during the Scottish war. Strafford's defence was so convincing that it soon became certain that the Lords would acquit him. The Commons hereupon dropped the impeachment and substituted the more deadly method of 'attainder.'¹³ After prolonged debates, the bill of attainder was passed by 204 to 59, and the Lords, among whom Strafford had few friends, were coerced by the fear of mob violence to endorse it by 27 to 19, in spite of a personal appeal from Charles. It still needed the royal assent. Charles had promised Strafford that not a hair of his head should be hurt. But the bill was brought him by the houses escorted by an armed multitude. At any moment the mob might break into Whitehall; he feared for the life of the queen; the Catholics expected massacre. His council urged him to yield. Then he asked the bishops whether he had a right to set his conscience against the council's opinion, and Juxon alone conjured him to be firm to the right. Still he hesitated. At length Strafford himself, in a noble letter, in which he prayed the king not to endanger his affairs on his account, gave him an opportunity to yield; and Charles was base enough to accept it; an undying blot upon his fame, capable of explanation, but never of excuse. 'Put not your trust in princes!' was Strafford's only cry when he heard the news. Once more Charles appealed to the Lords; but, as was said, 'Stone dead has no fellow!' On May 12, 1641, he was led to his death on Tower Hill, amid a crowd of 200,000 persons—as true a martyr to his cause as Eliot had been to that of parliamentary supremacy.

The Commons had still to secure the permanence of their own power. Already Charles had assented to the Triennial Bill. This laid down: (1) That no parliament should sit for more than three years; (2) That no more than three years should elapse between the dissolution of one parliament and the calling of the next; (3) That, if the chancellor did not issue writs, the peers might do so through the sheriffs; if the peers failed, the sheriffs were to see that

¹³ In an impeachment the Lords sit as judges to try the charges produced by the Commons. In the case of attainder the Commons pass a bill declaring the accused guilty and demanding punishment. It then goes to the Lords and to the king for their assent like any other bill. Persons convicted of treason in the Court of King's Bench were attainted without a bill (p. 175 note).

elections were made; if the sheriffs failed, the people were to do it themselves. (4) No parliament might be dissolved within fifty days of meeting. Personal government was now dead. But the power of dissolution still remained; and by this Charles might at any moment escape from the pressure of parliament. He was therefore forced to consent to an act providing that the present parliament should not be dissolved or prorogued without its own consent, a submission which practically dethroned him. Then the whole machinery of personal rule was swept away. The army was disbanded; the Courts of Star Chamber and High Commission were abolished. The exaction of ship-money and tonnage and poundage, and distraint of knighthood (pp. 94, 258), were declared illegal. The forests were restored to their former dimensions. The reforms upon which all were agreed were now complete, and the Scots returned home.

Hitherto all had been unanimity in the Commons. But on the question of church government the widest differences appeared. The Scots had used all the influence which the presence of their army gave them to forward Presbyterianism. Their divines, who had come with the commissioners, were indefatigable in preaching to congregations in the city. Petitions came up to the Commons in their support from the eastern counties, from 1,800 clergy, and from 15,000 citizens of London. The 'Root and Branch' party, so called because they wished to sweep away Episcopacy entirely, grew daily stronger.

On the other hand, many of the strongest reformers opposed the Presbyterian scheme altogether. 'New presbyter,' it was feared, would be but 'old priest' writ large. The English nobles had no idea of being ruled, as the Scotch nobles had been, by an aggressive ministry and interfering presbyteries.¹⁴ The lawyers, men like Hyde and Selden, shrunk from such a break in the constitution. As Selden said, 'Parliament is the church.' The parliamentary feeling was utterly opposed to a kirk independent of the state. Men of culture, like Falkland and Digby, feared for the freedom of intellectual life. The Independents knew that in Presbyterianism there would be no place for them. The middle-classes did not need its organisation, for the history of their country had given them this; its stern discipline was repellent to the liberty of private life, which in England was the growth of centuries, and with which the English church had never interfered. For the time, therefore, all proposals to abolish Episcopacy and to exclude the bishops from the House of Lords were rejected, and a feeling of irritation at Scotch

¹⁴ 'Presbyterianism,' in *Encyclopædia Britannica*.

interference began to grow. The Root and Branch party itself had no intention of accepting Scotch Presbyterianism. Still the current of opinion ran strongly against Episcopacy. This of itself caused a reaction in Charles's favour, since all Episcopalians naturally turned to the king. Their number was largely increased when their beloved Prayer-Book was directly attacked; and Charles attached to himself still more strongly all who, while objecting to Laud's action, hated Puritanism, by a declaration in which he promised to stand firm to the church of Elizabeth. The excesses of the disbanded soldiery in London, and the wild licence of the extreme sects which were now springing up on all sides, seemed to point to the authority of the crown and church as the only guarantee for order. The weight of parliamentary taxation tended the same way.

But at this moment came the news that Catholic Ireland was in revolt. An army was necessary to cope with the danger; but parliament dared not place a fresh army under the king's command. Pym therefore carried a resolution that the king should supplant his present councillors by such as were approved by parliament; while, as an answer to his declaration, the 'Grand Remonstrance,' which recounted all the evil doings of the crown since the accession, and demanded a synod of divines for church reform, was brought in. The Commons declared that no supply should be granted until Pym's resolution was carried out, and their language became more emphatic as exaggerated news from Ireland poured in.¹⁵ On November 22, from noon until midnight, took place the final debate. So doubtful was the result that the opposition leaders were prepared to emigrate in case of failure. Amidst a scene of wild excitement, which went near to actual bloodshed,¹⁶ the Remonstrance was carried by 159 to 148, and on December 1 was presented to Charles. He coldly replied that he would consider it. At this moment Sir Phelim O'Neill, one of the Irish rebels, asserted that he had a commission from Charles authorising the restoration of Catholicism. The statement, though untrue, had immediate effect upon the Commons, especially as Charles was giving commands in the army to the men they most distrusted. Determined to rob him of all power of attack, they now brought in a Militia Bill, by which a lord general and a lord high admiral were to be appointed by parliament with supreme command on land and at sea, with power to levy

¹⁵ The actual truth was terrible starvation before the rebellion came to enough; at the least estimate 5,000 an end.
English and Scotch were killed, and double that number died of cold and

¹⁶ Gardiner, *Hist of Eng.*, vol. x. p. 76.

g. 127

money and exercise martial law; but the feeling against robbing the crown thus completely of executive power was still so strong that it was not at present proceeded with. They then ordered the Remonstrance to be printed, as an appeal to the country, and resolved that 10,000 Scotch troops should be invited to put down the Irish rebellion. The Lords however refused to concur until an equal number of English were ready to accompany them, and, when pressed to exclude bishops from their house, again declared for their retention. In Ireland affairs grew daily more serious. The Catholic lords of English descent had openly joined the Ulster rebels, demanding an Irish parliament and complete religious tolerance. At home passions rose fast. On December 24 the mob was again raging in Westminster, crying, 'No bishops! No popish lords!' and a serious affray took place between the London 'Roundheads' and the reckless 'Cavaliers' of Charles's court.¹⁷

Throughout the struggle the queen had been regarded by the Commons as their most dangerous enemy. A foreigner by birth and feeling and a vehement Catholic, she cared only for the triumph of her creed and for her husband's personal power. She had been the promoter of plots amongst the officers of the army, which had come to Pym's ears and had been by him detailed to the Commons. They had resolved to impeach her. Charles, who was devoted to his wife, made up his mind to anticipate the blow; and on January 8, 1642, he impeached Lord Kimbolton and five commoners, Pym, Hampden, Holles, Hazelrig, and Strode, before the Lords, and demanded their arrest. The Lords refused to do more than appoint a commission of inquiry. He resolved to go in person and arrest them in the house. Then he hesitated. 'Go,' cried the queen, 'you coward, and pull these rogues out by the ears, or never see my face more!' On the 4th, with 300 armed followers, he went to the house; but the five members were already safe in the city. With eighty followers prepared for violence he walked through Westminster Hall, and, leaving them outside the door, which they held open, entered the house. He demanded from Lenthall, the Speaker, whether the five members were there. 'May it please your Majesty,' was the reply, 'I have neither eyes to see nor tongue to speak, in this place, but as this house is pleased to direct me, whose servant I am here.' Charles looked slowly along the benches. 'I see

¹⁷ This was the occasion of the introduction of these names. The London apprentices wore their hair short, and they gained this name of contempt from

Charles's officers. They retorted with the name 'Cavalier,' signifying an idle and debauched soldier.

all the birds are flown,' he said, and left the house with shouts of 'Privilege!' ringing in his ears. The next day he went down on the same errand to the City, but to equally little purpose. For a time the Commons, fearing for their safety at Westminster, appointed a committee which sat at the Guildhall. Then the City gave them a guard; the seamen in the Thames proffered their services; the five members returned to the house; and the triumph of 'King Pym' was complete.

A resort to force was inevitable. Charles tried to secure Hull, where the stores provided for the Scotch war were kept; but Hotham, Preparations the governor, received orders from the parliament to hold for war the place, and he was foiled. A petition from 5,000 gentry and freeholders of Bucks, vowing that they were ready to die for parliament, encouraged Pym. Orders were issued that nothing should be done without the king's authority *signified by both houses*. It was ordained that the lords-lieutenant, who could alone call out the militia and who appointed the officers, should henceforth be appointed by parliament. Then the Lords were coerced by the mob to join the Commons in demanding that Charles should give up the fortresses and the militia. They passed the bill for excluding bishops from their house, and Charles, urged by the queen, who did not care about the bishops, but only about the power of the sword, Charles re- refuses the Militia Bill gave his assent. On March 8 the king went to York. There a deputation from parliament urged him to give way on the question of the militia. 'By God, not for an hour!' was the fierce reply.

Charles now made another attempt in person upon Hull; but Hotham remained staunch. In vain the king applied to Scotland for help. On the other hand the violence of the Commons drove numbers to his side, and all the members of both houses who sympathised with him quitted London to join him at York. The queen, who had left the country, pawned the royal jewels and collected arms. Charles sent out commissions of array, to call out what in old times was the *fyrð* (p. 58.) Newcastle, Shields, and Tynemouth were secured. The gift of 100,000*l.* from the Earl of Worcester and his son Lord Herbert, with the plate of Oxford, provided him with funds for a time. The Commons, on the other hand, called in plate, money, and jewels, and levied tonnage and poundage; secured the fleet, appointing Warwick to command; formed a committee of safety of five lords and ten of themselves; and raised an army under the Earl of Essex, a steadfast and conscientious man, but wanting in dash and military genius.

The first blood was shed at Manchester. Goring seized Portsmouth; the gentry of Lincolnshire came round their king; in Warwick

and Somersetshire he had some success. On August 9 he proclaimed Essex and his officers traitors. The reply was an oath of the Commons to die with Essex. On August 20 Charles rode to Nottingham. There, on August 22, 1642, with his sons and his nephew Rupert, son of his sister Elizabeth of Bohemia (p. 289), around him, he raised the royal standard. He was soon at the head of 10,000 men—the foot under the Earl of Lindsey, the horse under Rupert's independent command. The main parliamentary army—20,000 strong—lay near Northampton.

CHAPTER III

THE GREAT CIVIL WAR. 1642-1647

SECTION 1.—*To the Coming of the Scots. August 1642— January 1644*

THE war was not strictly a war of classes or of localities. But, on the whole, the nobles and gentry, with their poorer tenants, were for the king; the trading classes and yeomanry for the parliament. So, also, speaking generally, the north, west, and south-west upheld the royal cause; while the south, east, eastern midlands, and London—the richest and most populous parts of the kingdom—supported the parliament.¹ In the latter, however, there was a large sprinkling of royalist gentry, and Oxford was intensely loyal; while in the north the great clothing towns of Yorkshire were staunch to the other side. With the king were two classes of men: the reckless cavaliers, whose hero was Prince Rupert—'Prince Robber,' as he was soon called—and the moderate royalists such as Falkland, who hated war and the rule of soldiery, but hated still more the narrowness of Puritanism. So also his opponents ranged from moderate Presbyterians, who looked forward to a speedy peace, to such as were determined not to end the contest until the monarchy and the church, as they had appeared under Charles and Laud, were crushed beyond revival.

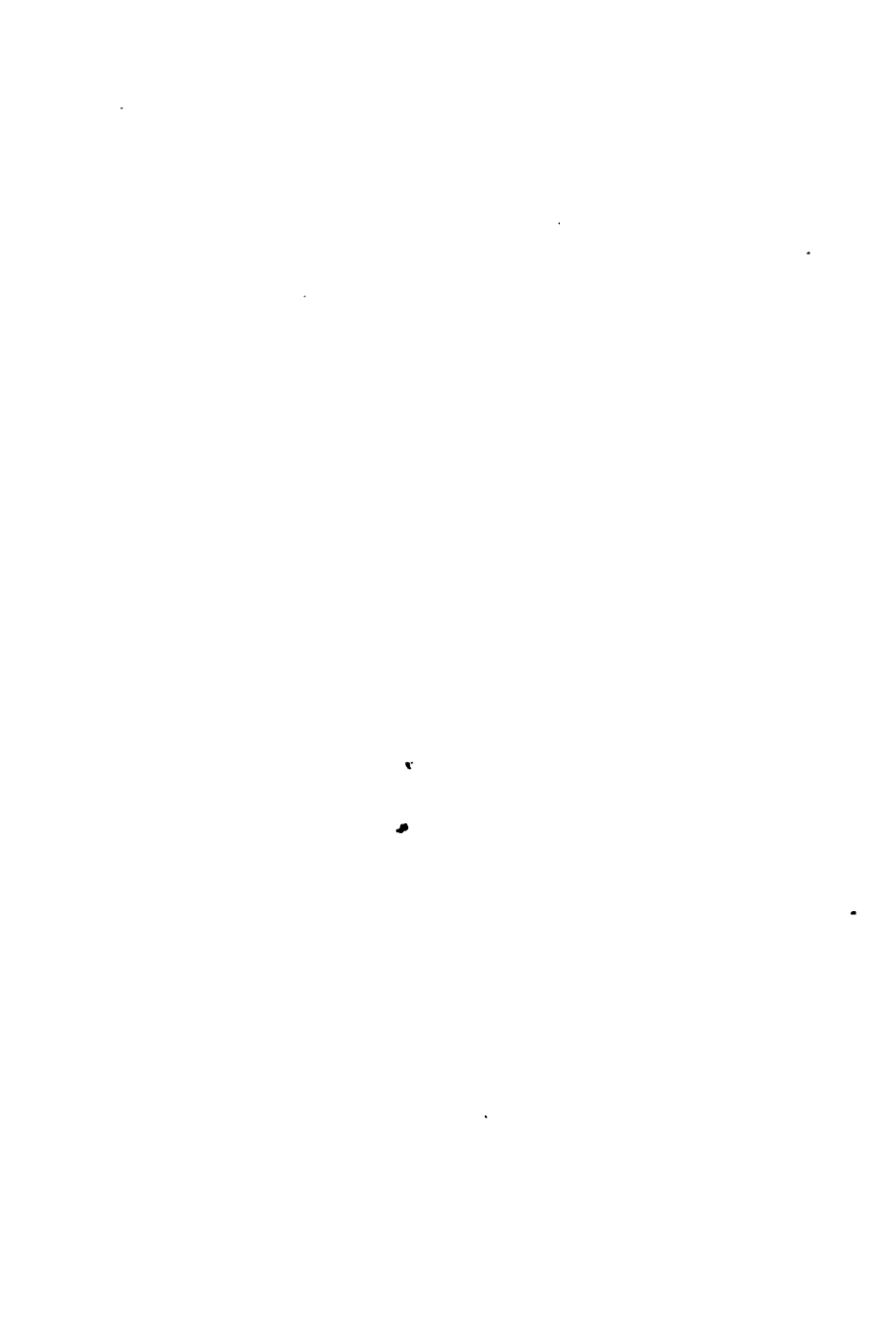
Charles first went westwards to join his friends in Cheshire and Shropshire. Then he turned back for a march direct upon London. Essex, who moved parallel with him on his westward course, allowed him to gain a day's march, but then followed close, until on October 23 the king turned to fight him

¹ Very much the same division as in the Wars of the Roses.



Longmans, Green & Co., London & New York.

T.S. Woods



at the foot of Edgehill, between Coventry and Banbury. On the right and left Rupert and Wilmot broke the untrained parliamentary horse, and pursued them far from the field, while Essex's infantry, with such of the cavalry as had stood firm, of which one troop was commanded by Oliver Cromwell, routed the royal foot. Rupert's return averted a disaster; Essex drew off, and Charles pushed on for London. To clear the road, Rupert stormed Brentford. But further advance was checked by the London train-bands, who encamped upon Turnham

The king's
plan of
campaign

Green. The king then withdrew to Oxford, which became his head-quarters, guarded by a ring of fortified places.²

His plan was to remain there, while the Earl of Newcastle from the north, with the queen, who had joined him from abroad, Sir Ralph Hopton from Cornwall, and Hertford from the west, forced their way to his aid through the strong parliamentary forces which in each case lay between them and him.

At the same time he looked for help both from Ireland and Scotland. He resolved to set his army in Ireland free by concluding a cessation of arms with the rebels there; while in Scotland he hoped for support from the enemies of Argyle. The parliament meanwhile

Organisation
of the
parliament

took a great step in organisation by forming the midlands, the eastern counties, Staffordshire and Warwickshire, and the south-eastern counties respectively, into associations

for military purposes. Weekly payments were exacted from each county, and the estates of all 'delinquents' confiscated.

For a time it seemed as if the concentration scheme would succeed. In May 1643, Hopton and Grenville beat a much superior force at Stratton, and captured Exeter. Then, in union with Rupert's brother Maurice, they took Taunton, Bridgwater, and Glastonbury; and in July utterly defeated Waller, the ablest of the parliamentary generals, at Roundway Down, near Devizes. The surrender of Bristol, after Rupert had stormed the defences, at once followed. Newcastle beat Lord Fairfax and his brother Sir Thomas at Adwalton Moor. All the great towns of Yorkshire except Hull were in his hands, and Hull was closely besieged. Hertford had joined the king. Rupert's horse swept the country, and in a skirmish at Chalgrove Field, near Oxford, June 18, John Hampden lost his life. Against all this the parliament could place but one success: Essex had broken through Charles's inner line of defence by the capture of Reading.

But the discovery that Charles was furthering a royalist plot in the City made Pym refuse all thought of compromise. The queen was

² Reading, Wallingford, Abingdon, and Basing House; Banbury and Worcester; Brill and Marlborough.

impeached. Episcopacy had been already abolished, September 1642, the abolition to date from November 1643; it was now ordered that an Assembly of Divines³ should meet to settle what form Puritanism should take. A large levy of fresh troops was ordered, and an excise, or tax upon all merchandise in the country, ordained. A deputation was sent to pray for the help of the Scots. The Earl of Manchester was appointed to command the eastern association. His ablest officer was the Independent Colonel Cromwell.

Oliver Cromwell, the cousin of John Hampden, was born on April 25, 1599, a year before Charles I., and came of a knightly race.⁴

From the grammar-school of Huntingdon he went in 1616 for a year to Sidney Sussex College, Cambridge. In 1628 he became member for Huntingdon. His life had been spent amid Puritan surroundings, but his Puritanism was utterly free of the spirit of intolerance; he was noted for the deep religiousness of his life and for his protection of the ministers persecuted by Laud. He was returned to the Long Parliament for Cambridge, and, with Sir Henry Vane, introduced the 'Root and Branch' bill for abolishing Episcopacy. On the outbreak of war he struck the first blow by seizing Cambridge Castle and impounding the university plate, which was being sent to the king. To raise a force equal in fighting quality to the gentlemen's sons who formed Rupert's dashing horsemen, he welcomed into his regiment only 'such men as had the fear of God before them, as made some conscience of what they did.' 'Against the sentiment of "honour" he put the sentiment of religion.' Such were the celebrated 'Ironsides'—as they were afterwards called—who never suffered defeat throughout the war. Cromwell himself, though forty-three years of age when he became a soldier, was a born leader

³ The Assembly consisted of 151 members, 10 being peers, 20 members of the Commons, and 121 ministers, chosen by parliament. There were also six Scotch commissioners of the most intense Presbyterianism. It met in June 1643. The Independent members, and the Erastians—those who were willing to have Presbyterianism if strictly under parliamentary control—disputed every inch of the ground; and, when Cromwell won Naseby, the hopes of the Scotch that they might establish Presbyterianism in its integrity were over. On June 5, 1646, however, parliament agreed to the establishment of presbyteries. In April 1647 twelve were erected for London. Lancashire and

Shropshire were also organised, and Bolton was so zealous that it was called the 'Geneva of Lancashire;' but the system spread no further in the ungenial soil and air of England. To the Assembly were due the Shorter and Longer Catechisms, and the Directory of Worship, which took the place of the Prayer Book. The account of the course of the Assembly from the Scotch side is given by Baillie, one of the commissioners, in his *Letters and Journals*. See also Henderson's *Westminster Assembly*, and 'Presbyterianism' in *Encyclopædia Britannica*.

⁴ For Cromwell's ancestry, character, and work, see Harrison, 'Oliver Cromwell,' in *Twelve English Statesmen*.

of horse, with Rupert's quickness of eye and impetuosity of attack joined to a severe self-restraint. He felt that there was no hope for England until the king was utterly crushed. Already he had stamped out royalism in the counties of the eastern association, and had fought his way to Newark, the royalist link between Oxford and Yorkshire. Local jealousies frustrated his scheme for its capture; and though he routed the enemy at Grantham he was forced to retire. He stormed Burghley House, and won Gainsborough and Winceby fights, but once more his success was barren for the same reasons as before.

Charles, too, was hampered by local feeling. The Yorkshire levies would not march until Hull was taken, nor the Cornish men until Plymouth fell, nor the Welshmen until Gloucester was secured. Charles, therefore, besieged Gloucester. Had it fallen, the parliamentary cause would have fallen with it. Essex, by forced marches, averted the calamity when the town was on the point of surrender. But on his homeward march Charles blocked his path at Newbury (Sept. 30, 1643). The battle, in which Falkland sought and found his death, was a drawn one; but in the night the royal forces drew off, and Essex made his way in safety to Reading. The fighting of 1643 closed with the capture of Lynn by Manchester, and the raising of the siege of Hull by Cromwell. But Charles had retaken Reading, stormed Dartmouth, and invested Plymouth; while Hopton with the Irish regiments, which had now reached him, had forced his way through the southern counties as far as Arundel. To get the name of parliament on his side, Charles now summoned all loyal members to form a rival assembly at Oxford; and forty-four lords and 118 commoners obeyed the call.

The Scots had welcomed the parliament's demand for help, for, not yet understanding the English feeling on the matter (p. 262), they longed to establish Presbyterianism in England. They desired only a religious covenant; the English desired only a civil league. A compromise, due to the skill of Sir Henry Vane, was come to, represented in the title, 'The Solemn League and Covenant of the two kingdoms.'

The English bound themselves merely to defend Presbyterianism in Scotland, to carry out 'the reformation of religion in England according to the Word of God and the example of the best reformed churches,' and to effect 'the nearest conjunction and uniformity with Scotland in matters of religion.' The Scots, for a large subsidy, engaged to send an army at once to the help of the parliament. This was the last work of Pym, who died on December 8.

That the English had not bound themselves more closely to Scotch

Presbyterianism was due to the growing strength of Independency. Presbyterianism, whether in Scotland or in England, meant intolerance; but, speaking roughly, Independency meant tolerance. 'In Religious toleration things of the mind,' said Cromwell, 'we look for no compulsion but that of light and reason.' He regarded the Covenant as 'bondage,' and delayed taking it as long as he could. In the 'Areopagitica,' or 'Defence of the Liberty of Unlicensed Printing,' Milton inveighed against 'this prelatical tradition of crowding free consciences and Christian liberties into canons and precepts of men.' Stretching forward beyond Cromwell and Milton were such as John Lilburne, and wilder enthusiasts still, who would recognise no authority, not even that of the Bible, as their spiritual guide, but only the 'inner light.' All these were bound to oppose Presbyterianism. The Independents formed a small but compact, able, and fearless party in the Commons and in the Assembly of Divines.

Nor was it only among Charles's enemies that liberty of conscience was making way. The doctrine was held by Fuller, the church historian, and by Chillingworth; by Roger Williams, who stood aloof from politics, and whose 'Bloody Tenet' was written to show that 'spiritual offences are only liable to spiritual censures;' and by the anonymous author of 'Liberty of Conscience, or the sole Means to obtain Peace and Truth.'

To all this Presbyterianism had but one answer: 'A toleration is the grand design of the devil;' 'Toleration would be putting a sword into a madman's hand, appointing a city of refuge in men's consciences for the devil to fly to,' and the like.

Charles now tried to make use of the divisions of his opponents. He intrigued with some of the Independents, who offered their support if he would agree to modified Episcopacy with liberty of conscience, that is, to the system established in 1689. Parliament, on the other

hand, offered pardon to all who would take the Covenant; and numerous desertions took place from Charles. The Imposition of the Covenant was then universally imposed, while the direct control of the war was placed in the hands of a mixed committee of Scotch and English, called 'The Committee of both Kingdoms.'

SECTION 2.—*From the coming of the Scots to the New Model.*

January 1644—January 1645

The Scotch army crossed the Tweed on January 19, 1644, and their coming was the turning point of the war. They laid siege to Newcastle. Fairfax saved Cheshire by raising the siege of Nantwich.

Selby was stormed, and the Earl of Newcastle shut up in York by the Scots, Fairfax, Manchester, and Cromwell with the Eastern Association forces. Essex marched upon Oxford, and Waller against Hopton. A victory at Cheriton won back Winchester, Andover, Salisbury, and Christchurch, for the parliament, who were also masters of Pembrokeshire. Charles was thus compelled to reverse his plan of campaign (p. 267). The outlying forces now needed help; the blows must be struck *from* the centre. He despatched Rupert on the desperate errand of relieving York, while he himself marched out of Oxford. Essex and Waller recaptured Reading, took Abingdon, and overran Gloucestershire. Then Essex went west, while Waller pursued Charles. At Cropredy Bridge the king turned fiercely upon Waller (June 29), and badly defeated him. He next went in pursuit of Essex, out-manceuvred him at Lostwithiel, and forced the whole infantry to surrender (September 2), though Essex himself escaped by sea to London. But utter disaster had meanwhile fallen upon the royal cause in the north. For six weeks Rupert had been cutting his way northwards. Sweeping like a storm through Lancashire, he thence made his way, joined by Goring and 6,000 horse, for York. The besiegers left their works to fight him, while Newcastle and the garrison joined their forces to his. On July 2 took place the great battle of Marston Moor. On the left the crashing charge of Cromwell and the Ironsides drove Rupert, who was unprepared, from the field. The royal foot in the centre gave way. But on the right Goring routed the Fairfaxes, turned upon the Scotch infantry, and had nearly restored the battle, when Cromwell, who had kept his men well in hand, fell upon him in the rear. Within a few minutes the battle was over. Rupert left 4,000 dead on the field, and with difficulty rejoined Charles. York surrendered, and the whole north, except Newcastle, which held out until October 19, was lost to the king. Manchester and Cromwell now marched south to crush Charles on his return from Cornwall. At Newbury (Oct. 27, 1644) they met him on his road to Oxford. The sluggishness of Manchester prevented a victory, which Cromwell, if left to himself, would doubtless have gained. The year closed, like 1643, with another drawn battle, and Charles reached Oxford in safety. As the war proceeded, the differences between Presbyterians and Independents in parliament became more pronounced. Essex, Manchester, and Waller wished for peace and a Presbyterian *régime* under Charles. The Independents hated Presbyterianism, and did not want peace until Charles was utterly crushed. They were emphatically the war

Charles's
first plan of
campaign
breaks down

Battle of
Marston
Moor

Second
battle of
Newbury

party, and on military organisation they had a majority. They used it now to substitute for the local levies a 'New Model,' by which all the forces of the parliament constituted one standing army of 21,000 men in regular pay. This was the work of Cromwell. The two things he hated most were ecclesiastical tyranny⁵ and lukewarmness in fight. To get rid of the Presbyterian generals it was proposed to pass a 'Self-denying Ordinance,' by which members of parliament were no longer to be officers. The Lords, however, in whose hands military commands were traditionally placed, refused to pass it for the moment. On January 11, 1645, the 'New Model' came into force. Manchester retired, Fairfax was made lord-general, and Skippon major-general. Cromwell was shortly placed in command of the cavalry.

In the midst of these struggles Archbishop Laud was brought to trial. The few peers left at Westminster hesitated to condemn an old man who had committed no treason. As in Strafford's case, the Commons, therefore, substituted attainder for impeachment, asserting that parliament might declare any crime to be treason. The bill was passed, and he was executed on January 10.⁶

SECTION 8.—*From the 'New Model' to the Surrender of the King by the Scots. January 1645—January 1647*

For a time it seemed as if the royal cause would yet be retrieved by the genius of one man. The young Marquis of Montrose, partly through hatred of his hereditary enemy Argyle, the chief of the Campbells, had thrown himself heart and soul into the royal cause. In August 1644 he raised the king's standard in the Highlands, and was joined by all the clans who hated the Campbells. Three armies were sent to surround him, but with the heaviest odds against him he beat them ruinously in succession: Elcho at Tippermuir, near Perth; Balfour at Aberdeen; Argyle at Inverlochy. His letter to Charles, after the third victory, ended thus: 'Come thou thyself, lest this country be called by my name.'

From Ireland also Charles had good hopes. He had overcome his scruples to employ Catholics, and had engaged to suspend the penal laws as soon as the cessation of arms was turned into a peace, and to repeal them as well as Poyning's law (p. 174) when he was master in England, upon their promise to send a large force to his help. To obtain aid from France and the

⁵ Of the Scots in especial he said he would as soon draw his sword against them as against the king. ⁶ Gardiner, *The Great Civil War*, vol. ii. p. 50.

pope he authorised the queen to promise the repeal of the penal laws in England as well.

But he was now in great straits. His adherents were intensely opposed to the employment of Catholics. The Oxford parliament (p. 269), after urging him to come to terms, had been adjourned; his commanders were quarrelling; Rupert would own no guidance; a series of disasters, including the loss of Shrewsbury, Weymouth, and Scarborough, had occurred. The siege of Taunton had failed against the gallant defence of Robert Blake. Starved out of Oxford, Charles set forth with 11,000 men, hoping to join hands with Montrose. Scarcely was he gone when Fairfax and Cromwell surrounded Oxford. Minor royalist successes in Wales, Cheshire, and Yorkshire alone shed a gleam upon a failing cause.

Every success in the field strengthened the Independent and war party in parliament. On April 8, the Self-denying Ordinance was at length carried. Members of either house were called upon to resign within forty days, but might be re-elected. Essex, Waller, and Warwick resigned at once. Cromwell did not resign, and at the end of the forty days retained his command by vote of the Commons in spite of the Lords' dissent. The result was a complete transference of military command from the Presbyterian to the Independent party, and from the Lords to the Commons.

It had been arranged that the Scots should march south to meet Charles and Rupert. But this design was upset by the continued successes of Montrose, especially at Auldearn, which drew them northwards. Fairfax and Cromwell, therefore, leaving the siege of Oxford, pursued Charles with 14,000 men, and overtook him at Naseby, near Harborough, June 14. With but 7,500 men, the king and Rupert turned to bay. Rupert's headlong charge scattered the parliamentary left, while Cromwell was victorious on the right. Once more Rupert committed the fatal error of pursuing too far. Before he drew rein, Cromwell had turned and routed the royal foot. For fourteen miles, to the gates of Leicester, the pursuit and slaughter went on. Leicester surrendered; Fairfax again relieved Taunton, beat Goring at Langport, and stormed Bridgwater, and once more set off in pursuit of the king.

Still Montrose went on in his meteor-like course of success. On July 2 he had beaten Baillie at Alford, on the Don, and had utterly overthrown him, on August 15, at Kilsyth, near Glasgow, scarce 100 out of his 6,000 men being left alive. But in England disasters came thick upon the royal cause. Bath and Sherborne were both captured by Fairfax. Bristol was besieged and

stormed. On September 24 Charles was ruinously beaten at Rowton Heath, near Chester; town after town was wrested from him; of the parliament Basing House, the seat of the Marquis of Winchester—'Loyalty House,' as he called it—was at length stormed by Cromwell (October 18) and all the defenders slain. And now the last hope failed. On September 18, at Philiphaugh, near Selkirk, Montrose was surprised and crushed by David Leslie, and barely escaped with his life. Charles, after wandering aimlessly about the country, once more took refuge in Oxford, November 5.

The battle of Naseby was decisive, not only of the war, but of all chance of reconciliation between Charles and the people. In his private cabinet was found full evidence of intrigues with the Irish Catholics, France, Denmark, and the Dutch, and of a plan for levying an army in Lorraine to be supported by help from Rome. Henceforward the war against him was in men's eyes a national war against foreign foes. From this moment also Cromwell's pre-eminence was secured. His first use of it was significant. Both from the battle-field at Naseby and from Bristol, almost before the fighting was over, he wrote to the Presbyterian parliament to press upon them the duty of toleration.

Charles's only chance lay in the dissensions of his enemies. The Scots complained that their arrears were unpaid; the English, that the Scots had done little for their money. Mazarin, the French statesman, suggested an alliance of Charles with the Scots; and the negotiations became serious as the king's fortunes grew worse, and as the Scots began to fear that, in their common hatred of Presbyterianism, the king and the New Model might join hands. They therefore offered to support him, and invited him to their camp.

After the defeat of Sir Jacob Astley (now Lord Astley) at Stow-in-the-Wold, in Gloucestershire, there was no longer a royal army in the field, and only a few places where the king's standard flew. He decided to accept the offer. Before dawn on April 27, 1646, he slipped out of Oxford in disguise, reached the Scots in safety, and was carried to Leven's head-quarters at Newcastle.

Parliament was of course furious. To allay their anger the Scots agreed upon nineteen conditions to be submitted to the king. The two chief ones were that he was to consent to the establishment of Presbyterianism and to surrender the army and fleet for twenty years. When Charles refused to give up Episcopacy, the Scots offered to leave England for 800,000*l.* and to hand over the king. On receiving the first instalment, they began their march, January 30, 1647. The Presbyterians

Of the
parliament

Defeat of
Montrose

Effects of
the battle of
Naseby

Charles goes
to the
Scotch camp

Refuses to
abolish
Episcopacy.
Is given up
to the
parliament

now wanted the king in London to help them against the Independents; the Independents wanted to keep him at a distance. Eventually he was lodged in Holmby House, Northamptonshire. He was still sanguine. There was a chance of French help if he would cede the Channel Islands; a chance, fairer each day, in England itself. The Eastern Association were ready to support him if he would accept Presbyterianism. Upon issue of a general pardon, a promise to abolish the excise and other extraordinary taxes, not to interfere with property as at present held, and not to permit the Scots to come south of the Trent, a general rising in his favour would take place in south, east, and west. On the other hand, he might secure the Independents by giving up the control of the army and granting toleration.

SUMMARY.—The first civil war thus falls into three clearly-defined periods:—(1) *August 1642—September 1643*, beginning with the drawn battle of Edgehill and closing with the drawn battle of Newbury. The king, after Edgehill, and after his failure to enter London, remains at Oxford, while his various lieutenants endeavour to force their way to him from the outside. On the whole he obtains decided success. (2) *September 1643—end of 1644*. The Scots have come to the help of the hard-pressed parliament, and Cromwell has become the most distinguished of the parliamentary generals. Charles is forced to reverse his plan of campaign, and to try to help his outlying forces from Oxford. While summoning help from Ireland, he himself wins marked successes, and closes his campaign by a second drawn battle of Newbury; but his hopes are dashed by the ruinous overthrow of Rupert and Newcastle at Marston Moor. (3) *January 1645—April 1646*.⁷ The New Model carries all before it. Montrose's brilliant career in Scotland only nourishes false hopes, and the crushing defeat of Naseby decides the war. The causes of failure are easily summarised. They are: (1) the long duration of the war, and the fact that while parliament had the wealthy part of the country, and especially London, in their favour, Charles had no source of supplies which could stand prolonged strain; (2) the genius of Cromwell, and the combination of religious enthusiasm and warlike zeal which he secured in his Ironsides; (3) the aid given by the Scotch. On the other hand, there was among Charles's officers no cohesion, but constant bickerings and jealousies; while the mutinous spirit, the rashness in the field, and the ruthless devastations of 'Prince Robber,' did much to neutralise his bravery and to rouse resistance even in districts well

⁷ The last English fortress, Raglan Castle, was surrendered on August 19, 1646. Harlech held out until March 1647. With its submission the Civil War was at an end.

affected to the king. There was, too, Charles's own weakness of character, which destroyed enthusiasm, and especially the discontent caused among his adherents by his recourse to Catholic aid and foreign powers.

CHAPTER IV

PARLIAMENT AND THE ARMY. EXECUTION OF CHARLES

Now that military questions were not urgent, the Presbyterians, supported by the City, again had their way in parliament. But against them was ranged the victorious army, bent upon tolerance. The contest was no longer between king and parliament, but between the Presbyterian parliament and the Independent army. Parliament made the first move. They voted that a large part of the army should be sent on service to Ireland; and, to get rid of Cromwell, that in the regiments which remained there should be, except Fairfax, no officer of higher rank than colonel. A force independent of the army was to have charge of the City. The army replied by a march towards London, a strong remonstrance, and a refusal to serve in Ireland; and when ordered to disband, Fairfax held a review of 20,000 men at Newmarket. Parliament voted the remonstrance illegal; the army hereupon formed two councils—one of commissioned officers, the other of 'agitators,' two representatives of the men in each troop. On June 2 Cromwell suddenly left parliament and joined the army. The next day Cornet Joyce and a party of troopers appeared at Holmby House and carried off Charles to Newmarket. The whole army then marched upon London. At their demand the City levies were disbanded, the army declared the army of the parliament, and their pay voted.

The City mob hereupon burst into the houses and insisted upon the withdrawal of their concessions. From this violence the Speakers of both houses, with more than 100 members, fled to the army. The City for a while defied Fairfax. But his strength was too great. With four regiments he entered and replaced the Speakers and the members who had fled. Parliament, thoroughly cowed, then acted in accordance with the views of the army. A measure of toleration was at once passed. 'Tender consciences' were to be free to worship as they pleased; but Catholicism, the use of the Prayer-Book, and the denial of the main principles of Christianity were forbidden; and every one was compelled to attend some form of public worship. Charles was

now lodged in Hampton Court. He was treated with the utmost respect; the leading officers vied for his favours; Cromwell himself offered his service. Their terms were the retention of Episcopacy, without coercive power, and a large measure of tolerance; the control of the army and navy for ten years; the exemption of only five royalists from pardon. All this fostered his belief that he could command his price, and he therefore refused these terms. His chief object now was to gain time while he intrigued with the Scots and English Presbyterians to kindle a fresh civil war. In December it was arranged that in the spring a Scotch army should cross the border, to be joined by the English Presbyterians, while Ormond brought help from Ireland, and Lord Capel rallied the English royalists.

Within the army itself there were grave divisions. The Levellers were daily increasing in influence. They demanded a republic and many advanced reforms, and entire freedom of conscience. The Bible, they said, showed that monarchy was odious in God's sight. The king had forfeited his crown; he had raised up war, and must answer for his people's blood. Suspicious of the good faith of their officers, especially of Cromwell and Ireton, whom they saw constantly with the king, they demanded that the troops should elect their own officers; and a serious mutiny broke out at Ware. But Cromwell dashed into the ranks and had the ringleaders seized: one was shot on the spot, three more were condemned, the rest were retained as hostages for their comrades.

On November 11 Charles, dreading violence, escaped to the Isle of Wight, where Hammond, the governor, lodged him under a guard in Carisbrooke Castle. From here he again negotiated with the parliament. When, however, he refused their terms, they voted that no further addresses should be made to or received from him. The 'Committee of both Kingdoms' was replaced by the 'Derby House Committee,' from which the Scots were excluded; and a declaration was issued denouncing the king's whole reign as 'a continued breach of trust to the three kingdoms.' While still engaged in treating with parliament, Charles had secretly signed, December 26, an 'Engagement' with the Scotch commissioners, by which they promised to invade England and restore him to the throne, upon condition that he should confirm the Covenant, establish Presbyterianism in England for three years, and suppress all other sects. It is probable that Cromwell had intelligence of this perfidy. From this time he drew closer to the Levellers and became a foremost denouncer of the

king. The 'Engagement' really robbed Charles of all chance of united support from Scotland. The commissioners who signed it were opponents of Argyle, and had no real zeal for Presbyterianism. All they cared for was a still more secret treaty by which Charles promised fresh privileges and favour to the Scotch nobility. When they returned to Scotland, Argyle and the clergy *protested* against helping the king on such easy terms, and were eagerly seconded by their fanatical congregations. Every day the 'Protesters' gained ground upon the 'Engagers;' and it was not until July 1648 that Hamilton could muster 15,000 men to march into England.

Meanwhile the burden of taxation, the arbitrariness of the parliamentary committees which ruled the counties, and the dread of army rule, had been working in the king's favour. Petitions poured in for disbanding the army and for the return of the king. The second civil war had already begun in various parts, and even in London. The crews of six men-of-war in the Thames revolted, sailed to the Dutch coast, and placed themselves under James, the duke of York, Charles's second son. The risings were isolated and premature, and were for the most part easily crushed. Goring, earl of Norwich, however, threw himself into Colchester with a large force, and made ready to defend it to the last. The enforced absence of the officers at their commands enabled the Presbyterians to regain ascendancy in parliament. They repealed the vote of non-addresses, despatched commissioners to treat with Charles at Newport, and passed severe ordinances against heresy, which laid down death as the penalty for denying the cardinal doctrines of Christianity. This soon came to an end. On July 8 Hamilton and Sir George Monro crossed the border, and were joined by Sir Marmaduke Langdale with 4,000 cavaliers. But Hamilton's incapacity ruined the enterprise. On August 17 Cromwell and Lambert, with 9,000 men, fell upon his scattered line near Preston, and during three days' desperate fighting completely ruined it in detail. Hamilton was taken; Langdale gave himself up. Monro alone made his way back to Scotland. Colchester, after a desperate defence, capitulated on the news. The Prince of Wales, with nineteen ships, sailed up the Thames, but was obliged to return to Holland. The second civil war was at an end.

The army now turned upon parliament. In November the assembly of officers presented to the Commons alone the 'Grand Army Remonstrance.' It demanded: (1) that the 'capital and grand author' of all the troubles should be brought to justice, with his chief instru-

ments; (2) the dissolution of parliament, as hostile to the army; (3) annual parliaments, an extended franchise, and redistribution of seats, with the temporary disfranchisement of the royalists; (4) the supremacy of the Commons over the Lords; (5) the confiscation of the estates and revenues of the crown; and (6) that the king should be elected by parliament, and should not have the power of veto.

Charles meanwhile, in his belief that neither party could do without him, had managed to prolong the negotiations with the parliament for two months. He consented to leave his followers to the mercy of parliament; to sanction the trial of seven prominent royalists, excepted from pardon, if tried by the ancient laws; to give up Episcopacy and the church lands for three years, until religion should be settled and the support of its ministers determined by common consent of himself and the two houses. Then the army, unable to obtain a reply to the Remonstrance, struck another

blow by removing Hammond, and again seizing Charles's person, November 30. He was taken to Hurst Castle, in Hampshire, and shortly afterwards placed in rigid confinement at Windsor. On the same day the Commons rejected the Remonstrance, and voted that 'the answers of the king were a ground for the settlement of the nation.' The deadlock was put an end to in simple fashion. On the morning of December 6 the doors of the house were blocked by two regiments under Colonels Pride, Hewson, and Sir Hardress Waller; and 158 Presbyterian members were turned back. The few who remained—the 'Rump,' as they were afterwards called—were Independents, bound to register the decrees of the army. Cromwell had been absent during these events. Since the battle of Preston he had been in Scotland, whither he had pursued Monro. He had there secured the victory of Argyle and the Protesters over the Engagers, and returned to London on the day following 'Pride's purge,' leaving Lambert with two regiments in Scotland.

On December 23 the Rump voted for the trial of Charles. It was declared high treason in a king of England to levy war against the parliament and kingdom of England; and an ordinance was passed erecting a high court of justice for the trial. When the Lords rejected the ordinance, the Commons voted that, since the people were the origin of all just power, no assent of either king or Lords was necessary to an act of the Commons. On January 20 the court met. Charles was arraigned as 'tyrant, traitor, murderer, public and implacable enemy to the commonwealth of England.' On

the 27th he was condemned, and on the 30th met his death with constancy and dignity outside the banqueting hall of Whitehall. By the Church of England he is claimed as a martyr in her cause; though both by the 'Engagement' and at Newport he had temporarily abandoned Episcopacy. He died because he could not understand that other people would not accept the doctrines of monarchy taught him by his father; because he ran counter, with harshness and obstinacy, to the two main currents of opinion, Puritanism and the power of parliament; because he sought Catholic aid against Protestants, and foreign aid against Englishmen; because he was at the last supported by Presbyterianism, while the army, bent upon religious freedom, knew that Presbyterianism was the greatest enemy to religious freedom; and, above all, because it was impossible to trust his word.

CHAPTER V

THE COMMONWEALTH. THE FIGHT FOR TOLERATION

SECTION 1.—Republican Government. Conquests of Ireland and Scotland. War with the Dutch. The English Navy

ON February 6 the House of Lords was abolished; somewhat later a general oath of allegiance to the republic without them was exacted, and a council of state entrusted with complete executive control. The promoters of the second civil war were then dealt with. The Duke of Hamilton, with Lords Holland and Capel, were executed by sentence of a high court of justice; the Earl of Norwich was saved by the casting vote of the Speaker.

The new government was surrounded by dangers. There were first the royalists, whose devotion was kept alive by the appearance of the 'Eikon Basiliké' (royal image), or 'True Portraiture of His Sacred Majesty in his Solitudes and Sufferings,' professedly written by Charles himself, which had so vast an influence that Milton, now secretary of foreign tongues, was called upon to answer it. This he did in his 'Iconoclastes,' or 'Image-breaker.'

There were next the Presbyterians, who had utterly disapproved of the trial and execution of the king, and whose ministers publicly prayed for Charles II. But the great danger was from the Agitators and Levellers, and still more extreme sects, such as the 'Diggers,' who wished to dig up common lands, whilst the Levellers wished to bring

Danger to
the new
government

all to one level politically.¹ Their demands were so revolutionary, so dangerous to existing society, and so violently expressed, that the council was forced to place Lilburne and others in the Tower.² Armed risings of sectaries took place; at Salisbury 1,000 men were in arms. But they were put down by the vigour and foresight of Cromwell and Fairfax, and the republic then turned to face the dangers from outside.

Conquest of Ireland The re-conquest of Ireland held the first place. Ormond had proclaimed the peace there (p. 272) on July 30, 1646. But it was scornfully rejected by the Irish nationalists as insufficient. Ormond, thereupon, rather than allow Dublin to fall into their hands, had offered to surrender it and other fortresses to the parliament, and the transfer was carried out in February, 1647. He then left the country, but in September 1648 returned, and succeeded in uniting the Catholics in the royal cause. He was joined by the Scotch Presbyterians of Ulster, while Rupert held the Irish seas. Dublin, Belfast, and Londonderry alone stood out for the parliament.

In August 1649 Cromwell crossed to Dublin with 12,000 men, while Rupert was blockaded in Kinsale harbour by Blake. Before he arrived Ormond had been so terribly defeated at Rathmines by Colonel Jones, the Commander of Dublin, that he could not put another army in the field. But Cromwell saw before him the prospect of a number of prolonged sieges. He resolved to teach a terrible lesson. On September 3, after an eight days' siege, he and Wexford stormed Drogheda. No quarter was given, and for five days massacre went on unchecked. Of the garrison scarcely a man remained alive; when a band of fugitives gathered for safety within St. Peter's Church, Cromwell, upon whom had come one of his rare accessions of passion, ordered it to be burned, and the wretches were cut down as they fled from the flames. A month later, amid similar scenes of horror, for which Cromwell was not responsible, Wexford was taken.³ There was no need of a further lesson. By May 1650 almost the whole country had surrendered. Cromwell then returned to face another danger, leaving Ireton to complete his work.

¹ Ranke, *History of England*, vol. iii. p. 19.

² He was afterwards banished by the Rump, and, on his return without leave, again put in confinement. In 1656 he was released, joined the Quakers, and died at Eltham in 1657.

³ It must be remembered that it was not merely a war of the Commonwealth against royalists, but of Englishmen, and intensely Puritan Englishmen, against Irish Catholics on their own

soil. Neither to Irishman nor to Papist, least of all to an Irish Papist, was it likely that Cromwell or the stern men who followed him would show mercy. The one charge *not* made against Strafford was his cruel treatment of the Connaught Irish. Oliver here is the typical, not the exceptional, Englishman. Moreover, he himself declared that this 'bitterness' was 'to save effusion of blood.' It remains, nevertheless, the great blot upon his memory.

In Scotland, the Protesters had without delay proclaimed Charles II., and Argyle offered him the crown if he would unreservedly accept Presbyterianism. In his motley court at the Hague wore the Engagers who had fled from Scotland, Montrose and his party, and English royalists of every type. The former wished him to accept Argyle's offers; Montrose went to raise the Highlands again; Hyde and the English royalists urged him to join Ormond. But affairs in Ireland were soon so hopeless that he fell back upon Argyle, delaying only until the result of Montrose's enterprise was known. This was complete disaster. The Highlands would not rise. On April 17, 1650, Montrose was routed by Strachan at Corbiesdale, in Ross-shire. After wandering for some days, he was betrayed. From his hereditary foe, Argyle, he could expect no mercy; and the one man of genius in the royal cause was hanged at Edinburgh on May 20. Charles had avoided any public recognition of his attempt; he now bound himself to observe the two covenants; to abjure all dealings with Catholics; to govern in civil matters by advice of the parliament, in religious matters by that of the kirk. In June he arrived in Scotland. Engagers were forbidden the court; the king himself was placed under a rigid discipline, of which he retained a bitter recollection to the last day of his life. He was even obliged, after long resistance, to sign a declaration of his 'deep humiliation and affliction of spirit before God' for the sins of his father and the idolatry of his mother.

The espousal of Charles's cause by the Scots made war inevitable. Fairfax having retired, Cromwell was commander-in-chief. On July 22 he crossed the border with 16,000 veteran troops, and marched along the east coast, accompanied by the fleet. The Scots laid waste the whole country up to Edinburgh; and David Leslie, their general, entrenched himself from Edinburgh to Leith. Cromwell's position soon became critical. He was unable to force Leslie's entrenchments. Sickness and fatigue were exhausting his men. On August 31 he fell back with 11,000 men upon a promontory near Dunbar. Here he was hemmed in by Leslie, who lay with 22,000 men on the Lammermuir Hills to the south, and who had blocked the only road to England. He was saved from destruction by the impatience of the Scotch ministers. Overcome by their importunity, Leslie ordered his right wing to descend the hill and attack next morning. Cromwell saw the movement. 'The Lord hath delivered them into our hands!' he is reported to have exclaimed. At 6 A.M. on September 3 he threw his whole force upon this wing. His men rushed to the attack with the battle cry 'The Lord of Hosts!'

Cromwell in
Scotland.
Battle of
Dunbar

SCOTLAND

to illustrate
THE CIVIL WAR.

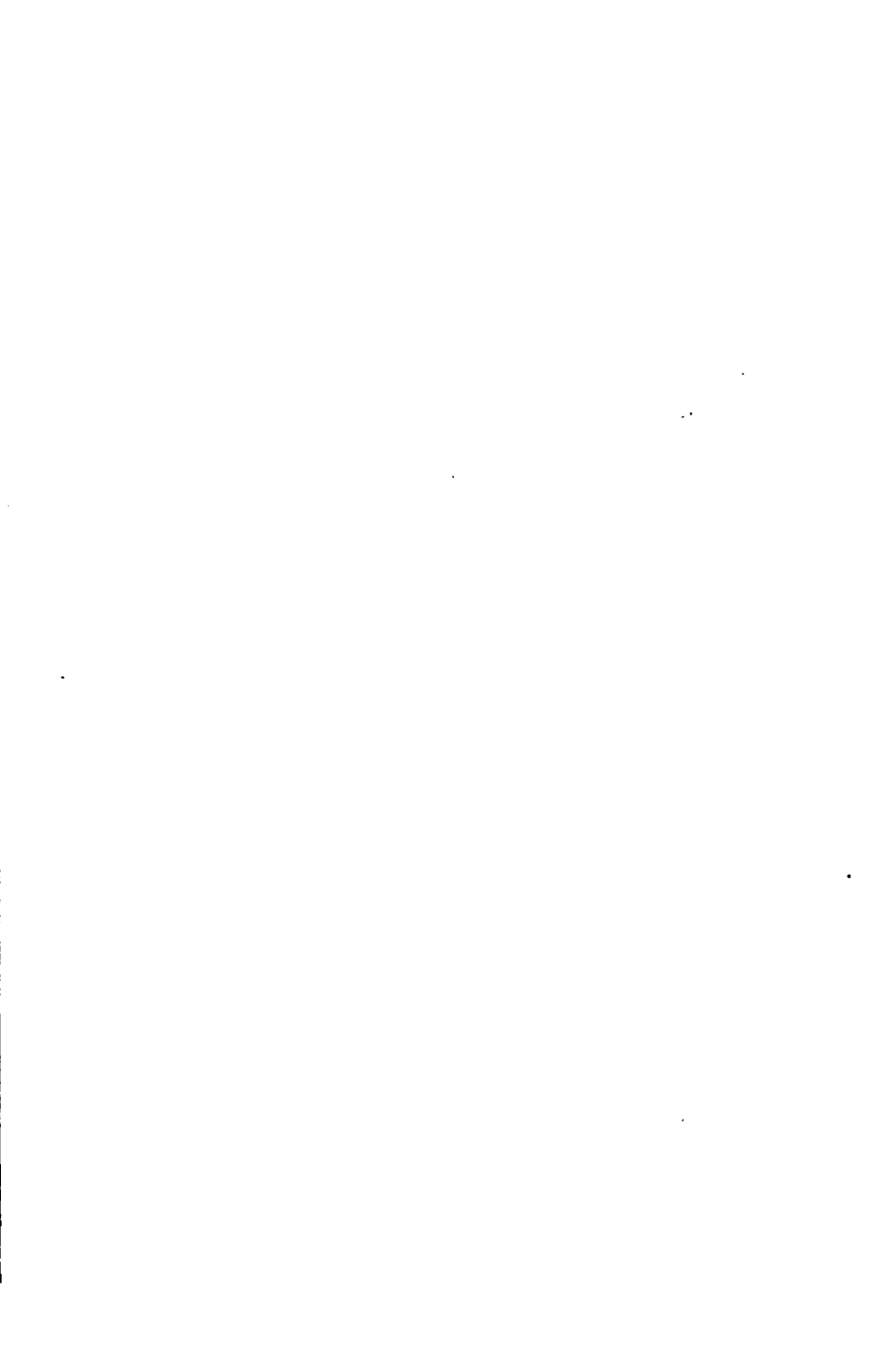
English Miles
0 10 20 30 40 50 60



Longitude West of Greenwich.

Longmans Green & Co., London & New York.

F.S. Waller



while the artillery kept the main body of the enemy from supporting their doomed comrades. In less than an hour the battle was over. As the Scots fled Cromwell halted his men, and they sang the 117th Psalm before he let them loose in pursuit. Of the enemy 3,000 were killed on the field, and thousands more in the chase; 10,000 prisoners, the whole baggage and artillery, 15,000 stand of arms, and 200 colours were left in Cromwell's hands, at a cost, it was said, of only two officers and twenty men. Next day Lambert occupied Edinburgh.

There were now three parties in Scotland: the royalists proper, who were gathering in the Highlands under Middleton; the government party of Argyle and the kirk, with Leslie and the remnants of his army, who retired with the king to the country about Perth and Stirling; and the extreme Protesters, who murmured at Argyle's gentle treatment of the Engagers, and saw in the disaster of Dunbar the judgment of God

upon such backsliding. Finding it useless to come to terms with these last, Argyle coalesced with the royalists, and on

January 1, 1651, Charles was crowned at Scone, after a fresh oath of fidelity to Presbyterianism and a promise to establish it in England. He was now at the head of 20,000 men, with Leslie and Middleton under him. Cromwell had meanwhile taken Edinburgh Castle, and made himself master of all Scotland south of Forth and Clyde. In June he marched upon Stirling. Baffled by Leslie, he

passed by it to the north and took Perth on August 2, leaving Charles behind him. Charles now took a daring but fatal resolution. On July 31 he set out with his whole army for a descent upon England, and, marching through Lancashire and Cheshire, in three weeks reached Worcester. He had hoped that his coming would lead to a general desertion from the parliament, but was bitterly disappointed. Cromwell at once ordered Lambert to follow hard, and Harrison in England to hang upon his flank, while he himself hastened by forced marches to York, and thence across country to Worcester, leaving Monk in Scotland with 6,000 men. In less than four weeks he had reached Worcester in overwhelming force. On

September 3, the day of Dunbar, he attacked and won a crushing

victory. This was the last of his battles, his 'crowning mercy.' For six weeks, in various disguises, Charles was enabled through the fidelity of royalists, often of the humblest class, to evade pursuit; at length, with Wilmot alone, he was taken off the coast close to Brighton in a fishing smack, and on October 9 arrived in safety in Paris.

Scotland and Ireland were now helpless. An extensive Presbyterian conspiracy in England had been crushed; the country was

quiet. On October 25 a great day of thanksgiving was held. To Cromwell was given Hampton Court as a residence, with 6,500*l.* a year, a sum equal to more than 20,000*l.* of our money. In February 1652 an amnesty was passed for all political offences previous to the battle of Worcester, upon taking the oath of allegiance. On April 13 an act for incorporating Scotland with England passed its second reading. Very different was the treatment accorded to Ireland. This was to carry out as far as possible the maxim of James I., Plant
 Harsh treatment of Ireland with Puritans and root out Papists.' A high
 Ireland court of justice sent more than 200 leading persons to death; of the common soldiers 40,000 went to swell the armies of the Continent; and a vast measure of confiscation was carried out. Those who retained part of their possessions were forced to give them up and take equivalents in the barren districts of Connaught, beyond the Shannon; their own fertile lands were given out to the 'adventurers' who had lent money for the war. The larger number refused these terms and turned to brigandage; they were hunted and shot down without mercy. Besides the abolition of their worship, Catholics were subjected to measures of the most atrocious cruelty; any transplanted Irishman, for instance, who was found upon the wrong bank of the Shannon, was liable to be killed by the first person who met him, without the order of a magistrate.

The army had for the present done its work. It was of greater moment that a navy as powerful had been rapidly created. Crushed
 on land, the cavaliers had betaken themselves to the ocean. The navy
 and Robert Blake Rupert and Maurice swept the Irish seas; Carteret, governor of Jersey, seconded them in the Channel; western Ireland, the Isle of Man, and the north of Scotland, sent out swarms of freebooters. Commerce was crippled; communication with Ireland was often impossible. Robert Blake, the defender of Taunton (p. 278) had the task of putting an end to this intolerable nuisance. He drove Rupert from Ireland, chased him to the Tagus, destroyed the greater part of his fleet at Carthage, and pursued him across the Atlantic; made himself master of the Scilly Isles, and began a long and arduous siege of Carteret in Elizabeth Castle, Jersey, which surrendered only at length on the king's command in 1648.

The rival maritime power of the world was the Dutch Republic, whose commercial and colonial supremacy was as marked as that of England now, and which monopolised the carrying trade of the world.⁴ Causes of quarrel were easily found, and on October 9, 1651, was

⁴ For this, see Airy, 'The English Restoration and Louis XIV.,' in *Epochs of Modern History*, p. 111.

passed the Navigation Act,⁵ which struck a crushing blow at her carrying trade, stimulated the shipping enterprise of England, and rendered war inevitable. It was rigidly put in force. All Dutch vessels infringing it were captured as prizes; those fishing in British waters were sunk or destroyed; a claim was made to search Dutch men-of-war for royalist property. Without formal declaration, the nations began war; the great extent of the Dutch colonies rendered her an easy prey. More than 1,000 ships were taken; in Amsterdam commerce well-nigh ceased. In 1651 great battles, the like of which had never been seen in modern times, were fought. In 1652 Blake was worsted and Van Tromp sailed down the Channel with a broom at his masthead to show that he swept the seas. But this was the high-water mark of Dutch power. During 1653 Blake won three great victories, the last, on July 31, so crushing that the Dutch could not renew active war.⁶

This display of power caused a marked change in the behaviour of other nations. Spain, France, Portugal, Sweden, Denmark, the Hanse Towns, in fact every government in Europe, courted the new and formidable power. Already the line of Dryden in praise of Cromwell, 'He made us freemen of the Continent,' was true. Never, since the time of Henry II. (p. 72), had so many foreign ambassadors been seen in London.

SECTION 2.—*Dissolution of the Rump. The Barebone Parliament*

Meanwhile bitter antagonism had been growing up between the army and the Rump. Composed largely of lawyers, and unrecruited from outside, the latter had been growing sluggish and reactionary. In August 1653 the council of officers presented a long list of subjects needing immediate treatment. They inveighed against the members of the Rump collectively for their inefficiency, and indi-

⁵ No colonial merchandise might henceforth enter England in any but English-built ships, commanded by English captains and manned by a crew of whom three-fourths were Englishmen; nor any European goods except in English ships, or in those of the countries from which the goods originally came. The act struck too at the great fishing industry of the Dutch. No fish might be imported or exported by England or Ireland except by English taking.

⁶ 'Hitherto fleets had fought with fleets. But Blake taught modern Europe that henceforward fleets can

control kingdoms. It was the sense of this new power—so rapid, so mobile, with so long an arm and practically ubiquitous—that caused Mazarin and Louis, Spain and Portugal, pope and princes of Italy, to bow at the name of Oliver. From the Baltic to the Mediterranean, from Algiers to Teneriffe, from Newfoundland to Jamaica, were heard the English cannon. The impression produced was that which the rise of the German empire, with the consolidation of the German military system, has produced upon our age.—Harrison, *Oliver Cromwell*, p. 200.

vidually for the scandals of their private lives. Cromwell heartily joined in these feelings. He wanted extensive reform, because he wanted settlement. Church, law, and finance were alike in a state of chaos. Eminently conservative, and seeing that the nation was not ready for a republic, he was anxious to restore the constitution with two houses of legislature and 'some mixture of monarchy' in it. He did not believe, any more than Strafford, that parliament was able to govern; there must be an independent executive. The difficulty was that, while the army would have no Stuart as king, the lawyers would have no one else. It had been decided that a dissolution should take place not later than November 4, 1654. The question was how the next parliament was to be elected; and the Rump proposed a scheme which would merely have perpetuated their own power. Cromwell saw that he must take action at once. On April 20, the day fixed for the third reading of the Election Bill, after consulting his officers, he took his seat, dressed in plain clothes, but with a troop of musketeers at the door. He sat silent until the question was about to be put; then he rose, and straightway poured out a torrent of vituperation upon the members for their corrupt and ambitious schemes, their depraved and dissolute lives; upon the lawyers especially for their support of tyranny and oppression. Calling in his men, he forced the Speaker from the chair, had the mace carried away, the members ejected, and the doors locked. The next morning a paper was found on the door with these words: 'This house to be let, now unfurnished.' But Cromwell had no intention of leaving the house 'unfurnished' long. He meant that a fresh parliament, but one in agreement with the army, should meet. Fearing the results of a general election, he nominated, in conjunction with the separatist congregations, 144 'Godly men.' No elections took place. It was not a parliament, but an assembly of nominees, summoned directly by 'I, Oliver Cromwell.' Among them was a leather-seller known as 'Praise God' Barebone,⁷ and among the royalists the assembly was always known as the 'Barebone parliament.' It met on July 4, 1653, and at once plunged into reform. But the 'Godly men' were not men of business. To remedy the cost and delay of legal proceedings their only suggestion was the total abolition of the court of chancery; and, when the conservative party brought in a bill to eject scandalous ministers, and appoint fit

⁷ His actual Christian name was: 'Unless-Jesus-Christ-had-died-for-thee-thou-hadst-been-damned.'

persons,⁸ and to perpetuate tithes—in other words to continue an endowed church—the only idea of the majority was to overthrow an established Christian ministry as a ‘Babylonish’ institution and as anti-Christ. Cromwell was bitterly disappointed. Neither he nor the army which followed him were revolutionists. They now stood forward as the champions of order. The minority in the assembly determined to put an end to the assembly itself. On December 11, 1653, they suddenly resigned their commissions to Cromwell. Those who remained were turned out by force, and the Barebone parliament, or, as the Scots termed it, the ‘Daft little parliament,’ ceased to exist.

Dissolved

SECTION 8.—*The Protectorate. Attempt to restore the old Constitution. Foreign Conquest*

Cromwell now pressed his favourite scheme—a legislature and an independent executive, with ‘some mixture of monarchy’—as most consonant with tradition, and as offering the best safeguard against disorder.⁹ On December 16 Lambert proposed in the council of officers with general assent that he should, under the title of ‘Lord Protector,’ be the ‘single person.’ The ‘Instrument of Government’ contained the new constitution:—

(1) The *Protector* was to hold office for life; his successors were to be elected by the council, no Stuart being eligible. He was to govern in accordance with the opinion of the council, the Instrument, and the laws. He had the right of appointing officials, of distributing honours, and of pardon. (2) The *Council* consisted of twenty-one; vacancies were to be filled up by the joint action of the parliament, council, and protector. The protector and the council together had the absolute control of the armed forces, the right to make peace and war, the privilege of suspending or making laws till parliament should meet. (3) *Parliament* was to meet on September 8, 1654; thenceforward triennial parliaments were to be held, each sitting for at least five months before it could be dissolved, prorogued, or adjourned without

⁸ This was carried out by an ordinance of Cromwell in 1654. A commission of ‘triers’ was appointed for the approbation of all clergymen before admission to a benefice; and a mixed committee of gentry and divines in each county for ejecting the scandalous, ignorant, and inefficient, called ‘ejectors.’ Provision was also made for the universities and public schools.

⁹ This government of a single person

with the executive, and the legislating parliament, the two being independent of one another, is much the same as that now in action in America. England has rejected it, adopting a system where the executive is dependent upon the legislature. All the great rulers of England had struggled for the first. The gradual substitution of the second for it forms the history of the next 100 years.

its own consent. Scotland and Ireland were each to send thirty members. All persons with property worth 200*l.* had votes in the election, except such as had fought for the king, Roman Catholics, and all concerned in the Irish rebellion. Parliament had the sole right of making laws or imposing taxes, though the protector might delay their passing for twenty days. (4) The *Church* was to be Christian and state-paid, non-prelatic, and comprehensive; all who professed 'faith in Jesus Christ' were to be protected in their worship, except Papists, and, later, Episcopalians.

The new government was bitterly distasteful to strong republicans, to the sterner sectaries, and to the royalists, who saw all hope of a restoration fade away. The danger from the last was of a special kind. By a secret proclamation, dated May 8, 1654, Charles actually promised a reward of 500*l.* a year, knighthood, and a colonelcy, to any one who should kill 'a certain mechanic fellow, by name Oliver Cromwell, by pistol, sword, or poison;' and but for the vigilance of his spies Cromwell would certainly have been murdered on May 20.

Abroad Cromwell had been brilliantly successful. To meet a coalition of the Dutch and the Danes he had allied himself with Sweden, the strongest power of northern Europe. He then forced the Dutch to peace on terms which showed how the balance of power had changed since Van Tromp 'swept' the channel. They admitted the supremacy of the English flag in British waters, agreed that their men-of-war should strike their flags and lower topsails when meeting English war-ships, and assented to the Navigation Act. Foreigners gained a still higher opinion of Cromwell's power when they heard that Mazarin's agent had been summarily dismissed for tampering with malcontents, and that Don Pantaleon Sa, brother of the Portuguese ambassador, had, on the very day that a treaty was signed with England, been beheaded on Tower Hill for the death of an Englishman, for which he was responsible. 'There is not a nation in Europe,' said Cromwell proudly to parliament, 'but is very willing to ask a good understanding with you.'

Parliament met, as arranged, on September 3, and once more Cromwell was disappointed. It was composed largely of Presbyterians and irreconcilable republicans. Far from accepting the Instrument without demur, it declared that 'government was in the parliament, and in a single person instructed by it,' that is, that the executive was to be controlled by the legislature, as is the case now—the very thing which Cromwell was determined should not be. He called upon all the members to promise to accept the

Assassination plots
Surrender of the Dutch
Parliament violates the Instrument

'Instrument;' about 100 refused, and they were not allowed to sit again. In spite of this 'purge,' the house passed resolutions to carry out their views, demanded the control of the local militia, and, with true Presbyterian zeal, declared that heresy would be sternly put down. Holding that 'faith in Jesus Christ' was too vague, they appointed a commission to settle what heresy should mean. Cromwell and the officers had no mind to see their work undone. Reckoning the five months (p. 287) as *lunar* months, he came down while they believed they had still some days to sit, and on January 22, 1655, dissolved the parliament. The royalist hopes were roused by this quarrel. Risings took place at Salisbury, and in the north and west. They were suppressed, the leaders executed, and ship-loads of the lower classes of malcontents sent to the sugar plantations in the West Indies. A dangerous conspiracy of the republican officers in Scotland was similarly crushed. Cromwell was for the time driven back upon a purely military government. England was placed literally in a state of siege, which lasted until January 1657.¹⁰ It was divided into ten districts, under major-generals with almost unlimited powers. All royalists were disarmed and subjected to a tax of one-tenth of their incomes; with the money Cromwell raised a new local force upon which he could rely. Troops were posted every two miles to watch the roads. A record was kept of the conduct of every suspected person; masters were made responsible for their servants; all inns not needed for travellers were closed; public amusements were forbidden; a strict censorship of the press established. It was a government of soldiers, such as England had never seen, and the recollection of which was bitter for many generations. But it was also a government of peace and order. An army of 50,000 men was kept in rigid discipline; the soldiers were everywhere welcome; the merchant and shopkeeper had a golden time; taxes were cheerfully paid. Cromwell prohibited the use of the Prayer Book, as a rallying-point of disaffection; but otherwise toleration was practically complete; even the Jews were favoured by Cromwell personally (p. 108), though not by the

¹⁰ Doubtless one reason for the acquiescence of the country in Cromwell's arbitrary government was that he was the impersonation of national triumph. In 1656 the sight of thirty-eight waggons laden with silver taken from the Spanish ships pressed this home upon the people in the streets. In the Mediterranean Blake was bringing to account all against whom the Commonwealth had a claim. The Grand Duke of Tuscany had allowed Rupert

to capture ships in his harbours. For this 60,000*l.* was exacted from him, and 14,000*l.* from the Pope. A large number of English vessels had been taken by Moorish pirates. In April 1655 Blake bombarded Tunis, reduced the forts to ruin, and burnt the Dey's fleet. All along the coast of Africa the captives were released, and an engagement extorted that piracy upon English vessels should cease.

council. In the state church were ministers of every Protestant sect. Cromwell was especially active on religious questions. For the livings in his gift he examined the candidates himself; and he largely increased the stipends of the poor clergy throughout the country.

Meanwhile he was courted by magnificent offers from both France and Spain, each of whom was anxious to secure him as an ally in their long struggle. From France, as the price of his aid, he demanded Dunkirk, when captured from Spain, with toleration for the Huguenots; and this Mazarin was ready to promise: from Spain, Calais, when taken from the French, freedom to trade in the American colonies, and immunity of English merchants from the Inquisition. The first condition met with no favour, since it would imperil Spain's communications with the Netherlands. To the second and third she gave a flat refusal; to grant them would be giving up the king's 'two eyes.' This answer decided Cromwell. By attacking Spain he should be attacking intolerance, while France was willing to grant tolerance. An expedition was therefore sent out in 1655, which, though it failed to capture St. Domingo, took possession of Jamaica instead, thus establishing English power in the West Indies; and, as a first step, a commercial treaty was formed with France at Westminster, November 3, 1655. To obtain supply, Cromwell called another parliament. A free use was made of the power to revise the elections which by the 'Instrument' was lodged in the council, and more than 100 prominent republicans were rejected. A closer return to the old constitution was now suggested. By the 'Instrument' there had been but one chamber, the protectorship had not been hereditary, and it had been fettered by the Council of State.

The 'Petition and Advice' now presented to Cromwell asked for a second chamber; members duly elected, except royalists, were no longer to be subject to exclusion. The Council of State was to lose its power. The protector was to have the right of dissolution, the power of naming his successor, and a permanent revenue for the maintenance of the army and navy. To make his position stronger, Oliver was prayed to take the title of king.¹¹ Religious freedom was to be granted to all but Catholics and Episcopalians. Cromwell regarded the new constitution as admirable; but, in deference to the strong opposition of the army, and the jealousy it would create in many quarters, he refused the kingship, after consult-

¹¹ The power of Cromwell was now regarded as the guarantee for order; and the liveliest anxiety was caused by the prospect of his death by one of his frequent illnesses, or by murder.

A widely circulated pamphlet, entitled 'Killing no Murder,' was a direct incitement to his assassination, and a fresh plot for the purpose was detected in January 1657.

ing his officers. On May 19 the new constitution became law. It was illumined by a great achievement, followed by a great sorrow. On April 20, 1657, Blake, disregarding the maxim that ships should not endeavour to cope with forts, sailed into the bay of Santa Cruz, Teneriffe, and attacked the Spanish West India fleet under the fire of the batteries on shore. Every ship was destroyed and every fort laid in ruins before he left. It was his last great deed. Worn out with labour and disease, he died at Plymouth on August 7, the greatest seaman of history before Nelson.

Spain, as Cromwell knew, was preparing to help Charles II. with 6,000 men in a descent on England. The wilder sectaries and the royalists were moving, and Ormond had ventured to London to arrange a rising. The commercial treaty with France was therefore followed by an offensive alliance, March 23, 1657. On condition that Gravelines and Dunkirk were besieged at once, and the latter placed in his hands when taken, Cromwell sent 6,000 Ironsides under Lockhart to serve in Turenne's army. Marlyke, which covered Dunkirk, was taken on October 4, handed over to England, and at once garrisoned by Cromwell's 'mastiffs.' Next spring Dunkirk itself was besieged. In June the Spanish army, with the Dukes of York and Gloucester in command of the English and Irish refugee regiments, came to its relief. These regiments, with the famous Spanish infantry, held the Dunes, or low sand-hills, on their right. Straight up against them, sinking deep in the sand at every step, went the Ironsides, with an impetuous valour which was the wonder of all who saw. A crushing victory was obtained, June 4, 1658. Dunkirk was in Cromwell's possession on June 14, and Gravelines fell a few days later. This was not merely a victory over Spain, but of Cromwell over Charles II. England now had her foot firmly planted on the Continent.¹²

But Cromwell was surrounded by difficulties. As the 'Instrument' had failed, so now the 'Petition and Advice' failed. The old House of Commons, with the 100 ejected members restored (p. 289), and the new House of Lords, had met on January 20, 1658. As before, the Commons at once tried to wrest all power to themselves. Lambert and many other old comrades fell away from Cromwell. The

¹² Power abroad, and toleration for Protestantism all the world over, were Cromwell's aim. When there was some hesitation in surrendering Dunkirk he told Mazarin, in the spirit of Henry V., that he would come for the keys to Paris. When the Duke of Savoy carried

fire and sword among the Waldenses of the valleys of Piedmont he compelled Mazarin to take effectual measures to put a stop to the persecution. It was to this that Milton's noble sonnet beginning 'Avenge, O Lord, thy slaughtered saints' was due.

Commons refused to acknowledge his new House of Lords. They sent an address demanding that he should give up the local militia, and that their supreme judicature should be acknowledged. Cromwell was deeply incensed. 'By the living God!' he exclaimed to Fiennes and

Fleetwood, who attempted to dissuade him, 'I will dissolve Parliament again it.' On February 4 he addressed to both houses a speech dissolved of sad and vehement reproach. 'God judge between us!'—

thus he ended—'I dissolve this parliament.' The principles of Strafford and of Eliot (p. 250) were still at open war. For some months Cromwell ruled with stern severity and alone. But money was sorely needed. The trading classes murmured at the loss of Spanish trade and forgot the acquisition of Jamaica; they murmured at the treaty with the Dutch and forgot the Navigation Act. The City refused a loan, declaring that he had outdone Charles I. in collecting taxes, dissolving parliaments, encroaching on liberty. The suppression of all forms of amusement under the Puritan *régime*, the 'hypocrisy which waits like a dark shadow upon religious fervour,' the gloomy formalism which had taken the place of the old free life of the people, had roused the bitterest disgust against a government which allowed such things. Cromwell determined to summon another parliament.

But he was never to meet it. The strain of sixteen years' conflict in the field and in council, of acting against the majority for what he thought right; the failure of his plans; the plots against his life; the hatred of which he knew himself the object; the falling away of old friends who had fought by his side; had worn him out. His family circle, divided by politics, was now desolated by death; the loss of his

Death of favourite daughter, Lady Claypole, utterly broke him down.

Cromwell From her funeral, on August 10, he came back ill with fever. As he rode at the head of his lifeguards he looked like a dead man. He still conducted business, but on the 24th took to his bed. On the 30th there raged a terrific storm, long remembered, and connected by superstition and party feeling with his death. 'The Devil,' said the royalists, 'was coming for his own.' For three days he lingered, often engaged in fervent prayer. On the last night he was urged to take a soothing-draught and then try to sleep. There are few recorded utterances more pathetic than the reply, 'It is not my design to drink or to sleep; but my design is to make what haste I can to be gone.' Between 8 and 4 in the afternoon of September 3—the day of Dunbar and Worcester—he died.

With him the Puritan revolution was practically at an end. He had been the chief agent in fulfilling the first aims of that revolution, to make the will of the nation override that of the king, and to keep

Protestantism free from Laudian innovations. But he had done something greater still. But for him the intolerance of Laud would have been succeeded by an intolerance far worse—that of Presbyterianism. From first to last religious freedom had been his chief thought, and, when political necessity did not forbid it, he had secured this freedom for England through all the changes and chances of his memorable rule.

SECTION 4.—*The Restoration of Parliament and Monarchy*

Oliver had nominated his son Richard as his successor, and the change met for the moment with general assent. But the protectorate had depended upon Cromwell's personal ascendancy over the army; and it was not likely that soldiers would tamely submit to one who was no soldier, and whose talents were those only of a respectable country gentleman. They demanded the separation of the offices of protector and lord-general—that is, that the civil power should not have control over the army. Hearing that parliament was about to proclaim Richard lord-general, the officers massed the troops, and forced him to dissolve it. They now demanded a pure republic again, without a 'single person.' But the only time when this had existed was before Cromwell dissolved the Rump, April 1653. The army therefore determined to restore the Rump; and on May 7, 1659, forty-two members, headed by their old speaker, Lenthall, took their seats. A committee of safety and a council of thirty-one were appointed. Richard Cromwell gladly retired to private life. Monk in Scotland, Henry Cromwell in Ireland, Lockhart in Flanders, and Montague with the fleet, were obliged by their own men to acquiesce.

What had happened so often before now happened again. This fragment of a mutilated parliament refused to do the bidding of the army. On the crucial point—the independence of the army—it was as firm in opposition as its predecessors. Fleetwood was named commander-in-chief, but was to take his orders from parliament. For a time an open breach was delayed by the common danger of a general royalist rising, to be supported by invasions both from Flanders and France. Except in Cheshire and Lancashire, the attempts were anticipated or easily suppressed. Lambert flew to Cheshire, where Sir George Booth had collected a large force, and routed and captured him at Winnington Bridge.

The danger over, the army came back to settle accounts with the parliament. They made their old demands and met with the old

resistance. Lambert hereupon turned out the Rump, and another committee of safety was appointed of thirteen army leaders and ten civilians. Various plans for a constitution were suggested, in each of which the complete independence of the army, and tolerance to all except Papists and prelatists, had place.

In the language of the time, Christ was to be sole king, and to the saints under him was given the rule of the kingdom.

But now Lambert, the leader of the army republicans, found himself face to face with Monk, who, wary and taciturn, had been watching events intently from Scotland. He had grasped the fact that the traditional feeling of the average Englishman was the exact opposite of the army doctrine; that the military power must be subordinate to the civil before England could be at rest. He now determined to use his army, which he had carefully weeded of all violent republicans, and over which he had complete control, to restore parliamentary rule. He prepared to march into England, and Lambert hurried north to confront him. But Lambert's own men were now wavering; the Portsmouth garrison had revolted; the troops sent to coerce it joined their comrades. On December 24 the

regiments left in London marched to the house of Lenthall and replaced him and the Rump. A new council of state was appointed, this time with but seven military men to fourteen civilians. Lambert, deserted by his troops, retired to his private estate. On New Year's day, 1660, Monk crossed the Tweed, and on February 8 entered London, amid cries for a free parliament—that is, a new one freely elected; the Rump was regarded as an absurdly incomplete representative of the people. Monk, now lieutenant-general of the Commonwealth, and concealing his designs in impenetrable silence, adhered steadfastly to his policy of

recognising the authority of parliament. When the City, unrepresented by members of its own choice, refused to pay taxes levied by the Rump, he arrested the leaders at their orders, tore up the chains and posts used for closing the streets, and took down the gates. But when, jealous of his power, the Rump proposed to deprive him of his sole command, he peremptorily insisted that the vacant seats should be filled up at once, and that a dissolution should take place on May 9.

It was certain that a free parliament would demand the recall of the king. The question was upon what conditions. The Presbyterians were anxious for those agreed to by Charles I. at the Isle of Wight (p. 279). But the force of the stream drove them past this sticking point. The City demanded an unconditional recall, but that Charles should grant a complete amnesty,

Ejection of
the Rump by
Lambert

General
Monk

The Rump
again
restored

Enters
London

Obeys the
Rump

Recall of the
king deter-
mined on

the satisfaction of Monk's army, and the reference of religious differences to an assembly of divines. Monk hereupon sent Sir John Grenville to the king. He would put nothing on paper; Grenville learned the conditions by heart.

By this time the Rump had been reinforced, not by new elections, but by the restoration of the members ejected at Pride's purge. It now contained a Presbyterian majority; the Solemn League and Covenant was hung up in the house, and read aloud in every church. A dissolution was settled for March 15, and the oath of allegiance to a commonwealth without king and lords abolished. The inscription 'Exit Tyrannus' disappeared from the Royal Exchange, and 'Long live the King' took its place. Monk let the king know that he was ready to serve him to the utmost; Montague with the fleet, and Fairfax in the north, were both ready to second him.

Meanwhile the elections had been held. All restrictions were openly evaded; the new house contained 150 declared royalists. The army republicans were in angry despair. Lambert raised a small force at Daventry, but was easily routed by Colonel Ingoldsby and brought back a prisoner to London. The 'Convention' parliament met on April 25; the old House of Peers came together as though no interruption had ever taken place. England had restored her parliamentary system. But in the English mind parliament and monarchy went together.¹³ On May 1 letters were read from the king to both houses, with others to Monk, the army, and the City. But it was the Declaration of Breda 'to all his loving subjects' which was the important thing, for nothing could better mark how completely the restoration was one of sufferance. Edward Hyde, who drew up the Declaration, knew that the restoration was, in the first place, a restoration of *parliament*, and of a Presbyterian parliament. His object was to lull suspicion until Charles was steady enough upon the throne to use his power of dissolution at a favourable moment, and then to secure an assembly more to his wishes. (1) Pardon was therefore promised to all who within forty days should express their loyalty, '*excepting only such persons as shall hereafter be excepted by parliament.*'¹⁴ (2) Liberty was proclaimed to 'tender consciences,' and the king's readiness 'to consent to *such an act of parliament as, upon mature deliberation, shall be offered to us for*

¹³ 'This government,' said Clarendon, 'was as natural to them as their food or raiment; and naked Indians, dressing themselves in French fashion, were no more absurd than Englishmen without a parliament and a king.'

¹⁴ But in the letter to the Speaker a significant hint was given. 'If there be a crying sin . . . we cannot doubt that you will be as solicitous to redeem and vindicate the nation from that guilt and infamy as we can be.'

the full granting of that indulgence.' (8) On all questions regarding the land the decision was left absolutely to the parliament. (4) Finally Charles promised to consent to an act for 'the full satisfaction of all arrears' to Monk's army, and to 'take them into the royal service upon as good pay and conditions as they now enjoy.'

The recognition of the absolute authority of parliament in questions regarding the church and the land, the waiving of any desire for personal vengeance, the satisfaction of the army: these were the conditions upon which England agreed to take back Charles II.

That which was restored was not the old monarchy, but the old monarchy profoundly modified by the lessons of a generation of bitter strife. It was monarchy with a Triennial Act and without the Star Chamber and High Commission courts; without the power of arbitrary arrest and arbitrary taxation: without the power of the sword; a monarchy restored on sufferance by that which had overthrown it—a Puritan parliament; and at first without its most faithful supporter, the episcopal church.

On May 18 a deputation, chiefly of Presbyterians, was sent to the king at Breda. They, with a number of Presbyterian clergy, were graciously received, and returned satisfied of the king's deeply religious character. On the 25th he landed at Dover, escorted by Montague and the fleet. On the 29th, his thirtieth birthday, he passed through the City. Here he was met by a body of Presbyterian clergy, who presented him with a Bible; he declared that it should be the rule of his life. With this lie upon his lips he began his reign.

Dates: James I., Charles I., the Civil War, and Commonwealth

	A.D.		A.D.
— Hampton Court Conference	1604	Solemn League and Covenant	1643
- Gunpowder Plot	1604-1605	The Scotch army enters England; Marston Moor	1644 -
Buckingham in power	1615	The New Model; Naseby	1645
Execution of Raleigh	1618	Charles given up by the Scots	1647
Thirty Years' War begins	1618	Second Civil War	1648 -
Revival of impeachments	1621	Treaty of Newport and Pride's Purge	1648
Spanish marriage broken off	1623	Execution of Charles I.	1649
⊃ Murder of Buckingham	1628	Conquest of Ireland	1649
Petition of Right	1628	Conquest of Scotland	1650
Laud archbishop of Canterbury	1633	Battle of Worcester	1651
Wentworth goes to Ireland	1633	Navigation Act	1651 -
Ship-money	1637	Instrument of government	1653 -
The Covenant in Scotland	1638	Petition and Advice	1656
Short Parliament, April	1640	Death of Cromwell	1658 -
- Long Parliament, November	1640	Monk in London	1660
Execution of Strafford	1641		
The five members	1642		

CHAPTER VI

CHARLES II. ATTEMPT, TO REGAIN THE PREROGATIVE

SECTION 1.—*The Clarendon Administration. Triumph of the Church, and the First Dutch War 1660-61*

THE nature of the Restoration was seen in the composition of the privy council. Out of thirty members twelve had been active opponents of Charles I. But within this body was formed a small committee, or 'Junto,' which speedily drew to itself all matters of importance, and which, with the exception of Monk and his friend Morris, was composed solely of ardent royalists. All the business of government was centred in Edward Hyde, the earl of Clarendon, lord Clarendon
chancellor. His work was one of resettlement; and for this he was admirably fitted by ability, honesty, and good sense, and especially by his knowledge of constitutional law. The other members of this small committee were the Earl of Southampton, lord treasurer, the Duke of Ormond, and Sir Edward Nicholas, secretary of state.

The great danger was the spirit of retaliation. But Charles and Clarendon succeeded in drawing a broad distinction between the regicides and all others, and in thus confining this spirit within intelligible lines. The Lords indeed endeavoured to bring to the scaffold all who had sat upon any court of justice by which royalists had been tried. But the Commons, supported by Charles and Clarendon, stood firm against 'mingling the king's blood with any other blood;' and, after a prolonged contest between the houses, an Indemnity Bill was passed, by which, at the price of some twenty lives, the universal fear was removed.¹ A barren vengeance was taken upon the dead. The bodies of Cromwell, Ireton, and Bradshaw, the president of the court which condemned Charles I., were torn from their graves and gibbeted for a day. They were then decapitated, the heads fixed on Westminster Hall, and the bodies, with those of Pym and Blake, thrown into a pit.

Of the king's judges nineteen had given themselves up on the faith of the proclamation. The Act of Indemnity provided that they should be tried, but not executed without a special act. The trial is famous

¹ Vane and Lambert were among those excepted from pardon, though not regicides, the king, however, promising that they should not be put to death. In 1662 this promise was shamelessly broken. In defiance of

the 'De Facto' act of Henry VII. (p. 174) Vane was executed, on the ground that the act presumed the *de facto* government to be a monarchy. Lambert was imprisoned at Guernsey for thirty years.

B...
...ally...
1662...

because Orlando Bridgeman, attorney-general, then laid down the present doctrine that the king, as directly subject to God alone, and to no earthly authority, is inviolable; but that, since he cannot be touched, his ministers must be held responsible. The first doctrine expresses the feeling aroused by the killing of Charles I.; the second the resolve that no future king should be able to do the mischief that Charles I. had done.

Next to the question of life came that of the land. There were: (1) The lands belonging to the crown, the church, and a few distinguished royalists, which had been sold by the Commonwealth, and regarding which the Declaration had left the matter to parliament. But care was taken that the present parliament should not settle the question; and thus, when a dissolution took place, they reverted to their original owners, their confiscation having been illegal. (2) Private estates sold during the Commonwealth by the owners. The royalists hoped for repossession. But Clarendon stood firm to the principle of private contract; and the Bill of Sales confirmed all such transactions.

King and parliament were alike eager to be rid of the army. Monk made no opposition, for he had all he desired in honours and pensions. The rising of a few fanatics in the streets of London, under a half-crazed man named Venner, gave Charles an excuse for retaining the Coldstream Guards³ and two other regiments. The rest returned quietly to their former trades.

The revenue was fixed at 1,200,000*l.* The opportunity was taken to carry out the design of Cecil under James I. (p. 289), by abolishing the feudal dues there mentioned, which brought in about 100,000*l.* a year. It was decided to raise that sum in future from the excise (p. 268), which now became perpetual: an instance of the growth of the modern principle that the whole nation shall pay for the removal of an abuse, even though such removal benefit only one class.

There remained the great question of the church. The Episcopalians were eager to avenge the insults and injuries of the last twenty years; and Clarendon was thoroughly in accord with them. But with the present parliament it was necessary to temporise. Charles had successfully hoodwinked the Presbyterian deputation at Breda. The party was now kept in play by the appointment of ten of their clergy as royal chaplains; and Charles took his part in the farce by attending their sermons. He issued a declaration admitting his preference for the Episcopal church, as 'the best fence

³ So called because they crossed the Tweed with Monk at Coldstream.

God ever raised up against popery,' but limiting the power of bishops so far as to satisfy the moderate Presbyterians, one of whom, Reynolds, accepted a bishopric. The Presbyterians in parliament tried to turn this declaration into a law, but Clarendon succeeded in securing the rejection of the bill. Then the king dissolved the parliament, December 24, 1660. To keep the Presbyterians occupied until the elections, a conference was held between twelve bishops and twelve Presbyterians at the Savoy Palace. It failed, like that at Hampton Court (p. 235), because it was intended to fail. The hands of the government were now free, and their intentions speedily appeared.

The elections took place in the full tide of royalist reaction. The new House of Commons was composed almost entirely of cavaliers and churchmen. The Solemn League and Covenant was burnt by the hangman; the acts and doctrines of the Long Parliament denounced; the bishops restored to the Lords; the control of the forces and the power of veto given back to the crown; the law of high treason made more severe; the lawfulness of even defensive war against the king denied. But at one point the Commons stopped short. There was no intention of allowing the crown to become independent, and in spite of Charles's utmost pressure they refused to increase the revenue.

Then Presbyterianism was directly attacked. Its chief power was in the corporations of towns, which returned many members of parliament. The *Corporation Act* (December 19, 1661) laid down three conditions for admission into a municipal body: the renunciation of the Solemn League and Covenant; the denial of the lawfulness of taking arms against the king; the taking the sacrament according to the rites of the Episcopal church. Driven out of the state, it was by the *Act of Uniformity* (May 19, 1662) driven out of the church. No one might hold a living after St. Bartholomew's day, August 24, who had not previously read the service from the newly revised Prayer Book, and declared his 'unfeigned assent and consent to everything therein.' Ministers and teachers of all sorts were to take the oaths prescribed by the Corporation Act, and were to promise 'to endeavour no change or alteration of government either in church or state.' A law was passed that all ministers holding livings in England must have had episcopal ordination; and the English church thus became exclusive and isolated. Charles asked parliament in vain for permission to dispense with the Act of Uniformity in certain cases. He was bound hand and foot by the fact that, in exact reversal of the state of things

Dissolution
of the
Convention
Parliament

The
Pensionary
Parliament

Overthrow
of the Pres-
byterians

The revised
Prayer Book

King fell
collecting
army
By all
order
had
not
then
the
etc.

under his father and Laud, parliament and the church were now in the strictest union. Equally vain was his attempt to win over the leading Presbyterians by offers of church preferment. On Sunday, August 17, the nonconforming clergy preached their farewell sermons; and 2,000 of them, the best and most earnest of their body, accepted poverty and exile. Henceforth Presbyterianism was the creed of a dissenting sect. The English church had taken its final shape.³

Throughout his reign Charles was trying to free himself from the control which parliament, by limiting the revenue, had placed upon him; and this is the key to the tortuous foreign policy which he pursued. He first offered his alliance to the Dutch for two millions; but the renewal of the Navigation Act (p. 285) made them angrily refuse. Spain then promised him any sum he might ask for, on condition that Jamaica and Dunkirk were restored; this was equally fruitless. He then turned to France. An alliance with Louis XIV. was a natural one. He was Louis's cousin, and had been sheltered by him while in exile. He admired the intelligent despotism which Louis had established, and hoped to establish the same in England; and he wanted Louis's money.

Louis was equally desirous of the alliance of England. He wanted the use of her navy. He had made peace with Spain on condition that he should no longer help Portugal in rebellion. To evade his promise he now induced Charles to marry Catherine of Braganza, the Infanta of Portugal; and he gave him a large supply on condition of active help to Portugal. Charles's next step in the same course was to sell Dunkirk to Louis for 200,000*l.*, thus giving up England's foothold on the Continent. At the same time his sister Henrietta was married to Louis's younger brother, the Duke of Orleans. James, duke of York, married Clarendon's daughter, Anne Hyde.

An alarm of popery had meanwhile been spreading among the Commons. There is strong evidence that the king was at this time a Catholic.⁴ While in exile he had promised the pope and foreign princes that he would assist the Catholics in England, especially since many of his father's most faithful adherents had

³ One special hardship was added to the act. By a date being named before Michaelmas day, when the tithes were payable, the outgoing ministers were deprived of their only source of support.

⁴ He was in communication with

Innocent XI. for a reconstitution of the English church, whereby, while retaining its national and independent character, it should nominally acknowledge the Holy See as its head.

been of that creed. It was no kindly feeling to Presbyterianism, but the hope that if he were allowed to tolerate one form of dissent he would be allowed to tolerate another, that made him issue, during the recess, an assertion of his right to suspend the penal laws; and he now asked parliament to confirm it.⁵ Cromwell had, so to speak, left him a legacy of toleration and the power of the sword, and he was trying to get his inheritance. But there was nothing which the average Englishman so hated and feared as popery: this is the over-ruling fact in the feverish politics of the reign; and parliament now refused to grant a supply until he had banished all Catholic priests.⁶

They then, on the ground that a dominant state church was the best safeguard against popery, resumed the persecution of nonconformity.

The Act of Uniformity had not prevented the dissenting clergy from holding meetings for worship. These were put down by the *First Conventicle Act* (May 17, 1664), which forbade such meetings of more than four persons besides the household, under the severest penalties. It caused great suffering, especially among the Quakers. The awful visitation of

The Plague of 1665, it increased their hardships. Beginning in the spring of 1665, it increased in intensity with the heat of summer, until in September the deaths in London alone were more than 1,000 daily; and its ravages did not cease until the winter, when more than 100,000 persons had died. All who could do so escaped from London. The pulpits were deserted. The Presbyterian ministers took the places of those who had fled, and gathered crowded congregations. But this devotion roused the jealousy of the bishops, and at their demand the parliament passed the *Five Mile Act*, which forbade, under heavy fine and imprisonment, any Nonconformist minister to teach in schools or to come within five miles of any city, corporate town, or parliamentary borough, unless he had taken the oaths prescribed by the former acts. The odious trade of informer was encouraged by his receiving half the fine. The machinery of persecution was now complete. The Corporation and Uniformity acts had settled the limits of the church; the Conventicle and Five Mile acts laid

⁵ Airy, 'English Restoration,' in *Epochs of Modern History*, p. 120.

⁶ In other respects they were willing to gratify Charles. They passed a vote by which, without repealing the Triennial Act, they removed the safeguards (p. 261) attached to it by the Long Parliament. The result was shown at the end of the reign, when for

four years Charles reigned without a parliament.

⁷ The most vivid accounts of the Plague from day to day, and of the Fire of London, will be found in *Pepys's Diary*, a matchless record of London and the court from the bourgeois point of view.

Page 17
5th
Monarch
Mural
C. 1664
A. 1664
P. 1664
= 1664
1664
or 1664
1664
1664
1664

down the terms upon which alone dissent might exist. Together they form the 'Clarendon Code.'

Meanwhile English and Dutch were once more engaged in their duel for commercial supremacy. War, indeed, had never ceased—in America, Africa, or Asia. Each nation could show an ample list of injuries, and so eager were the Commons for formal war that they gave Charles the unheard-of supply of 2,500,000*l.* Both Charles and John de Witt, the leader of the republic, thought they could strengthen their authority and compose internal discontents by entering into war. Charles personally hated the Dutch, and was angry at the dependence in which they kept his young nephew William, Prince of Orange (p. 232). War was therefore declared, March 1665. The first battle, in which James and Opdam led the two fleets, took place off Lowestoft on June 3, 1665, and, after ten hours' desperate fighting, ended in a great victory for England. The Plague, however, prevented the English from following up their success, and the Dutch were soon again masters of the sea. On June 1, 1666, their admirals—Ruyter and Tromp—met Monk and Rupert off the Dunes. For four days there was waged one of the most terrible sea fights in history. In the end the English were defeated with the loss of 8,000 men and seventeen vessels. On August 4 the struggle was renewed off the Norfolk coast. This time fortune changed, and the Dutch fled to the shallows of Zealand. Finding their merchant fleet huddled together for safety at the mouth of the Texel, the English sent fire-ships among them and destroyed 150 ships. At this moment a fresh calamity fell upon the nation. On the night of Sunday, September 2, a fire broke out in a baker's shop in Pudding Lane, near London Bridge. A strong east wind was blowing, and the wooden houses burned like paper, the fire leaping across the narrow street. The conflagration lasted for a week; the City was in ruins from London Bridge to Temple Bar. There was now a general cry for peace; but Charles was still hopeful, for by promising to give Louis XIV. a free hand in his designs upon Europe he had secured his promise of help. Suddenly, on June 7, 1667, while Charles was at a drunken revel at the Duchess of Monmouth's, 'all mad in hunting of a poor moth,' the sound of guns was heard in the Thames. A Dutch fleet of sixty-one ships, under De Witt, had mounted the Thames and the Medway as far as Sheerness and Rochester, burning and capturing the English vessels at anchor. The result of this daring stroke was the Treaty of Breda (July 31, 1667), by which each nation retained its own conquests.

First Dutch war

Victory of June 1665

Defeat of June 1666

Victory of August 1666

Fire of London

The Dutch in the Thames

Treaty of Breda

The war had led to a great extension of the control of the Commons over the purse. Besides the 2,500,000*l.* already granted, they had in 1665 given another sum of half that amount. But so great was the anger of the country gentlemen at the manner in which the first grant was spent, that they insisted upon the appropriation of the latter sum to the war; and this system of 'appropriation of supplies' henceforth became general. In the following year parliament demanded the appointment of commissioners to investigate the expenditure. From Magna Carta to the Petition of Right it had been over and over again decided that money might not be raised except with the consent of the people. It was now settled that it might not be spent without the same sanction. *Budget*

From 1660 to 1667 Clarendon had been supreme. He had, of course, raised up a host of jealous enemies among the political adventurers, the disappointed cavaliers (p. 298), and the persecuted Catholics and Dissenters. He had alienated both Charles and his mistresses by his grave reprobation of debauchery. He had opposed as unconstitutional the king's attempts to suspend the penal laws, and the Commons' insistence upon the appropriation of supplies; he had especially angered the latter by advising Charles to support the troops by forced contributions, and by suggesting a dissolution as the best way out of his difficulties with them. By his arrogance he had lost the favour of the London citizens. The sale of Dunkirk, and all the misfortunes of the war, were wrongly laid to his charge. The integrity of his character unfitted him for dealing with the back-stairs intrigues of the court. Charles, as devoid of gratitude as his father, yielded to the clamour, and Clarendon was dismissed, August 30, 1667. On October 10 his impeachment was voted; he fled to France, and died at Rouen in 1674, after writing his great history of the civil war and the record of his own life since the Restoration.

SECTION 2.—*The Cabal Administration. Attempted Toleration. Second Dutch War*

While Charles was ever drawing nearer to Louis, the nation thoroughly disliked the connection. Louis was a despot and a Catholic; and despotism and popery were the two things which the parliament dreaded most. The keenest jealousy was aroused by Louis's invasion of Flanders, which belonged to Spain, but to which he invented a claim; and Charles was urged to form an alliance with the Dutch to compel Louis to withdraw. His chief adviser in foreign affairs was now Henry Bennet, earl of Arlington, who shared with George Villiers, duke of Buckingham, the

power left by Clarendon. Buckingham favoured France; but Arlington was much the cleverer man, and he urged upon Charles the necessity of satisfying parliament, if further supplies were to be forthcoming. In January 1668 a treaty of mutual defence was made with the republic by which the two nations bound themselves to bring about peace between France and Spain, and to use force against whichever should refuse. The last condition was kept secret. In May Sweden joined the alliance, which is, therefore, known as the Triple Alliance. Louis was not yet ready to defy such a coalition, and peace was made between France and Spain at Aix-la-Chapelle, May 1668, by which Louis acquired a number of fortified towns in Flanders.

Charles had been forced into the Triple Alliance. Scarcely was it signed when he privately let Louis understand that he was as anxious as ever for his friendship.⁸ Louis was determined to punish the Dutch for presuming to talk about using force against him; and as a despotic monarch he hated and despised them as republicans; 'messieurs les marchands' he called them.⁹ For his purpose he needed the English navy; and he was willing to give Charles a handsome bribe. Charles had now privately, and James publicly, acknowledged themselves Catholics, and this aided the scheme. Arlington, to preserve his influence with Charles against Buckingham, changed sides and undertook the negotiation. The king's clever and beautiful

sister Henrietta came over from France to smooth away all difficulties; and on June 1, 1670, the disgraceful Treaty of Dover was concluded. For his assistance Louis agreed to give Charles a large annual sum, with a present supply, of which part was to be paid when he declared his conversion; to help him against his own subjects if such declaration should lead to revolts; and to grant wide commercial advantages to England. But, since this treaty could

not be shown to Charles's Protestant ministers, a sham treaty was made, and Buckingham was duped by being allowed to negotiate it. In this nothing was said about Catholicism, the sum offered for the declaration of conversion being added to that given for the war. The original treaty was known only to Charles, Arlington, Sir Thomas Clifford, and two other Catholics.

The fall of Clarendon had given Charles a fresh opportunity of bringing about the toleration of dissent; and in this he was actively helped by both Arlington and Buckingham. When parliament was

⁸ The original letters may be seen in Dalrymple's *Memoirs*, vol. i. p. 67. Macaulay's *Essay on Sir W. Temple*

should also be read.

⁹ Airy, *English Restoration*, *'Epochs of Modern History*, p. 178.

not sitting he had his way. But at each session he was forced, as the price of supply, to consent to some further act of severity. The persistence of parliament was greater than his own; and in February 1670 he gave up the contest. In March 1670 was passed the *Second Conventicle Act*, the harshest of all the persecuting acts, the *Second Conventicle Act*, which consisted of the act of 1664 in a severer and more searching shape. So rigorously was it carried out that for the time conventicles disappeared. The Commons then turned upon the Catholics; they again extorted the banishment of all priests except those attached to the queen and the foreign embassies, and the rigid enforcement of the penal laws. They then gave a supply; and Charles, needing to have his hands free to carry out the Treaty of Dover, of which parliament had no cognizance, at once prorogued them to February 1672.

One point of great importance had been meanwhile fought out between the two houses. The Lords had assumed the right, in the case of Skinner, to exercise jurisdiction in a matter not yet before the law courts; and this right the Commons denied.¹⁰ Neither would give way, and nominally the matter remained unsettled. But, as a practical result, the Lords tacitly gave up, and have never reasserted, their claims.

The small committee for foreign affairs (p. 297), usually called 'cabal,' had since Clarendon's fall been composed of Clifford, Arlington, Buckingham, Lord Ashley (formerly Ashley Cooper), and Lauderdale. It was noticed that by taking the first letter of each name the word 'Cabal' was formed, and this particular cabal has thus acquired the special title. The five, differing on almost every other point, were united upon the question of toleration; Clifford, a 'valiant, incorrupt gentleman,' and Arlington, from sympathy with the Catholics; Buckingham as the patron of the Dissenters; Ashley, the most interesting figure of the reign, except the king himself, because toleration was favourable to trade; and Lauderdale, the secretary for Scotland, and Charles's boon companion in his coarsest vices, because the king wished it. They had, too, all helped to overthrow Clarendon, and were therefore naturally opposed to his church policy. Clifford and Ashley alone were men of strong principle. To these must be added Louise de Kéroualle, soon created Duchess of Portsmouth, a clever and beautiful young Breton girl, who came over with Henrietta, and who exercised great influence over Charles.¹¹ Upon her and his

¹⁰ Hallam, small edition, vol. iii. p. 21.

¹¹ See the *Athenæum* for April 24 1886.

other mistresses the treasure of the country was poured out in reckless profusion. In 1672 his debts were so large that some desperate step was necessary, especially with a great war in prospect. The government was in the habit of borrowing money at 12 per cent. from the goldsmiths, who were then the only bankers, upon the security of taxes already voted but not yet collected; and at the moment there was about 1,400,000*l.* of their money in the treasury. Suddenly, upon Clifford's advice,¹² an edict was issued that the taxes which were being collected should be devoted to the war, and not to repaying the bankers; while in addition the interest payable on the loans was reduced to 6 per cent. The result was that the bankers were left without money to pay the merchants who had banked with them; the merchants in turn were unable to meet their liabilities; a general stagnation of trade ensued, with vast distress among private persons, and a total loss of royal credit. This fraudulent bankruptcy was called the 'Stop of the Exchequer,' and for it

Clifford was made lord treasurer, with a peerage. Then followed another attempt to gain the dispensing power. Charles issued a Declaration of Indulgence, suspending the penal laws, and asserting that such a power was a right inherent in the crown. This was in the main due to Ashley, who was now made Earl of Shaftesbury and lord chancellor. A few days later war was declared against the Dutch, in fulfilment of the Treaty of Dover. The last Dutch war had been commercial and national; the present one was the outcome of wanton treachery. On land the Dutch fought for bare existence against Louis, who in a few weeks had overrun the country to the walls of Amsterdam. But on the sea they confronted our navy as bravely as ever. The first great battle, in Southwold Bay, June 7, 1672, was indecisive; and an attack upon the Dutch coast was frustrated by a curious conjunction of wind and tide, and by a tempest which drove the Anglo-French fleet back to England. Charles was soon weary of the war; but he was surrounded by difficulties at home, and hoped yet to escape them by victory. A sanguinary conflict took place on June 7, 1673; and the final struggle was fought out on the Zealand coast, between Ruyter and Rupert, August 21. The Dutch, fighting with desperation, were victorious. Charles felt he could do no more; and on February 19, 1674, he made peace at Westminster. By this treaty England gained the island of St. Helena, a useful place of call for our vessels on their way to India.

In spite of the stop of the exchequer and the subsidies of Louis,

¹² This has always been ascribed to Shaftesbury; but see Christie, *Life of Shaftesbury*, vol. ii. p. 56.

Charles had been obliged to summon parliament, March 1673. Their first act was to compel him to cancel the Declaration of Indulgence (March 8), to which, he told them in his opening speech, he was determined at all hazards to adhere. Then, anxious to have done with the Catholic question once for all, they passed the famous *Test Act*, March 15, 1673, by which all persons holding office were compelled to take the sacrament according to the English church, and especially to deny the cardinal doctrine of Transubstantiation. James, who was lord high admiral, Clifford, and many other Catholics were driven from office, and the Cabal scattered. Still discontent increased. The frequent evasions of the new act; the demands of Louis for the establishment of Catholicism in the conquered Dutch towns; the 'flaunting' of Catholics at court; the second marriage of James with the Catholic Princess of Modena; the 'dark hovering' on Blackheath of an army which Charles had been quietly collecting, and which was commanded by Schomberg, a Frenchman, and Fitzgerald, a Catholic; the complete failure of the war; rendered the Commons utterly intractable. In spite of his downright falsehood that he had no secret treaty with Louis, they refused him any supply. Encouraged by Shaftesbury,¹³ who had opposed Charles after he had failed to maintain the Declaration of Indulgence, and had been dismissed, they attacked Buckingham, Lauderdale, and Arlington; and they forced Charles to the Peace of Westminster.

SECTION 3.—The Danby Administration. Clarendon's Policy repeated. The Popish Terror

Charles now gave his confidence to Sir Thomas Osborne, whom he created lord treasurer and Earl of Danby. Danby resolved to reverse the unsuccessful policy of the Cabal, and return to that of Clarendon—the alliance, that is, of the strong cavalier spirit with the church against all forms of dissent. He was an admirable party manager, and his method was that of wholesale bribery. The parliament began now to earn with justice the title of the 'Pensionary Parliament.'

Danby's first attempt was to get rid of the Catholics in the House of Lords, and the Presbyterians in the House of Commons, by introducing in the Lords a bill for a 'Non-Resisting Test,' imposing upon all the oath demanded in the Act of Uniformity against endeavouring 'any alteration in the government of

¹³ He was angry too at finding out how he had been duped by the sham Treaty of Dover.

church and state.' The church, the parliament, and the executive would then have formed one dominant party, free of all fear of opposition. The bill passed the Lords. Probably it would have passed the Commons also but for a fresh dispute which arose between the houses, perhaps through Shaftesbury's connivance, on a case similar to that of Skinner. So heated did feeling become that Charles was obliged to prorogue parliament, and the bill therefore dropped. Parliament was now in two well-defined parties — the 'courtiers,' who voted as Danby bade them, and the 'country party,' led by Shaftesbury, who demanded a dissolution, the disbanding of the troops, the dismissal of Danby, and the exclusion of James from the succession.

On foreign affairs Charles took his own course. Against Danby's advice, he agreed for 100,000*l.* a year from Louis to prorogue parliament whenever it should press him to break with France; and in November 1675 he did so for fifteen months. When it met in February 1677 the opposition declared that by an old law of Edward III., requiring annual parliaments, this was illegal, and that parliament was therefore *ipso facto* dissolved. But they were wrong in their interpretation of the law; and, further, the Triennial Act (p. 801 *note*) of course overrode the former one. Their violence led to a court triumph: Shaftesbury, Buckingham, Wharton, and Salisbury were sent to the Tower, and the Commons granted a large supply free of all conditions. But their temper changed as Louis's successes in Flanders roused keener jealousy. All further supply was stopped, and Charles was obliged once more to appeal to Louis.

Danby then played another card. The opposition were in close communication with William of Orange (pp. 232, 302), the nephew of Charles, and the leader of the resistance to Louis's ambition. By bringing about the marriage of William with his cousin Mary, the eldest daughter of James, he cut the ground from under their feet. William's necessities made him glad to ally himself with his uncle's court. Charles thought that the marriage would disarm opposition at home; James, that those who dreaded his succession would look past him to his Protestant daughter and son-in-law. To meet this blow Louis changed his policy too; he turned to the opposition, promising to help them in their objects if they would prevent Charles from joining William in fighting him. Regarding their success at home as more important than the welfare of Europe, they threw over William and succeeded in forcing Charles to disband his army and to give up his intention of taking part in the war against Louis, which came to an end

Defeat of
the country
party

Marriage of
Mary and
William of
Orange

Alliance of
Louis and
the opposi-
tion

by the Peace of Nimwegen, September 1678. But Louis, to make assurance doubly sure, had also made a secret treaty with Charles, by which the latter promised, for 300,000*l.* a year, to dissolve parliament should it prove intractable, and not to help the Dutch. This agreement was unwillingly signed by Danby at the express order of the king.

Month by month the dread of Catholicism had been growing keener. Suddenly it displayed itself in a burst of national madness.

The Popish
terror Titus Oates, the vilest of informers, a wretch who had been successively expelled from the church, the Dissenters, and the Jesuits, accused Coleman, secretary to the Duchess of York, of treason; and among Coleman's papers were found one or two compromising letters. Oates made his depositions before a noted Protestant magistrate, Sir Edmund Bury Godfrey, and the next day Godfrey was found murdered. The nation was at once seized with a panic of fear. No charge against the Catholics was too wild for belief. Good and wise men, like Lord William Russell, appeared suddenly to lose their reason. The trainbands were called out, and men went armed for fear of the 'bloody Papists.' The gaols were filled with Catholics, who, after the mockery of a trial, were hurried to the scaffold on the word of Oates and other informers as base as himself. Oates was termed the saviour of his country, was lodged in Whitehall, and received a pension of 1,200*l.* a year. His audacity went so far as to accuse the queen herself. Charles acted a shameful part. He utterly disbelieved the whole story, but he was cowed by the popular fury. 'I cannot save him,' he said of one illustrious victim, 'because I dare not.' Danby fostered the panic to divert feeling from himself; Shaftesbury because he hoped through it to ruin Danby and secure the exclusion of James. This was now the main object of the opposition. The Commons passed a bill disabling all Catholics from sitting in parliament. But the Lords added a clause exempting James from its operation, and to the intense disappointment of Shaftesbury's party the Commons agreed to it by a majority of two votes. The ruin of Danby, however, was accomplished. Louis XIV. handed to the opposition the letter

Fall of
Danby.
Pensionary
Parliament
dissolved which Danby had written by the king's order regarding the secret treaty. The Commons at once voted an impeachment. To save him Charles dissolved the parliament (January 1679), which had sat since 1661. But the new elections gave a large majority to Shaftesbury. Danby was committed to the Tower, and an impeachment was again ordered; but in bar of it he produced the royal pardon, which he had long before been careful to procure.

Handwritten notes:
Hudson
Hick
P...
fact
1670
S...
Ja...
Y...
...
...
...
...
...
...
...

SECTION 4.—*Shaftesbury and the Exclusion Conflict. Triumph of Charles*

A curious interlude now took place. Charles was urged to get over the deadlock by conciliation. He sent James out of the country, and formed a new privy council, in which were included the chiefs of the country party, with Shaftesbury himself as Lord President; and he engaged that no important step should be taken without its consent. But the new parliament, elected under the popish terror, was not thus to be turned from its course. A fresh Exclusion Bill passed its second reading. A searching inquiry, directed especially against the Duchess of Portsmouth, was instituted into the disposal of the secret service money; and the trial of the Catholic peers who still lay in prison was pressed on without mercy. Charles at once broke his promise to the council, and first prorogued, and then dissolved, parliament without its advice. Short-lived as it was, this parliament had passed one of the most important statutes in English law. The provisions against the detention of prisoners without bringing them to trial were constantly evaded in the interests of the court. The Habeas Corpus Act (1679), which was due in the main to Shaftesbury, while it introduced no new principle, applied safeguards so stringent as to render this abuse henceforth impossible. It insisted that, except in cases of treason or felony, a prisoner should be admitted to bail; any judge refusing to issue to the gaoler the writ of habeas corpus ('produce the body of the prisoner,' in order that the cause of commitment might be seen), and any gaoler refusing to obey such writ, were to be fined 50*l.* or 100*l.* respectively. Once released, no one might be again arrested for the same offence; and no inhabitant of England, Wales, or Berwick-on-Tweed might be sent to prison out of the country except for a capital offence.

The contest over the succession represented the conflict between the hatred of Catholicism and the principle of hereditary right. Three schemes were proposed: (1) to allow James to reign, but to limit his power; (2) a regency, James retaining the royal title, but living abroad; (3) entire exclusion, the crown devolving upon his daughter Mary, wife of William of Orange. But Shaftesbury had also long been pressing the cause of the young and popular Duke of Monmouth, the 'Protestant duke,' the favourite illegitimate son of Charles. He tried to persuade Charles to avow his marriage with Monmouth's mother; but Charles steadfastly

Schemes
for the
succession

New privy
council

Habeas
Corpus Act

refused. So serious was the danger in James's eyes, that before he left the country he had insisted upon the king formally declaring Monmouth's illegitimacy; and, when Charles fell ill in August, he was summoned home in haste by the Earl of Sunderland and the Duchess of Portsmouth, who were now the king's sole advisers, and who dreaded the success of Shaftesbury's scheme.

Charles, who hoped for the support of Louis, now threw over the new privy council, dismissed Shaftesbury, accepted the resignation of the other chiefs of the country party 'with all my heart,' and placed the conduct of affairs in the hands of Sunderland, Lawrence Hyde, the younger son of Clarendon, and Sydney Godolphin, who was specially skilled as a financier. These three, known as the 'Chits,' acted under the direction of the Duchess of Portsmouth, the virtual Queen of England. To avoid agitation, he sent Monmouth abroad and James to govern Scotland.

Charles's third parliament met in October 1680, under great excitement. The anti-Catholic agitation was still at its height, and the only subject the Commons would touch was exclusion. The bill passed in the lower house; but after a brilliant debate, in which George Savile, earl of Halifax, bore the chief part against Shaftesbury, it was thrown out in the Lords. Parliament was at once dissolved, without giving any supply or passing a single act. It was a second 'Addled Parliament' (p. 240). Once more Charles looked to Louis for money.

In anticipation of a fresh parliament, Shaftesbury issued a letter urging the election of such members only as would vote for exclusion. His influence was great in the city, which at his suggestion petitioned for an immediate sitting. Charles acted with great coolness. To avoid pressure from London he held the session, March 21, 1681, at Oxford. Thither went the leaders of the various parties at the head of bodies of armed men; there was every appearance of the imminence of civil war. The regency scheme was introduced and rejected; and a resolution was passed to bring in a bill of exclusion. But Charles had at length made a treaty with Louis, always anxious to avoid any chance of English interference in his high-handed schemes in Europe, which, by giving him sufficient to carry on a fairly economical government, rendered him independent of parliament.¹⁴ On March 28 he suddenly dissolved this—his fourth and last House of Commons.¹⁵

¹⁴ The king could no longer do as Charles I had done in 1629, raise money by prerogative. To be independent he had to be a pensioner.

¹⁵ When parliament is *adjourned* it takes up at its next meeting all questions under discussion at the point where it had left them. When it is

The effect was immediate. What took place in 1629 (p. 253) took place now. The *Whigs*,¹⁶ or exclusionists, lost the power of expressing their opposition, and a strong reaction took place. Their Tory reaction excessive violence had alienated the moderate men; the popish terror was practically extinct, and had left the country disgusted with its own folly; the well-to-do classes dreaded another commonwealth; people were scandalised at Shaftesbury's patronage of the illegitimate Monmouth. A clever declaration of the king completed the discomfiture of the Whigs; slavish addresses poured in from all parts of the country. In November Shaftesbury was indicted for treason; but the grand jury of Middlesex, chosen by sheriffs favourable to him, threw out the bill. The court then, by unscrupulous means, procured the election of *Tory* sheriffs. Shaftesbury saw the game was up, and fled to Holland, where he died in January 1683.

To make sure of a favourable parliament when necessary, the court now gained complete control over the municipalities. By the process known as 'Quo warranto?' (p. 93) the lawyers found flaws in the charters, or violations of them, which made them technically invalid; the judges declared them forfeited; and Charles gave them back only on terms which made the corporations completely subservient to the crown.

This drove the Whigs to despair. Even before Shaftesbury's flight the question of rebellion had been seriously discussed with Monmouth, Russell, Algernon Sydney, the Earl of Essex, Lord Howard, and others. Monmouth went on a progress through the western counties, endearing himself to all by his handsome face and affability, and extensive preparations were made. Within this plot, Rye House Plot and unknown to those mentioned, another plot was formed, to assassinate Charles as he passed the Rye House, in Hertfordshire, on his way from Newmarket. The plot was discovered, and, as Raleigh suffered for a scheme in which he had no share (p. 285), so now Russell and Sydney suffered death, after trials which illustrated the degradation of the judges. Essex killed himself in the Tower, and Monmouth was banished.

prorogued all bills are absolutely dropped, and must be begun again *de novo* at the next session. When it is *dissolved* fresh elections take place, and a new parliament assembles.

¹⁶ The name of 'Tory' appears to be derived from the Tories, or brigands who infested Ireland. That of 'Whig'

is supposed to be drawn from 'Whiggamory,' the name given to the Lowland Scotch drovers. A list was drawn up by the Tories of names from which they should choose one for their opponents. The first was 'Brummagem,' but 'Whig' was probably chosen for its shortness.

Charles was now absolute. The Test Act was violated with impunity—a fact which shows how such violence as that of the Whigs during the popish terror defeats itself. James, for instance, resumed his office of high admiral. The last four years of the reign passed without a parliament; the 'Chits' and the Duchess of Portsmouth governed the country. In the autumn of 1684 Charles made a final attempt at toleration, frustrated by the vigilant bishops. On February 6, 1685, he died of apoplexy, in his fifty-fifth year, having secretly received the last rites of the Catholic church.

The shameful misgovernment of Scotland was perhaps the greatest blot upon the reign. In spite of the oaths which Charles had taken to preserve Presbyterianism, but which he threw over on the ground of constraint, and with every circumstance of treachery, Episcopacy was restored at the beginning of the reign, chiefly through the instrumentality of James Sharp, himself the trusted representative of the Presbyterian ministers. Sharp was made Archbishop of St. Andrews. Resistance was not possible. The nobles were glad to be rid of Presbyterianism, which had kept them in subjection; the country was miserably poor, and the English occupation had rendered the people powerless; the kirk itself was utterly distracted between Engagers and Protesters. Persecuting acts were passed against the extreme Covenanters, and their conventicles put down. They rose in revolt in 1667, but were crushed at the Pentland Hills in 1667, when terrible scenes of torture and violence took place. In 1669 the Duke of Lauderdale, Charles's viceroy, created an army of 20,000 men, to which Charles looked at the time of the Treaty of Dover in 1670, and again in 1672, when he put out the Declaration of Indulgence, to be used if necessary against his subjects in England. All through the reign the persecution of the Covenanters went on, with short intervals of comparative indulgence, corresponding with those in England, until, after the murder of James Sharp, they rose again in 1679 and defeated the royal forces under the celebrated James Grahame of Claverhouse, but were then routed at Bothwell Brigg, near Glasgow, by an army under the Duke of Monmouth. From that time little more trouble was experienced by the government.

Ireland was scarcely better off. An 'Act of Settlement' was passed as soon as possible, by which some of the land given by Cromwell to the adventurers was regained by Catholics and Protestant royalists. But no great change was possible, so firm was the hold of the Cromwellian occupiers. Like Scotland, the country was miserably poor, infested by brigands—Tories, as they were called—

Death of
Charles

Misgovern-
ment in
Scotland

And in
Ireland

and with an overwhelming Catholic majority kept down in bitter discontent. In spite of the efforts and outspoken remonstrances of Arthur Capel, earl of Essex, viceroy from 1672 to 1677, one of the few honest, capable, and straightforward ministers of Charles, the prosperity of the country was still further crippled by the jealous commercial policy of England, which forbade Irish trade with the colonies, or the importing to England of her staple products of cattle, wool, or butter. Charles, too, drained the Irish exchequer, as his father had done, to reward his favourites and enrich his mistresses.

The rapid increase and development of our colonies and colonial possessions, and the great importance attached to their government at home, are principal features of the reign of Charles II.,
 Colonies who showed more interest in the naval and commercial success of the country than in anything else. The active though unscrupulous enterprise of our adventurers was never more marked, even in the great days of Elizabeth. In 1660 England possessed, in America, Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Connecticut, Rhode Island, Maryland, Virginia. In 1663 a charter was issued to the lords proprietors of Carolina. New York passed from Dutch into English hands in 1664, and Delaware was settled in the same year. New Jersey was granted to James, and Pennsylvania to William Penn in 1681. There were also the colonial possessions of Acadia, Nova Scotia, Newfoundland, the Bermudas, and British Guiana. In the West Indies we had the Leeward and Windward Isles, Jamaica, and the Bahamas. All these were under the superintendence of a Council of Foreign Plantations, consisting of thirty-five of the Privy Council. In 1663 the Royal African Company was formed, with settlements all down the African coast, where we were in constant collision with the Dutch. Tangiers, on the north African coast, and Bombay, in India, came to England through the Portuguese marriage.

In two ways especially the period was one of disgrace. Stimulated by the king's encouragement, the natural reaction against the austerity of the Commonwealth, mingled, as it often was, with
 Immorality hypocrisy, declared itself in a prolonged outburst of bestial licence at court and among the classes which took their example from the court, in literature, and upon the stage. Never was immorality so unrestrained, so gross, or so shameless. And yet it must not be supposed that this was the case throughout England. The country homes of the nobility and gentry appear to have remained to a great degree untainted.

The second disgrace was the prostitution of justice. The judges of Charles I. had to a great extent lost the confidence of the people by

their subservience. But under Charles II. they accepted unblushingly their position of dependence on the caprice of the king; they brow-beat juries, found verdicts for the crown, and sent innocent men to the block with the bare semblance of trial, and with every circumstance of injustice. Russell and Sydney were as truly murdered by corrupt judges as the Catholics who died in the popular madness during the popish terror.

And yet the principles of liberty were actively at work. The darkest page of English history is illumined by the passing of the Habeas Corpus Act in 1679. But there was another principle established, scarcely less important—the rights of juries to find verdicts against the crown. On September 1, 1670, William Penn and another Quaker, William Mead, were indicted for an unlawful, seditious, and riotous assembly. The jury brought in a verdict declaring that the prisoners were 'guilty of speaking in Gracechurch Street,' but refused to add 'to an unlawful assembly.' Then, as the pressure from the bench increased, and as they were sent back time after time without food, light, fire, or tobacco, they first acquitted Mead, while returning their original verdict upon Penn, and then, when that verdict was not admitted, gave in their final answer 'not guilty' for both. The Recorder of London fined the jurymen, and in default of payment imprisoned them; whereupon they brought an action against him for illegal imprisonment before Lord Chief Justice Vaughan, in the Court of Common Pleas, and won it.

The most interesting figure is that of Charles himself. He had been a vagabond from earliest childhood, surrounded by reckless and dissolute companions, and with every temptation to immorality. He came out of this training with a splendid physical constitution, a selfish heart, a cool head, a good temper, charming manners and conversation, and a complete absence of moral restraint. He had, too, that which his father so conspicuously lacked—the power of realising how others were thinking. His physical activity he retained throughout his life. He was a great tennis player; was often fishing at five in the morning; would ride from Whitehall to Epsom Downs and back in the day, to see a footrace; and took the lead with reckless and undignified want of reserve in the revels of the court.

He began his reign with the idea of ruling like his cousin Louis XIV. But he found himself fettered by the parliament and the church; and the habitual licence of his life soon robbed him of all idea of contending with the difficulties of his position. His life was pleasant, and, as he said, he had no intention of going on his travels again. He soon was reduced to act along the line of least resistance. That he

was practically absolute during the last four years of his reign was due to the violence of his opponents; but it was due also to his selfishness, his clear head, and his perfect command of temper: there is but one recorded instance of Charles being in a passion.¹¹

His intellectual gifts were very great, his tastes cultivated. He led, indeed, a double life. While he was first in the shameless race of debauchery, he lived in close intimacy with some of the purest and best persons of the day. He was keenly interested in all the researches of modern science, and the Royal Society took its name from his patronage. Chemistry and shipbuilding were favourite studies, and divided his attention with horse-racing and cock-fighting. Greenwich Observatory was founded in his reign. He was an admirable judge of character, though he never hesitated to throw over the few good and honest men who served him, when urged beyond his convenience by the basest intriguers.

Dates of Reign of Charles II

	A.D.		A.D.
<i>The Clarendon Administration</i>	1660-1667	• Second Dutch War	1672-1674
• Corporation and Uniformity Acts	1661-1663	• The Test Act	1678
• Conventicle and Five-Mile Acts	1664-1665	<i>Danby's Administration</i>	1674-1679
• First Dutch war	1665-1667	The 'country party'	1675
Appropriation of supplies	1665	Marriage of William of Orange and Mary	1677
<i>The Cabal</i>	1667-1673	• Popish terror	1678
• Triple alliance	1668	<i>The Exclusion Contest</i>	1679-1681
✕ Treaty of Dover	1670	• Habeas Corpus Act	1679
Rights of juries established	1670	• Whigs and Tories	1680
• Stop of the exchequer and Declaration of Indulgence	1672	The Chits	1680
		Dissolution of Charles's last parliament	1681
		Forfeiture of the charters	1683
		<i>Personal government.</i>	1681-1685

¹¹ See description of this in *Lauderdale Papers* (Camden Society), vol. iii. p. 140. For Charles's character see

Burnet's *History of his Own Times*, and especially the Memoirs of John Sheffield, duke of Buckingham.

CHAPTER VII

*JAMES II.—1685—1689. CLOSE OF THE CONTEST BETWEEN PARLIAMENT AND PREROGATIVE**SECTION I.—Accession to Prorogation, November 1685. Popish Policy restrained*

JAMES succeeded without a note of opposition. The nation trusted in his promise to his council 'to preserve the government both in church and state as by law established,' and remembered only the striking personal courage he had shown in the fights with the Dutch, and his energetic conduct of the Admiralty. Had he possessed either prudence or imagination he might have been more absolute than his brother. But, deceived by the late steadfastness of the clergy to the cause of hereditary right, and by their strenuous advocacy of passive obedience, he believed that they would hold their peace while he assumed the power of suspending the penal laws, and would consent to a moderate toleration of his creed. On February 12, therefore, he publicly heard mass. The next Sunday, to his astonishment, an outcry arose from every pulpit in London. But James shut his ears. On Easter Day a solemn mass was held in the Queen's Chapel; and the chief officers of state, the knights of the Garter, and others of the nobility, were ordered to attend him to the door. The penal laws suspended were then suspended by proclamation, and thousands of prisoners, including a number of eminent men, and no fewer than 1,200 Quakers, were set free. The king then illegally continued the exactions of the customs and excise, which by the constitution died with each king until renewed by parliament; obtained from Scotland the excise, and 260,000*l.* for life; and sought to free himself from dependence upon parliament by accepting the sums which Louis XIV., as anxious as ever to avoid a frequent meeting of that body, offered him. Lawrence Hyde, now Earl of Rochester, was lord treasurer; Sunderland, secretary of state; Godolphin and three Catholics, Richard Talbot, Jermyn, and the king's confessor, Father Petre, a Jesuit priest, made up the cabal. Lord Halifax, who had defeated the Exclusion Bill, was president of the council. Parliament met in May. Elected by the newly modelled corporations (page 312), it contained a large number of crown nominees. They gave James two millions a year for life, thus making him independent of them for the future; refused to enforce the penal laws;

Subser-
vience of
parliament

and voted that anyone moving to change the succession should be guilty of treason.

James had been further strengthened by the failure of two attacks (p. 188, note). The Duke of Argyle, with many others, had escaped to Holland under sentence of death in 1684. There he met Monmouth. Mistaking the condition and temper of the two countries, they arranged to make simultaneous descents upon England and Scotland. Argyle landed in Cantyre, May 1685, and raised the Campbells in support of his declaration against popery, prelacy, and the ecclesiastical supremacy of the crown. With 1,800 men he marched upon Glasgow. But the country was not ready; his forces rapidly fell away; he was captured, and at once executed on the old sentence.

Monmouth's invasion of the western counties, where he had made himself a great favourite in his progress in 1684, and where the people were enthusiastic Protestants, was more alarming. On June 11 he landed at Lyme Regis with eighty followers. Here his declaration was read. The reforms it claimed were all reasonable, and were granted, almost without exception, at the Revolution. But it rendered reconciliation with James impossible, for it accused him of having murdered, not only Essex, but his own brother. Never was there a leader worse qualified for such an enterprise. With some amiable qualities, he was weak and undecided in character, vain and petulant, easily moved by success or failure, and completely unable to exercise sway over the motley crew of adventurers who came with him. At Bridgwater he sealed his fate by assuming the royal title, and setting a price on the head of 'the usurper, James, duke of York.' Parliament declared it treason to assert his legitimacy, passed an act of attainder, and offered a reward of 5,000*l.* for his capture, dead or alive. The attack of his ill-armed and undisciplined forces upon Bristol and Bath failed; he began a retreat, and on July 3 was again at Bridgwater with a small and disheartened following. On Sunday, July 5, Lord Feversham was at Sedgemoor in pursuit. That night Monmouth attempted a surprise; it failed as much through misfortune as through bad management, and before dawn his followers were a helpless prey to the royal cavalry. With a few friends he fled over the Mendip Hills to the New Forest. At midnight, on July 8, James heard of his capture. His unmanly appeals for mercy were vain. James had indeed no reason for clemency, for he never believed him to be Charles's son. As a last hope Monmouth offered to embrace Catholicism. On the scaffold he partly redeemed a life of frivolous folly by meeting his death with dignity. Then followed a revolting scene.

Hand. 320
 The insurgents were gibbeted by scores along the roads, and from the signposts of inns, where the infamous Kirke, formerly governor of Tangier, and his 'lambs,' caroused among the dangling 'Bloody Circuit' bodies. The 'Bloody Circuit' over which the brutal Jeffreys, the lord chief justice, presided, was still more terrible. At least 400 persons, men and women, were judicially murdered; 850 were transported to the plantations as slaves; others were whipped and imprisoned. Women were scourged from one market town to another. Mrs. Lisle was beheaded for sheltering a rebel, and Elizabeth Gaunt burnt alive for the same offence. The 'maids of Taunton,' a number of girls who had presented Monmouth when he entered the town with a Bible and a drawn sword, were forced to ransom themselves for 2,000*l.* to the queen's maids-of-honour. The queen herself and the courtiers trafficked in pardons; Jeffreys amassed large sums in bribes; and James gave sanction to his ferocious cruelty by making him lord chancellor and a pecc.¹

James now believed himself strong enough to have his will. He ignored the Test Act, and placed his troops, which he was constantly increasing, under Catholic officers. He then confidently appealed to parliament to sanction his proceedings and to repeal the Test Act. But public feeling had been deeply stirred by Louis XIV.'s revocation of the Edict of Nantes, the edict by which Henry IV. of France had given toleration to the Huguenots in 1598, and by the awful persecution which followed that great treachery. The Commons offered James 700,000*l.* to support the army, but respectfully reminded him that by law Catholics were incapable of serving. When James returned a haughty message, there was a long silence in the house, broken at last by a voice exclaiming, 'We are all Englishmen, and are not to be frightened out of our duty by a few high words.' In the Lords too there was opposition. Resolved not to be thwarted in exercising the dispensing power, James prorogued the parliament in anger on November 20, sacrificing the 700,000*l.* rather than give way.

SECTION 2.—*From the Prorogation to the Birth of James's Son.
 Popish Policy unrestrained*

There were now two parties at court. Rochester, with the chief nobility, the moderate Catholics, and the church, wished for the old policy of Danby (p. 807). Sunderland, with Jeffreys, Petre, the violent Catholics, and the queen, favoured Catholicism and France.

¹ On the whole of the Monmouth rebellion and the 'Bloody Circuit,' see Macaulay, vol. i. p. 417.

Thus supported, James increased his appointment of Catholics in the army, 'any clause in any act of parliament notwithstanding.'

Rochester and Sunderland To gain at least the nominal sanction of the law, he removed the judges who were not compliant, and then, before a new bench, had a collusive action tried in which Sir Edward

Hales, a Catholic, was sued by his coachman for holding a commission.

Of the twelve judges all but one pronounced in Hales's favour, on the ground that the laws were the king's, and that it was part of the prerogative to dispense with penal laws in particular cases. As in the case of ship-money (p. 255), this stimulated resistance. The clergy renewed their protests. James ordered them to desist, and appointed an ecclesiastical commission to punish all contumacy.

Ecclesiastical commission Compton, bishop of London, was suspended; and from this moment James was at open war with the church. He

maintained apostate clergy in their livings, established Catholic chapels, and placed several Catholic lords upon the privy council. His army of 15,000 men, whom he frequently reviewed, was now largely

Dismissal of Rochester officered by Catholics. Finally, when Rochester refused to become a convert, he was dismissed from office, December 1686; and the church was left without a friend at court.

For his final efforts in England James prepared the way in Scotland and Ireland. In the former country he went still greater lengths than in England, proclaiming at last full liberty of conscience; and so subservient was the privy council there that he met with but slight opposition. In Ireland, Clarendon, the lord lieutenant, elder brother

Catholic policy in Scotland and Ireland of Rochester, was ordered to raise Catholics to the bench and privy council, and to make them sheriffs. A sum of 2,000*l.* was granted annually to the twelve titular

Catholic prelates; and all disaffected officers and men were removed from the army. When Clarendon demurred, he, also, was dismissed to make room for Richard Talbot, now earl of Tyrconnel. Talbot disarmed the Protestants, replaced the remaining Protestant magistrates by Catholics, and remodelled the corporations by the 'Quo warranto?' process. With privy council, courts of justice, and corporations in Catholic hands, preparations were made to hold an Irish parliament, at which Tyrconnel hoped to overthrow the Act of Settlement (p. 818), and secure a terrible revenge for the native Catholic Irish upon their English Protestant oppressors.

The king now thought the time ripe for his 'great design.' Sunderland had become a convert; the privy seal and the treasury were held by Catholics. From every public official James demanded a promise to vote for the crown candidates at the next election as a con-

dition of retaining his post. He then proclaimed universal liberty of conscience, April 4, 1687. Without exception the dissenting bodies expressed their gratitude. Under Charles II. they had supported the law against the prerogative, even to their own hurt; but the church had shown no recognition of their magnanimity, and they now welcomed the proffered relief. Hundreds of loyal addresses were procured by court influence from grand juries, magistrates, corporations, legal bodies, and even from some of the clergy. James might well deceive himself. He now attacked the universities. The attempt to force Cambridge to admit Catholics to degrees without the usual oaths was but partially successful. At Magdalen Hall, Oxford, the ecclesiastical commission expelled the Fellows for refusing to accept his nominee as president.² Then followed the public reception of the Pope's nuncio at court, and the appointment of Betre on the privy council.

The king still hoped for parliamentary sanction to his Declaration. He dissolved the parliament, which had not met for two years, and prepared the ground for one which he could better trust. He appointed a board of 'regulators,' to remould the corporations in conformity with his views. A clause in the charters issued by Charles II. empowered the crown to dismiss members of the corporations; and he used this largely to introduce Dissenters and Roman Catholics. In July he went on a royal progress through the west, calling around him the gentry, and reasoning with them; and he ordered the lords-lieutenant to put to all magistrates three questions:—(1) If chosen for parliament will you vote for the repeal of the Test Act and the penal laws? (2) Will you help the court candidates? (3) Will you support the Declaration? The answers were not encouraging, but he resolved to persevere. On April 25, 1688, the Declaration was republished in even stronger terms; and James ordered that on a fixed day it should be read in every church in the country. He thus gave an opportunity which, as there was no parliament, would otherwise have been wanting, for the expression of resistance. Sancroft, the primate, with six bishops, petitioned for the withdrawal of the order; and the Declaration was read in but four of the London churches. Furious at this opposition, James prosecuted the prelates on the ground that their petition was a seditious libel. They went to the Tower to await trial, amid thousands of sympathisers; and they came before the King's Bench, escorted by a crowd of nobles and gentlemen. Every effort was made to secure

² Macaulay, vol. ii. p. 99.

a conviction; but amid a scene of wild enthusiasm the jury returned a verdict of 'not guilty.' Had the army been staunch, James might have accepted the challenge; but he learned that nowhere was sympathy with the popular feeling more strong. He learned, too, that even from the Dissenters he could expect no further support; they suspected his honesty; and they were won by the promises of toleration which the church, moved by the danger of their alliance with the king, now made.

SECTION 8.—*The Revolution. The Crown disposed of*

Events were hastened by the birth of a son to James. The king's opponents asserted that this was a fraud, though without any good reason. The prospect of a continued Catholic succession, turned all eyes to William of Orange, who, as Mary's husband, had long been regarded as the probable saviour of the country. He had warily held aloof from Monmouth's enterprise; and its failure had removed a possible rival. While avoiding an open breach with James, he had refused the approbation which the king sought from him to the repeal of the penal laws; and he had lately broken with him so far as to evade his demand for the return of some English regiments which were in the service of the republic. In the summer of 1687 Danby, the promoter of his marriage (p. 308), Halifax the defearer of the Exclusion Bill, Shrewsbury the Whig, Nottingham the Tory, even the apostate Sunderland, had been in close communication with him. But William refused to move without a direct invitation. On June 30, 1688, it was sent, signed by Danby, Shrewsbury, the Duke of Devonshire, Lumley, Compton bishop of London, Henry Sydney, and Admiral Russell: it bound them to join him if he would land before the year was out. With the full concurrence of the Dutch States, he at once made every preparation for the enterprise.

James was at length seriously alarmed. He tried to induce the States to forbid William to move; he tried to retrace his steps in England. He appealed to the loyalty of the church; accepted the advice of the bishops; restored Compton to his see; gave back the charters forfeited by Charles II. (p. 312), and replaced the magistrates who had refused to answer his three questions; replaced the fellows of Magdalen; offered a general pardon to all who did not actually join William; took steps to establish the genuineness of the prince's birth; removed Sunderland from office and Petre from the council. He raised the army to 40,000 men, by calling in the Scotch

and Irish troops. His fleet, under the Earl of Dartmouth, consisted of thirty-seven men-of-war, and seventeen fire-ships.

Meanwhile a memorial had been published, purporting to come from the Protestants of England to William, but really drawn up by ^{The} Gilbert Burnet, Mary's chaplain. It insisted upon an ^{Memorial} inquiry into the birth of the prince, and on a free parliament. It recited the legal liberties of Englishmen, and James's violations of them. It prayed William to take the rights of the Crown and people under his protection, on behalf of his wife. Two declarations from William to England and Scotland were skilfully directed to satisfy the peculiar traditions of each country. The former, like the Declaration of Breda, referred everything in dispute to parliament. The latter promised the recognition of the Scottish national rights and the establishment of Presbyterianism for ever.

On October 19, with sixty men-of-war, 700 transports, and 15,000 men, William set sail. A tempest drove him back with considerable ^{William's} loss. Starting again with a favouring 'Protestant wind,' ^{invasion} which prevented the royal fleet from leaving the Downs, he reached Torbay on November 5. For a while his prospects were gloomy. The west was cowed by the memory of the 'Bloody Circuit,' and only a few joined him. The first nobleman to come in was Lord Cornbury, Clarendon's eldest son; shortly afterwards the officers and part of one of the royal regiments followed. Then Danby and Lumley in Yorkshire, Delamere and Brandon in Cheshire, and Devonshire in the Midlands, raised the standard of revolt. On December 22 Lord Churchill, the future Duke of Marlborough, and the Duke of Grafton, a son of Charles II., went over to William. It was not, however, until his son-in-law Prince George of Denmark, and his daughter Anne, followed their example, that James felt his desolation. Then he burst into tears, exclaiming, 'God help me, my children have forsaken me!' He had already sent his wife and son out of the kingdom; ^{Flight of} and he now resolved to follow them. William could wish for ^{James} nothing better; and his annoyance was great when he heard that James had been recognised as he was taking boat at Faversham in Kent and prevented from sailing.

On the news of the king's flight a provisional government had been formed of thirty peers, with the lord mayor and aldermen of London, who at once sent in their adhesion to William. The mob rose upon the Catholics, plundered their houses, destroyed their chapels, insulted the Catholic ambassadors, and arrested the king's principal adherents. Jeffreys was discovered in disguise at Wapping, and barely escaped the fury of the people, to die in the Tower a few months later. Then

came a reaction. James resolved to return to London, and his entry was welcomed with enthusiasm by the mob. William determined to scare him away once more. He sent his Dutch guards to occupy St. James's and Whitehall, and used every method to intimidate him : so successfully that James yielded to his orders to leave London. On Second flight of James December 19, escorted by the Dutch guards, he went to Gravesend, while William took up his lodging in Whitehall. From Gravesend James went to Rochester, where every facility was afforded him for leaving the country. Anxious to rejoin his wife and son, he took ship and arrived on the coast of France on Christmas Day. At St. Germain's he was received with sympathy and munificence by Louis XIV.

SECTION 4.—*The Crown disposed of*

William now called together the peers, all who had sat in any of Charles's parliaments when the old charters were in force and before a Catholic king had been accepted, the lord mayor, aldermen, and fifty of the council. At their wish he temporarily assumed the Convention parliament government, and summoned a convention parliament elected under the old charters, January 22, 1689. The Whigs were resolved to do away for ever with 'Divine right' by declaring the throne vacant and electing a sovereign upon their own conditions. They carried two votes in the Commons: (1) that James, The throne declared vacant having broken the original contract between king and people, having violated the fundamental laws, and having left the kingdom, had abdicated the government, and that the throne was thereby vacant; (2) that experience had shown that it was inconsistent with the welfare of the country to be governed by a popish prince. The Tories, anxious to save the principle of hereditary right, fought hard in the Lords for a regency; but Danby, who wished Mary to be queen, joined the Whigs on this issue, and the proposal was defeated by two votes only. After long debate the resolutions of the Commons were carried.

The throne was vacant; but who was to fill it? Danby urged the cause of Mary, Halifax that of William. That William should have the power was settled by both Mary and himself declaring that they would accept no other solution. It was finally decided that they should Declaration of Right be jointly king and queen. With the offer of the crown came the conditions, in the shape of the *Declaration of Right*, the goal to which all had been moving since the accession of James I. It first recited, and then condemned as illegal, the unconstitutional acts of James—viz. (1) the dispensing power as used by him; (2) the

exactions of money without a grant from parliament; (3) a standing army without the consent of parliament; (4) the Ecclesiastical Commission, and all similar courts. The chief things claimed were: the right of petitioning the king; free election of members of parliament; freedom of debate; and frequent parliaments. It had been determined to include the transference of the militia from the crown, the independence of the judges, and the denial of the right to claim, as Danby had claimed (p. 809), a royal pardon in bar of impeachment; but for the present these questions were passed by. With the Declaration came the *Act of Settlement*. The crown was to be held by William and Mary for their joint and separate lives; it was then to fall to Mary's children; next to Anne and her children; lastly to the children of William by any other wife. A Catholic, or one who should marry a Catholic, should forfeit the right to the succession, and the next Protestant heir should succeed. 'Divine right' was dead and buried, in the eyes of the English constitution. The monarchy was practically once more declared elective, as it had been up to the reign of Henry VIII. (p. 11); and parliament was the guiding power of the State.

Dates of Reign of James II.

	A.D.		A.D.
Rebellions of Argyle and Monmouth	1685	Birth of James's son	1688
Dismissal of Rochester	1686	Landing of William	1688
Liberty of conscience proclaimed.	1687	Flight of James	1688
Attack on Oxford and Cambridge	1687	Declaration of Right and Act of Settlement	1689
The Seven Bishops	1688		

BOOK IX

THE NEW MONARCHY

CHAPTER I

WILLIAM AND MARY. 1689-1702¹

SECTION 1.—*The Crown secured. Reorganisation*

WILLIAM'S difficulties now began. The Tories cried out against usurpation; the church bethought herself of hereditary right and non-resistance. Sancroft, the primate, with six bishops and 400 of the best of the clergy, refused the oath of allegiance and supremacy, and, resigning their livings, were henceforth known as 'Non-jurors.' The Whigs had looked for vengeance and exclusive possession of office, and they found that William would grant them neither. All parties were angry at the promotion of Dutchmen; while William's cold manner and ignorance of England made him personally unpopular. The army was jealous of the Dutch troops. At Ipswich a Scotch regiment mutinied. This led to the Mutiny Act, which enabled courts-martial to punish mutiny or desertion with death, and thus for the first time established a distinction between soldiers and other citizens. It was passed for six months only, but was always afterwards renewed from year to year. This annual renewal, and the fact that a similar annual vote is required for the pay and numbers of the troops, give parliament strict control of the army, and, while retaining all the advantages of a standing force, prevent it from becoming a danger to liberty.

William now formed his ministry. Danby became the president of the council; Halifax, the 'trimmer,' midway between Whigs and Tories, was lord privy seal; Nottingham, a keen Tory, was one secretary of state, and Shrewsbury, an equally keen Whig, the other. Herbert had charge of the admiralty, Mor-daunt and Godolphin of the treasury; the twelve best men attainable were made judges. Of the subordinate offices the Whigs had the chief share. In a ministry so constituted peace was impossible.

¹ The leading authority for William's reign is Macaulay. He should be consulted especially for the Non-jurors, the siege of Londonderry, the massacre of Glencoe, the National Debt,

the battles of Steinkirk and Landen, Party Ministry, the Bank of England, the Darien expedition, and the Irish forfeitures.

Danby and Halifax quarrelled ; so did Nottingham and Shrewsbury.² The division spread to every board and office in the kingdom. One post, that of foreign minister, William reserved for himself. The first object of his life was the humbling of the power of Louis XIV. ; and this he meant to do through the might of England. The great question of the last two reigns, that of the treatment of Protestant dissent, had now to be settled. In the face of the opposition of the church, comprehension was found impossible.³ Toleration, however, was a

The Tolera-
tion Act

necessity, and with William as king could have no danger.

The Toleration Act suspended penal laws against all but Catholics and Unitarians. It was now that the terms 'High Church'

High Church
and Low
Church

and 'Low Church' came into use. The High Churchmen, who formed nine-tenths of the lower clergy, hated the Toleration Act. The Low Churchmen, of whom Gilbert

Burnet was the ablest, were favourable to the Dissenters. Few in numbers, they were powerful in learning and ability. William, a strict Calvinist, supported them, and the bishops were soon principally Low Churchmen. Naturally the High Churchmen became more and more favourable to the restoration of James.

The revolution in England had been that of Episcopacy against Popery. In Scotland it had been that of Presbyterianism against

Revolution in
Scotland

Popery and Episcopacy. The convention parliament there was almost entirely Presbyterian. It declared that James

had forfeited the crown, and offered it to William and Mary. With the offer there came, as in England, a 'claim of right.' The abolition of Episcopacy, the exclusion of Catholics from the throne, the independence of the judges, the disuse of torture,⁴ were insisted on. William made no opposition. Just as he accepted the will of the church in England, to the disadvantage of the Presbyterians, so in Scotland he accepted the will of the Presbyterian kirk to the disadvantage of the Episcopalians. He was then required to root out all heretics. But he utterly refused to become a persecutor. The demand was withdrawn and the crown accepted. This arrangement satisfied all moderate men. But the favour shown to Presbyterians made the High Churchmen in England still more bitter than before ; while to the extreme Covenanters William was but as Jehu ; for, though he

² The situation was thus expressed : 'Every Whig,' said Nottingham, 'is an enemy of your majesty's prerogative. 'Every Tory,' retorted Shrewsbury, 'is an enemy of your majesty's title.'

³ William was anxious for the comprehension of Dissenters in the Church. But the bill was referred to Convo-

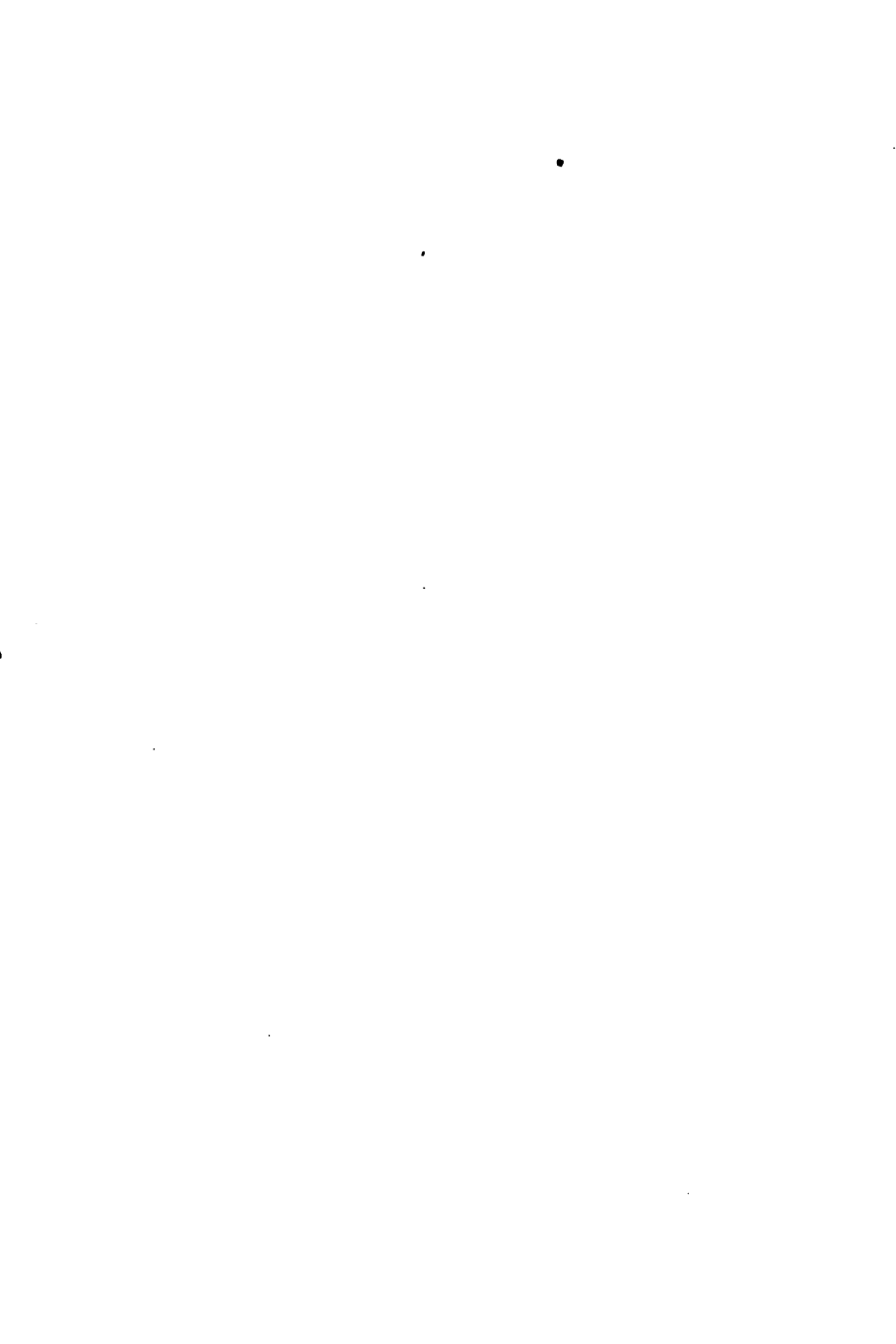
cation, and there defeated by the High Church lower house.

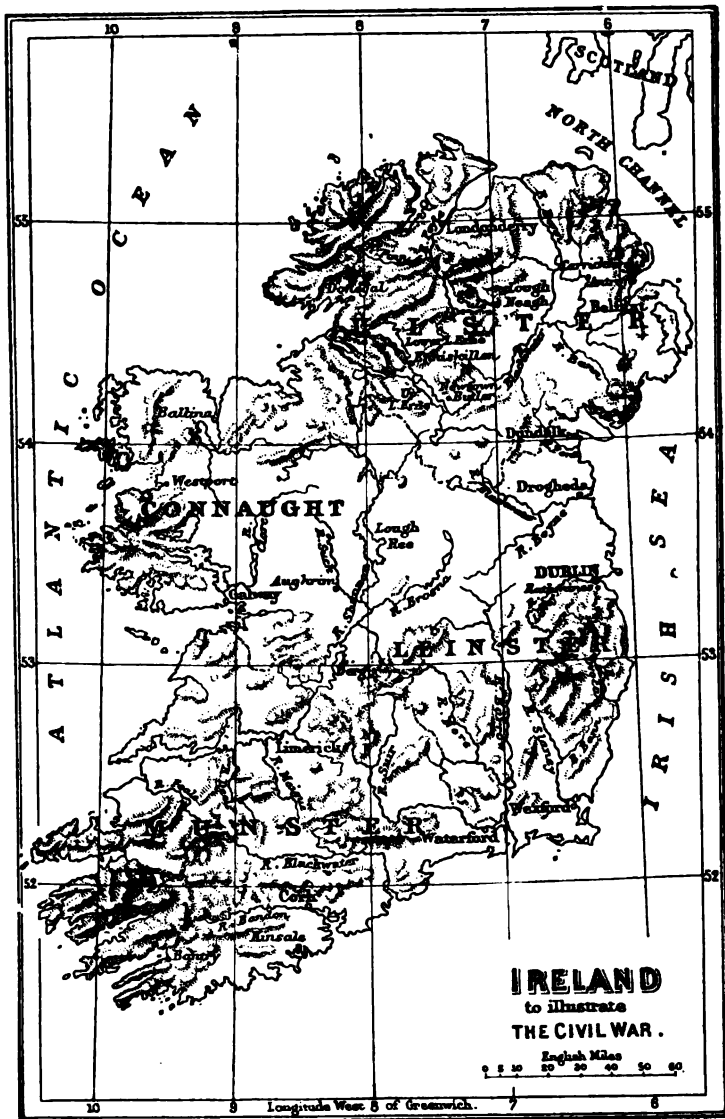
⁴ This had been habitual under the Scotch privy council, and James, when governor of Scotland (p. 811), had been personally concerned in much atrocious cruelty.

had overthrown Episcopacy in their own land, he had upheld it in England.

Among the Highlanders the revolution meant something entirely different. They were really two peoples, bitterly hostile: the Campbells, whose head was the Duke of Argyle; and the MacDonalds, Camerons, and other clans at feud with them. Argyle was a foe to James II.; and the clans opposed to him, though they knew little of English politics, were therefore ready to fight for the dethroned king. James Grahame of Claverhouse, to whom, with the title of Viscount Dundee, James II. had given a commission to command any forces raised for him in Scotland, flew to the Highlands, and gathered these clans around him. With 8,000 Highlanders and a few Irish troops he seized Blair Castle, commanding the northern end of the rugged pass of Killiecrankie. Anxious to defeat him at once, Mackay, William's general, toiled through the pass. On the evening of July 27 Dundee made one headlong charge. Mackay's tired troops were broken and swept down the pass in utter rout. The victory was complete; but it was dearly bought by the death of Dundee. An attack on Dunkeld, at the southern end of the pass, was repulsed after desperate fighting, and the Highland host dispersed. In the spring Mackay built Fort William, in Inverness-shire, to bridle the Highlands, and made several military roads.

William's great danger was in Ireland, whence James was endeavouring, with the help of Louis XIV., to regain his throne. As a Catholic he had the sympathies of the native Irish, who hoped to overthrow the Irish Act of Settlement (pp. 813, 820). James himself was anxious to defer such a revolution until he was firmly re-possessed of his throne, and meanwhile to reconcile the Protestants. But his wishes were not regarded. On May 7 the Irish parliament met. The Protestant members dared not take their seats. James was recognised as king, and all connection with England abjured. James was then forced to assent to the abrogation of the Act of Settlement. The property of 2,500 nobles and gentry was confiscated; the Protestant clergy were ejected, and driven from Trinity College; and the Protestants were everywhere disarmed. With 50,000 men James was soon master of the whole country; Londonderry and Enniskillen on Loch Foyle, and Enniskillen on Loch Erne, alone holding out. To the former James went in person. Lundy, the governor, proved traitor; but the inhabitants would not hear of surrender, and deposed him. The siege began on April 20, 1689. On the 29th James returned to Dublin, leaving the French generals who were serving with him to carry it on. On July 30, when





Longmans, Green & Co., London & New York.

F.S. Waller

the starving garrison were at the utmost extremity, help reached them from England, and James's army had to retreat in confusion. At Enniskillen 5,000 Irish came to the attack. Reinforced by Colonel Wolseley, the garrison took the offensive. At Newton Butler, on July 30, they utterly routed the enemy, killing 1,500 and taking 400 prisoners with all their stores.⁵ In the autumn Marshal Schomberg arrived from England at Carrickfergus with 6,000 men. But the Catholics rallied in Dublin to the number of 30,000, and supplies came from France. Schomberg was obliged to remain behind his entrenchments; while Admiral Herbert, attacking the French fleet in Bantry Bay, was driven off with heavy loss.

On the whole James's prospects were very hopeful; the more so since in England there was ever-increasing confusion. The Whigs were bent on the political persecution of the Tories. Their violence of temper was seen in their patronage of the infamous Titus Oates, who was pardoned, and who actually received a salary of 300*l.* a year. They also attacked both Danby and Halifax. To the Indemnity Bill they attached so large a list of exceptions that it had to be abandoned. The country was angry at the bad administration under Herbert, now earl of Torrington; French war-ships swept the Channel, and captured our merchant-vessels under the very guns of Plymouth. In the session of October 1689, indeed, all parties united to pass the *Bill of Rights*, which confirmed the Declaration. It insisted also that every sovereign should, in full parliament, and at the coronation, deny transubstantiation (p. 307); and that if the reigning sovereign contracted a marriage with a papist, the subject should be freed from allegiance. But then the Whigs resumed their course of violence. They again refused the Indemnity Bill, except with the addition of a bill of pains and penalties; voted impeachments; appointed a murder committee to investigate the responsibility for the deaths of Russell, Sydney, and others (p. 312); brought in a Corporation Bill to restore the charter of London forfeited by 'Quo warranto?' under Charles—not apparently restored by James (p. 322)—and attached to it clauses rendering any one who had had part in the surrender of any charter to Charles II. incapable of holding any office in his borough for seven years, under penalty of 500*l.*, and of holding any public office for life. But, as in 1681, they were ruined by their own violence. The clauses were defeated, and the bill passed without them. Then William, who

⁵ At Killiecrankie Celts defeated Saxons; at Newton Butler Saxons defeated Celts. See Macaulay's comparison of these battles (which were fought in the same week), vol. iii. p. 93.

had threatened to leave the country if they had succeeded in thus ostracising the Tory party, dissolved parliament. A reaction declared itself; the Tories had a large majority in the new elections; and Danby became chief minister.

The revenue was now fixed. Parliament was as jealous of the crown as in the days of Charles II. William, to his intense disgust, was left with only about 800,000*l.* free of parliamentary control, henceforward known as the 'civil list,' since the royal household and a large number of civil offices were paid from it. About 600,000*l.* more from the customs was granted for four years only; and 80,000*l.* a year was given to the Princess Anne. William himself then settled the question of indemnity by sending down an Act of Grace, May 20, 1690, which, as coming from the crown, had either to be rejected or passed at once. The surviving members of the high courts of justice (pp. 279, 280, 284), and thirty of James's most hated agents, were left to the law; but even these exceptions were not carried out.

This vital question settled, William set out for Ireland, having first dealt with a formidable conspiracy, in which Lord Preston, one of James's secretaries, and the late queen were engaged. To guide Mary during his absence he left a council of nine members of both parties, Danby being the president. Scarcely had he embarked when a French fleet entered the Channel. Torrington was ordered to engage it, and a battle took place off Beachy Head, in which the Dutch squadron was shamefully left to be overpowered by numbers while the English looked on from a distance. An invasion of our coasts seemed probable. But the spirit of the nation rose with the danger. London armed at its own expense. Torrington was sent to the Tower. He was afterwards tried by court-martial for cowardice, and, though acquitted, was dismissed by William from the service.

On landing at Carrickfergus, William found that Schomberg had made himself master of Ulster, and that James's army was utterly disorganised. Advancing rapidly through Dundalk, he overtook his rival, on June 30, on the Boyne. James had 80,000 men, but only 10,000 were French regular troops. William had 86,000, all Protestants, drawn from many different nations. The armies encamped on opposite sides of the river. The next morning, July 1, William's right wing crossed the bridge of Slane, a few miles up the river. Schomberg, with the centre, dashed through the stream at Oldbridge. A desperate fight took place in the river itself. Schomberg was killed, and the issue seemed doubtful, when William, in spite of a wound received on the previous evening,

Settlement
of the
revenue.
The civil
list

Act of
Grace

Battle of
Beachy
Head

William in
Ireland

Battle of
the Boyne

passed the river lower down with the cavalry, and by his timely arrival decided the battle. James fled to Dublin, reached Waterford, and thence escaped to France. The battle of the Boyne is memorable as being the last great fight between the rival religions.

William then occupied Dublin and Waterford; but at Limerick he received so severe a check from Sarsfield, the most gallant of Irishmen, that he was obliged to raise the siege. Returning to ^{Marlborough} ^{in Ireland} England, he sent John Churchill, earl of Marlborough, to besiege Cork, and within five weeks Marlborough had accomplished his task.

In June 1691, St. Ruth, a French general, with Sarsfield and Tyrconnel, again took the field for James. But on July 11 he was routed by the Dutch commander Ginkell, at Aughrim in Galway, with a loss of 7,000 men in killed alone. Galway then surrendered, and on August 12 Ginkell began the bombardment of Limerick, which fell on October 1. By the military treaty then made, all the officers and soldiers were allowed to go to France in English transports. By the ^{Treaty of} ^{Limerick} civil treaty, which needed parliamentary sanction, a full amnesty was announced, and Catholics were to enjoy the privileges they had had under Charles II., with permission to carry arms and exercise professions. As long as parliament was not sitting William and his officers loyally carried out these terms; but in 1692, and again in 1695, the Irish parliament, composed of Protestants, shamefully repudiated the Treaty of Limerick, and passed penal laws of such crushing severity that the Catholics could not even attempt further resistance. In 1698 the Act of Settlement was re-enacted.

The settlement of Scotland was defaced by a terrible crime. The task of quieting the Highlands had been given to Lord Breadalbane, a Campbell, who found himself thwarted by M'Ian, chief ^{Glencoe} of the Macdonalds of Glencoe. Pardon was offered to all who, by December 31, should swear allegiance to William and Mary. M'Ian at the last moment appeared at Fort William to take the oaths. Finding no one qualified to administer them he went to Inverary, and was there sworn in on January 6. Breadalbane, Argyle, and Sir John Dalrymple, the lord advocate, saw their opportunity, the two former for private vengeance, the third for ridding the country of some of the 'thieves,' as the Highlanders were called in the Lowlands. The fact that the oaths had been taken was suppressed, and William signed an order for the extirpation of the Macdonalds. Glencoe was then surrounded, and 120 Campbells of Argyle's regiment, with orders 'not to trouble the government with prisoners,' asked for hospitality, which was granted at once, and which was enjoyed for a

fortnight. Before daylight on February 13 they rose upon their sleeping hosts and began the work of slaughter. Between thirty and forty were slain in cold blood; many died of exposure on the bleak hills. For a long time this black treachery escaped notice. Not until 1695 did the Scotch parliament enter upon an inquiry; it then recommended the prosecution of those principally concerned. However guiltless William may have been in signing the first order, it is disgraceful to him that no punishment adequate to the crime was inflicted. Breadalbane was committed for high treason, but was never tried. Dalrymple was merely forced to resign his post.

SECTION 2.—*The War with France to the Treaty of Ryswick.*
Financial Reforms

Meanwhile England was fairly engaged in the first act of the great struggle with France, which was to last, with short respites, until 1815. From boyhood William had been fighting ceaselessly with Louis XIV., and he now put England in the van of all the European powers who were resolved to bring France to her knees. In 1689 he had formed an alliance with Austria, Spain, and the Dutch. Marlborough went out in command of a brigade, and parliament voted two millions for the war. In February 1691 a congress was held at the Hague, at which William presided. But Louis was beforehand; and the allies had not taken the field when he captured the strong fortress of Mons. During the indecisive campaign of 1691 William had to confront treachery at home. A formidable Jacobite conspiracy was discovered in the spring, and suppressed with remarkable leniency. Then followed treason among his own servants. Marlborough not only furnished James with details of the plan of campaign and the strength of the English army, but offered to carry over to Louis the forces under his command. But when the time came he evaded his promise, and the disappointed Jacobites betrayed him to William. The king did not publish his knowledge of the plot, but dismissed Marlborough on other pretexts from all his offices. This led to a rupture with the Princess Anne, who was completely under the influence of Marlborough's wife, and who now, with her husband, left the court. Then Fuller, a disciple of Oates, accused Halifax of being in James's interest, and named more than fifty leading men who had signed an address to Louis. But careful examination proved the whole statement to be an imposture; and Fuller was fined, imprisoned, and pilloried.

Louis determined to invade England during William's absence. He hoped that Russell would desert with the fleet. James issued

a declaration so foolish that the government thought best to reprint it with comments and send it throughout the country. A fleet of ninety vessels was soon equipped; and the sailors were roused to enthusiasm by a letter from Mary, which Russell read out to the captains. Russell himself, though attached to James, had no intention of letting an English fleet be beaten. On May 19, 1692, was won the great battle of La Hogue, a victory which ranks with the defeat of the Armada and with Trafalgar; and this was followed by the destruction of six men-of-war in Cherbourg harbour under the very eyes of James.

On land matters went less favourably. Louis, again first in the field, captured Namur, the strongest fortress in the Netherlands, in spite of all William's efforts. The king was then pitted against

Luxembourg, the ablest marshal of France. At Steinkirk he surprised and nearly routed Luxembourg. But after a desperate fight the charge of the French household brigade drove back the English regiments, five of which, through the incapacity of Solmes, a Dutch general, were cut to pieces. The discovery that a plot had been hatched in the French foreign office to assassinate William took men's thoughts somewhat from this disaster. All felt that the war must be carried on with vigour, and that for this

purpose the revenue must be increased. Two great measures were therefore passed. A new land valuation was made, and a tax of four shillings in the pound was levied on the increased rentals, producing two millions a year.⁶ But even so another million was needed. In January 1693 Montague, a commissioner of the

treasury, proposed to raise a loan for this amount, the interest being defrayed by new duties on liquors. This interest was to be paid in annuities, so that when the annuitants died the debt would be extinguished. This was the beginning of our National Debt.⁷ The rest of the session was spent in abortive attempts at parliamentary reform. The Place Bill, to exclude all servants of the crown from parliament, as being exposed to corrupting influences, was lost in the Lords. William himself vetoed a new Triennial Bill, providing

⁶ This tax was voted annually until 1798, when it was made permanent. A great part has since been redeemed for a lump sum, and at present about a fiftieth only of the revenue is raised in this way.

⁷ As the war went on the same plan was adopted, until at the Peace of Utrecht in 1713 the debt was fifty millions. As commerce increased, and confidence grew in the stability of the

country, people were more and more glad to lend money to the government, until at the end of the great Napoleonic war the national debt was more than 800,000,000*l*. So long as the government can pay the interest on the national debt without difficulty it is stable; and if, as has happened in other countries, it were obliged to repudiate the payment, it would be bankrupt.—Macaulay, vol. iii. p. 611.

that no future parliament should last more than three years, as trenching on his prerogative (pp. 261 and 301, *note*). The expiring law for the censorship of the press was renewed for two years only.

James now put out a fresh declaration, in which he promised, if restored to the throne, to give up every point of the dispute. So complete a surrender merely excited universal derision. In June William again took the field. On July 19 was fought the battle of Landen of Landen, or Neerwinden, in which, despite his splendid personal courage, he was again defeated by Luxembourg, after a long day of carnage. But William was never so great as at the moment of defeat. In three weeks he was once more at the head of an army full of fight; while the exhaustion of France compelled Louis to think of peace.

The conduct of the Tories, who were now beginning to oppose our taking so leading a part in a Continental war, led to a very important change in the system of government. Hitherto the ministers were merely the king's servants, chosen without direct reference

to parliament; and William's object had been to keep the balance between parties. Now, however, he determined to rely solely upon the Whigs. They had placed him on the throne, and they were the advocates of the war. Since their defeat at the polls in 1690 they had been growing stronger every day in parliament, under the direction of the 'Junto' (p. 297), a small knot of able men. Before long William had made such changes that Danby, now Earl of Caermarthen, and Godolphin were the only Tories in office; and the modern idea of a ministry formed out of the party which had a parliamentary majority was fairly started⁸ (p. 287, *note*).

The need of money for the war had another effect of the greatest moment. Montague suggested that a loan of 1,200,000*l.* should be raised at a rate of 8 per cent. guaranteed by the government; the subscribers being formed into a corporation known as the

'Governor and Company of the Bank of England.' Thus a national bank was created, in which people placed their money, and from which the government could at any time draw supplies at 8 per cent., instead of borrowing from individuals or the Corporation of London. This became a great source of strength to William. The trading classes were chiefly Whigs. Every member of the Corporation knew that both his principal and his 8 per cent.

⁸ The Whigs were not actually a majority until the next parliament. For party government, see Erskine May, *Const. Hist. of England*, vol. ii. ch. viii., and especially page 92; and Lecky, *History of England*, vol. iii. p. 106.

depended upon the stability of William's government; for James, had he returned, would doubtless have repudiated a debt incurred to support his rival. Everyone, also, who had placed his money there became an adherent of the established government. The credit of the Stuarts had been ruined by such deeds as the 'Stop of the Exchequer' and the illegal exactions of James II.; that of William was secured by the Bank of England. To conciliate the Whigs still further William assented to the Triennial Bill (p. 388), December 1694; the press was freed from censorship, and corrupt practices in parliament were largely checked. Caermarthen, now Duke of Leeds, was ordered to be impeached for taking bribes, but escaped from want of evidence.

During 1694 the war had languished; the French, for the first time, making no progress. At sea, through Marlborough's treachery, an expedition against Brest failed. The next year showed that the tide had turned. Luxembourg was dead, and had left no great Successes of successor. Helped by the Bank of England, William did England great things. By the recapture of Namur, September 1, 1695, he broke through an almost continuous record of defeat; while the English fleet rode triumphant over all seas. With the prestige of this success he dissolved parliament, and a majority was returned at the new elections pledged to the war policy.

The death of Mary, December 28, 1694, was a grievous blow to William. Without intellect of a high order, she had completely won Death of him by her loyalty, her gentleness, and her tact. By the Mary court, also, she was beloved, and she had done all in her power to lessen the bitterness of religious controversy. Her death brought one advantage. Anne was now certain to succeed, and Marlborough would then be supreme. He therefore attempted no more disloyalty. The Jacobites held the moment favourable for a fresh Assassination plot. attempt upon William's life. But the plot was betrayed, and the leaders executed. Disgust at the baseness of the The Association attempt caused all regular opposition to cease; and an association was formed, as in the days of Elizabeth (p. 228), signed by nearly the whole parliament, to avenge William's life if he were killed, and to maintain the succession.

An additional safeguard for liberty, prompted no doubt by the scandals of Charles II.'s reign, was secured by this parliament.

After three unsuccessful attempts, the Treason Bill was Treason Act passed. The act laid down: (1) that a copy of the indictment should be furnished to the prisoner; (2) that he should be allowed counsel (p. 246); (3) that two witnesses on oath should,

within three years of the alleged offence, give evidence to the indictment; (4) that a list of the jury should be given to the prisoner; (5) that he should have the privilege of calling witnesses on his own behalf.

The National Debt Act and the Bank of England Act had been meanwhile followed up by a third great financial measure. The silver coinage, not being milled, was subject to continual depreciation by clipping, often to the extent of half its weight, in spite of the horrible penalties attached to the practice. By the Coinage Act the clipped money was all called in; a tax upon windows defrayed the loss incurred by recoinage;⁹ and the old money was accepted in payment of taxes. The new coinage, carefully milled, was issued under the direction of Sir Isaac Newton, the great philosopher, who became master of the Mint.

That England could, in spite of the drain of war and of the distress caused by a succession of bad harvests, undertake so vast a reform, must have struck Louis XIV. with envy; for he could raise no more from his impoverished country, and he knew, in his own phrase, that 'the last piece of gold would win.' After another indecisive campaign he offered acceptable terms. On September 10, 1697, England, Spain, and the Dutch made peace with Louis at Ryswick; and on October 30 the emperor also complied. England and France agreed that each should restore the conquests made in America, that Louis should respect the existing government, and that William should cease from encouraging French Protestants in rebellion. When William returned to London he was greeted with an enthusiastic welcome. England was proud of the part she had played in guarding the liberties of Europe. Commerce had been rapidly developing. The great financial measures had restored public credit, and there was peace at home and abroad.

SECTION 3.—*The Spanish Succession. Death of William*

With peace came new trouble. William was anxious to keep on foot a large part of the army. But the hatred of a standing army (p. 289) was as strong as ever. Every member knew that he must vote against this if he wished to be returned at the next election. While, therefore, maintaining the navy in full strength, the Commons reduced the army to 10,000 men, and the Mutiny Act (p. 326) was not renewed. At the same time, however, they increased William's income, and strengthened his position by several severe laws against declared Jacobites.

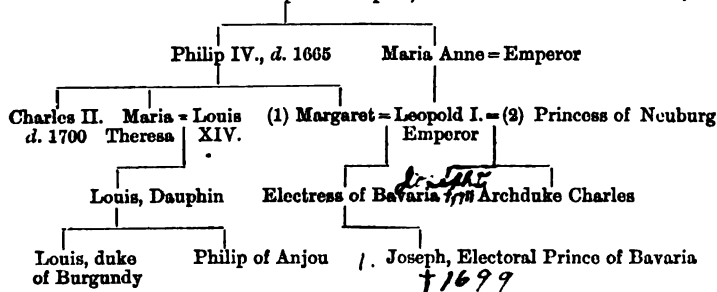
⁹ Houses where the absence of windows is noticeable will generally be found to have been built subsequently to this act.

Suddenly the peace of Europe was again threatened by the prospect of the death of Charles II. of Spain without heirs. To his world-wide dominions¹⁰ there were three claimants. (1) First in blood was the Dauphin, son of Louis XIV. and Maria Theresa, the eldest daughter of Philip IV. Both she and her husband had renounced their rights at marriage; but Louis had easily found reasons for holding this renunciation invalid. (2) The Emperor Leopold, duke of Austria, son of Philip IV.'s sister Maria Anne, who had made no renunciation. (3) Joseph, Electoral Prince of Bavaria, grandson of Leopold and Margaret, Philip's youngest daughter. He, as the least powerful, was also the least dangerous; in the other cases either France and Spain, or Austria and Spain, would be joined. After prolonged negotiation, Louis agreed to support him, if the Dauphin received Guipuscoa, Naples, Sicily, and some small Italian islands; while the Duchy of Milan was to go to the emperor's son by a second wife—the Archduke Charles; the emperor himself being regent of Spain during his grandson's minority. This was the First Partition Treaty.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE XIV

THE SPANISH SUCCESSION

Philip III. of Spain, *d.* 1621



By the Triennial Act parliament now came to an end. With peace had come a Tory reaction, and in December 1698 the Tories had a majority. To William's bitter anger, they once more reduced the army, to 7,000 men, though still providing amply for the navy. They attacked the ministers and the naval administration, and passed a bill appointing commissioners to investigate the grants made by William

¹⁰ *I.e.*, Spain, the Netherlands, the Duchy of Milan, Mexico, Peru, Chili, kingdoms of Naples and Sicily, and the Cuba, and the Philippine Islands.

to his Dutch friends from forfeited lands in Ireland, to the amount of 1,700,000 acres; 'tacking' the bill, as it was called, to the annual Land Tax Bill, so that the Lords must pass or reject both at once. Parliament was then prorogued until November 1699.

In the interval the Electoral Prince died. This made a fresh partition treaty necessary. It was now agreed between France and England that the Archduke Charles should be heir to Spain and Spanish America, while Louis took the Milanese in addition to the countries ceded him by the first treaty. Against this disposal of her without her own consent Spain vehemently protested; all the more as she had at the time special causes of grievance against England.¹¹

When the Commons met in November 1699, they were in no better temper than before. They again attacked the king's ministers, especially his great lord chancellor, Lord Somers, and Bishop Burnet, who was hated by the High Churchmen. Upon the commissioners' report the Commons passed a bill for annulling the Irish grants, and for vesting in trustees all Irish property belonging to the crown at the accession of James II., or since forfeited. To ensure its passing the Lords they again 'tacked' it to the Land Bill. William consented to it perforce, in the utmost anger, and immediately prorogued parliament again. In July 1700 the young Duke of Gloucester, the last of Anne's children, suddenly died. A further provision for the succession was thus rendered necessary. By the *Second Act of Settlement, 1701*, it was laid down that after the death of William and Anne, if no children were left, the crown should go to Sophia, the aged Electress of Hanover, daughter of Elizabeth, the daughter of James I. (pp. 232, 239). But conditions were attached, some of which vastly increased the supremacy of parliament. (1) The sovereign must be a

¹¹ Between her northern and southern possessions in America lay the Isthmus of Darien, which she had left unoccupied. Paterson, a Scotchman, suggested to his countrymen the project, founded upon the success of the East India Company, of placing a colony there, with the idea of commanding the trade which would pass across the isthmus between Asia and Europe, instead of rounding the Cape of Good Hope. The soil and sea were rich and productive, the climate delightful, and there were rumours of vast wealth of precious metals. In June 1695 the Scotch parliament formed the

Darien Company, with a monopoly of the trade with Asia, Africa, and America. The shares were eagerly bought up. The scheme was opposed in England, as likely to damage her own trade. The Scotch were all the more determined. On July 25, 1698, 1,300 settlers sailed; and in August 1699, 1,300 more went to join them. They found that the first colony had disappeared under disease, famine, and the attacks of the Spaniards. The second body fared as badly; and on April 11, 1700, a few wretched survivors departed from the ill-fated spot. See Macaulay, vol. iv. p. 476.

Resumption
of Irish
lands

Second Act
of Settlem-
ent

member of the Church of England as by law established. (2) If the crown should fall to anyone not a native of England (as the Electress), the consent of parliament should be necessary before the nation engaged in war for the defence of any land not belonging to the crown of England. (3) The sovereign should not be allowed to leave the country (as William had done) without permission from parliament. (4) The whole privy council (and not a cabal) were to be consulted, and were to sign the resolutions adopted. (5) No foreigners (as Dutchmen) were to hold civil or military posts. (6) No one holding a crown office or pension might sit in parliament (p. 333).

(7) Judges were to be deprived of office only upon an address from both houses (see *note*),¹² (8) No pardon under the Great Seal could henceforth be claimed in bar of a parliamentary impeachment (pp. 309, 325). These conditions were to take effect at the accession of the House of Hanover.

In November 1700 Charles II. died. It was found that Louis, false to the treaty, had induced him to leave his whole dominions to the Dauphin's younger son, Philip of Anjou. Gross as was the treachery of Louis, it did not bring about war. Since Philip was the younger son, there was no danger of the union of France and Spain; nor were the English enthusiastic for the Partition Treaty, on account of the great advantages it conferred on France. Philip V. of Spain was therefore acknowledged by England and the Dutch. But then Louis roused the anger of all parties in England by inducing the Spaniards to acquiesce in his garrisoning several towns in the Spanish Netherlands, hitherto part of the barrier against French aggression towards the north-east. To keep the Netherlands out of the power of France had, ever since the days of Edward III., been the desire of England (p. 118). Public opinion swung round rapidly. Petitions poured in to the Commons to support the alliance which William had at once made with the Dutch, and which, in September 1701, was joined by the emperor.

¹² By this provision the independence, and therefore the purity, of the judicial bench is secured. Hitherto there had been no law and no constant practice on the subject. There were two forms of words in which the judges' commissions had been drawn. By the one they held office 'Quamdiu se bene gesserint'—i.e. during good behaviour; by the other 'durante placito'—i.e. at the discretion of the crown. Under James I. it was 'durante placito.' Charles I., at the beginning of the

Long Parliament, adopted the 'quamdiu' form. Charles II. went back to 'durante placito,' and the servility of the judges and the degradation of justice were most marked. William restored the 'quamdiu' form, and parliament now took care to lay down the most important doctrine in the English administration of justice. The judges still gave up office at the death of the sovereign. The last step was taken when this restriction also was put an end to, in the first year of George III.

Only ten days later James II. died. By recognising his son as king of England, Louis made the renewal of war certain. The army and navy were each raised to 40,000 men. With the prospect of war came a Whig reaction. William seized the moment to dissolve parliament; and the new elections returned him a Whig majority, prepared to go to all lengths against France.¹³ They attainted the pretender of high treason; declared it high treason to correspond with him; and passed an act imposing an oath, called the *Abjuration Oath*, upon all civil officers, ecclesiastics, members of the universities, and schoolmasters, by which William was acknowledged lawful and rightful king, and any right or title in the pretended Prince of Wales was denied. Hereditary right was, as it were, pulled from its grave and buried again. No peace was to be made with Louis until he had given satisfaction for the insult. William was indefatigable in preparation. Prussia joined the Quadruple Alliance, and William was ready to take command in April. But on February 20, 1702, while he was hunting, his horse stumbled on a mole-hill and threw him. His collar-bone was broken, and he was otherwise hurt. The fever to which he was annually subject attacked him while thus weakened. On March 7 he performed his last official act by affixing, with a stamp prepared for the purpose, his signature to the Abjuration Act. On the 8th he died, in the fifty-second year of his life.

Death of
James II.
Louis recog-
nises the
pretender

Death of
William

Summary of the Seventeenth Century

It is only by looking back to the beginning of the seventeenth century that we can see what its work had been. The sixteenth had been the century of despotism, and, as such, had set before the nation certain questions to which the revolution of 1689 and the reign of William furnish the answers. Had Elizabeth been succeeded by sovereigns as great-hearted and as English as herself, who could say, as she said, 'Nothing, no worldly thing under the sun, is so dear to Us as the love and goodwill of Our subjects,' the answer would no doubt have been a very different one, and, at any rate, given in a very different way.

From the day when, on entering the kingdom, James I. hung a thief without trial (p. 233), to the establishment of the independence of the judges in 1701, the claim, practically enforced by the Tudors, to the power of arbitrary arrest, had been under discussion; we have seen

¹³ Fresh ideas must from time to time be attached to the terms 'Whig' and 'Tory.' But the main differences were at present that the Whigs fa-

voured dissent, and were the war party; the Tories upheld the exclusiveness of the church, and were opposed to the war.

the successive steps in the Petition of Right, the abolition of the Star Chamber and High Commission Courts, the decision of 1670 in favour of the rights of juries, and the Habeas Corpus Act of 1679. So, also, from the day when Bate refused to pay the duty on currants in 1607, to the condemnation in 1689 of James II.'s illegal exactions, the answer had been given to the claim to exact money by the use of the prerogative; and the doctrine of 'appropriation of supplies' had placed the spending as well as the raising of money, at least nominally, in the hands of parliament. The Tudors had left the constitution of the church doubtful; the century was one of intense religious ferment and strife, and the doubt was removed by the failure of the Comprehension Bill and the passing of the Toleration Act in 1689. Puritanism, which had sprung to fresh life under the folly of James I., allied itself with the parliamentary spirit under Charles I. Its tolerant side, with the sword in its hand, fell into bitter strife with the intolerant side, and in so doing became divorced from parliament. It triumphed, but in its triumph was its ruin. The Restoration restored above all the parliament; and then Puritanism and the parliament were no longer in union. Puritanism seemed to wither away as a political force, though not until it had left an ineffaceable stamp upon the character and literature of the nation. The foreign Stuarts had done their best, with the enthusiastic and unscrupulous help of the church, to uphold the doctrine of Divine right; and the same church joined with another foreigner to dismiss a king because he was a Catholic, and in so doing to send the doctrine of Divine right to the winds. At the beginning of the century no one dreamed that the armed forces of the nation could be under any other sway than that of the crown; but before the end of it they had quietly passed to that of the Commons. The century saw the supremacy of parliament recognised by law; and it saw the final and practical reassertion of the doctrines of Magna Carta.

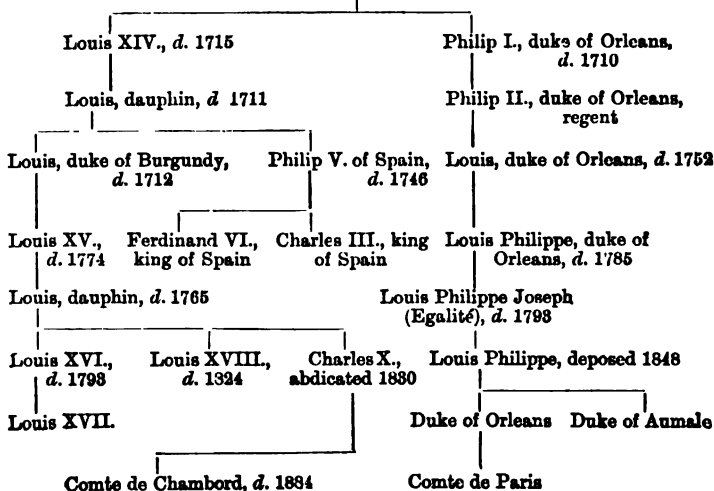
Dates of Reign of William III

	A.D.		A.D.
High Church and Low Church	1689	Coinage Act	1696
Bill of Rights	1689	Peace of Ryswick	1697
Battles of Killiecrankie and the		Partition Treaties	1698, 1700
Boyne	1690	Second Act of Settlement, and	
Glencoe	1692	Independence of the Judges	1701
Battle of La Hogue	1692	Alliance against Louis	1701
National Debt	1693	Death of William	1702
Bank of England	1694		

GENEALOGICAL TABLE XV

KINGS OF FRANCE

Louis XIII



CHAPTER II

ANNE. 1702-1714. GREAT BRITAIN

SECTION 1.—*Politics decided by the War.*

THE accession of Anne satisfied at once the Tory sentiment of hereditary right and the Whig sentiment of parliamentary election. The High Church party especially rejoiced, for she was known to be, above all, a good churchwoman. The nation as a whole, which had borne with one foreign sovereign and looked forward to another, welcomed her declaration that her heart was entirely English. She was a woman of irreproachable private life, but devoid of strength either of intellect or character.

A Tory ministry was at once appointed. But the dominant facts were that the war, to which Anne pledged herself at the coronation, was a Whig war; that in it Marlborough could alone find scope for his

ambition and genius ; and that in all but purely church questions she was a mere puppet in his hands. The difference between the views of the strong Tories and Marlborough was soon shown. Marlborough, the Tories, and the war Rochester, the queen's uncle (pp. 817, 820), urged that England should enter the contest merely as an auxiliary ; Marlborough insisted upon her being a principal in the war, and had his way. War was declared May 4, 1702, and Rochester angrily resigned his office of Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, 1703.

In the parliament which met six months after the accession the High Church had a majority of two to one. They struck forthwith at dissent, their hatred for which, necessarily suppressed under William, was the keener because the fear of the Catholics was now past, and dissent was the only antagonist of the church. During William's reign Occasional Nonconformists had been allowed to hold office, in spite of Conformity the Test and Corporation Acts, by occasionally conforming to the established worship. The *Occasional Conformity* Bill forbade this under ruinous fines. Favoured by the queen, it passed with large majorities in the Commons. The Lords, however, led by Marlborough and Godolphin, added amendments so unpalatable that the Bill was dropped ; and the same thing happened in 1703.¹

The war had meanwhile been actively carried on ; and so marked had Marlborough's success been on the Upper Rhine and in the Netherlands, where his great exploit was the capture of Campaigns of 1702-1703 Liège, that on his return he was thanked by parliament and created a duke by Anne. At sea our fleet had sacked Port St. Mary near Cadiz, and burnt part of the Spanish Plate fleet. In 1703, in spite of the sluggishness of the Dutch, Marlborough captured Bonn and other places on the Rhine. But on the Danube the French, joined by the Elector of Bavaria, were preparing to crush the emperor, who was distracted by a revolt in Hungary. In Italy, also, they were very strong. Louis, however, was hampered at home by a Protestant insurrection ; the Duke of Savoy, who held the passes between France and Italy, had declared against him ; so had Portugal, who had con-

¹ The antagonism between the Tory Commons and the Lords, who maintained the principles of the Revolution, was shown when the former passed a bill giving a year of grace to those who were required to take the abjuration oath, and when the Lords added an amendment making it high treason to try to defeat the succession as settled. It was rendered still keener in 1708 by the Aylesbury election dis-

pute. The Commons took up their old ground (p. 236) that they had exclusive cognizance of all questions relating to the election of members. The Lords maintained that a man whose vote is refused by the returning officer might bring an action before them as the highest court of appeal. As in the Skinner case, the matter was never settled, but the Lords tacitly gave up their claim.

cluded a treaty with England arranged by Methuen, the English agent at Lisbon, by which she admitted our woollen manufactures, while we charged a duty on her wines only two-thirds of that upon those of France.³ And in September 1704 the Archduke Charles was escorted to Lisbon by an English fleet, under the title of Charles III. of Spain.

Before taking the field again in 1704, Marlborough insisted upon a ministry being formed upon which he could rely. The violent Tories

The anti-war party in the ministry dismissed were therefore dismissed. Harley, his personal friend, succeeded Nottingham as secretary of state; and Henry St. John, a young man of splendid talent, became secretary at

war. Lord Godolphin (p. 311), another intimate friend, upon whose appointment as lord high treasurer Marlborough had alone consented to take the command of the army, retained his post. It was a critical moment, for the destruction of the emperor seemed certain. He was crippled by the Hungarian rebellion; the Elector of Bavaria was master of the Danube, and Marshal Tallard with a large French

Marlborough army was about to join him. But the fate of Europe was changed by the genius of Marlborough. Concealing his plans from all but Godolphin and his wife, he induced the Dutch to let their forces accompany him for a campaign, as they thought, on the Moselle. Then, boldly leaving the French garrisons in his rear, he made a forced march to the Danube, destroyed a Bavarian army in a severe battle at Donauwerth, and joined the emperor's general, Prince Eugene of Savoy. On August 13, 1704, they fell upon

Blenheim the French and Bavarians at the village of Blenheim, on the left bank of the Danube, and overthrew them utterly.

This, the first French defeat since 1643, was one of the decisive battles of the world. It prevented the destruction of the Austrian power, the probable invasion of England, and the possible restoration of the line of James II., and it set a limit once for all to French supremacy on the Continent until the time of Napoleon. Laden with honours from the emperor, Marlborough returned to receive the thanks of parliament, with the royal manor of Woodstock, upon which was erected

Gibraltar the palace of Blenheim at the public expense, and a pension to himself and his descendants. On the sea England gained that which was of more importance than Blenheim: by a sudden assault Admirals Rooke and Cloudesley Shovel captured Gibraltar.

For the third time the Tories, whose bitterness was satirized by Daniel Defoe in his 'Shortest Way with Dissenters,' had brought in the Occasional Conformity Bill. To beat down the resistance of the

³ It was from this that the habit of drinking port wine instead of claret began in England. But it was noticed that the desire for the wines of France sensibly strengthened the opposition to Marlborough and the war.

Lords they proposed to 'tack' it (p. 838) to the Subsidy Bill. But the Whigs and moderate men succeeded in defeating this violence; and parliament was at once dissolved, April 1705.

SECTION 2.—*The Marlborough-Godolphin Ministry. Succession War, and Triumph of the Whigs. Union with Scotland.*

1705-1710

The war spirit, excited by Marlborough's triumph, was at full height, and the new elections therefore returned a Whig majority. A ministry was formed around Marlborough and Godolphin and pledged to the war, and, with the exception of Harley and St. John, composed entirely of Whigs. Cloudesley Shovel, a Whig, was in command of the fleet.

During 1705 fighting was indecisive. The chief interest lay in Spain, where the French failed to recapture Gibraltar, the investing squadron being attacked and dispersed by Admiral Leake; and where in October the gallant and wayward Earl of Peterborough, the 'last of the knights-errant,' landed with 5,000 men at Valencia with Charles III., and by a most daring exploit captured Barcelona, a place of great strength.³ In parliament the

Whigs passed the Regency Bill, which provided for the death of the queen without issue. It declared that the privy council should proclaim her successor without delay that the seven great officers of state should be charged with the government until the arrival of the new sovereign; that with them should be joined others nominated by the heir in a sealed document, of which copies were to be kept by the lord chancellor, the primate, and the minister of the heir resident in England. At the same time the clause in the

Act of Settlement excluding office holders from sitting in the House of Commons (p. 839) was modified. A certain number of offices were named as absolutely disqualifying the holders; the acceptance of any other office vacated the seat, but the holder might be re-elected; and this has remained the law to the present day.

Rochester and Nottingham now raised the cry of 'the church in danger.' The Whigs in reply carried resolutions that 'the church is in a most safe and flourishing condition,' and that those who asserted the contrary were enemies to the queen, the church, and the kingdom.' The queen was then forced to express her intention of punishing with severity the promoters of such reports.

A memorable year now opened. Marlborough forced the line of

³ For Peterborough, see Macaulay's Essay on the Succession in Spain.

defences which the French had erected from Antwerp to Namur, and by the decisive, though easily won, victory of Ramillies, May 23,

1706, over Marshal Villeroi, and the subsequent reduction of the French garrisons, drove them from the Netherlands; while Eugene cleared them out of Italy at Superga, September 7. In Spain Peterborough had continued his meteor-like course, and an army of English and Portuguese under the Earl of Galway and Las Minas had entered Madrid and proclaimed Charles III. But the feeling of the country was generally in favour of Philip V.; and the allies were shortly forced to retreat upon Portugal, leaving their conquests in the hands of Louis's general, the Duke of Berwick, a natural son of James II.; while Peterborough, who was by this time on bad terms with every other leader with whom he had to act, and who had not heard of Superga, sailed to north Italy to help the Duke of Savoy.

Meanwhile Louis, anxious for peace, had offered to give up Spain and India to Charles III., to recognise Anne, and to cede the barrier of fortresses on his north-east (p. 839), if Philip might retain Naples, Sicily, and Milan. The Dutch were anxious to close with so reasonable an offer; but Anne, at Marlborough's bidding, refused it, and the war went on. Marlborough was again given the thanks of parliament, with an additional 8,000*l.* a year. The Tory opponents of the war were struck off the privy council. Whigs were promoted to all vacant posts; and above all Anne was obliged to appoint Sunderland, Marlborough's son-in-law, for whom she had an intense dislike, to the secretaryship of state.

But that which especially made this year and the next 'wonderful' was the union with Scotland. England wanted safety on her borders; Scotland wanted development of her commerce.

But the Scotch remembered bitterly their humiliation at the hands of England, especially under Cromwell. Their pride revolted at the idea of loss of nationality and repute among foreign nations (p. 200). The nobles were jealous of their importance. The Presbyterians were scandalised at the thought of union with a country which maintained an Episcopal church. In 1702, however, commissioners had been appointed. They agreed on the great principles of the Hanoverian succession and one parliament; but the treaty broke down over matters of finance and trade. At this moment the whole Presbyterian body was stirred to the utmost by the plea of the queen for protection of Episcopalians in Scotland, and by her recommendation to the ministers to live with them in brotherly love. These words, it was declared, proved the intention of England to force Episcopacy upon

them. The Scotch parliament therefore passed an act ratifying Presbyterianism, and refusing to recognise any other church; and another making it high treason to impugn any article in their Claim of Right (p. 327). No sovereign after Anne might make peace or war without the consent of parliament. All restrictions upon the import of French wines into Scotland were removed, though England and France were at war. Finally an Act of Security was passed, which debarred the same succession in Scotland as in England, unless the religion and trade of the Scottish nation were fully secured. The queen granted the former acts, but refused assent to the Act of Security.

The proposal of this act, though intended to make union impossible, actually, by the prospect of confusion which it opened out, made it inevitable. In July 1704 it was again passed by the Scotch, and Act of Security this time Godolphin induced Anne to assent to it. The English government then determined to retaliate in such a way that Scotland should be literally starved into union. An act was passed that after Christmas Day 1705, unless the question of succession had been already settled, all Scotchmen, not regular inhabitants of England, or serving in the army or navy, should be treated as aliens; and the import of all Scotch staple products into England should cease. Hereupon the Scots, after looking in vain to France for help, gave way. By July 1706 they had agreed upon the terms to be submitted to the two parliaments.⁴

To avoid any appearance of pressure from England, these conditions were first laid before the Scotch parliament. To meet Presbyterian scruples a fresh Act of Security was passed, declaring the Presbyterian church government unalterable and the only church government in Scotland; exacting an oath from the sovereign to this effect, and a profession of uniformity from all professors and schoolmasters. In January 1707 the Union passed in the Scotch parliament; in February in that of England; and on March 6 it received

⁴ (1) England and Scotland were henceforth to be one kingdom, known as 'Great Britain,' with one parliament; the Act of Settlement was to be maintained. The crosses of St. George and St. Andrew were to be united, the national arms quartered, and a new Great Seal made. Scotland was to send 45 members to the Commons to England's 513, and 16 peers by election to England's 185—more than one-twelfth of the whole, though her contributions to the taxation would be but one-fortieth. (2) The same laws were to rule taxation and trade in both

countries, though out of consideration for the poverty of Scotland she was to be exempt from some taxes for a time; and to make up for any immediate loss she was granted an 'equivalent' of 400,000*l.*, of which the greater part was devoted to relieve the Darien shareholders. Finally, the heritable jurisdictions—much valued by the nobles—were to remain, with her whole legal system. Not a word was said about the church. Any attempt to touch Presbyterianism would have wrecked the treaty at once, and it was expressly excluded from debate.

the royal assent. The strength of England was doubled; and Scotland, from being the poorest nation in Europe, soon became rich and prosperous.

There was, however, much discontent left in Scotland; and the knowledge of this induced the pretender to attempt a landing. But Admiral Byng was sent in pursuit, the landing was frustrated, and the expedition returned ignominiously to France.

During 1707 Spain was again the scene of failure. The commanders of the allies quarrelled; Galway and Las Minas were crushed by Berwick at Almanza, April 25; and Catalonia was soon all that was left to Charles III. Any disaster in the war tended to weaken Marlborough at home. But he was now also being attacked by one of those back-stair intrigues which always flourish under a weak sovereign. Anne had found courage to revolt against the domination of Marlborough's wife, and had transferred her intimacy to Abigail Hill, a poor relation for whom the duchess had obtained a post at court. Harley was Abigail's cousin, and he made use of her to aid him in supplanting Marlborough and Godolphin. But this only gave the Whigs the chance of compelling these two ministers to join them without reserve. They allied themselves with the High Tories, such as Nottingham, and passed a resolution which would have limited the war to Spain. Marlborough and Godolphin at once gave the pledges required; the Whigs threw over the Tories, and, by raising a report that Harley was in communication with France, drew upon him such a storm of obloquy that he was compelled to resign the secretaryship, February 1708. St. John went with him, and the ministry was now a purely Whig one, the latest of the recruits being Robert Walpole, who took St. John's place as secretary of war.

This meant a vigorous prosecution of the war. Louis had made a supreme effort. Four great armies were sent out to the Netherlands, Italy, the Rhine, and Spain. Marshal Vendôme surprised Ghent and Bruges, but was overthrown at Oudenarde, July 11, by Marlborough and Eugene, who then invested and took Lille, December 9, upon which the famous engineer Vauban had expended his utmost skill, and recaptured Ghent and Bruges. Sardinia and Minorca were seized by General Stanhope in the name of Charles III., and the latter, with its splendid harbour, became an English possession at the Peace of Utrecht, 1713. Peace was again possible, had the allies been moderate. The state of France was appalling. Crushing taxation and famine were depopulating the country. An intense frost, lasting for five weeks,

had destroyed the orchards, olive gardens, and vineyards. The death-rate had doubled, the birth-rate decreased. Louis was willing to come to terms of the most humiliating character. But then the demand was made that he should aid in turning Philip out of Spain. This was too much for his pride. 'If I must fight,' he answered, 'I prefer to fight against my enemies rather than against my children.' Once more he appealed to his country, and the country gallantly replied. Villars, with 100,000 men, marched to relieve Mons. But it was in vain. At Malplaquet, on September 11, 1709, was fought a terrible battle, in which Marlborough and Eugene triumphed once more, though the half-starved French fought with such desperation behind their entrenchments that they inflicted on the allies a loss of 20,000 men—double their own. Mons then fell. The misfortunes of France were relieved only in the Peninsula, where Galway was once more defeated, May 17, at La Guardia in Portugal. On his return Marlborough asked for the commandership-in-chief for life. But Anne steadily refused, and was supported by that dread of military despotism which was the abiding result of Cromwell's rule.

SECTION 3.—*Fall of the Whigs, and the consequent Peace of Utrecht.*
Harley and Bolingbroke

The triumph of the Whigs had been complete; but it had been purchased by the alienation of the queen, and the enmity of the High Church party had grown continually keener. The union with a Presbyterian country and an act for the naturalisation of foreign Protestants, who were chiefly Nonconformists, had increased the bitterness; and at this moment an opportunity occurred for an outburst.

Henry Sacheverell, rector of St. Saviour's, Southwark, had preached two violent High Church sermons, in which the church was declared in danger, the bishops and government abused, revolution doctrines reviled, and non-resistance and passive obedience upheld. The second sermon was published, and in a few days 40,000 copies were sold. In spite of the advice of Somers, Marlborough, and Walpole, the government determined to impeach Sacheverell. The trial lasted for three weeks, amid growing excitement. The mob rose, burnt the meeting-houses, made bonfires in the streets of their furniture and books, and attacked the persons of well-known Low Churchmen. The queen herself, as she drove to the trial, was stopped by an excited crowd shouting, 'We hope your majesty is for High Church and Sacheverell.' The Lords indeed found Sacheverell guilty; he was suspended for three years, and the sermons burned by the hangman. But a fatal blow had been struck at the Whig power,

High Church
 feeling.
 Sacheverell

and Anne at once availed herself of the incident. She shook herself free of the Marlboroughs, and broke up the ministry, dismissing first Sunderland, and then Godolphin. Walpole, Somers, and the other Whig ministers resigned. Harley was made chancellor of the exchequer, and St. John secretary of state. Parliament was dissolved in September, and the new elections, turning on the Sacheverell excitement, resulted in a large Tory majority.

During the campaign of 1710 Marlborough took more towns on the French frontier; but the masterly operations of Villars had prevented the capture of Arras, which would have left the road open to Paris. In Spain Stanhope gained two great battles at Almenara and Saragossa; and it seemed as if Madrid must again fall. But, badly supported by the Austrians, and out-manceuvred by Vendôme, he not only failed in this, but was forced to capitulate with his whole army at Brihuega; and Philip was left master of Spain.

The new parliament at once attacked the Marlboroughs. So long as the war lasted the duke was indispensable; but no vote of thanks was given him, and the duchess was deprived of all her offices. The attempted assassination of Harley increased that minister's popularity, and on May 20 he was made lord treasurer and Earl of Oxford.⁵ Bills were then passed for strengthening the landed interest and the church. By the first no one was qualified to sit in parliament for a borough who possessed less than 800*l.* a year in land, or for a county with less than 600*l.*; and this act was not repealed unto 1858. The second placed a tax of a shilling on every chaldron of coal brought to London for three years; and with the money fifty new churches were built in London alone.⁶

A Tory ministry meant peace. The whole situation, too, had been changed by the sudden death of the emperor. The Archduke Charles (p. 344), his brother, succeeded him; and if by our help he became also king of Spain, a union of crowns would take place as dangerous to Europe as that of France and Spain. Harley, therefore, began secret negotiations with Louis, and on September 11 preliminaries were signed between France and England. The Dutch and Austrians shortly afterwards consented to a conference at Utrecht.

But Harley was already in difficulties. The people had acquired

⁵ For the last time in English history a clergyman was a member of the ministry, Robinson, bishop of Bristol, being made lord privy seal.

⁶ The years which saw these churches

built formed the worst period of English architecture. Wherever there is an especially ugly church it will generally be found to be one of these fifty, or built about the same time

the idea that he was giving way too much to France; while the extreme Tories regarded him as too moderate a party man. Once more, therefore, the Whigs and the Nottingham faction made an Occasional Conformity Bill passed unscrupulous alliance, by which the former consented to the passing of the Occasional Conformity Bill, while Nottingham aided in carrying addresses to the queen in favour of the war.

Harley retorted by striking down Marlborough. He was charged with appropriating 177,000*l.* during the war. The report of the committee of investigation was laid before Anne, and the duke was dismissed from all his employments. Walpole, too, was found guilty of corruption and sent to the Tower. England threw over her engagements with the Dutch; and Prince Eugene was treated with marked discourtesy when he visited England. In every way Harley made the Tory dislike to the war prevail, creating twelve Tory peers to secure a majority in the Lords.

Matters stood thus, when all was again changed by the malady which swept off all the immediate heirs to the French crown but one—Louis's great-grandson, afterwards Louis XV. (p. 842). The frail life of this boy alone stood between his uncle, Philip V. of Spain, and the French crown. Thus the original cause of war (pp. 337, 339) appeared again in full force. But the old king, solitary and bereaved, had no heart for further effort. He proposed that, when the occasion arose, Philip should make his choice between France and Spain. But St. John insisted that the choice should be made at once. Louis yielded, and a separate armistice was proclaimed, June 6, 1712, between England and France, to the anger alike of Eugene, the other allies, and our own troops. To show that this was done with the queen's approval, St. John became Viscount Bolingbroke, and Oxford received the Garter. The result of the armistice was that Villars gained ground so rapidly that the allies too were forced to peace. The death of Godolphin and the departure of Marlborough into privacy at Antwerp left the hands of the government free; and on March 31, 1713, the various treaties which formed the Peace of Utrecht were signed by all but the Emperor Charles, who, however, gave in his adhesion at Rastadt next year.⁷

⁷ (1) Philip retained Spain and her colonies. Milan, Naples, and the Spanish Netherlands went to Austria; and Sicily (afterwards exchanged for Sardinia) to Savoy. (2) France and Spain were never to be united, nor was Spain ever to alienate any of her possessions or her trade with the Indies. (3) Louis acknowledged Anne

and the Protestant succession, promised to dismiss the pretender, to give him no assistance, and to dismantle Dunkirk. Equal colonial trading rights were to be exercised by both countries, and free trade was to be established between them. (4) England retained Gibraltar and Minorca, thus securing the command of the Mediterranean. From

SECTION 4.—*The Schemes of Bolingbroke. The Succession doubtful*

In the Tory party there were two sections—those who upheld the Hanoverian succession, and the ‘Jacobites,’ who hoped to see the pretender on the throne. The latter were strong among the clergy, and had forty votes in the Commons.^a But there was one fatal obstacle in the way of the pretender: no entreaties would move him to desert the Catholic faith, and no Tory would pledge himself till he did. Anne, though she wished her half-brother well, was equally loyal to her coronation oath.

But there was much to cause alarm among the friends of the Hanoverian cause. Bolingbroke attached himself closely to the Jacobite wing, and promoted its leading members to high office. The officers who had served under William were replaced by men devoted to himself. The Duke of Ormond, a vehement Jacobite, was put in command of the Cinque Ports, Berwick-on-Tweed, and Edinburgh. The Whigs, who were gaining ground when it was seen that Louis XIV. did not mean to fulfil his treaty obligations, were however on the alert, under the leadership of General Stanhope; while the moderate Tories began to fall away from the government. To retain the influence of the church, Bolingbroke now introduced the Schism Bill. By this measure no one might be a school-master or tutor without a license from the bishop, upon penalty of imprisonment; such license to be granted only upon a certificate of having received the sacrament according to the established church within the past year, and having taken the oaths of allegiance and supremacy. This tyrannical measure was passed by 237 to 126 in the Commons, and in the Lords by 77 to 72. But events shortly occurred which prevented it from ever coming into action.

To check the growing alienation of the Hanoverian Tories, the ministry then offered a reward of 5,000*l.*, which the Commons increased to 100,000*l.*, for the pretender’s arrest, should he land in

France she gained Hudson’s Bay Territory, Newfoundland and Nova Scotia; Cape Breton and fishing rights being reserved to France. The ‘Asiento,’ or contract between France and Spain, giving the former the sole right of importing negroes to Spanish America, was now transferred to England. (5) The Dutch gained a strong barrier and a favourable commercial

treaty with France. Prussia, with increased territory, was recognised as a kingdom. The Elector of Bavaria was restored by the empress, and the Elector of Hanover recognised by Louis.

^a It was probably to secure these votes, and not with any intention of restoring the pretender, that Harley and Bolingbroke held correspondence with him.

England. But Bolingbroke's great object was to make himself prime minister. He secured the help of Abigail Hill, now Lady Masham, to ruin Oxford, as Oxford had used it to ruin Marlborough. Oxford's timid and untrustworthy character was not such as to secure him firm friends; the backstairs intrigue was successful, and on July 27 he was dismissed, Bolingbroke remaining supreme.

He first tried to win over the Whigs. Failing in this, he prepared to form a purely Jacobite ministry. Suddenly the queen was seized with an apoplectic fit, July 30. Stanhope and the Whigs were ready, and Marlborough was expected from Antwerp. One of the ministers, the Duke of Shrewsbury, had concerted measures with the two great Whig peers, the Dukes of Argyle and Somerset. The council met, none but the chief officers of state having been summoned, as was customary. Suddenly Argyle and Somerset entered and took their seats, as they had a right to do, being privy councillors. They at once requested that the queen's physicians should report upon her condition. They then moved that Shrewsbury should be recommended to the queen as lord high treasurer. Taken by surprise, Bolingbroke and the Jacobites made no demur. The dying queen gave the staff into Shrewsbury's hands. The other Whig members of the council were summoned to London; the Tower and all important posts were secured; and Bolingbroke saw his hopes scattered to the winds.⁹ The skill and decision of a few Whig peers had overcome the danger now, as at the Revolution. The next morning, August 1, Anne died. The council met at once, and the list of regents (p. 845) was read. They were all Whig peers. Marlborough was not one, but the reception he met with in London on his return made up for the slight. King George I. (p. 282) was then proclaimed without an attempt at resistance in London, Edinburgh, and Dublin.

Dates of the Reign of Queen Anne.

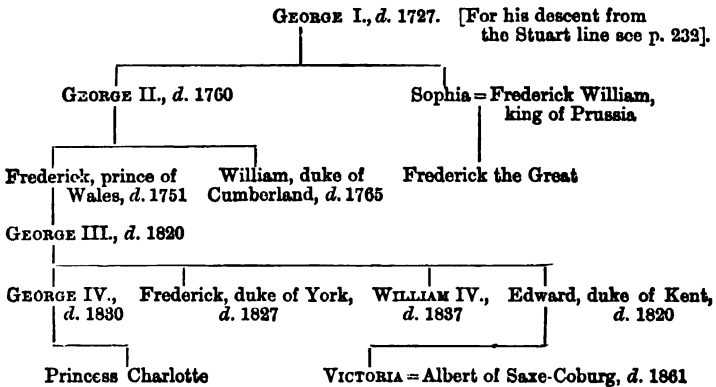
	A.D.		A.D.
Blenheim and Gibraltar	1704	Sacheverell	1709-10
Peterborough in Spain.	1705	Stanhope capitulates at Brihuega	1710
Ramillies	1706	Occasional Conformity Act	1711
Union with Scotland	1707	Peace of Utrecht	1713
Almanza	1707	Schism Act	1714
Oudenarde	1708	Death of Anne	1714

⁹ 'The Earl of Oxford was removed on Tuesday—the queen died on Sunday! What a world is this, and how

does fortune banter us!' exclaimed Bolingbroke.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE XVI

THE HOUSE OF HANOVER



CHAPTER III

GEORGE I.¹ 1714-1727. THE WHIG SUPREMACYSECTION 1.—*Party Government. The 1715 Rebellion and the Septennial Act*

THE accession of George I. was the final triumph of the party which had carried out the Revolution. A ministry was formed, containing but one Tory, Nottingham, whose support as the champion of the High Churchmen helped to silence church opposition. Townshend and Stanhope—both men of the highest character—were secretaries of state; Walpole, Sunderland, Halifax, Cowper, and Wharton, were their principal colleagues. The Tories refused the inferior posts offered them; and party government (p. 884, and the whole reign of Anne) was henceforth the recognised practice. Its effect was to lessen the power of the crown, and greatly to increase that of the Commons. Ministers acted more and more as members of, and responsible to, their party. The crown, not yet beyond danger, rested upon the party in power, which in turn demanded its support against their opponents. This tendency was increased by the character of the king. He was a middle-aged man, without ability, though benevolent, industrious, and upright. He had little knowledge

¹ Mahon, *History of England*.

of the constitution, and was ignorant of the English language; those of his ministers who knew no German were forced to converse with him in Latin.² Hanover was his home, and he seemed unable to grasp interests wider than those of Hanover. And thus, while he governed Hanover, England was governed, not by him, but by the Whig party.

The complete overthrow of their opponents was the first thought of the triumphant Whigs. Bolingbroke and his colleagues were impeached. He and Ormond fled to France and entered the pretender's service; the rest remained to face the storm. The charge against Bolingbroke of having been in the pretender's interest broke down. But all were condemned on the ground of betraying the interests of England at the Peace of Utrecht—a flagrant injustice, for the Peace had since been approved by two successive parliaments. Harley was sent to the Tower, and Acts of Attainder were passed against Bolingbroke and Ormond.

The new dynasty had now to face its first danger. The riots which had accompanied the elections, to the cry of, 'Ormond and High Church!' and which gave rise to the Riot Act,³ were but indications of the generally disturbed temper of the country. The persecution of the late ministers roused the Jacobite spirit in England, while the Highland clans, as usual, offered a fertile field for agitation. The pretender had gathered around him at Paris a motley crowd of English, Scotch, and Irish refugees; and Louis XIV. secretly gave him money, with which ships were fitted out at Havre. But the death of the old king threw out all these plans. The new regent, the Duke of Orleans, could not afford to quarrel with England; and on the first demand, backed by a squadron, the ships were unladen. But the pretender did not despair. In December he sailed with one small vessel and but six attendants.

The north was already in revolt.⁴ On September 28, 1715, the Earl of Mar had entered Perth at the head of 5,000 Highlanders. Three hundred English Jacobite gentry, under Mr. Forster and Lord Derwentwater, met at Morpeth, hoping to surprise Newcastle. A third body came together at Moffat, under Lord Kenmure. Failing to surprise Dumfries, they joined Forster's force, and marched to Kelso,

² 'I managed the king with good punch and bad Latin,' said Walpole.

³ Still in force. The magistrates are permitted, after reading the Riot Act before the mob, to call out the troops to break up any collection of more than

twelve persons who refuse to disperse when ordered to do so in the king's name. Notice that it is the *civil* magistrate who sets the soldiers in action.

⁴ Scott, *Tales of a Grandfather*.

where they expected reinforcements from Mar. On October 22 Brigadier Macintosh, after an ineffectual attempt to surprise Edinburgh, joined them with 2,000 Highlanders. The combined force exceeded 8,000 men, but they had no leadership and no common aim. A march into Lancashire was at length resolved upon; and Preston was entered on November 9. Without cohesion or knowledge of regular warfare, they nevertheless drove back the attack of General Wills from their barricades. But it was known that a fresh body of royal troops

Collapse of
the southern
rising

was approaching. Forster determined to treat, and the next day the whole force surrendered. Mar alone remained in arms. He had proved himself a timid and incapable commander. Had he vigorously attacked Argyle, who, with only 1,000 men, lay at Stirling to block the road from the Highlands to Edinburgh, he would probably have won a great success. But all he had done hitherto was to send Macintosh's force to join the southern rising. In November, however, he left Perth with 10,000 men.

Battle of
Sheriffmuir

Argyle, strongly reinforced, faced him at Sheriffmuir, November 13. The two right wings were victorious, and returned for a final struggle. But again Mar's heart failed him, and he withdrew to Perth, where his force rapidly melted away. At this moment the pretender landed with his six followers, and, having created Mar a duke, made a public entry into Dundee. But he was little qualified in person or character to lead a Highland rising. Argyle pushed steadily northwards; and the northern, like the southern, revolt came ignominiously to an end. On February 5 the pretender once more re-embarked with Mar; the clansmen dispersed, and the rebellion of 1715 was over. Walpole, now first lord of the

Punishment
of the rebels

treasury, insisted that a severe example should be made of the leaders. He refused a bribe of 60,000*l.* for the pardon of Derwentwater. Nottingham, however, succeeded in saving Widdrington and Carnwarth, but lost his own office, as well as those of his son and brother, as the price. Stanhope saved Lord Nairn. Nithisdale, Wintoun, Forster, and Macintosh escaped from prison. Derwentwater and Kenmure alone of higher rank, with twenty-six of lower station, suffered death. An Act was passed to disarm the Highlanders. The penal laws were once more executed against Catholics, and they were forbidden to enlist in the army. Next year, however, an Act of Grace was passed, which released all who still remained in prison.

The government resolved to provide against the recurrence of this danger. On April 26, 1716, they carried the Septennial Act, by which seven instead of three years (p. 385) was fixed upon as the

full duration of parliament.⁵ The act was applied to the existing parliament (p. 262), so that the present government was assured of power, and the hopes of the Jacobites for a turn of fortune at the elections three years hence were baffled. The ministers now felt strong enough to gratify the Nonconformists by repealing the Occasional Conformity and Schism Acts. But the Test and Corporation Acts, the really oppressive ones, were maintained, lest the dormant church feeling should be again roused to dangerous activity.⁶ The knowledge that the pretender was still receiving help both from France and Spain then brought about a defensive league with the Dutch and the emperor; and, a little later, an agreement with France itself. The regent Orleans was next in succession to the young Louis XV., since Philip of Spain had renounced his claim at the Peace at Utrecht. But he did not put trust in Philip's sincerity. For England's promise of support, therefore, he consented to reverse the policy of Louis XIV., to guarantee the Hanoverian line in England, to send the pretender out of France, and to carry out the promised demolition of Dunkirk. In January 1717 the Dutch acceded to this treaty, a Triple Alliance being thus formed against Philip and the pretender.

The course of this affair had unfortunately led to differences between Townshend and his schoolfellow and brother-in-law Walpole, in England, on the one hand, and Stanhope and Sunderland, who were in attendance upon the king in Hanover, on the other. The former had, besides, an enemy in the king's mistress, the Duchess of Kendal, whose greed they resisted as Clarendon had resisted the greed of the mistresses of Charles II. while the deference which they properly showed in the king's absence to the Prince of Wales, of whom George was keenly jealous, placed them still more out of favour. Moreover, while they approved of the acquisition of Bremen and Verden from Denmark for the Electorate of Hanover, as commanding the inlets for British ships into Germany, they resolutely refused to further other Hanoverian ideas which did not help British interests. Before long they had both left the government, which fell entirely into the hands of Stanhope and Sunderland; and Walpole, with reckless

⁵ This act, like party government, clearly increased the power of the Commons; and the ablest men, who had hitherto looked for a peerage, now found their ambition better satisfied by remaining leaders in the Lower House. See Burke, *Duration of Parliaments*.

⁶ Walpole adhered to this principle in 1736. He tried, indeed never to

leave the Dissenters without hope. But when pressed to give a date for their relief, he said, 'I will answer you in one word, "Never!"' The recollection of the Sacheverell affair prevented him from interposing in church affairs unless absolutely necessary, especially as the Dissenters were peaceful and law-abiding.

inconsistency, became their leading opponent, that he might make himself indispensable.

SECTION 2.—*The Stanhope-Sunderland Ministry. Revival of Spain; Peerage Bill; South Sea Bubble*

Meanwhile a striking revival had been taking place in Spain. Her trade was vigorous, her finances flourishing, her fleets came as of yore from her colonies laden with gold and silver, her army and navy were once more capable of holding their own in Europe. This was the work of the minister, Cardinal Alberoni, a man of low origin, but of great though unscrupulous genius, who dreamed of restoring to Spain her ancient supremacy, regaining Italy from the emperor, and, in spite of the Peace of Utrecht, securing the French succession for Philip V. To England he was a bitter foe, for she was allied both to the emperor and to France, and her naval power was the chief obstacle to his schemes. He quarrelled with the emperor, and struck the first blow by taking Sardinia. He strained every nerve to create an overwhelming force against England and France, stirred up conspiracy in both countries, espoused the pretender's cause, and made ready to invade our coasts with thirty ships of war and 85,000 men. Admiral Byng was hereupon sent to the Mediterranean with twenty ships; and in July 1718—England, France, and the emperor entered into a fresh alliance, afterwards joined by the Dutch, to preserve the Peace of Utrecht. Alberoni's fleet sailed in July, landed unexpectedly in Sicily, overran the island and besieged the citadel of Messina. Suddenly Byng's fleet appeared, and, attacking the Spanish armament off Cape Passaro, August 11, destroyed it so utterly that for a while Alberoni's scheme of invasion was given up. The Duke of Savoy joined the alliance, while the plans of Charles XII. of Sweden and Peter the Great of Russia—who both personally hated George I.—for an attack on England, came to an end through the death of the former. But the disaster of Passaro only spurred Alberoni to greater efforts. A fresh fleet was equipped at Cadiz, and the pretender was received at Madrid with royal honours. Scarcely had the armament sailed, March 1719, when it was dispersed by a hurricane and driven back to Cadiz to refit. Two frigates only, with the Earls Marischall and Seaforth, and the Marquis of Tullibardine, reached Scotland. They collected a few men in Kintail, but were completely defeated in the difficult valley of Glenshiel. Discomfitures now came thick upon Alberoni from every side. The arsenals and magazines on the Mediterranean were destroyed from the land side by the French troops under Berwick;

Cardinal
Alberoni

Quadruple
alliance
and Battle
of Passaro

the English fleet burnt the dockyards and sacked Vigo and the neighbouring ports; in Sicily alone Spain made head. Alberoni was driven to crave for peace; but Stanhope sternly refused his terms, and insisted upon his banishment from Spain as the common enemy of European peace, December 1719. Philip V himself joined the Quadruple Alliance; a display of British force in the Baltic secured peace in the north of Europe; and by January 1720 the Continent was once more in repose.

At home the jealousy of the king towards the Prince of Wales brought difficulty upon the government. In 1718 a total alienation had taken place. The prince and princess were dismissed from St. James's, and their friends forbidden the court. The prince henceforward resided at Leicester House, which became the centre of disaffection to the government. Anxiety for the stability of the government should the king die, and especially the fear that an attempt would be made to follow Harley's example (p. 851) of overriding their recovered majority in the Lords by a wholesale creation of fresh peers, led Sunderland and Stanhope to introduce the celebrated Peerage Bill,⁷ which, by limiting the royal power in this respect, would have essentially altered the constitution.

Before the bill was introduced into the Commons, the usual war of pamphlets went on. In the 'Old Whig' Addison pointed to Harley's abuse of the prerogative, and the independence which the Commons would feel when their members were no longer influenced by the hope of hereditary honours bestowed by the Crown; while in Steele's 'Plebeian' the evils of a close aristocracy were ably dwelt upon. The peers, he urged, would become a caste, isolated and unsympathetic; the beneficial mixture of classes, by which the son of the meanest peasant may become a peer, while the younger sons of peers are commoners, would disappear; those who served the state would lose one of the greatest incentives to exertion, or would seek for power and notoriety as violent demagogues. These arguments told rapidly; but it was to Walpole that the defeat of the measure was due. His party were favourable to it, but he converted them. The bill was allowed to pass unchallenged in the Lords that they might have the odium. But when it reached its last stage in the Commons, December 8, 1719, Walpole delivered so masterly a harangue that

⁷ The number of peers was not to be increased beyond six, except in cases of princes of the blood. A new peerage might be made only upon the extinction of a title. No peerage should henceforth be granted further than to the

grantee and his heirs male. Instead of the sixteen elective Scotch peers, the king was to name twenty-five hereditary peers, which number was to be kept up from the remaining Scotch peers in case of failure of male heirs.

the ministry were beaten by 269 to 179. Such a defeat would now carry with it the resignation of the ministry. It then only led to the closing of the schism in the Whig ranks by Townshend and Walpole rejoining the cabinet. This had the advantage of healing to a large extent the quarrels at court, since Walpole was an intimate of the Prince of Wales.

The year 1720 is noted for that scene of commercial madness known as the 'South Sea Bubble.' In 1711, with the view of saving the state part of the burden of interest, about 8 per cent., which was paid upon the floating debt of 10 millions, Harley had formed the South Sea Company, which took over the debt on condition that the state paid them 6 per cent. and gave them the sole enjoyment of the trade with the Pacific and the east coast of Southern America, of the wealth of which fabulous tales were believed. They had the monopoly of the slave trade, and the right to send one ship a year to the Spanish colonies. In 1720, the company having meanwhile flourished, the scheme was further applied to lessen the interest, 6 per cent., upon the National Debt, then about 81 millions. The government said to the South Sea Company: 'Take over our debt, and we will pay you 5 per cent. Our creditors will be glad to exchange their 6 per cent. from us for 4 per cent. from you, if allowed to take shares in your company, with a chance of a share in the profits of your trade.' So great was the advantage of the regular income of 5 per cent. that the South Sea Company not only consented, but were willing to pay 8½ millions to the state for permission to accept the scheme. The creditors of the government, believing in the vast profits of the South Sea trade, were eager to transfer their debt from government to the company. But here the Bank of England stepped in and said: 'We are willing to give more than 8½ millions for the privilege.' The two companies then bid against each other, until the South Sea Company prevailed with a bid of 7½ millions.

The different parties were thus in the following positions: *The state* paid 5 instead of 6 per cent., and pocketed besides 7½ millions. *The company* received a certain 5 per cent. from the state, and paid only a certain 4 per cent. *The creditors* lost 2 per cent., since they were paid only 4 instead of 6 per cent.; but were willing to do this on the chance of a share in the company's profits. Had this been all—had 100*l.* lent to the state simply become 100*l.* lent to the company, the worst that would have happened, supposing these profits not to have been made, would have been a loss to the creditors of 2 per cent. But the belief in the profits went so far that people were at last willing to transfer not 100*l.* only, but 1,000*l.* from the state, for which they re-

ceived 60*l.* interest, for only 100*l.* of stock in the South Sea Company, for which they would receive only 4*l.* interest certain, with the chance of more out of the expected profits.

This madness lasted from April to September. Then came the crash. Taking advantage of the fever for speculation, scores of bogus companies had been formed by swindlers for objects of the wildest absurdity. These the government prosecuted as illegal, on the demand of the South Sea Company. At once the question was asked—if one project was bad, why not another? The South Sea stock fell rapidly; in a few weeks it had fallen to 135*l.*, and all who had paid more were therefore losers to that extent. The fact that it fell no lower shows that the company was not only solvent, but prosperous. The news of a similar crash in France completed the panic and the ruin. Many clear-sighted men, like Walpole, though he had opposed the bill, made large fortunes by selling out at the right time; but, for each of these, hundreds were reduced to beggary. A fierce cry arose: the fortunes, the lives even, of the directors of the company were clamoured for. One peer demanded that they should be treated like parricides in Rome, stitched up in sacks and flung into the river. They were obliged to lay a full account before the Commons, and to state the full value of their estates; they were forbidden to leave the kingdom, or to have counsel to defend them; a secret committee of inquiry was appointed. Corruption on a vast scale was disclosed, in which the king's mistresses and high officers of state, like Sunderland, were concerned. In the end the directors were disabled from taking office or sitting in parliament; and their whole estates were confiscated, a small allowance alone being allowed to save them from beggary. All eyes were turned to Walpole, as the only financier, to remedy the mischief. In February 1721 he carried a scheme by which the state remitted the 7½ millions; the sums raised from the forfeited estates went to sustain the credit of the company, while one-third of the capital invested in it was paid to the investors.

SECTION 3.—*Walpole's Supremacy. The Patriots. War. Bolingbroke*

The sudden deaths of the high-minded Stanhope, who burst a blood-vessel while defending himself against the charge of corruption, and of the intriguing Sunderland, cleared the way for Walpole. He took the latter's place as first lord of the Treasury, a post which henceforward carried with it the prime ministership,⁵ and he held it, after eighty years of revolution, for

⁵ The term 'prime minister' now the *justiciar* under the Norman and first comes into general use. Compare early Plantagenet kings; the *chan-*

Walpole
prime
minister

twenty-one years. This remarkable man⁹ was the son of a country gentleman in Norfolk, brought up amid country sports, for which he never lost his love. He hunted to the end of his days; and in the midst of his busiest career it was said that the letter from his game-keeper was always the first opened of his budget. Of robust physical health, he displayed a grossness and indecency of language and thought noticeable even in that coarse time; and his influence over young men was in this respect very unfortunate. His temper was un-failing,¹⁰ his nature buoyant. 'It would have done you good,' said his son, 'to hear him laugh.' Habitually a hard drinker, he never became a sot. His industry was untiring, and yet he always seemed to have time for everything; and he possessed the power, as he said, 'of putting off his cares when he put off his clothes.'

As a politician, his great characteristic was good sense. He was at once intrepid and cautious, determined to have his way against all opposition, but seeing clearly what the country needed for prosperity, and bent upon obtaining this. He applied himself always to the present difficulty, without looking far ahead. He was not rigorous as to methods: 'He durst do right, but he durst do wrong too.' He loved power, because he felt conscious of his strength, and was happy only in activity. As a parliamentary debater, he had no equal for plain, logical, fearless, and incisive speech. A skilful manager of men, he was an unrivalled man of business; and as a financier he was, to friends and foes alike, beyond comparison the ablest man in the country. The moneyed classes especially trusted him. For literature, except as a political weapon, he cared little; for music less. But for painting he had a genuine love and sound judgment.

As a ruler, he is to be remembered as a great peace minister, coming between two periods of war. Under him the Whigs, till then the war party (p. 845), became the party of peace and diplomacy. He over and over again kept the nation out of war. 'Madam,' he said to the queen in 1734, 'there are 50,000 men slain in Europe this year, and not one Englishman.' He gave way to the cry for war rather than abandon power; but in the midst of war he strove constantly to gain

cellor—as Wolsey or Clarendon—in later times; the *lord treasurer*, as Danby or Harley. The Treasury was now always in the hands not of one man, but of a board. The prime minister has almost invariably been first lord of the treasury. The Admiralty is also under a board with a first lord.

⁹ Morley, 'Walpole,' in *English Statesmen* series; and Lecky, *History of England*, vol. i. p. 327.

¹⁰ 'Here we are, my lord'—he said to Pulteney after his own fall, and after Pulteney had retired into 'obscurity and an earldom'—'the two most insignificant fellows in the kingdom.'

peace. 'My politics,' he said, 'are to keep free from all engagements as long as we can.' And thus he 'scattered plenty o'er a smiling land,' and gave it time to gather that strength and resource which Pitt was soon to spend in subduing continents.

The principal charge brought against Walpole was that he unblushingly used and enormously extended the system of bribery, which Danby (p. 307) had so successfully put in action. There is no doubt that in the last resort he did bribe; but the charge has evidently been greatly over-stated. Only one case of direct parliamentary bribery has been proved; and, after his fall, the bitterly hostile committee of investigation failed to find anything upon which they could lay hold. It is often quoted against him that he said, 'Every man has his price;' but this was really uttered in scorn of some of those loudest in opposition against him, of whom he declared that 'All these men have their price.' He himself was no money seeker. With a large fortune, with every opportunity of enriching himself, he died, in 1745, a poor man, and heavily in debt.¹¹

Another charge brought against him is that, jealous of rivals, he surrounded himself with mediocrities. But it is hard to see what other course could be pursued by a minister with clear, strong views, resolved to be supreme, who found those views combated by able men. He must either give up his opinion or get rid of the able men.

He had to deal at once with the renewed activity of the Jacobites, who were encouraged by the birth of the pretender's son, Charles Edward. The pretender's interests were in the hands of a 'junto' (p. 334) of five, of whom Atterbury, the brilliant and impetuous bishop of Rochester, was the chief. They had long been preparing for an invasion, which James and Ormond were to make so soon as George should again leave the kingdom for Hanover. But Walpole was on the alert; the principal agents were seized and punished; Atterbury was banished. A declaration of the pretender in 1722,

¹¹ Walpole's rule did much towards still further impressing upon party government (pp. 334, 354) its present type. The characteristics of this system, as now fully developed, are:— (1) Government is carried on in harmony with the views of the majority of the House of Commons. (2) A cabinet chosen exclusively from the party which has this majority, though nominally selected by the crown, is charged with the executive. (3) The responsibility of the cabinet is united and indivisible.

(4) The prime minister is the 'key-stone of the cabinet arch;' he chooses his own colleagues, and gives them their respective offices. (5) A hostile vote of the House of Commons dismisses this cabinet. One circumstance which particularly helped to develop this system was that George I., being ignorant of English, refrained from attending cabinet meetings, and this absence of the sovereign became recognised as the constitutional practice.

promising that if George would quietly give up his throne the title of 'King' of Hanover, with the succession to the British dominions, if James himself left no heirs, should be secured to him, was met by a tax of 100,000*l.* upon Catholic non-jurors-

A fresh contest now took place for power in the Whig party between Townshend and Walpole on the one side, and the brilliant Carteret on the other. Carteret had a great advantage in his knowledge of European languages, which enabled him to converse easily with the king and the foreign ambassadors. But in the end he was obliged to content himself with the lord-lieutenancy of Ireland. All his ability was needed to calm the excitement which had risen in that country over 'Wood's Halfpence.' To supply a deficiency of copper coinage there, an Englishman named Wood, had obtained a patent to coin farthings and halfpence to the amount of 108,000*l.* For this he had bribed the king's mistresses, and the whole arrangement had been made without reference to Irish opinion. Ireland was not disposed to accept anything from England; for in 1719 the semblance of independence left to its parliament by Poyning's law (p. 174) was taken away by an act enabling the English parliament to make laws binding on Ireland. So keen was the opposition that it was resolved to reduce the amount to 40,000*l.* But Dean Swift, in his celebrated 'Drapier's Letters,' in which, under the guise of a drapier of Dublin, he exerted his unrivalled powers of literary invective, so excited the people, that it was clear that force alone could carry the matter through. The government gave way; the patent was withdrawn, and Wood was compensated for his loss by a pension of 8,000*l.*

Disturbances and armed riots took place in Scotland also upon the repeal of the malt-tax, which had been largely evaded, and by the imposition instead of a duty of 8*d.* on every barrel of ale; but these also were put down by firmness and conciliation. The event led to the discontinuance of the secretaryship for Scotland.

Meanwhile Bolingbroke, who had left the pretender's service (p. 355) in disgust, had returned to England. By large bribes to the royal mistresses he had secured a pardon and restoration to his estates. But Walpole, in spite of every pressure, insisted upon his continued exclusion from the House of Lords. He hereupon joined Pulteney, the eloquent, able, and incorruptible leader of the Whig section of the opposition, though formerly one of Walpole's closest friends. The discontented men who gathered around them called themselves the

Return of
Bolingbroke,
Pulteney, the
Patriots,
and the
'Craftsman'

Return of Bolingbroke, Pulteney, the Patriots, and the 'Craftsman'

'Patriots;' and the 'Craftsman,' a daily political paper, conducted by Bolingbroke and Pulteney, became Walpole's most formidable assailant.¹²

Europe had now enjoyed peace for five years. But a serious difference had arisen between England and France on the one hand, and the emperor on the other, with regard to the new East India Company which he had established at Ostend, and which threatened interference with their trade in India. Spain, also, had quarrelled with

Alliance war of Spain and the emperor against England and France. The Pragmatic Sanction

France, and had made common cause with the emperor.

By the Treaty of Vienna (May 1725) she supported the Ostend Company, and guaranteed the 'Pragmatic Sanction,' the law which the emperor, having no sons, had obtained to permit the succession to pass to his daughters; while the emperor was to support her demand for the restoration of Gibraltar and Minorca (pp. 844, 848), and to assist in placing the pretender on the English throne in case of a refusal. Peter the Great of Russia assisted both with large sums of money. To meet these

Treaty of Hanover

dangers, a defensive alliance was formed at Hanover between England, France, and Prussia, September 1725, which was later joined by Sweden and the Dutch. This treaty was the work of Townshend. As such it was coldly approved by Walpole, who was resolved that the firm should be, as he said, not 'Townshend and Walpole,' but 'Walpole and Townshend.' It was opposed alike by the king and his German friends, who declared that Hanover would be ruined for England, and by the 'Patriots,' who declared that England would be ruined for Hanover.

Meanwhile the pretender was busy in every court of Europe. Much was hoped from Scotland, where the Disarming Act (p. 356) had taken the arms from the hands of the loyal portion alone. Ministers were kept fully informed of the vast preparations of Spain. Fleury, the old man who was ruling France with such skill that the exhaustion of the War of Succession seemed to have passed away, cordially supported them.

At this moment the emperor, by an act of discourtesy, contrived to alienate all parties in England. Three millions were voted; three fleets were sent out to the Mediterranean, the West Indies, and the Baltic. A Spanish siege of Gibraltar in 1727 failed utterly, since our fleet kept the garrison supplied with provisions. The emperor therefore made peace, May 31. The Ostend Company was suspended for seven years, and active hostilities ceased between England and Spain.

Bolingbroke, through the Duchess of Kendal, had so far gained

¹² See the vivid description of Bolingbroke in Morley, 'Walpole,' p. 78.

ground that Walpole fully believed that the next session would see his own fall. But never was a life of intrigue so marred by disappointment. Fortune again 'bantered' him (p. 358, *note*). The king was seized with an apoplectic fit while travelling to Hanover, and died on June 10, 1727.

Dates of Reign of George I.

	A.D.		A.D.
Mar's Rebellion	1715	Walpole First Lord of the Treasury	1721
Septennial Act	1716	Wood's Halfpence	1724
Triple Alliance	1717	Treaties of Vienna and Hanover	1725
Quadruple Alliance and Battle of Passaro	1718	Siege of Gibraltar	1727
Peerage Bill defeated	1719	Death of George I.	1727
South Sea Bubble	1720		

CHAPTER IV

GEORGE II. THE EXPANSION OF ENGLAND¹

SECTION 1.—Administration of Walpole during the Life of the Queen

GEORGE II. had little to recommend him beyond his personal courage and the fact that he could speak our language.² He was managed by his wife, Caroline of Anspach, a woman of learning, sense, and character, whom Walpole had already wisely made his friend, while others were courting the royal mistresses. She convinced her husband that both as the only financier—one who 'could change stones into gold'—and as leader of the Whig majority, Walpole was indispensable. Thus supported, and freed from the rivalry of Townshend, he was absolutely supreme during the queen's life. The stability of his power was shown by the retirement of the pretender to Italy to wait for better times.

The fact that George II. was Elector of Hanover as well as King of England compelled us to maintain an army in Germany. This was done by taking into English pay German forces. The Commons voted 250,000*l.* to maintain 12,000 Hessian troops, and 25,000*l.* a year to the Duke of Brunswick for furnishing 5,000 more when required. The age of foreign subsidies had begun. The negotiations with Spain, long hindered by our refusal to give up Gibraltar, were brought to an end by the Treaty of

¹ Mahon, *History of England*; Seeley, *Expansion of England*.

² Morley, 'Walpole,' p. 20.

Seville, November 9, 1729, a brilliant triumph for English diplomacy. England, France, and Spain made a defensive alliance. Spain tacitly gave up the demand for Gibraltar, and restored all captured English ships with compensation. The 'Assiento' (p. 352, *note*) was confirmed to the South Sea Company; all privileges conferred upon Austria by the Treaty of Vienna (p. 365) were revoked, and other terms agreed upon opposed to the interest of the emperor. But the 'balance of power' (p. 180) was as important a matter for England now as ever. Should the emperor be too weak in a war with France and Spain, France might gain possession of the Austrian Netherlands, a possibility always regarded by England with the utmost jealousy since the days of Edward III. (pp. 113, 308). Walpole therefore secretly made another treaty with the emperor at Vienna, in March 1731, by which, upon his accepting the Spanish terms and abolishing the Ostend Company, England guaranteed the 'Pragmatic Sanction' (p. 365), so long as the emperor's daughter, Maria Theresa, did not marry a prince of the Bourbon houses of France and Spain.

In 1733 Spain and France attacked the emperor with success. Peace was not made until Naples was wrested from him and made into a new kingdom for Don Carlos, the son of Philip V. of Spain. France gained Lorraine, the young duke of which married Maria Theresa; and France and Savoy guaranteed the 'Pragmatic Sanction,' which now had the assent of all the great powers.

Walpole had sedulously kept England from joining in this war. The country was daily growing more wealthy; taxes were light, trade flourishing. So favourable was the outlook that Walpole was once asked by an old Jacobite 'what he had done to God Almighty to make him so much his friend.' A foreign contest would not only arrest the progress, but would probably lead to a fresh Jacobite rebellion. He was cordially supported by the two secretaries of state, Lord Harrington and Thomas Pelham, duke of Newcastle. The latter, a man of extreme ignorance, became, by his vast wealth and willingness to spend it, by his love of power, court-craft, and diligence, a leading figure in English politics for more than forty years.³

But meanwhile Walpole had suffered his first defeat. The customs—the duties, that is, levied on foreign goods at the ports when they enter—led, of course, to extensive smuggling. So far had this gone, that in the case of tobacco alone a duty which should have returned

³ Macaulay, *Essays*, on 'Letters of Horace Walpole,' last page; and the 'Earl of Chatham,' first essay.

750,000*l.* really brought in only 180,000*l.* Walpole therefore proposed, in the cases of tobacco and wine, to free them of customs duty, but to place the tax upon the excise (pp. 268, 298), that is, that the shopkeepers should pay it instead of the importing merchant.⁴ By this means smuggling would have been put an end to, and the collection of the tax made easy and certain, since the excise officers had power to enter shops and warehouses to find out what excisable articles the shopkeeper had in store. The shopkeeper would be no worse off, though he paid the tax, since he would buy the wine or tobacco from the importer, minus the former duty; the consumer would be no worse off, for the shopkeeper's price to him would not have altered. London, thus made a free port, would become the market of the world. But the exciseman, on account of the power mentioned, was the most unpopular person in England.⁵ A cry arose that this was but preliminary to a general excise, and that the army of officials and informers which it would create would be only so many more creatures of government. The state of the French peasant was adduced as an illustration of what we should come to; and 'No slavery, no excise, no wooden shoes!'—the French peasant wore wooden shoes—was the universal cry. Led by the 'Craftsman' (p. 865), the clamour grew daily fiercer; petitions poured in; mobs besieged the Houses of Parliament; the great towns instructed their members to vote against the bill. Walpole's majority dwindled from 60 to 16. He saw that force alone could carry the scheme through; and he would never enforce taxes with bloodshed (p. 864). The dropping of the measure was celebrated with extravagant rejoicing, to the cry of 'Liberty, property, and no excise!' But Walpole, while submitting to the popular will, would brook no opposition among his subordinates. He had marked the mutineers in his own camp. Lord Chesterfield and several other high officials were dismissed; the Duke of Bolton and Lord Cobham were deprived of their regiments. The new elections were bitterly contested. Walpole's majority was diminished, but was perfectly compact; and the prospects of the opposition seemed so hopeless that Bolingbroke again left England.

Two more instances of Walpole's practice of avoiding opposition may be mentioned. Drunkenness was then, as now, the besetting

⁴ He had already done great things for English commerce by favouring a policy of free trade. In 1721 he had removed export duties from 106 articles of British manufacture, and import duties from 38 articles of raw material; and in 1730 he had passed an act allowing the planters in Carolina and Georgia to export rice direct to Southern Europe, so

long as it went in British ships and with British crews. He did the same later with the sugar of the West Indies.

⁵ In Johnson's *Dictionary* 'excise' was thus defined:—'A hateful tax levied upon commodities, and adjudged not by common judges of property, but by wretches hired by those to whom excise is paid.'

English vice. To lessen it a bill was brought in to lay a crushing tax upon gin. Walpole held, of course, that such a tax was a direct incentive to smuggling; but he made no objection to the bill passing. His opinion was justified by the result, and it was not until 1754 that effective laws were passed to lessen an appalling evil. The second instance was that of the Porteous Riots in Edinburgh. An officer of that name in the city guard had fired upon the mob during a riot which followed the execution of a popular criminal. Walpole yields to opposition. The Gin Act and the Porteous Riots Porteous was tried, and sentenced to death, but at the last moment was reprieved. The mob thereupon rose, stormed the Tolbooth, dragged Porteous from his cell, and hung him in the street. Unable to discover the authors of this outrage, the government brought in a bill which would have destroyed the liberties of the city. Opposed in both houses, it was carried in committee by the casting vote of the chairman alone. Walpole immediately withdrew the bill for a milder one, which was accepted without demur.⁶

Meanwhile, Frederick, prince of Wales, was imitating his father's conduct to George I. Ordered to quit St. James's, he established himself at Norfolk House, which, like Leicester House in the former reign (p. 359), became the home of the opponents of the government.⁷ Among these were Pulteney, Carteret, Wyndham, Chesterfield, and William Pitt. William Pitt⁸ was born in November 1708; his grandfather had been governor of Madras. He was educated at Eton and Oxford, became cornet in the Blues, and in 1735 entered parliament as member for Old Sarum. He went at once into opposition to Walpole, who thereupon deprived him of his cornetcy. His private fortune was now but 100*l.* a year; but he was appointed to an office in the prince's household, and before long was in the foremost place among Walpole's opponents. His figure was tall and striking; his face noble and expressive; his voice of wonderful compass, delicacy, and strength. His intellect was highly cultivated, and the effect of his speaking was such as was never known in England before or since. But that which especially distinguished him was the lofty disinterestedness of his mind, the intense belief, at a time of national depression, in the power of England to stand against the world in arms, and the determination that as far as lay in him she should never go back a foot, whatever enemies might attack her. In him, as in Nelson in later days, seemed to be concentrated the whole national spirit.

⁶ The best account of this is in Scott's *Heart of Midlothian*.

⁷ This division in the royal family, like the preceding one, was useful in one way. Those who would otherwise have become Jacobites and assisted the

pretender, satisfied their desire for opposition by joining the Norfolk House party, and thus still remained attached to the cause of Hanover.

⁸ Macaulay, *Essays*, 'The Earl of Chatham.'

SECTION 2.—*Administration of Walpole after the death of the Queen*

On November 20, 1737, Queen Caroline died. Walpole now stood alone against the most skilful debaters, the ablest pamphleteers, and the young rising men, the 'boys,' as he disdainfully called them. And before long he found himself again opposed by the popular feeling.

For a long time Spain had been complaining of English smuggling in her American colonies. By the Treaty of Utrecht the South Sea Company had the right of sending one ship a year to trade. The limitation was widely evaded, and Spain had assumed the right of search of other vessels. The English declared that Spain exercised this right with insolence and barbarity.⁹ One story especially made

a great impression. A captain named Jenkins declared that he had been taken on the high seas, tortured, and mutilated of one of his ears; and that in his distress he had 'commended his soul to God and his cause to his country.' He had no proof of his story; but the words rang throughout the land, and the war fever grew uncontrollable. The real object of England was the abolition of the right of search. A convention on fair terms concluded by Walpole did but increase the war spirit. He saw that he must

either resign or declare war. People had become 'profoundly fatigued with twenty years of good sense.' A minister under such circumstances would in these days of course resign. But Walpole could not bear to leave office. He gave way, and war was declared on October 19, 1739. 'They are ringing the bells now,' he exclaimed; 'they will soon be wringing their hands.'

Walpole was no better off for his concession. Like Clarendon (p. 303), he was held forth as the cause of every grievance. To regain popularity he gave way on all points where he was strongly opposed. He tried in vain to induce the king to consent to an act forbidding the crowns of England and Hanover to be united in future. And he sought to catch Jacobite votes by offering his services to the pretender, on the strength of which a formidable conspiracy was set on foot both in England and Scotland. Led by Pulteney and Pitt, the opposition grew daily fiercer. Walpole's health and spirits began to give way.¹⁰

⁹ Behind the Spanish readiness to quarrel lay the knowledge that she would be supported by France. Bourbons reigned in both countries, and in 1788 the two kings had signed the 'Family Compact,' intended to coun-

teract our naval supremacy and our growing influence in the New World.

¹⁰ 'He who was asleep as soon as his head touched the pillow . . . now never sleeps above an hour without waking; and he who at dinner always

Still he fought the losing battle, not indeed scrupulously, but with defiant courage; and when at length a formal motion of censure was brought against him on February 18, 1741, his reply was so able and spirited that the motion was rejected by large majorities in both houses. This did, however, but delay the inevitable fall.

On October 20, 1740, the emperor died, and the Pragmatic Sanction (p. 365) came into force. But the elector of Bavaria, the nearest

male heir, refused to acknowledge its validity. France and Spain broke their pledges (p. 367) and supported him. England and the Dutch kept to theirs.¹¹ But now stepped in a new combatant. Prussia (p. 352, *note*) had become a great military power under Frederick the Great.

Taking advantage of the distress of Maria Theresa, he invented a cause of quarrel, overran part of her territory, and defeated her army at Molwitz. Walpole was forced to come to her aid. A subsidy of 800,000*l.* was sent her, and 12,000 men equipped for her service. But George II., alarmed for his Hanoverian dominions, when France sent two large armies into Germany to

support Prussia, concluded a treaty, as elector of Hanover, by which he promised not to support the queen's husband at the election for emperor, so long as the neutrality of Hanover was respected.¹²

Meanwhile two squadrons had been sent out to attack Spanish America: one, under Commodore Anson, to harass the coasts of Peru;

the other, under Vernon, to attack Porto Bello and the eastern coasts. In June 1744, Anson, after sailing round the globe, returned with a record of hardship, disaster, and heroism unsurpassed in our annals, and with treasure to the amount of a million and a quarter.¹³ Vernon, a vainglorious man, took Porto Bello in 1739, and, as he was a political opponent of Walpole, his success was celebrated as a triumph over the minister. With an

immense fleet, and 12,000 troops under Wentworth, he then attacked Carthagena; but both here, and at Santiago in 1742, he failed utterly, and returned to England a discredited man.

In December 1741 a new parliament met, and Walpole found that he had a majority of only sixteen. Every grievance, the Hanover treaty, the Vernon failures, were at once made subjects of attack.

forgot he was minister, and was more gay and thoughtless than all his company, now sate without speaking, and with his eyes fixed for an hour together.'

¹¹ This breach of faith on the one hand, and adherence to it on the other,

was the end of the union of England and France, and the beginning of the great war which was to last until 1815.

¹² The Elector of Bavaria was elected Emperor Charles VII.

¹³ Mahon, ch. xxii.

Twice he was defeated, and in the great debate on a motion of 'no confidence,' on January 21, 1742, had a majority of only three votes. He tried to win the support of Norfolk House by inducing the king to offer the prince an additional income of 50,000*l.* a year. But the offer was refused, and in February, to the unaffected grief of the king, he resigned, with a pension of 4,000*l.* a year, the earldom of Orford, and a patent of rank to his illegitimate daughter.¹⁴

SECTION 3.—*Pulteney and Carteret. Dettingen. Henry Pelham, Prime Minister*

At Walpole's advice the prime ministership was offered to Pulteney, a great parliamentary figure, but wavering in thought and action; and upon his refusal, Lord Wilmington, a nonentity, was appointed. Henry Pelham, brother of the Duke of Newcastle, entered the cabinet with Walpole's principal colleagues; but Carteret, who became secretary of state with Newcastle, was really prime minister. His acquaintance with European languages gave him the control of foreign affairs; his readiness to further the king's Hanoverian policy made him supreme at court. His abilities were brilliant and his self-confidence extreme. All patronage he scornfully handed over to the Pelhams, who, therefore, speedily gained great influence. For himself, he said, it was not his business to make judges or bishops, but 'to make kings and emperors, and to maintain the balance of power.' But so flighty was his nature, and so intemperate his habits, that his government earned with justice the title of the 'Drunken administration.'

Carteret, ignoring the Hanover treaty, threw himself zealously into the cause of Maria Theresa. Sixteen thousand troops and 500,000*l.* were sent her. Thus supported, she overran Bavaria, made peace with Frederick by the cession of Silesia, and drove the French out of Bohemia with terrible loss. The Spaniards were expelled from North Italy; one English squadron, by a threat to bombard Naples, forced Don Carlos to withdraw his troops from the Spanish army; another entered French ports and burned the Spanish vessels there. A defensive alliance with Russia still further weakened the influence of France. Carteret, indeed, roused the English jealousy of Hanover when he proposed to hire 16,000

¹⁴ A secret committee, consisting of his declared enemies, was appointed to inquire into his conduct during the past ten years. It entered eagerly upon the business; but the results were so insignificant, not a single important charge being proved, that the only effect was to bring ridicule upon the new ministry.

Hanoverian troops ; and Pitt, who had already, under Walpole's rule, struck the splendid note of British supremacy which he maintained to his death, inveighed against England being 'considered only as a province to a despicable electorate.' But the proposal was carried, and in the summer of 1743 some 40,000 English, Hanoverians, and Dutch, under the Earl of Stair, were met on the Maine by Noailles and 60,000 French troops. Stair, completely out-generalled, was fortunately joined by George II., by his second son, the Duke of Cumberland, and by Carteret. An advance through the defile of Dettingen was resolved upon ; and on June 27 a great battle was fought, the last in which a king of Great Britain took part. The allies narrowly escaped a crushing defeat ; but a happy mistake of Noailles's nephew, the Duke of Grammont, was so well aided by the conspicuous coolness and courage of the king and his son, who fought in the first rank, that disaster was turned into victory, and the French were driven from the field with the loss of 6,000 men.

But Englishmen generally, though proud of the victory, saw no good in continuing the war. They feared lest the balance of power should now be endangered by Maria Theresa more than by the French ; and the Hanoverian policy of Carteret roused increasing opposition.

Upon the death of Lord Wilmington, therefore, Carteret's advice was ignored, and Henry Pelham was, upon Walpole's suggestion, made prime minister. He was a timid politician ; but, like Walpole, a peace minister and a good financier—sensible, industrious, and experienced.

SECTION 4.—*Henry Pelham's Administration. Fontenoy and the 1745 Rebellion. Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle*

But all thoughts of peace were put aside when it was learned that France and Spain had bound themselves to assist a Jacobite invasion of England. The whole nation rallied to the throne. A supply of ten millions was voted ; fresh subsidies were granted to Maria Theresa ; the country was put in a state of defence, the Habeas Corpus Act suspended, and severe laws passed against the Jacobites. Meanwhile 15,000 veteran French troops, under the famous Marshal Saxe, had been collected at Dunkirk ; and the young pretender came there to be ready to sail at a moment's notice. Part of this army had already put to sea, and the French fleet was sweeping the Channel, when the elements came to the help of England. The transports were dispersed and wrecked by a tremendous tempest, and the expedition had to be abandoned. On February 22, 1744, an indecisive battle between the fleets took place off

Toulon. In March France formally declared war, and the two nations appeared in form, what they had long been in fact, principals and not mere auxiliaries in the conflict. It made little difference that the original cause of quarrel, the Austrian succession, was peaceably settled upon the death of the Emperor Charles VII. in 1745. His son acquiesced in the choice of Maria Theresa's husband, Francis of Lorraine, while she restored Bavaria. She was thus left to confront Frederick, who had broken through his treaty and again attacked her. So disastrous was the campaign that on Christmas Day, 1745, she was forced to sign the Treaty of Dresden, by which Frederick kept Silesia, but acknowledged Francis as emperor.

Peace between Frederick the Great and Maria Theresa. Her husband acknowledged emperor by all but France

The real struggle of England, that against France, only waxed the fiercer. In April 1745 Louis XV. and Saxe invested Tournai on the Scheldt. Cumberland marched to its relief, and on May 10 a great battle was fought at Fontenoy. The attacks of our right wing, and of the Dutch on our left, failed.

British defeat at Fontenoy

Then a serried column of 16,000 British, led by Cumberland, advanced through a terrible flank fire upon the French centre, beating off the attack of regiment after regiment, and carrying everything before it. But at the critical moment Saxe brought four cannon to play upon the dense column, while the household troops (p. 388), and the Irish brigade (p. 381), burning for revenge upon England, charged with irresistible fury, and won a great victory. Tournai and almost the whole of the Austrian Netherlands fell into French hands. In Italy, also, France won marked success. But in another quarter of the globe England had achieved a significant triumph. The island of Cape Breton, which commanded the St.

Capture of Cape Breton

Lawrence, protected the Newfoundland fisheries, and was of the utmost importance to the safety of the French possessions in America, yielded to a spirited attack of New England volunteers and royal troops.

The immediate result of Fontenoy was the rebellion of 1745.¹⁵ On July 25 the young pretender suddenly appeared at Moidart, on the west coast of Inverness-shire, with but seven followers. His reception was not encouraging; he was plainly told that he was not wanted. At length the gallant Cameron of Lochiel yielded to his appeal; his example was followed by the anti-Campbell clans (pp. 272, 328); a successful skirmish with two English companies raised their spirits. On August 19 the royal banner was raised in the wild valley of Glenfin-

Result of Fontenoy. The young pretender in the Highlands

¹⁵ Scott, *Tales of a Grandfather*.

nan; and within a week Charles had round him 1,600 men. Tall and athletic, handsome and engaging, able and ready to bear fatigue and hardship with the strongest of his followers, he was as well suited as his father was unfit to create enthusiasm in this wild and romantic race.

Sir John Cope, who commanded at Edinburgh, at once marched to Stirling, and thence set out, on August 20, with 1,500 men for Fort Augustus, hoping to crush the rising at once. Finding his path blocked by Charles, and afraid to attack with so small a force, he directed his march to Inverness, to join the well-affected clans, thus leaving the Lowlands unprotected. The prince seized the opportunity (p. 283). On September 8 he was at Perth, where he was joined by the Duke of Perth and Lord George Murray. Without attacking Stirling, he made straight for Edinburgh, which was in his hands on the 17th, though the castle held out. Cope meanwhile had embarked his force at Aberdeen and carried it to Dunbar, to get between Charles and England. But the prince, after but one day's stay, had left Edinburgh, and on the 20th Cope suddenly found the Highlanders in his rear, close to the village of Preston Pans. At break of day they fell upon him. One wild charge—the Highlanders firing as they ran, and coming to close quarters at once—scattered all but the English regiments; a second broke them also; and in less than ten minutes the battle was over, with a loss of 80 killed and 70 wounded to the victors, of 400 in slain alone to the vanquished.

Charles was now master of Scotland, except the fortresses. He was at the head of 6,000 men, and money, arms, and ammunition reached him from France. In England Marshal Wade lay with 10,000 men at Newcastle; Cumberland was forming an army in the Midlands; a third force, on Finchley Common, guarded the capital. The real danger arose, not from the strength of Charles, but from the apathy of the people.

Charles now felt the difficulties always presented by Highland troops. A prolonged campaign was foreign to their nature, and they began to desert in numbers to store their plunder. He pressed on, however, through Carlisle, Wigan, and Manchester, sorely disappointed (p. 288) that the people did not rise to join him. Out-manceuvring Cumberland, he got between him and London, and on December 4, long known as 'Black Friday,' reached Derby. London was in dismay: the gates were shut, the Tower was closed, the guards were ordered out, and the train-bands placed on duty night and day. A rush was made on the Bank of England, and it escaped bankruptcy only by a trick. Agents were employed to enter

Charles
reaches
Derby

with notes before the rush came; and, to gain time, they were paid in sixpences. They went out at one door with the specie, and brought it back by another. As those who came first were served first, the *bonâ-fide* creditors could never get up to the counter to present their notes.

But here, just when Charles looked for final triumph, his hopes were overthrown. His officers declared that in the absence of all support a retreat was absolutely necessary. In bitter dejection he gave way perforce. But a rebellion which does not advance is lost. The people rose upon them. In Westmoreland, the Duke of Cumberland came up with them, but received a serious check at Clifton, near Penrith. The retreat Unable to enter Edinburgh, which had armed itself as soon as he had left it, Charles arrived at Glasgow on December 26 with but 8,600 men, having marched 580 miles in fifty-six days. At Stirling he received reinforcements. With 6,000 men he besieged the castle, and on January 17 gained a signal victory over General Hawley at Falkirk. But on February 1 he was forced to continue his retreat before Cumberland, and at length reached Inverness, closely pursued. He was soon in dire distress. He had neither money nor provisions; the French vessels which brought aid were captured by English cruisers. In April Cumberland set out from Aberdeen with 9,000 veterans. A night surprise by the rebels at Nairn failed, and Charles retired to make his last stand with 5,000 men on the fatal moor of Culloden.

Culloden The battle was fought on the 16th. The Highland rush broke Cumberland's first line; but the steady fire of the second line—the front rank kneeling, the second stooping, the third standing—was too much for undisciplined men. The right and centre were routed; an unsparing slaughter followed, which earned for Cumberland the name of 'Butcher,' though Hawley was more responsible than he. The story of the prince's flight is one of romantic wanderings, hardships and perils, and of touching fidelity on the part of the Highlanders, in spite of the offer of 30,000*l.* for him dead or alive (p. 283). At length he escaped from the Western Islands, and reached France on September 29. The heroic part of his life was over; the wanderings in Europe, the debauchery by which he drowned sorrow, his death in 1788, do not belong to English history. Of the prisoners, Lords Kilmarnock and Balmerino were executed, with eighty of lower rank; about 350 were transported. An Indemnity Act was then passed, though clogged with eighty exceptions; a few more executions, including that of Lord Lovat, took place in later years. Other acts were passed to destroy for ever the feudal power of the Highland chiefs—the Disarming Act, the abolition of heritable jurisdictions re-

tained at the Union (p. 347, *note*), and the prohibition of the Highland garb. Never again has Great Britain felt the alarm of civil war. The great dynastic dispute of sixty years was settled in a battle that did not last as many minutes. The Stuart race, so long one of the pieces with which the great powers had played their game, disappeared from the politics of Europe.

The withdrawal of English troops from Flanders to face the rebellion enabled the French to overrun that country during 1746.

In 1747 they even invaded Holland. In 1747, British defeat on land and victories at sea — Lauffeld, near Maestricht, they defeated Cumberland and the Prince of Orange. But on the sea England continually advanced. Anson destroyed a French squadron off Cape Finisterre; Hawke won another great victory at Belleisle; and during 1747 no fewer than 644 prizes were captured.

Meanwhile, in 1744, the Pelhams had driven out Carteret, now Lord Granville, and had included some of the opposition. Chesterfield was lord-lieutenant of Ireland, and shortly became secretary of state. The Dukes of Bedford and Devonshire, two of the richest nobles in England, had taken office. Lyttelton and George Grenville among the Tories also had posts. One great name alone did not appear. The antipathy of George II. to Pitt was invincible; while Pitt himself haughtily refused any place but that of secretary-at-war. But in 1745 the Pelhams, whose parliamentary interest was overwhelming, insisted that the king should give way; while Pitt also relaxed his terms, and became paymaster.¹⁶ The new government, known as the 'Broad Bottom' administration, and especially Chesterfield, bent themselves

The 'Broad Bottom' ministry

to secure peace. France and Spain were willing, for their commerce had been almost destroyed; and Philip V. of Spain had lately died. The English court, however, looking at the question from the German point of view, set itself against peace. Chesterfield, therefore, resigned. The beginning of the campaign of 1748 was unsuccessful, and the strain upon England was

shown in the fact that the government could only borrow money at the high rate of 12 per cent. George was again forced to give way; and on October 18 a truce was secured by the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle. There was little to show for all the blood-

¹⁶ This gave Pitt his first opportunity of showing his perfect integrity regarding money. His office was extremely lucrative, since custom allowed the paymaster to pocket the interest of the large sums—often 100,000*l.*—in his hands, as well as a per-

centage on foreign subsidies. Pitt, though a poor man, refused to touch a farthing from either source. This was in sharp contrast with the conduct of Fox, who three years later held the same office,

shed. Except that Prussia had obtained Silesia, everything went back to the state of things previous to the war. England, indeed, kept Cape Breton, but gave hostages for its restoration. France acknowledged the Emperor Francis (p. 874), and renewed her guarantee of the Pragmatic Sanction.

The repose which followed in Europe was reflected in English politics. Party spirit seemed dead; in the election of 1754 only forty-two contests took place. The army was in large part disbanded; 4,000 of the soldiers set free were assisted to emigrate to Nova Scotia, where they founded Halifax. Several useful measures were passed. Hardwicke's Marriage Act put an end to the ease with which clandestine marriages could be performed. Effective laws were passed to hinder the spread of drunkenness (p. 868). Chesterfield, with the help of the Earl of Macclesfield and of Bradley the mathematician, effected a reform of the calendar, by which the legislative year henceforth began on January 1 instead of March 25. The nucleus of the British Museum was formed by the union of the collections of Sir Robert Cotton, an antiquary of Charles I.'s time, Sir Hans Sloane, president of the Royal Society, and Harley, earl of Oxford, Queen Anne's treasurer. Pelham effected a saving to the country by reducing the interest on the National Debt to 8 per cent. Even the death of the Prince of Wales in 1751 scarcely ruffled the quiet. He left a boy of twelve years old, the future George III.

SECTION 5.—*England and France in America. Pitt's first War Ministry. Alliance with Newcastle*

But in March 1754 Henry Pelham died. 'I shall have no more peace,' said George II., on hearing the news. Newcastle became prime minister; and the question was who should succeed him as secretary of state. Pitt's reputation had been constantly growing; but Newcastle feared him, and the king hated him. Newcastle therefore turned to Henry Fox, a political adventurer of great ability; but Fox insisted upon having a share of patronage, which Newcastle would not surrender. A certain Sir Thomas Robinson was finally made secretary. 'Sir Thomas Robinson lead us,' said Pitt in scorn to Fox; 'the duke might as well send his jackboot to lead us.' Night after night these two made the ministry ridiculous, until in January 1755 Fox was won over, and entered the cabinet without office.

Meanwhile, like the English and Dutch in 1664, or the English and the Spaniards in 1739, England and France, though there was formal peace, were at constant war in Africa, East India, and,

especially, North America. The limits of Nova Scotia had never been defined. Both countries claimed the tract round the Bay of Fundy. England also asserted that, having settled the eastern coast, her right extended across the continent to the Pacific, within the latitudes of their settlements. English stations already existed on the Ohio. But the French, who held Canada, and also Louisiana on the mouth of the Mississippi, and who claimed the great river basins west of the Alleghanies, determined to cut us off from central America by a chain of forts connecting the two. During 1754 they established Fort Duquesne on the Ohio, and compelled George Washington to capitulate at Great Meadows. General Braddock was then sent out from England with 2,000 men; while Hawke attacked and defeated a French fleet conveying 4,000 troops. The forts on the Bay of Fundy were captured; but, on the other hand, Braddock's army fell into an ambush of French and Indians, July 1755, and was utterly routed. Hawke was ordered to scour the seas and take every French vessel he met; swarms of privateers were sent out; and by the end of 1755 800 French merchantmen and 7,000 sailors were brought into English ports.

It now became known that the French were preparing a vast armament for the reconquest of Minorca (p. 351), then held by Blakeney with 2,800 men; and Admiral Byng, son of the victor of Passaro (p. 358), was sent to the rescue with a small fleet. An action took place, in which West, his second in command, behaved with spirit; but Byng's conduct was characterised by what his friends called want of judgment—his enemies, cowardice. He sailed back to Gibraltar without attempting further action; and Blakeney, after a long and gallant defence, capitulated on June 27, 1756, with all the honours of war. The people were furious; West became a popular hero; Byng was imprisoned to wait for a court-martial. War had meanwhile been declared, May 18.

All Europe was once more in arms. But while England again faced France, and Austria faced Prussia, there was in other ways a remarkable change. Alarm at the growing might of Prussia, and a personal quarrel with Frederick, had thrown Louis XV. on the side of Austria; Russia, Poland, Saxony, and Sweden had joined the alliance. Naturally, therefore, England joined Frederick, and thus gained in her quarrel with France the support of the best army led by the best general in Europe.

England herself, through an important change at home, was readier for the conduct of a great war. In 1755 Pitt, himself a member of the government, had led the popular feeling against the incapacity of

Newcastle and the system of subsidies to German powers with such vehemence that he had forced Newcastle to dismiss him. Jealousy of Fox, who had become secretary, added to his invective. It was now that he made the memorable comparison of Newcastle and Fox to the Rhône and the Saône at their junction at Lyons—'the one a gentle, languid stream, and, though languid, of no depth; the other a boisterous, impetuous torrent.' But in 1756 Fox, finding that he had no

Newcastle real power, resigned; and Newcastle, without a supporter
resigns who could look Pitt in the face, at length gave up the prime
ministership. The king then tried to form a coalition of Pitt and
Fox, but Pitt refused. At length he consented to become secretary
under the Duke of Devonshire; his brother-in-law, Earl Temple, and
most of his political friends taking office with him. The change was
at once felt. The German troops quartered in England were dismissed;
55,000 men were voted for the navy, 45,000 for the army; reinforce-

ments were sent to America. By forming regiments from
the Highland clans Pitt at once removed a frequent source
of danger, and brought into the army, in a disciplined shape,
the finest fighting material in the island. The militia, also, were
remodelled so as to become a real strength to the country. Pitt then
carried a vote of 200,000*l.* for the defence of Hanover. The situation
had changed since he had opposed all such grants. Then it was merely
spending English money to defend 'a despicable electorate;' but now
England was attacked through Hanover, and Hanover was therefore
'as dear to England as Hampshire.' He had resolved 'to conquer
America in Germany.'

The High-
land regi-
ments

At this moment Byng was brought to trial. The court-martial acquitted him of cowardice; but he was found guilty of not having done all in his power to save Minorca, and by the 12th
Execution article of war was condemned to death, with a unanimous
of Byng recommendation to mercy. In the teeth of the popular cry, and
against the resolve of the king, Pitt strove his utmost to save him.
His efforts were vain. After forty years of brave service the admiral
was shot, March 14, 1757, a victim to popular discontent,
and Pitt, with all his friends, was dismissed. He at once
became a hero to the whole country, which he had already inspired
with his own enthusiasm. The common council of London protested,
the stocks fell, the chief towns gave him their freedom—for a time
'it rained gold boxes.' It was impossible to form a government in
which he was not the principal figure. The king was once more forced
to give way. An alliance was brought about in June 1757 be-
tween Newcastle, with his immense parliamentary influence, and Pitt,

Dismissal
of Pitt

backed by popular favour. Newcastle was prime minister in name, but Pitt made his own terms; he was to have absolute control of the war. 'I borrowed the Duke of Newcastle's majority,' he said, 'to carry on the public business.' All his friends came back with him; Fox consented to join the government as paymaster (p. 377, note). Thus began the most glorious administration since the days of Elizabeth. The country made a sudden step into a heroic age.

SECTION 6.—*Pitt's Great Administration. Wolfe in Canada*

Pitt's first act was to reverse a humiliating treaty. In 1757 our ally Frederick had been so ruinously beaten by the Austrians at Kolin that the French were enabled to garrison Ostend and Nieuport, defeat Cumberland at Hastenbeck, and occupy Hanover. Cumberland hereupon made a convention at Closterseven, the terms of which roused such indignation in England that Cumberland was recalled, and never again employed. But Frederick retrieved his disasters by the great victories of Rosbach, November 5, over the French, and of Leuthen, December 5, over the Austrians. In 1758 Pitt sent him 670,000*l.*, and the Closterseven treaty was repudiated.

A new spirit pervaded the administration. 'I know that I can save the country, and I know that no one else can,' was no empty boast of Pitt. The estimates went up enormously, and he gloried in the expense. To win the New World he was ready to spend with both hands the treasure which Walpole's rule had given him. By the end of the year there were 95,000 British troops under arms, as well as subsidized forces. A British army was placed under Frederick's best general, Ferdinand of Brunswick, and the subsidy renewed. All who served Pitt gained something of his spirit—'no man ever entered his closet who did not come out of it a braver man'—especially when it was seen that officers were selected, not by seniority or family claims, but by merit. The word 'impossible' did not exist for him. When Anson declared that the fleet could not be ready, Pitt said he would impeach him, and the fleet *was* ready. When our Dutch allies sent stores to France, he ordered every Dutch ship thus laden to be seized. English admirals no longer stayed, like Byng, to ask whether the enemy were superior. The French were driven out of their African settlements at the mouth of the Senegal. A fleet of 150 ships, under Boscawen, carried General Amherst and 12,000 men to attack Cape Breton. Second in command was a young colonel named Wolfe, who had entered the army at fourteen, and had fought at Dettingen, Fontenoy, and Lauffeld. Boscawen and Amherst

Coalition of
Newcastle
and Pitt

Convention
of Closter-
seven re-
pudiated by
Pitt

Pitt as war
minister

worked loyally together : Cape Breton was retaken ; St. John's also fell, and was henceforward known as Prince Edward's Island. Abercrombie, indeed, one of the old generals, was badly beaten by Montcalm at Ticonderoga ; but Fort Duquesne was captured by our men, and its name changed to Pittsburg. A squadron sailed to the French coast and destroyed Cherbourg—'breaking windows with guineas,' Fox spitefully called it. This was but one instance of Pitt's plan of harassing the enemy and dividing his resources. Our command of the sea may be seen in the fact that by the end of 1758 there were 24,000 French prisoners in England.

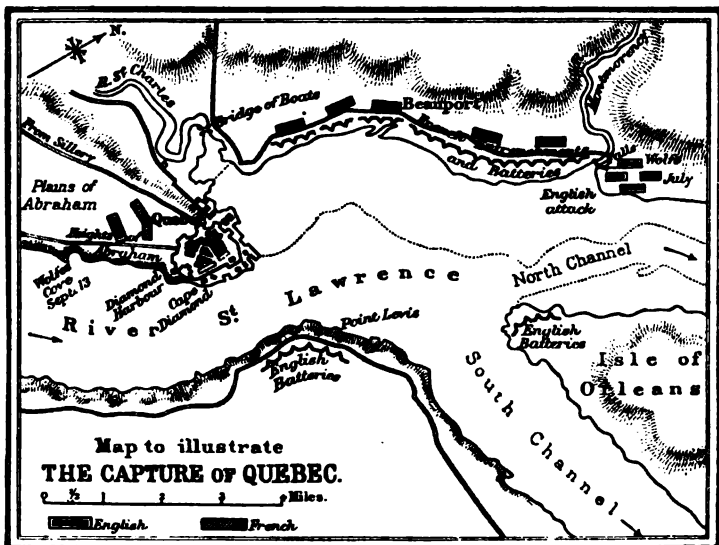
But with 1759 another 'wonderful' year (p. 846) opened. Rodney bombarded Havre, and destroyed a French armament which was preparing to invade England. Boscawen destroyed the Toulon fleet, and Hawke blockaded Brest, while Hopson and Moore took Guadeloupe in the West Indies. And then Pitt bent all his energies to the conquest of Canada.¹⁷

To gain this noble prize he sent out three expeditions : one to reduce Fort Niagara and threaten Montreal ; the second, under Amherst, to renew the attack on Ticonderoga, and thence make its way by Lake Champlain and the river Richelieu towards Quebec ; the third, under Wolfe, to sail up the St. Lawrence and besiege the town.

The first reached Niagara in the middle of July, defeated 2,000 French and Indians, with great slaughter, and forced the garrison to capitulate, thus removing all fear of Canada and Louisiana joining hands. Amherst drove the French out of Ticonderoga. But the late season prevented the further progress of either expedition.

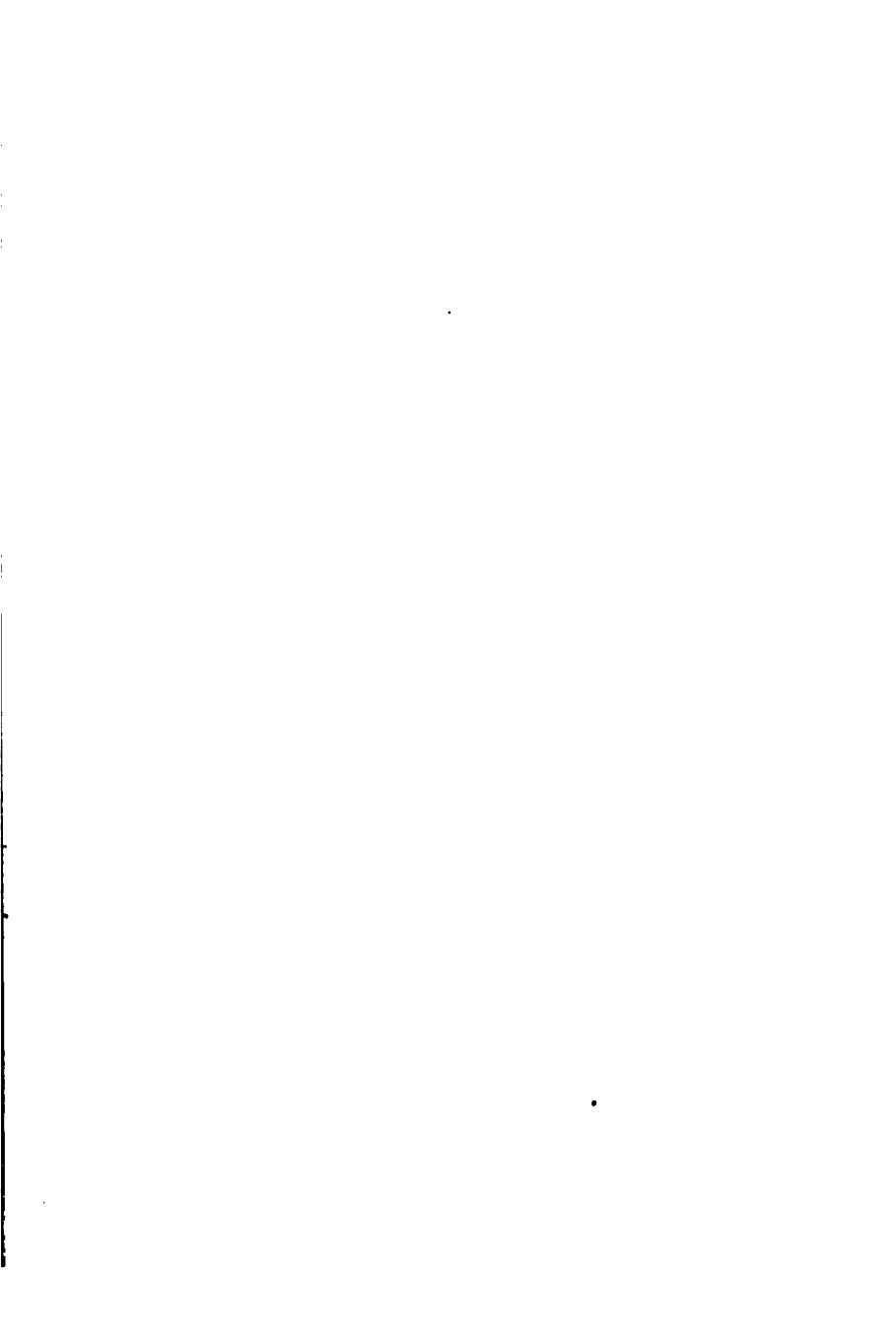
In June, Wolfe sailed up the St. Lawrence in the fleet commanded by Admiral Saunders. Quebec was, after Gibraltar, the strongest fortified place known. It is built upon, and below, a range of rocky heights, ending at the junction of the St. Charles and St. Lawrence, just where the latter broadens from a stream less than a mile across to a wide estuary. Three miles below this point is the Isle of Orleans, twenty miles long. A sand-bank guards the harbour from attack. The cliffs extend several miles above the town, and are there called the Heights of Abraham. Below the town the ground is difficult as far as the point where the Montmorency falls into the St. Lawrence, nearly opposite the upper end of the Isle of Orleans. Montcalm's army, of about 10,000 men, chiefly Canadians and Indians, lay entrenched on the heights between the Montmorency and the St. Charles, with a bridge of boats across the latter river to Quebec. Thus the city could not be invested, nor his force attacked with advantage.

¹⁷ Mahon, ch. xxv.



Longmans, Green & Co., London & New York.

F. S. Waller.



On June 27 Wolfe landed on the Isle of Orleans. Several attempts to destroy our fleet with fire-ships were skilfully baffled by Saunders; and on the 29th batteries were established both on Point Levis, somewhat higher up on the right bank of the river, and on the point of the island, the fire from which soon reduced the town to ruins. On July 9 Wolfe crossed the river below the Montmorency, at the same time Attempt upon the French lines defeated sending a squadron above Quebec. Unable to draw Montcalm from his entrenchments, he crossed the ford at the mouth of the Montmorency, and tried to carry them by assault; but, owing to the very impetuosity of his troops, the attempt was beaten back with heavy loss. The men grew dispirited, and Wolfe himself fell seriously ill. Upon his recovery he carried back his army, reduced by sickness and death to less than 4,000 men, to Point Levis, and thence several miles up the river on the right bank, Montcalm despatching 1,500 men along the Heights of Abraham to watch its movements. So hopeless did the prospect seem that, on September 9, Wolfe sent home a despatch in terms of the utmost despondency.

Long before that despatch reached England the famous exploit had been accomplished. During the 12th the attention of Montcalm was distracted by feigned movements of the squadrons above and below Quebec. At 1 a.m., on the 18th, the night being very dark, the troops were embarked in boats, which, as the tide flowed out, fell down unobserved to a small inlet, ever since known as Wolfe's Cove, under the Heights of Abraham, two miles above Quebec. The only voice heard, as with muffled oars they approached the beach, was that of Wolfe, reciting, in low tones to his officers, Gray's 'Elegy in a Country Churchyard.' 'Now, gentlemen,' he said, as he finished, 'I would rather have been the author of that poem than take Quebec.'

The Heights of Abraham The men sprang silently to land, Wolfe among the first, and without a moment's pause dashed at the face of the cliff, every man with the spirit of Pitt within him. Pulling themselves up by the bushes and projecting pieces of rock, they had nearly reached the top, when a challenge and one wild volley from the French picquet above showed they were discovered. But the picquet then fled in panic; the leading men—they were Pitt's Highlanders—leaped to the tableland and formed in line. The boats were sent back for more men, and at daybreak, the whole force, with a single piece of cannon, which had somehow been dragged up, stood in order of battle.

Montcalm could scarcely credit the news. He at once left his lines, crossed the St. Charles, and hurried to the attack, while the English waited motionless. The French charged, firing as they came. By Wolfe's orders his men withheld their fire until the enemy were

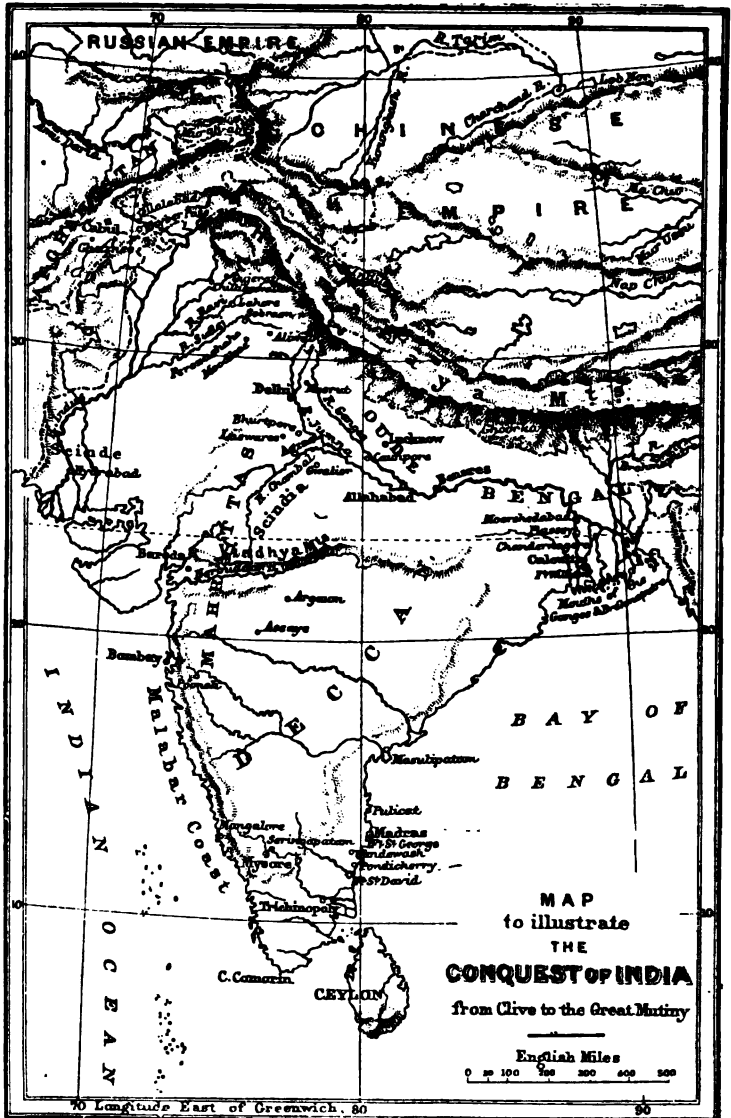
within forty yards; and then one crashing volley was poured in from the whole line. The smoke had not cleared away when Wolfe, already wounded in the wrist, bounded forward and cheered on the grenadiers to a bayonet charge. A second ball struck him in the groin; still he calmly gave his orders. But a third pierced his breast, and he fell. As he lay dying, he lifted his head from time to time to watch the fight. His eyesight failed; he remained without sign of life, save heavy breathing, or a stifled groan. Suddenly an officer exclaimed, 'See! they run!' 'Who run?' cried Wolfe, eagerly raising himself on his elbow. 'The enemy; they give way everywhere!' 'Then God be praised!' cried Wolfe; 'I die happy.' A moment later he gasped out his last command, an order to send a regiment to cut off the French retreat; and then, turning on his side, expired. Montcalm also was wounded, as he tried to rally his men, and died in Quebec next day. On September 18 Quebec capitulated. Montreal fell next year, and Canada passed into the hands of England.

But not yet were the triumphs of 1759 exhausted. In the midst of a fierce storm, on a dangerous coast, Hawke intrepidly engaged the French fleet, which had sallied from Brest, off the Point of Quiberon, November 20, and utterly defeated it. The fear of invasion by the French was removed, and a final blow given to their naval power.

Such then were some of the achievements of this 'wonderful year.' The navy and commerce of France were destroyed, and her government brought so low that she was forced to declare herself bankrupt, by repudiating her national debt. North America—except the mouth of the Mississippi—had fallen to England; our own commerce was increasing 'by leaps and bounds;' our western empire was assured; and all this was the work of Pitt.¹⁸

Meanwhile Frederick had been brought almost to despair by disaster upon disaster. Ferdinand of Brunswick, however, with whom Battle of Minden were serving 12,000 British troops, won a great victory at Minden on August 1, which would have been still more crushing had Sackville, the English commander, led the cavalry to the charge at the proper moment. For Wolfe the whole nation was in mourning; Hawke was pensioned, and made a peer. Sackville was recalled, court-martialled, and dismissed the service. In 1760 Frederick recovered his ground completely at the terrible battle of Torgau. Ferdinand beat the French at Warburg, a charge of our horse under Lord Granby redeeming Sackville's blunder, and going far to decide the day. On October 25 George II. suddenly died, like his father, of a fit of apoplexy. He was in his seventy-seventh year.

¹⁸ He 'united commerce with, and made it flourish by, war.'



SECTION 7.—*The Conquest of India.*¹⁹ *Robert Clive*

Meanwhile, in an opposite part of the globe, there had been accomplished a still mightier conquest. At the Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle the

The East India Company settlements of the East India Company, founded in 1600, consisted of three presidencies, each governed by a president and a council appointed by the directors in England, and

guarded by a mixed force of English and natives. They were: (1) Bombay, on the west; (2) Madras, in the region known as the Carnatic, protected by Forts St. George and St. David; (3), Fort William, on the Hooghly, in the north-east, under the shelter of which rose Calcutta. Here, as in Canada, France was our rival.

French rivalry. Dupleix She held Chandernagore, a little above Calcutta; Pondicherry, eighty miles south of Madras; the islands of Mauritius (Isle de France) and Mascarenhas (Isle de Bourbon), in the Indian Ocean. Dupleix, who commanded the whole French power, was a man of the widest ambition, utter want of scruple, and great skill in taking advantage of the jealousies of rival native princes. He had made up his mind to get rid of the English in India altogether.

During 1750 and 1751 Dupleix secured the whole coast from Madras to Cape Comorin, with sovereignty over the Carnatic. He beat an English force sent against him, and shut it up in Trichinopoly. If Trichinopoly fell, it was certain that Forts St. David and St. George must succumb also.

This disaster was averted by the prowess of one man. Robert Clive was born near Market Drayton in Shropshire, in 1725, and

Robert Clive as a boy, was noted for his wayward and impetuous temper, imperiousness, and courage. He was afflicted with a constitutional morbidness, which had already led him to attempt his own

life; the failure convinced him that he was destined for great things. Disliking books and home life, he was sent to India as a clerk in

the company's service, but shortly obtained an ensign's commission, and at the moment of peril was at Fort St. David. He urged the

despatch of an expedition to capture Arcot, the capital of the Carnatic, and thus to draw the enemy from Trichinopoly; and in August

1751 he was placed in command of 300 Sepoys and 200 English. Of his eight officers six were civilians. The garrison fled upon his

approach, and Clive took possession of the ruinous and scarcely defensible citadel. Here, for eleven weeks, one long record

Siege of Arcot of incessant vigilance, he was besieged by 10,000 men, chiefly Indians. He managed to communicate with a friendly chief of the

warlike Mahrattas; but the enemy resolved to anticipate their arrival.

¹⁹ Mahon, *History of England*, ch. xxxix; Macaulay, *Essay on Clive*.

On November 14 a general assault was made upon Clive's poor ramparts. The defence, in which his coolness and courage were equally conspicuous, and in which his Sepoys showed a touching devotion to him, is one of the exploits which ranks with the capture of Quebec.²⁰ The siege was raised. Clive sallied forth, and with the Mahrattas completely defeated the vastly superior forces of the enemy at Arnee, and again near Madras; took Conjeveram, and razed the monuments erected by Dupleix. With Major Lawrence, he then marched to Trichinopoly, forced the besiegers themselves to capitulate, and once more defeated Dupleix. His health now gave way, and he returned to England, where he was received with the highest honours by the directors. In August 1754 Dupleix was superseded, and died in France in 1763.

On June 20, 1756, Clive came back as governor of Fort St. David. On that very day an awful scene was being enacted at Calcutta. The nabob of Bengal, Surajah Dowlah, had suddenly marched upon the town in overpowering force. He promised to spare the lives of the prisoners. That night 145 Europeans, with one woman, were thrust into the common dungeon of the town, ever since known as the Black Hole of Calcutta, eighteen feet by fourteen, with but two small windows. It was the height of an Indian summer. The wretched captives could not be freed without an order from the nabob, and he was asleep and might not be awakened. The next morning twenty-three only came out alive, the woman, strangely enough, being among them.

The tidings reached Clive on August 16. He arrived with Admiral Watson in the Hooghly in December, and on January 2, 1757, recaptured Calcutta. Surajah Dowlah returned to crush him, with 40,000 men. But he was cowed by a night attack and made peace on terms most favourable to the British. When, however, Clive and Watson captured Chandernagore (p. 385), he once more changed sides and joined the French. Clive hereupon resolved to supplant him by his general, Meer Jaffier, with whom he had had a secret understanding. With a mixed force of 3,000 men and ten guns he marched against Surajah, who lay at Plassey with 50,000 men and forty guns. The odds seemed so fearful that in a council of war Clive himself voted against attacking; but scarcely was this decided upon when he changed his mind. At sunrise on June 23, 1757, the famous battle began. A panic seized the nabob, and he ordered his forces to fall back; two companies of English at once charged, followed by Clive with the rest of the little force. Meer Jaffier deserted with all his troops; and

²⁰ See the account in Macaulay's *Essay*. The nearest parallel is the defence of Silistria by Butler and Kars by

Williams against the Russians during the Crimean war.

the fight became a mere rout, though scarcely any slaughter took place. Surajah fled, but was taken, and at once put to death by Meer Jaffier, who was acknowledged by Clive as nabob. The English acquired the sole possession of Calcutta and the tenure of the immediate district, to the sea; and Meer Jaffier paid the company 2,750,000*l.*, Clive himself receiving 200,000*l.* Clive was now made governor of Bengal. In 1759 he largely extended the English territory and reduced Masulipatam. In the same year the Dutch, who had a station at Chinsura on the Hooghly, intrigued with the nabob for a joint attack upon the English. Clive at once attacked them by land and water, defeated the land force, and captured all their ships. Then he returned again in ill-health to England with a fortune of 40,000*l.* a year, received an Irish peerage as Baron Clive of Plassey, and entered the House of Commons.

Fighting had been indecisive in the Carnatic. But in April 1758 a French force was landed under Lally, who at once besieged and took Fort St. David and Arcot. In December he appeared before Madras. Here, however, the defence was so vigorous that after a siege of many weeks the attempt was given up. In October 1759 Colonel Eyre Coote arrived with reinforcements from England. On November 30 he stormed Wandewash, and on January 22, 1760, gave battle to Lally, who attempted to relieve the town. This was not, like Plassey, a contest of Europeans against Indians, but of English against French. The great victory which Coote obtained gave to England the supremacy over the Carnatic, as Plassey had given the supremacy over Bengal. Coote then retook Arcot and other towns, and struck the final blow to French power in India by the siege and capture of Pondicherry, January 16, 1761.

While the reign of George II. witnessed these triumphs, it saw in its earlier years the beginning of one of the greatest movements in English religious history.²¹ The church had for many reasons been growing cold, formal, lifeless; external morality, the decencies of life, moderation, and good sense, were the themes of its preachers; they made no appeal to religious emotion. Christianity was not to be believed as a matter of faith, but as depending upon reasoning and evidence. Unitarianism was spreading, and there was a dislike to be bound by the Articles of Faith. Church-going and Sunday observances had decayed; the example of the court encouraged laxity. Sermons were cold and polished—never emotional or fervid. Enthusiasm was out of fashion.²²

²¹ Mahon, ch. xix; Lecky, v. ii. p. 550.

²² Among the reasons for this was (1) the fact that through the depression of Catholics and Dissenters there was no healthy opposition to the church; that theology and politics had become confused; that tolerant bishops had

become divorced from intolerant clergy; that the growth of physical science had encouraged scepticism; that the universities were in a state of decrepitude; and that through the growth of manufactures great masses of population had grown without any church provision.

This state of things called forth the great revival known as Methodism. John and Charles Wesley, its founders, were sons of the rector of Epworth in Lincolnshire. They were both at Oxford, where John, born 1703, became fellow of Lincoln. Here they established a little society, of which Whitefield,²³ previously a waiter in an inn, but soon to be the most famous field preacher the world has ever seen, and Hervey, author of the 'Meditations,' were members. From the *method* of life which they laid down, with rigid and ascetic rules, they acquired the nickname of 'Methodists,' which the whole sect, numbering now many millions, is proud to bear. There was no idea of separation from the church; they wished to be a church within a church, a living organism within a dying one; Wesley was a clergyman to his death. But the vehemence of their attack upon the present deadness, their reversal of the ordinary practice of the church, caused their exclusion from church pulpits; and thus they were led to found Methodist chapels, to rely upon open-air preaching, and to employ lay preachers; becoming practically, though never acknowledging it, dissenters. They were treated with contempt and brutality by high and low; but they steadily made their way. Their organisation—over which Wesley was supreme to his death—was admirable. They never exercised much influence over the rich or educated; but to the poor and depraved they appealed with irresistible power. With much that was absurd, with much that was harmful in the hysteric emotion which they created in their converts, especially among the women, it is to this revival of the emotional side of religion, to the vast influence they acquired among the poor and lower middle class, that the Established Church was, as it were, shamed into the life and fervour of later years.

Dates of the Reign of George II.

	A.D.		A.D.
Treaty of Seville	1729	Newcastle's first government (with Fox)	1754-1756
Second Treaty of Vienna	1781	Newcastle's second government (with Pitt)	1757-1762
Excise Bill defeated	1733	Alliance with Frederick the Great	1756
Porteous Riots	1736	Loss of Minorca	1756
Death of Queen Caroline	1737	Execution of Byng	1757
The Wesleyan Revival	1738	Convention of Closterseven re- pudiated	1758
War declared against Spain	1739	Capture of Quebec by Wolfe	1759
Anson's voyage round the world	1740-1744	Clive at Arcot	1761
Resignation of Walpole	1742	Black Hole of Calcutta	1766
Battle of Dettingen	1743	Battle of Plassey	1757
Henry Pelham's government 1743-1754		Battle of Wandewash	1760
Battle of Fontenoy and the Young Pretender	1745	Capture of Pondicherry	1761
Battles of Lauffeld, Cape Finisterre, and Belleisle	1747		

²³ Stephen, *Essays on Ecclesiastical Biography*, 'The Evangelical Succession.

CHAPTER V

GEORGE III. 1760-1820. PRIVILEGE AND PREROGATIVE.
1760-1784

SECTION 1.—*John Wilkes. Revolt of the American Colonies. Ministries of Newcastle, Bute, Grenville, Rockingham, Chatham, and Grafton*

GEORGE III. was now twenty-two years old. He was simple, chaste, and religious; a good son, as he was afterwards a kind husband and a conscientious father. Born and trained in England, he George III. Intentions of the court 'gloried in the name of Briton;' he had the English country tastes and love of field sports. But he was not generous or frank; he was ignorant both of books and men, arbitrary, prejudiced, without imagination, and opposed to every assertion of liberty. His path was marked out for him by his mother's influence. 'George, be a king!' was her constant advice. He was to break through the circle of Whig grandees, the 'Revolution families,' as they called themselves, such as the Pelhams, the Cavendishes, and the Russells, who by their enormous parliamentary influence had kept the crown in subjection; and the prerogative was once more to supersede the power of the Commons.¹ Lord Bute, who had been his governor—an honest man, but pretentious, arrogant, and of small capacity—was made secretary of state, and devoted himself to forming an interior cabal about the king's person; while by profuse bribery a court party was secured in the Commons, known as the 'king's friends,' who quoted the king's personal pleasure for all their votes.

To get rid of Pitt was the first object; and for this purpose a peace was to be hurried on. He succeeded, indeed, in delaying negotiations

¹ The ideas connected with the term 'Whig' must now be widened to include the adherents of the oligarchy who wished, through their parliamentary influence, to coerce the king, and to absorb all political power in their families. The Tory held that no influence should stand between king and people. The terms 'privilege' and 'prerogative' express this shortly. The real contest in those days was not between aristocracy and democracy,

but between aristocracy and monarchy. The Tories were at least as much aristocrats as the Whigs, but they submitted to the dominion of the king. The Whigs sought to maintain a parliamentary party independent of the king's personal influence, and to establish its supremacy over the royal will. Opposition to, and support of, the American war must also be added to the distinguishing ideas.

until an expedition already sent out had captured Belle Isle, which he intended to retain as a pledge for the restoration of Minorca. When France and Spain, relying on the 'Family Compact,' used threatening language towards Great Britain, he pressed for instant war upon Spain, for an attack upon whose colonies he had all ready. Opposed in the council, he haughtily declared, that he was responsible to the people alone, and resigned office. His acceptance of a pension and a peerage for his wife for a time destroyed his popularity; but he was soon again the idol of the people, as Bute was the object of their execration. The aggressive tone of Spain forced his enemies to carry out his policy, and declare war. Fortunately the impulse he had given lasted still. In 1762 France lost her West Indian islands; while Havannah and the Philippines, with fifteen warships and treasure valued at three millions, were taken from Spain, and a British force drove her troops from Portugal. Frederick the Great meanwhile defeated Austria, while British and Hanoverian troops cleared Hanover of the French.

Both France and Spain were thus ready for the peace desired by Bute, to manufacture a popular cry for which bribery was profusely employed, 500*l.* being paid for an address in favour of it from any corporate body. London, the whole Whig body, and especially Pitt, opposed the court in vain. The Peace of Paris, February 10, 1763, which should be compared with the Peace of Utrecht, made under similar circumstances, secured a great extension of British dominion, though not such as Pitt would have demanded.² Before long Prussia and Austria came to terms, and France retired from Germany. Thus Europe was once more in repose.

The ministerial changes were now completed. Newcastle gave way to Bute. George Grenville, Pitt's brother-in-law, was secretary. 'Now, indeed, my son is king!' exclaimed his mother. 'Never again shall those Whig grandees be admitted to power,' said George himself. Henry Fox joined Bute as paymaster, and government was carried on by the open corruption of the Commons. Members came to Fox's office to take their bribes; 200*l.* was the lowest price for a vote. Every government

² France gave up all North America, except Louisiana; Senegal in Africa; Grenada, St. Vincent, Dominica, and Tobago; and Minorca in return for Belle Isle. Goree in Africa was restored to her, with Guadeloupe, Maria-galante, Martinique, and St. Lucia. She kept the right of fishing on the coast of Newfoundland and in the Gulf of St. Lawrence. Pondicherry in India was also restored, provided there was no military occupation. The demolition

of the harbour and fortification of Dunkirk was again insisted upon. Spain gave up Florida and the Newfoundland fishery, regaining Havannah and the Philippines; the claim of the English to cut logwood in Honduras Bay was admitted; and all questions as to prizes captured by England before the war were to be settled by the English courts. The alliance with Prussia was practically abandoned by the cessation of subsidies.

post, down to that of the humblest revenue officer, was filled by a crown nominee. But Bute's power soon came to an end. The country was jealous of his influence over the king. The author of an unpopular peace, the imposer of an obnoxious tax upon cider,³ the supposed lover of the king's mother,⁴ and, lastly, a Scotchman, he rapidly became so hated that he resigned in April 1763. Fox, as a reward for his help in corrupting the Commons, became Lord Holland, retaining his lucrative post.

The new prime minister was George Grenville, He was an honest man and a good administrator, and was, like Clarendon (p. 297), thoroughly conversant with constitutional law. But, like Clarendon again, he was unfitted by this very fact for dealing with emergencies when 'the high roads are broken up and the waters out.' It was hoped that he would fall in with the designs of the court without demur; but he showed so much independence that Bute and the king repented, and applied again to Pitt. Pitt's terms were, however, still more subversive of their designs. Grenville, now master of the situation, agreed to stay on; and his government was strengthened by the accession of the Duke of Bedford, a harsh and overbearing man, but the most powerful and wealthy of the nobility.

Grenville's first difficulty was the affair of John Wilkes, member for Aylesbury, a man of scandalous life, but of wit, courage, and shrewdness, who, under the patronage of Earl Temple, had founded a newspaper called the 'North Briton,' in which Bute and the court were virulently attacked. On April 23, 1763, the famous No. 45 appeared, containing unmeasured abuse of the speech from the throne, and practically charging the king with falsehood. A 'general warrant'—one, that is, which does not specify the accused by name—was issued by the secretaries, Lords Halifax and Egremont, against the authors, printers, and publishers, and forty-nine persons were arrested. Wilkes was acknowledged the author, and, in spite of his parliamentary privilege, was thrown into the Tower; his room was forcibly opened and his papers carried off. Two questions arose—Were general warrants legal? Was Wilkes protected by privilege? The first question, evidently of the greatest importance to the liberty of the subject, was decided by Chief-Justice Pratt, afterwards Lord Camden, in Wilkes's favour, and Wilkes and his friends after-

³ The populace in the cider country dressed up a figure in a Scotch plaid and blue ribbon, leading an ass royally crowned.

⁴ He was compared in broadsheets

with Earl Mortimer, the infamous lover of Edward III.'s mother. John Wilkes reprinted Ben Jonson's play, 'The Fall of Mortimer,' and dedicated it to him.

wards gained damages for false imprisonment. Upon the second it was successfully argued for Wilkes that privilege covered everything but treason, felony, and breach of the peace;⁵ and all that the court could do was to deprive him of his colonelcy in the militia, and to dismiss his patron, Temple, from his lord-lieutenancy and the privy council. But among Wilkes's impounded papers was his 'Essay on Woman,' a blasphemous and obscene parody of Pope's 'Essay on Man,' and the Lords, though it had not been published, demanded his prosecution for blasphemy. The Commons, in the face of the popular feeling, now resolved, retrospectively, that privilege did not extend to seditious libel; and on January 19, 1764, Wilkes was expelled from the house, all who voted against the crown being dismissed from any offices they held. Wilkes, who had fled to France, was then prosecuted for reprinting No. 45, and, having printed the 'Essay on Woman,' was found guilty of blasphemy and seditious libel, and outlawed.

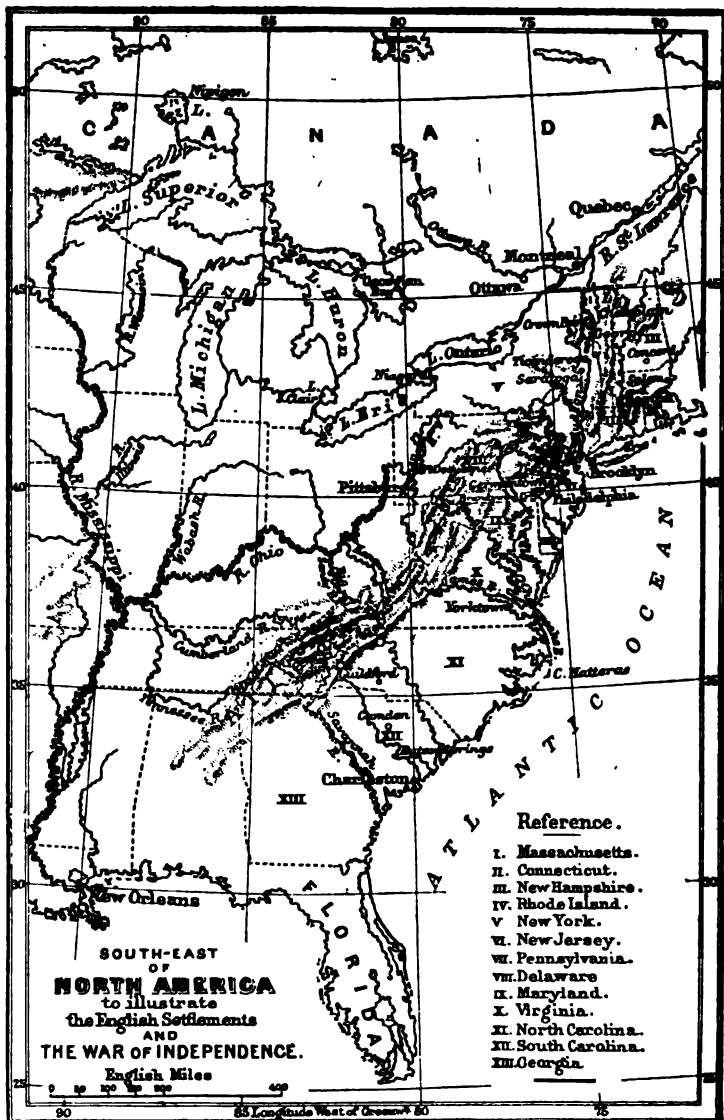
The king meanwhile chafed under Grenville's thralldom. Twice he applied in vain to Pitt. At length he sent for the old Duke of Newcastle. His terms were the dismissal of Bute from all influence, and the reinstatement of the great Whig connection; and the king gave way perforce. In July 1765 the Marquis of Rockingham, a man of good sense, unblemished character, and respectable talents, to be remembered chiefly because for his private secretary he had the famous political philosopher Edmund Burke, became prime minister; Newcastle was privy seal; General Conway and the Duke of Grafton secretaries of state. Several of Pitt's friends took office; but without Pitt himself the ministry was 'an arch that wanted its keystone.' Thwarted by the king, intrigued against by the 'king's friends,' it struggled on for a year, until, deserted by Grafton, it was contemptuously dismissed in July 1766. But it was an honest government, and before it fell it had done much good work. 'General warrants' had been condemned; officers, dismissed for giving votes against the court, had been restored; Bute's Cider Act modified; commerce with Russia firmly established; and an unfortunate act of Grenville's government for taxing the American colonies repealed.

The American colonies⁶ were Massachusetts, Connecticut, Rhode

⁵ The court lawyers contended that the publication had a 'tendency' to cause a breach of the peace; the value of the independence now enjoyed by the judges (p. 839) was shown in their rejection of the doctrine that this was

sufficient for conviction.

⁶ The American flag, unfurled on January 1, 1776, had thirteen stripes of alternate red and white, without stars, and with the crosses of St. George and St. Andrew on a blue ground in the



Island, and New Hampshire in the north, forming what was called New England, of Puritan origin—the very backbone of the American nation; (2) the middle states of New York, New Jersey, Delaware, Maryland, and Pennsylvania—the last named being a Quaker settlement; the slave states of Virginia, North and South Carolina, and Georgia. They had differing forms of local representative government, but the governors and chief officials were appointed by the crown. In their own affairs, especially in the great point of direct taxation, they had been beneficially left alone. But they acknowledged the right of the mother country to bind them in commercial matters; and this right was jealously and oppressively enforced.⁷ They were subject to the Navigation Act; they might sell their chief products in British dominions alone; they might import nothing which had not previously been landed in England. All rivalry with England, particularly in the wool trade, was crushed. Trade with the French West Indies was forbidden; and English custom-house officers did their best to check the smuggling which inevitably followed, and which reached such an extent that not one-tenth of the tea consumed came, according to law, from England. Impatience of this control grew rapidly; during the late war the loyalty of the colonists was much weakened; George of England, it was said, was no better than Louis of France; and a vigorous trade was done with the French garrisons and fleets. The Peace of Paris indeed, by removing all fear of the French in Canada and the Spanish in Florida, caused an outburst of loyal feeling. But in 1764 Grenville passed an act levying new duties, while reducing others, enacting many harassing regulations, and enforcing the Navigation Act more strictly, in order to raise a revenue for defraying the expenses of defending and securing the colonies. And in 1765, when the National Debt had risen to 140 millions, and a distribution of burdens was necessary to relieve taxation in England, Grenville resolved (1) to enforce the custom duties still more strictly than before by placing ships of the royal navy along the coast; (2) to quarter 10,000 men permanently in America; and (3) to tax the colonies *directly* to the amount of 100,000*l.*, a third of the cost. This was but just; but the plan adopted by Grenville, who could not see that abstract justice must be modified by circumstances, was the cause of all the evils which followed. The Stamp Act, which passed the two houses almost without comment in

corner. The stars were added in July 1777.

⁷ Ludlow, 'War of American Inde-

pendence,' in *Epochs of European History*, p. 67; Lecky, *History of England*, vol. iii. p. 299.

The
American
colonies

Their
discontent

Foolish
policy of
Grenville;
the Stamp
Act

March 1765, ordered that every legal document, to be valid, must be written upon stamped paper sent from England, payment being demanded for the stamp. The colonists, thus *directly* taxed, inveighed against this as a breach of the great principle of 'No taxation without representation.' Riots took place in Boston; the houses of government officials were wrecked, and the stamp distributors burnt in effigy; no one would use the stamped paper, the

Non-
importation
agreement

'folly of England and the ruin of America.' All commerce with England was voluntarily stopped; the richest wore their own coarse homespun rather than clothes from

England; no lamb was eaten, so that the wool of their own country might suffice. Before long the English merchants began to protest; crowds of unemployed men besieged the doors of parliament; Glasgow was nearly ruined.⁸ The Rockingham ministry were anxious to repeal the act; the king and his 'friends,' with Grenville and Bedford, opposed them. Pitt upheld the colonists, though holding that on any question other than that of direct taxation parliament had the right to legislate for every part of the British dominions; and his words, 'I rejoice that America has resisted,' were soon carried to the other side of the Atlantic. Chiefly through his aid, and that of Burke, the

Repeal of the
Stamp Act.
Declaratory
Act

government carried the repeal. At the same time, however, to disarm opposition, they passed a Declaratory Act affirming the right of parliament to make laws binding

the colonies *in all cases whatsoever*; the very right which the colonists denied. Immediately afterwards the Rockingham ministry resigned.

The king once more besought Pitt to take office, and Pitt, though very ill, yielded. His idea was to form a national party; and he tried

Pitt's
ministry.
Created Earl
of Chatham

to do this by including in his ministry Whigs and Tories, 'patriots' (p. 365), and 'king's friends,' Rockinghamites and his own adherents. Of the last, Grafton became first lord

of the Treasury. Too ill to lead the Commons, Pitt accepted a peerage as Earl of Chatham. The honour was a just one, but with it vanished the popularity of the great commoner. From the first the ministry was ill-starred. The king was sullenly hostile when he found that Chatham still refused to aid in rendering the prerogative supreme; bad harvests had brought distress and discontent, and parliament seemed unable to find remedies. Chatham had hoped to unite the northern

⁸ The after effects, however, were such that the merchants welcomed a second non-importation agreement. The great demand for their goods, when the demand came, enabled them to sell at very high prices, and to sell stuff which they could not sell before.

powers against France and Spain, to place India directly under the crown, to reform the Irish administration: but he failed in all. His illness prevented him from keeping the reins in his hands, and Grafton was left in charge. As his malady increased, he grew less able to command himself. He quarrelled with his Whig colleagues, and was forced to ruin his own position, while accomplishing the king's designs, by filling the places of the grandees with Tories. Soon his nerves were so shattered that he could not even see the king; the ministry was in utter confusion. France was allowed to acquire Corsica by purchase from Genoa, and thus to regain a position in the Mediterranean. The American difficulty was kept alive by an act forbidding the importation into Jamaica or Dominica of the chief staples of the northern colonies; and by another requiring the colonies to provide the king's troops with stores and barracks. Worst of all, his chancellor of the exchequer, Charles Townshend, a rash though brilliant and amiable man, pledged himself without Chatham's knowledge to raise revenue from America to support the troops; and when pressed by the Grenville opposition to fulfil the pledge, passed an act imposing duties upon tea, glass, and paper. Dying immediately after this fatal act, he was succeeded as chancellor of the exchequer by Lord North, son of the Earl of Guildford.

As soon as he was sufficiently recovered Chatham resigned. Grafton, left head of the government, had first to deal with Wilkes, who, returning from France in March 1768, stood for London but failed, and was then elected for Middlesex, when the streets of London were illuminated in his honour. Had the court taken no notice of the matter he would probably have been forgotten. But George, harsh and obstinate, was bent upon persecuting him. His outlawry was declared illegal; but on the old verdict for blasphemy and seditious libel he was sentenced to a fine of 1,000*l.* and imprisonment for twenty-two months. The mob rose in his favour; 'Wilkes and liberty' was the popular watchword; in St. George's Fields the soldiers fired on the crowd and killed many persons; they were put on trial, but only after being ostentatiously commended and rewarded by their officers and the crown, and were acquitted. On February 2, 1769, Wilkes was expelled from the house; again elected, and then declared incapable of sitting in the present parliament, a decision which, if it were to stand, would destroy the rights of the voters. Again he was elected, and the election was then declared void. On the fourth occasion Colonel Luttrell stood against him. He obtained but 296 votes to 1,143 for Wilkes. But the

The
ministry in
confusion

Townshend's
mad act for
taxing
America

Resignation
of Chatham

Wilkes im-
prisoned.
The Middle-
sex election

Commons seated Luttrell, and the session was at once closed. Throughout this contest Wilkes had been in prison. But the triumph was really with him. On his release in 1770 he was the popular idol. The Mansion House was illuminated with the word 'Liberty' in letters three feet high. Subscriptions and legacies poured in upon him. He became alderman, sheriff, lord mayor, and, in time, member of parliament once more; the resolution declaring him unable to sit was expunged in 1782, and he obtained a verdict for 4,000*l.* against Lord Halifax, the secretary of state who had issued the general warrant under which his papers had been seized. Thus, though a champion for whom no respect can be felt, he had made general warrants for ever impossible, and had vindicated the right of a constituency to select its representatives. This contest with Wilkes brought grave embarrassment upon the government. The lord mayor and council appeared before the king and addressed him in the boldest language. Middlesex petitioned against its practical disfranchisement; Westminster cried out for a dissolution. Discontent was rife among the people, who felt that parliament was rapidly divorcing itself from them. The government was exposed to the scathing attacks of 'Junius,' whose identity is still a matter of conjecture, though the evidence points strongly to

Popular discontent. 'Junius' Sir Philip Francis, formerly a clerk in the war office. The letters, while abounding in calumny and untruth, were written in a style of invective so pungent against Grafton, Bedford, and the king himself, and with such consummate literary skill, that they were read throughout England, and have taken a high place in our classical literature.

But far more serious was the news from America, where Townshend's mad act was bearing bitter fruit. The colonists no longer confined their resistance to internal taxation. The Assembly of Massachusetts met to concert their measures; but it was at once dissolved by the governor, and an English regiment quartered at Boston. Non-importation agreements were again entered into in Massachusetts. The use of tea was given up. A sloop named the 'Liberty,' attempting to land a cargo, was boarded by the revenue officers; but the crew resisted and locked them in the cabin until the cargo was safe on shore. The sloop was hereupon confiscated and towed under the guns of a royal frigate. Riots broke out in Boston, officials were tarred and feathered, and their houses destroyed. Two more regiments then occupied the town; the colonists thereupon met, advised all who had arms to get them ready, and called a convention of other towns. The feeling became still more bitter when the royal speech of 1769 con-

America :
Resistance to
Townshend's
act

tained nothing but angry words of America,⁹ and when Bedford carried an act to revive an obsolete law of Henry VIII., by which the leaders of resistance might be brought for trial to England.

Grafton, with the 'rump' of Chatham's administration, was meanwhile sustaining the combined onslaught of the various parties in opposition. Chatham himself appeared to denounce all that had been done in his absence. Before long the Lord Chancellor Camden (p. 391)

and the Marquis of Granby, the popular commander-in-chief, resigned. Grafton found his position untenable. But the obstinacy of the king deprived the great families of their expected triumph. 'Sooner than yield to a dissolution I will have recourse to this,' he said, touching his sword. He ordered North, the only man of mark in the cabinet, to form a government. North at once accepted the task, the sixth prime minister in ten years. His one idea was the support of authority, of the crown over the grandees, of parliament over the people, of Britain over her colonies. 'In all my memory,' he said of himself, 'I do not recollect a single popular measure I have ever voted for.' He was a man of the highest courage, of imperturbable temper, and absolute probity; he was sensible, ready, and witty in debate. He succeeded to what seemed a forlorn hope; for against him stood the parties of Chatham, Rockingham, and Grenville, with the whole force of popular feeling.

Resignation
of Grafton.
Lord North
prime
minister

SECTION 2.—*North and the Loss of the American Colonies*

But the opposition was not united; nor was their invective of any avail against a minister who would placidly doze in his seat under their most vehement attacks. The discipline of the 'king's friends' (p. 389) defeated every hostile motion; the king himself met with decisive firmness the menacing language which, under the influence of Wilkes, was used to his face by the city council.

One or two important reforms were, however, carried:—(1) Disputed elections, hitherto referred to a committee of 240 members, had been decided on purely party grounds, without reference to justice. On Grenville's motion such questions were now referred to a committee of only thirteen, reduced to five in 1842.¹⁰ Each member of so small a body felt greater responsibility and judged the matter more on its merits. (2) The gross abuse of parliamentary privilege

⁹ But for George III. the war would have ended long before it did, if indeed it had ever begun. It was really a conflict between his obstinacy and delusion and the noble steadfastness of Washington, without which the American cause would again and again have

succumbed.

¹⁰ Since the year 1868 all questions of disputed elections, often involving legal points, have been removed from the house itself, and referred to two judges.

which had allowed the servants of members, as well as the members themselves, to be free of arrest, was abolished. (3) The right of printing reports of debates was tacitly conceded, after a fierce struggle, in which London, under Wilkes's influence, again took the lead. By 1777 there were seventeen papers in London, of which seven were published daily, in which political matters were eagerly discussed. Until then newspapers had confined themselves to general news, political controversy being carried on by pamphlets.

Before long North's way was cleared by the deaths, in one year, of Grenville, Granby, Bedford, and the violent Lord Mayor Beckford. In 1771 Grafton was won over, with Lords Suffolk and Sandwich, the leaders of the old Grenville and Bedford sections; while the two great lawyers of the day, Thurlow and Wedderburn, became attorney and solicitor-general. North was joined also by Charles James Fox,¹¹ third son of Lord Holland, soon to be the greatest parliamentary debater of his day. The king had completely triumphed in his intention of breaking through the great Whig connection.

The important question was still America. So bitter was the feeling aroused there by Bedford's wantonly offensive act (p. 397), that in hope of conciliating the colonists North, March 5, 1770, repealed all the taxes laid by Townshend except that on tea, which the cabinet determined, by one vote only, to retain. Nothing could be more foolish; the concession stimulated resistance, the retention of one article merely emphasized the ground of quarrel. On the same day a collision took place between the soldiers and people in Boston, in which several persons were killed, and which, with further obnoxious Acts of Parliament, greatly increased the irritation in Massachusetts. No outburst, however, occurred until three ships laden with tea from India arrived in Boston, December 16, 1773. A party disguised as Mohawk Indians boarded the ships, broke open the chests, and threw their contents into the

America.
The tea-
ships in
Boston
harbour

¹¹ He resigned his office of Lord of the Admiralty in 1772, when he opposed the Royal Marriage Act, which was passed in consequence of the scandals connected with the marriages of the king's brothers, the Dukes of Cumberland and Gloucester. It forbade any descendant of George II., except those born to princesses married into foreign houses, from marrying before the age of twenty-five without the royal assent under the Great Seal. After that age they must give twelve months'

notice to the Privy Council, and were then free if the two houses did not signify disapprobation. All marriages contracted in defiance of this act were to be null, and all who celebrated them or assisted at them were to be subject to a *præmunire*. Fox returned to office the same year as lord of the Treasury, but resigned again in 1774 on the question of printing the debates, and henceforth acted with the Rockingham party. He opposed the American war without cessation.

sea. The government hereupon, without first demanding reparation, passed the Boston Port Act, which threatened the ruin of the town by removing the custom-house to Salem. Other Acts were also passed revoking in part the charter of Massachusetts, and thus placing it more directly under the crown, and—most distasteful to New England Puritanism—one to give toleration to the large French Catholic population in Canada. In 1774 General Gage was ordered to occupy Boston with six regiments. A colonial congress was then held at Philadelphia. It declared that none of the liberties of Englishmen had been lost by emigration; demanded that repeal of all the late acts; and resolved that without such repeal no commerce of any kind should be held with Great Britain and Ireland after September 10. Another congress was held in Massachusetts in October 1774, at which, while repudiating all idea of separation, the colonists determined to collect arms, drill their militia, and call in the help of Indian tribes. Had the principles of Chatham and Burke prevailed—to remove all grievances, while asserting the dependence of the colonies on the crown and their subordination to parliament in matters of general weal—the danger might have passed. But the increase of the government majority at the 1775 elections encouraged North to reject all idea of compromise.

The first blood was shed on April 19, 1775. A force sent by Gage to destroy some stores collected by the colonists at Concord was stopped in Lexington by a party of militia; a scuffle took place, and several lives were lost. Upon their return from Concord, Gage's men were attacked on all sides by concealed riflemen, to whose fire they could make no effectual reply; and they regained Boston with a loss of 273 men. Then Gage was closely besieged. The forts of Ticonderoga and Crown Point, on Lakes George and Champlain, with the 'Enterprise' sloop, were captured May 10; and on June 15 George Washington, a Virginian gentleman, then forty-three years old, who had already seen five years of service against the Indians, and had sat for fifteen years in the Virginian assembly, was appointed by the congress of the 'United Colonies' commander-in-chief of a continental army, drawn from the militia of all the colonies. But Gage, having received reinforcements under Burgoyne, Hall, Howe, and Clinton, drove the Americans, after two repulses, and after a desperate fight at close quarters, from Breed's Hill, which with Bunker's Hill commanded the town (June 17). He lost, however, more than 1,000 men in the conflict; and, but for the want of powder, the colonists would have held their own. They determined, in spite of all, to avoid

separation if possible, the rather as they were in the utmost distress, from their mutual jealousies, from want of money, of discipline among the troops, and of military equipments, especially powder. On June 18 the thirteen colonies sent a petition, the 'Olive Branch,' supported by addresses to the peoples of Great Britain and Ireland, praying for terms 'consistent with the dignity and welfare of Britain.' The reply, owing to the king's harsh temper, was a contemptuous rejection, a royal proclamation for suppressing rebellion and sedition, and bills prohibiting all trade with America, ordering the confiscation of vessels with the cargoes of other nations trading with her, and forcing the crews of captured American ships to take service against their own countrymen. As a protest against this high-handed folly Grafton left the government, and Chatham withdrew his son from serving in the British army. Nothing angered him so much, or gave Fox (p. 898), Burke, and the other opposition leaders so good an opportunity of attack, as the action of the government in hiring bodies of troops from petty German princes to supplement our forces. Meanwhile the governors of Virginia and North and South Carolina had been driven away, and these provinces had thrown off all allegiance.

In September the colonists invaded Canada; they took several forts, occupied Montreal, and in December appeared before Quebec. The attempt was an absurd one. Quebec was the strongest place in America, with a garrison larger than the assailing forces, and with 200 heavy cannon. Moreover, the Toleration Act (p. 899) had borne its fruit. The Canadians remained loyal; the colonial army, far from its base, small in numbers, and starving, melted away; a desperate attempt to storm Quebec failed, December 31, and before long Canada was completely recovered. At the same time a useless but desolating raid of Lord Dunmore in Virginia took place. It was the burning of open towns—such as Norfolk, by Dunmore, and Charleston and Falmouth, by Gage—which roused feelings of revenge too violent for conciliation. Meanwhile General Howe, who had succeeded Gage, was in such straits in Boston that he resolved to evacuate it and carry his army to New York, while Clinton went to conquer the Carolinas. The latter expedition was a failure; but Howe occupied Staten Island with 9,000 men, soon reinforced to 24,000, while his brother, Lord Howe, the admiral, entered the harbour with a fleet. Here Washington faced him with some 20,000 brave but undisciplined and ill-provided men. Of these a large part were sent across to Long Island, where they threw up entrenchments to cover Brooklyn. They were attacked in front of these lines by Clinton and Lord Cornwallis, and utterly beaten; but the success was

The Olive Branch

American invasion of Canada

Capture of New York by the British

not followed up, and Washington was enabled to get his men back to New York, which, however, fell to Howe and the cannonade of the fleet, Washington retreating to the heights of Haarlem. Before long he was driven across the Delaware. But, though his men were disorganised, and though he was harassed with a multitude of difficulties, especially the system of short enlistments, which prevented him from obtaining trained troops,¹² he gave the English no rest. By two daring and well-conducted enterprises against Cornwallis's forces in the dead of winter he restored the morale of his army, and recovered the Jerseys. At Princeton, January 13, 1777, he fought a drawn battle with Lord Cornwallis. He was now, for military purposes, made dictator in all but name.¹³

The colonies had already practically declared their independence by throwing open their trade to the whole world, 'except the subjects of the king of Great Britain.' The first direct expression of separation was made in September 1774, by a 'declaration of rights;' and on July 4, 1776, the thirteen colonies issued the famous Declaration, declaring themselves 'Free and Independent States.'¹⁴

At the end of 1776 Carleton, from Canada, recovered Crown Point; and Clinton, from New York, recovered Rhode Island. During 1777 Howe took 14,000 men up the Chesapeake, leaving Cornwallis with 8,000 in New York; defeated Washington heavily at Brandywine, and entered Philadelphia on June 26. On October 4, Washington, in attempting a recapture, was again beaten at Germantown; and, in the extremity of distress, put his army into winter quarters at Valley Forge, twenty miles away. But at this moment great news came to cheer him. Burgoyne, attempting to co-operate from Canada, had taken Ticonderoga and other forts, and had crossed the Hudson to Saratoga. Twice beaten as he advanced, at Bennington and Stillwater, he retired upon Saratoga, while Clinton, from New York, tried to make his way to his rescue. But he was too late, and on October 17 Burgoyne was forced to capitulate to General Gates, with his whole army of 6,000 men. This was the turning point of the war. For a long while France and Spain had been unavowedly helping the Americans with money and

¹² This was altered by a decree of Congress in September ordering a new army to be raised to serve throughout the war.

¹³ Steadfastness and integrity were the two qualities which most distinguished Washington. Throughout his command he refused to accept any pay. When he

laid it down he claimed for the whole of his expenses during the war the sum of 14,479*l.* 18*s.* 9*d.*

¹⁴ The pamphlet of the Englishman, Tom Paine, who had thrown in his lot with the colonists, entitled 'Common Sense,' had a great effect in bringing them to this resolution.

arms. French volunteers, among them the high-born and enthusiastic Marquis of Lafayette, and the young Polish engineer Kosciusko, afterwards famous in his own land, had come over to fight. On the news of Saratoga, France acknowledged the independence; and on February 6, 1778, signed a treaty of commerce and alliance, at the moment that fresh offers of conciliation were sent out from England. Her real object was, of course, to win back Canada and the West Indies. The struggle between England and France for the New World was about to begin again.

Alliance of
France and
America

The prospect of a European war turned all eyes to Chatham, in whose favour North was anxious to retire. The old man's blood was fired in a moment at the thought of his country's danger.

Second
period of
the war

His belief in her power to face all Europe in arms was as firm as ever. He sent back his son to the army.¹⁵ A year previously he had appeared in the House of Lords, after an absence of two years, ill and suffering, and in a magnificent speech upon America had moved an address to the crown, the burden of which was, 'We have tried for unconditional submission; let us now try unconditional redress;' and he had urged the government to grant everything but independence. But when, on April 7, 1778, the Duke of Richmond proposed to recall our troops thence, and make peace, that we might the better face France, the thought that England should fall back one step before her foes brought him to his place once more, and for the last time. He spoke with difficulty, though now and again with his old fire. Rising a second time to answer Richmond, he fell back in a swoon. He was carried home, and died on May 11. The nation devoted 20,000*l.* to pay his debts, and granted his son a pension of 4,000*l.* a year.

Death of the
Earl of
Chatham

Meanwhile Washington lay in great distress at Valley Forge. He had no money; his men were starving, shoeless, and in rags. The horses died; deadly fevers raged; desertions were frequent. Had he been attacked, he could have made no resistance. But Clinton, who had succeeded Howe, was ordered to evacuate Philadelphia and concentrate his strength upon New York; and this he did with much skill and bravery. Georgia was reconquered, and a destructive expedition carried out in Virginia and

Washington
at Valley
Forge

Connecticut. But on the whole the war languished during 1779, for England was distracted and America was bankrupt. Then Spain declared war. The French took Senegal in Africa,

Spain de-
clares war

¹⁵ The country, too, which had never liked the American war, showed all Chatham's temper now. Hitherto it had been almost impossible to get men. But now recruits came in rapidly, and England was covered with camps. An Impressment Bill gave the government power to press into the service classes hitherto exempt.

but lost Goree, and failed in an attack upon Savannah. A great army of invasion and a fleet of sixty-six ships was prepared to attack our shores, but the commanders quarrelled, and the scheme was abandoned.

Paul Jones The greatest harm done to us was by the pirate Paul Jones, sailing with an American commission, who with his little squadron of four ships inflicted serious damage upon our commerce.¹⁶ In September 1779 he intercepted our Baltic fleet, defeated the convoying squadron, and carried off the merchantmen to Holland.

The opposition had failed to shake North's ministry upon American questions. But the rapidly rising demand for economy in the public service gave them another ground of attack. In 1780, under the lead of Rockingham, 8,000 freeholders of Yorkshire sent a petition to parliament for reform, and soon twenty-three counties and many large towns had formed committees with the same view. Burke in a famous speech brought forward a motion, supported by Fox and the whole opposition, to sweep away the separate jurisdictions of Wales, Cheshire, Cornwall, Durham, and Lancaster; to abolish unnecessary offices in the household, and to check the daily waste there. It passed its second reading, but was then got rid of in committee. Motions to reform the pension list, and to purify the House of Commons of court influence, by forbidding the revenue officers to vote, or government contractors to sit as members, also failed. These failures only heightened the popular anger, which at length so influenced the house that a motion was carried by 233 to 215 'that the influence of the crown has increased, is increasing, and ought to be diminished.'

London now witnessed a strange scene. In 1778 a bill had been unanimously passed to relieve the Catholics from some of their worst disabilities.¹⁷ Their priests were allowed to say mass; laymen might acquire property; heirs educated abroad were not thereby to forfeit their inheritance, nor might the nearest Protestant heir any longer take the estate of a Catholic during his lifetime. These moderate measures at once roused to frenzy the dormant but living hatred of Popery. Scotland, though not touched by the act, was soon covered with Protestant associations, which chose for their leader a weak-headed young nobleman, Lord George Gordon, the second son of the Duke of Gordon. 'No Popery' riots broke out, and the agitation speedily spread to England, where Lord George was also chosen president. On June 2 a mob of 70,000 persons followed him to Westminster to present to parliament a monster petition, signed, it

¹⁶ Ludlow, p. 169.

¹⁷ Shortly after this another act was passed to relieve Protestant Dissenters from several disabilities.

was said, by 120,000 persons, for a repeal of the Relief Acts. Obnoxious peers were ill-treated as they drove through Palace Yard; the lobby of the house was thronged with rioters, and it was with difficulty that the members could leave it without bloodshed. Then the mob wreaked their passions upon the Catholic chapels, of which several were burned; and for four days afterwards London was given up to burning and pillage. The government was paralyzed; only a few soldiers were available, and there was then no regular police force. Scenes which recalled the days of Jack Cade now took place. At the same moment sixteen large fires were blazing. Newgate was burst open and burned to the ground, and the prisoners set free. The house of the great lawyer, Lord Mansfield, with its priceless library, was destroyed. Distilleries were broken into, and the raw spirit drunk as it flowed down the gutters; it was set on fire, and intoxicated men and women fell down and perished in the flames. At length soldiers marched in; and, after 200 persons had been shot dead and 250 wounded, the riot was stamped out. Twenty-one prisoners were executed. Gordon was arrested and tried a year later, but was acquitted through the ability of the great advocate, Erskine. He finally died a Jew. This outburst, of course, increased the dissatisfaction with the government. North therefore proposed a coalition, but the opposition would not come in unless the schemes of parliamentary and economic reform were accepted, and this was refused.

In July 1779 began the famous siege of Gibraltar, the hope of recapturing which was really Spain's reason for war. It was gallantly defended against the combined attack of France and Spain by sea and land until 1780, when Rodney, after a great victory off Cape St. Vincent, brought relief to the garrison. In June a desperate effort of the Spaniards to destroy the squadron in the bay with fire-ships, supported by their whole fleet, was baffled by one of the most brilliant exploits in our annals. Famine and disease, however, would have compelled surrender, had not Byng once more relieved the place in 1781. In 1782 France and Spain again joined forces for a decisive attack. On the land side the fortress was besieged by 40,000 men, with 186 guns; and, on September 9, forty-seven ships of the line, with a swarm of lighter vessels, preceded by ten gun-proof floating batteries bearing 212 guns, anchored in the bay. To the simultaneous attack of these vast armaments the little garrison of 7,000 men, under their veteran governor, Eliott, returned an incessant plunging fire from ninety-six guns protected by the rock galleries. By using red-hot balls, the device of Boyd, second in command, they succeeded, after many hours' cannonade, in setting fire to the floating batteries. All through the

Siege of
Gibraltar

night the glare enabled the English to pour an unremitting and unanswered fire upon the foe. At 3 A.M. a few English gunboats dashed out and cut off the boats which were trying to tow away the disabled ships. The whole of the floating batteries were destroyed, and 2,000 of the enemy killed; the English lost but ninety men. The siege went on from the land side, and only closed at the peace, after lasting more than three years and a half. On his return in 1787, Eliott, then more than seventy years old, was deservedly made Lord Heathfield of Gibraltar.

All this while England had been fighting single-handed against increasing foes. In 1780, Russia, Denmark, and Sweden formed a league of 'armed neutrality' to contest her claim to capture ships of neutral nations which carried goods to hostile countries, and to uphold the doctrine which now obtains, that 'free ships make free goods.' In the same year the Dutch Republic, with whom we had long been drifting into war, joined the alliance against us.

In America, Clinton overran South Carolina; and Lord Cornwallis, whom he left there in command, marched into the northern province, after winning a battle at Camden, August 16, 1780, but was then so harassed by guerilla warfare that he was forced to retreat. Clinton was next completely shut up in New York—by ice on the water side and on land by Washington, now reinforced by 6,000 French troops.

The next year Cornwallis drove the enemy out of North Carolina, after a victory at Guildford, March 1781, which redeemed a very serious defeat at the Cowpens in January; he then marched to join hands with a force which had been gaining successes in Virginia. Lord Rawdon, whom he had left behind, won two more fights, at Camden and Eutaw Springs. But with dwindling forces in a hostile country, and far from their base, it was impossible for either him or Cornwallis to keep their hold; and before long nothing but small districts round Charleston and Savannah were in their hands, while Spain easily reconquered Florida.

Nevertheless, so bankrupt were the Americans, even with French help, that Washington felt that for ultimate triumph some great blow was necessary. Leaving his lines before New York with his whole force, he suddenly appeared before York Town, a village on the southern bank of York river, whither Cornwallis had fallen back, and where he was closely besieged, while an overwhelming French fleet prevented succour from the sea. On October 18, after the most gallant attempts to free himself from the toils, Cornwallis was forced to capitulate. This was practically the end of the war.

The Armed
Neutrality.
The Dutch
declare war

Fighting
in Virginia
and the
Carolinas

Capitulation
of Cornwallis
at York
Town

North received the news 'like a cannon-ball in the breast,' exclaiming, 'Oh God, it is all over!' Elsewhere England had hitherto more than held her own. But now bad news came fast. In the West Indies, France captured everything but Jamaica, the Barbadoes, and Antigua. An expedition against the Dutch at the Cape of Good Hope failed. Minorca was surrendered, more through disease than war. The opposition pushed the unsuccessful ministry with nightly attacks; and at length Conway carried a motion against any further warfare in America. On March 20, 1782, the stubborn king gave way, as he would have done long before if he had understood his position as a constitutional monarch; and, after a disastrous tenure of office of twelve years, North, who had long been anxious to quit his post, resigned with the dignified good-humour which had characterised him throughout.

Resignation
of North.
The king
defeated

SECTION 3.—*Rockingham and Reform. / Shelburne and Peace*

The Tory party was thus discredited, and the king, baffled for a time in his system of government by influence, was forced to fall back upon the detested Whigs. Rockingham again became prime minister, with Fox, Burke, Richard Brinsley Sheridan, Grafton, and Conway among his own followers, and others of the old Chatham party, of whom Lord Shelburne, a man distrusted even by his political friends, was the chief; while Thurlow, the Tory, remained lord chancellor. A ministry so divided was not likely to last long.

Rocking-
ham's second
ministry

The first pressing question was that of Ireland, where high rents, absentee landlords, and an absurd commercial policy were constant factors of disturbance. In 1780, North, rendered wiser by the events in America, had yielded to the agitation for freeing Ireland from the trade restrictions maintained by the jealousy of England, an agitation encouraged by these events, and led by Henry Grattan, a young lawyer of small fortune, but of an impetuous eloquence and disinterested zeal for freedom which caused him to be compared with Chatham. But Grattan then demanded legislative independence for Ireland, the repeal of Poyning's law (p. 174), and of one passed in 1719 (p. 364), which gave the English parliament power to bind Ireland by its acts. In 1782 he was able to bring a formidable influence to bear. Finding the country denuded of troops for the American war, and fearing French invasion, the people, with the encouragement of the government, had enrolled themselves as volunteers in 1780 to the number of 50,000. These volunteers now

Irish diffi-
culties.
Grattan

sent delegates to a meeting at Dungannon, who, at Grattan's instigation, passed strong resolutions repudiating the English parliament; and Grattan carried a similar resolution in the Irish parliament. The English government yielded to a demand made thus literally at the point of the bayonet, and repealed the act of 1719.

The ministry next carried, against the keen resistance of the king, the bills which had failed in 1780, disfranchising the revenue officers, who numbered 60,000 out of a total of 800,000 electors, and forbidding persons who held government contracts to be members of the Commons.

Burke's scheme of economic reform was then passed. Forty expensive posts were abolished; the pension list was largely reduced; the abuses of Burke's own office of paymaster removed. This, though far less stringent than Burke desired, was the first step in reform, and saved the country 70,000*l.* a year. William Pitt, son of the Earl of Chatham, had entered parliament in January 1781. His first speech, which at once established his reputation,¹⁸ had been in favour of Burke's previous scheme; he now put forward a plan of parliamentary reform, by which the rotten boroughs—boroughs where a very few electors returned one or two members, and which had been largely bought up by 'nabobs,' wealthy Englishmen who had returned from India, or were completely in the hands of the crown—were to be abolished, and their members given to the large towns; but, in spite of the support of the country gentry, who were naturally jealous of the influence of the nabobs, the plan was defeated. Other attempts in 1783 and 1785 (the latter when Pitt was prime minister) were also defeated by increasing majorities, and events soon to be related prevented reform until 1832.

In America fighting had now practically ceased. But on sea our supremacy was signalled by a great victory in the West Indies over the French fleet, in which Rodney adopted the plan, afterwards used by Nelson with conspicuous success, of cutting the enemy's line in two, and captured their famous ship the 'Ville de Paris.' This victory, and the failure of the siege of Gibraltar, caused both France and Spain to desire peace; but negotiations were delayed by the sudden death of Rockingham, July 1782.

The cabinet at once fell asunder. The whole Rockingham connection, who hated Shelburne, resigned, and, led by Fox, went into opposition. Shelburne became prime minister. Pitt, who had previously refused any place not of the highest rank, was chancellor of the exchequer, the long rivalry between

¹⁸ 'He is not a chip of the old block; he is the old block itself,' said Burke.

him and Fox beginning now. Peace was at once made with America. France and Spain followed the example; and the Treaty of Versailles, which gave a few years of repose to Europe, was signed on January 20, 1763.¹⁹ The general result was that a check was given to the 'expansion of England;' Great Britain came out of the war with a diminished empire and an augmented debt; but her fleet was supreme, and Gibraltar had been saved. She had tightened her grasp upon India, almost annihilated the fleets of her enemies, and had left America, France, and Spain bankrupt, while bearing her own burdens with comparative ease. Peace was also made with the Dutch; all conquests were mutually restored, except Negapatam in India, which became English.

Shelburne's stop-gap ministry lasted but a few months. Fox, who six months previously had vowed he would never act with North, now offered to join him. North accepted the invitation, and a resolution condemning the peace was easily carried. Shelburne resigned, and a short period of confusion followed. The king tried every means to keep out Fox, whom he detested, by applying in turn to North, Portland, and Pitt separately. It shows Pitt's judgment that he at this time refused to become prime minister. At last George III. was forced to accept the coalition. Fox and North were the secretaries, while Portland was nominally prime minister. Burke was again paymaster. Pitt refused to serve in the same cabinet with North, and became leader of the opposition. But coalitions, except the famous one of the first Pitt and Newcastle, have never been permanent or successful in England. Quarrels broke out in the ministry almost as soon as it was formed; the country was shocked at so violent a repudiation of principles by Fox and North; the king, who looked

¹⁹ *America* gained the recognition of her independence, the right of fishery off Newfoundland, and the free navigation of the Mississippi. She conceded that British subjects who had not borne arms against the colonies should recover their estates. This concession, however, was not kept, and Great Britain herself was forced to help the ruined loyalists with more than 12,000,000*l*. *France* regained Santa Lucia and Tobago in the West Indies; Senegal and Goree in Africa; Pondicherry, Chandernagore, Surat, and Fort Mahé in India; the abandonment of the demand for the demolition of Dunkirk; the rights to the fishery off Newfoundland as laid down at Utrecht and Paris (pp. 351, 390),

with permission to fortify the islands of St. Pierre and Miquelon to protect it. She gave back to England all her captures in the West Indies, with Fort James and Gambia in Africa. *Spain* regained Minorca and the Floridas, but gave up Providence and the Bahamas, with the right of cutting logwood in Honduras Bay. She tried hard for Gibraltar. Shelburne and many others were willing to surrender it for an equivalent; but the national feeling aroused by Elliott's gallant defence was too strong, and in the cabinet it was supported, with all Chatham's spirit, by his son. The war had cost Great Britain 140,000,000*l*. The national debt now stood at 245,000,000*l*.

upon North as the worst of traitors, and Fox as the worst of men, was ever on the watch to get rid of both; and the opportunity came when Fox brought in his India Bill.

The progress of the British power in India had not ceased when Clive returned to England. The year 1763 saw the conquest of Bengal, 1764 and 1765 that of Oude. But with this had come rapine, extortion, and outrage among the Company's servants; quarrels between the councils of Calcutta, Madras, and Bombay; confusion among the directors at home. In 1765, therefore, Clive was sent out in supreme command to restore order. Upon the news of his arrival, Sujah Dowlah, the nabob of Oude, submitted, and Clive gave back Oude to him, except Corah and Allahabad, which he reserved for Shah Alum, the titular emperor of Delhi. Then, with a strong hand, and, in defiance of a general mutiny among the officers, he restored order in the service and purified the administration, but in January 1767 was forced by illness, the result of incessant toil, to return home.

In the Madras Presidency the English power was confronted by Hyder Ali, sovereign of Mysore, whose capital was Seringapatam. His large army was disciplined in European fashion, and partly commanded by French officers; and at Mangalore, on the Malabar coast, he was rapidly creating a navy. In 1768 he suddenly descended with a host of cavalry upon the fertile Carnatic, which was ruled by our ally, the nabob of Arcot, and overran the whole country. In 1769, after having enticed the garrison away, he skilfully surprised Madras, and forced upon us an unfavourable peace.

Then followed the awful famine of Bengal, in 1770, when a third at least of the population perished—a calamity whereby, to their shame, the Company's officials still further enriched themselves. In 1773, so desperate were the Company's finances, and so gross the corruption among its servants, that Lord North was forced to relieve its immediate needs by a loan. But at the same time he insisted upon a reform in the constitution. Henceforth the Governor of Bengal was to be supreme over the other presidencies, himself controlled by a council of four, but having a casting vote; while three judges, with a chief justice, were to form a court of final appeal in law. The first governor-general was Warren Hastings, the first chief justice his schoolfellow, Elijah Impey.

Warren Hastings, born in 1732, was a member of an ancient but decayed family. In 1749 he left Westminster School for India as a writer. In 1769 he was second member of the council of Madras, and in 1772 first of that of Bengal. Frail in body,

with gentle voice and reserved manner, he was resolute, clear-sighted, and tenacious; not wantonly cruel, but callous to suffering; firm in friendship and without malice to his enemies. To his qualifications for command he joined high intellectual gifts and scholarship; and in particular he had a thorough knowledge of India, its peoples, customs, and languages.

Under the vigorous rule of Hastings oppression was stopped, burdens diminished, revenue increased. Finding that Shah Alum was intriguing against the Company, he resumed Corah and Allahabad, but sold them for a vast sum to Sujah Dowlah. In 1774 he made a shameful bargain with Sujah Dowlah, by which, for another heavy payment, the nabob was permitted to employ a contingent of English troops in exterminating the Rohillas, a warlike Afghan people who had settled near Oude, and had aroused his jealousy, but with whom the Company had no quarrel.

On July 7, 1778, news of war with France and Spain reached Hastings. He struck at once. Chandernagore was taken on the 10th, and Pondicherry as soon as orders could reach Madras. Fort Mahé, on the Malabar coast, fell next spring, and the French were completely ousted (p. 408, *note*). A war, at first unsuccessful, but signalised by gallant exploits, especially the capture of the hill fort of Gwalior, which was deemed impregnable, was waged with the Mahrattas. In 1780 Hyder Ali again swept down upon the Carnatic with 100,000 cavalry, and made the land a desert up to Madras. But Hastings despatched Sir Eyre Coote in haste to the rescue. On July 1, 1781, Coote won a great victory with but 9,000 men at Porto Novo, south of Pondicherry; and, after saving Wandewash, another at Pallilore on August 27.

In 1781 Hastings went to Benares to punish Cheyte Sing, its ruler, for refusing demands made upon him. Cheyte Sing was seized, but the excitement roused by this violation of the sanctity of the holy city of India was so great that nothing but his own cool courage saved Hastings from imminent death. In the end Cheyte Sing was crushed, and fined in an enormous sum. For this there was some justification; but there was none for the outrage inflicted upon the Begums of Oude, the widow and mother of Sujah Dowlah, who lived in retirement, and were known to possess enormous wealth. Of this wealth Hastings determined to despoil them, and he made the worthless son and successor of Sujah Dowlah his instrument. The cruelty used was atrocious; the Begums were literally starved into submission, and Hastings obtained no less than a million of money.

The
'Begums of
Oude'

Rohilla war

French
driven out
of India

Hyder Ali
defeated by
Eyre Coote

Upon the news that the Dutch had joined the alliance against England, Hastings acted with his usual promptitude. He himself reduced Sadras and Pulicat; in November 1781 Negapatam with several thousand prisoners was captured, and Ceylon overrun. War went on with varying fortune against Hyder Ali and his son Tippoo Saib until the peace of Versailles. From that time Hastings had no further trouble until his return home in 1785.

Incessant complaints of his conduct had meanwhile reached England. Impey had been recalled, but, so long as the European war lasted, Hastings was left in power. In the spring of 1783, however, Fox brought in his East India Bill, of which Burke was the author. It proposed to appoint seven commissioners, nominated for the first four years by parliament, and afterwards by the crown, with complete authority over the Company's territories; and a second board of eight, nominated first by parliament and then by the proprietors, for all questions of property and trade. So bold an attack upon vested interests, and what were called 'chartered rights,' raised a storm of opposition. The assumption by parliament of the executive authority; the creation of enormous patronage in the hands of the majority in parliament; the submission of commercial questions to a board not conversant with such matters—were objections far more serious; and they were pressed home by Pitt, Grattan, Wilkes—now the advocate of royal power—and many others. The bill, however, passed the Commons by two to one. But the king determined to defeat it. He at first intended to let it pass the Lords and then refuse his assent. But the use of veto by the crown was already out of date; the power had not been used since the reign of William III. (p. 383). George therefore authorised Lord Temple to show to the peers individually a paper dictated by himself signifying his pleasure; and the bill was thrown out. The blow was at once followed up by the dismissal of Fox, North, and the rest of the ministers.

The new prime minister was William Pitt. He was but twenty-four years old. He had not a single colleague of mark, and he took upon himself to face Fox, Burke, Sheridan, and North, at the head of an immense majority. His appointment was received with a burst of derision, such as his father had expressed when Sir Thomas Robinson was made leader of the Commons (p. 378). His opponents little thought that on that day began the most powerful and enduring government that had been known; and that the party they represented would not again taste power for fifty years.

Dutch
driven out
of India

Fox's East
India Bill

Defeated in
the Lords,
Dismissal of
the ministry

William Pitt
prime
minister

Pitt met the odds with calm courage. Resolution after resolution was passed against him; his own measures were scornfully rejected; a direct vote of no confidence was carried. Fox, whose consummate oratory was never more brilliantly displayed, gave him no quarter. With equal eloquence he stood, practically alone, calmly but vigilantly on the defensive. The opposition were in turns angry, puzzled, and frightened. The Lords supported him. As the son of Chatham he had a hold upon the hearts of the people, and his courage rapidly made him friends. It was to his advantage that he was too young to have been connected with the American disasters. Public meetings were held in his support, and the City—who adored Chatham's memory—gave him their freedom. The condition of things at the close of the last parliament of Charles II. was reproduced (p. 812). The violence of the coalition had overreached itself, and the spirit of loyalty to the hard-pressed king was awakened. At each division the hostile majority grew smaller; at length a motion by Fox of excessive violence was carried by one vote only. Then Pitt reaped the fruits of his splendid self-restraint. He dissolved parliament and took the reaction at its height. An immense majority in his favour was returned; no fewer than 160 of the opposition—'Fox's martyrs' they were called (p. 211)—lost their seats; and when parliament met in May 1784 he could defy his baffled opponents. The king had finally triumphed over the Whigs. He had the minister of his choice. But he had not succeeded in making permanent his scheme of government by personal influence. Nothing could be less like the period of the 'king's friends' than the great and masterful government which now began.

Dissolution
and triumph
of Pitt

Downfall of
the Whigs

Dates of the Reign of George III. to Pitt's Ministry

	A. D.		A. D.
Peace of Paris	1763	French, Spanish, and Dutch recognition of American Independence	1778-1780
Wilkes expelled from the Commons	1764	Gordon Riots	1780
Grenville's Stamp Act	1765	Surrender at York Town	1781
Townshend's Taxing Act	1767	North resigns	1782
Middlesex election	1769	Irish parliament independent	1782
Lord North prime minister	1770	Treaty of Versailles	1783
Beginning of American War	1775		

CHAPTER VI

GEORGE III. PITT'S MINISTRY AND THE GREAT WAR.
1784-1815

SECTION 1.—*Financial Reform; the India Act; Warren Hastings,*
1784-1789

PITT at once entered upon a career of actual or attempted reform. The state of the finances claimed immediate attention. He had thoroughly grasped the principles of free trade, as taught in Adam Smith's 'The Wealth of Nations,' and he gave effect to them by reducing the duties on tea and spirits to a figure so low that the practice of smuggling—a practice so extensive that out of thirteen millions of pounds of tea imported not more than five millions paid duty—entirely lost its motive. Another step in the same direction was his commercial treaty with France, by which the prohibitory duties—duties, that is, so large as to stop the import of the article—were repealed, and those which were imposed only for revenue purposes much lessened at the same time. A fact which shows how far opinion in such matters had travelled since Walpole's day is that in 1780 tobacco, and now wine, were placed on the Excise instead of on the Customs. To defray the excess of expenditure over income, 900,000*l.*, he did not hesitate to risk his popularity by imposing new taxes upon a large number of articles, the greater number of which have never since been removed. The result of these measures was a surplus every year of a million; and with this he established what was since known as the Sinking Fund, by which he hoped in time to extinguish the national debt. The simple plan of using a surplus for such a purpose, the plan adopted now, is to extinguish that amount of stock. Instead of doing this Pitt proposed to put by a million every year to redeem so much debt at a future time, adding to it each year the interest payable upon it, and to do this whether there was a surplus or not. A similar thing had been done by Walpole in 1716, but he had at the first need used up what had been laid by. Pitt now made the sinking fund inalienable. It is difficult to understand how Pitt could have been misled by an idea so false. The interest to be added had, of course, to be raised by increased taxation; while it was obviously absurd to go on putting aside a million when, as soon happened, the government had each year to

borrow that million and many more. The system was practically abandoned in 1807; but it was not until 1828 that parliament formally enacted the plan now followed. But Pitt's great achievement was that by which he abolished all the old duties in the Customs, Excise, and Stamps, which, having been imposed or altered at different times, and applied to different services, had become intolerably complicated, and substituted new ones on a simpler plan. Some idea of the amount of labour involved may be gathered from the fact that Pitt had to frame no fewer than 2,587 separate resolutions.

The Indian question was settled without delay, 1784. Pitt's bill, contemptuously rejected by a previous parliament, now passed with ease, though strenuously opposed by Fox, Burke, and North. It differed from that of Fox in two most important points. The new unsalaried Board of Control was to act entirely through the present directors, so that their knowledge of India should not be wasted; while, except the highest appointments, the whole patronage was left to the same body. The board was to be one of political control, not of political influence. Pitt, like his father, took a lofty view of the public service, and refused to make the disposal of posts the reward of mere party service. This India Act remained law until 1858. Lord Cornwallis was the first governor-general under the act, and the first who carried to India the morality of English public life.

Pitt next introduced a bill for parliamentary reform, in which he proposed to buy up from their owners thirty-six rotten boroughs, distributing the seventy-two members, thus set free among London, Westminster, and the large towns, ^{the counties} and to widen the franchise, by giving it to leaseholders as well as freeholders. But the time was not ripe; the opposition of the nabobs and other great landowners easily defeated him; and he henceforward abandoned the design.

He then attempted to deal with Ireland, where parliamentary reform was far more urgent than in England, since out of 800 members at least 250 were the nominees of a few great landowners or of the government. For the present he could do nothing to check this abuse in the face of the powerful interests arrayed in its defence. But he hoped to give Ireland almost complete commercial freedom, and he therefore proposed to allow the importation thither through Great Britain, or into Great Britain from Ireland, of the produce of our settlements in America and Africa—as by the act of 1780 (p. 406) was already allowed in the case of Europe and the West Indies. No opposition was at first raised in Ireland; and in England Pitt carried his resolutions against Fox, Burke, Sheridan,

The India Act

Attempt at parliamentary reform

Attempts at reform in Ireland

and North, and against the unremitting opposition of the great manufacturing towns which clung to protective doctrines. But Fox, who had hitherto declared the measure unduly favourable to Ireland, now dexterously managed to excite a belief in Ireland that it was a breach of her newly acquired independence, that Pitt was bartering English commerce for Irish slavery; and so vehement was the feeling that Pitt was forced to withdraw the bill from the Irish parliament amid the most extravagant expressions of joy. The effect upon his mind was the same as that of the Act of Security upon Godolphin (p. 347), to convince him of the necessity of union.

The great event of this year, 1786, was the attack upon Warren Hastings, who had returned to England in 1785. Burke and Sheridan moved that he should be impeached upon twenty-two separate charges before the Lords. The Rohilla war, the Benares case, the outrage upon the Begums of Oude, the Mahratta war, and the receiving of presents, were the principal. The first was the gravest; but, chiefly through Pitt's opposition, the resolution to impeach him on this was defeated; then, it is not accurately known why, Pitt changed his attitude, and the other charges were passed. The trial before the Lords began on February 13, 1788, amid scenes such as had not been witnessed since the impeachment of Strafford. Upon the three greatest orators in the house, Fox, Burke, and Sheridan, fell the chief burden of the prosecution; and they excelled themselves. The trial, however, dragged on for six years, and then ended in an acquittal. But the knowledge that great offenders in India would be brought to an account at home was of the utmost service to good government there.

In 1788 began the slave trade agitation.¹ Granville Sharp, Clarkson, Wilberforce, and Macaulay exposed its appalling horrors. Pitt himself introduced the question, and Fox declared at once for total abolition. But so violent was the selfish opposition of merchants and slave owners, that, until public opinion was better educated, nothing could be done. In 1789, 1790, and 1792 the abolitionists returned to the charge, gaining fresh adherents each time; in 1792 more than 300,000 persons promised to use no sugar, as being the produce of the slave trade. From 1792 to 1800 the cause lost ground through the objection to any reforming movement, caused by the French revolution. From 1800 to 1804 it slumbered, through the opposition of the ministry and the king. In 1804 the House of Commons agreed to prohibit the traffic for a time, but this bill did not pass the Lords. The victory was not won until

¹ Spencer Walpole, vol. i. p. 102.

1807, when the trade was declared illegal; the emancipation of negroes throughout British territory was not completed until 1833.

George, prince of Wales, handsome and clever, but a spendthrift, and a debauchee, with an utter disregard of truth, had, like all the heirs apparent of his house (pp. 357, 369), thrown himself into the arms of the opposition. Falling in love with Mrs. Fitzherbert, a widow, he determined to marry her; but she was a Catholic, and both the First Act of Settlement (p. 325) and the Marriage Act (p. 398, *note*) stood in the way. In the eyes of the Catholic church, however, such a marriage would be valid, and it therefore took place. The prince was at this moment applying to parliament to pay his debts, 250,000*l.* He knew that the knowledge of his marriage would be a fatal obstacle. He therefore deliberately denied to Fox, first the intention and then the fact of his marriage; and Fox, completely deceived, repeated the denials unequivocally to the House of Commons. When the truth could no longer be concealed, the prince added to his infamy by disavowing Fox's action.

In November 1788 the king suddenly became insane. Fox demanded that the prince should at once assume the regency as of right. This was the great crisis of Pitt's political life. He was aware that his immediate dismissal would have been the first result, and he boldly replied that no such right existed until parliament had declared its opinion. He was resolved that the prince should have no prerogative which might embarrass the resumption of power by the king when he should regain health; and the prince was compelled to accept his terms. Fortunately, just before the third reading of the bill in the Lords, the king suddenly recovered. The event was hailed with an outburst of loyalty, for pity for his infirmity had been heightened by the violence of the opposition.²

Thus, at the moment when the greatest conflict in which England had been engaged was about to open, the stability of Pitt's power was affirmed. England was prospering financially, and she had fairly started upon that manufacturing career which alone enabled her to

² In 1795 the prince, anxious to escape from his fresh debts of 700,000*l.* which he had incurred in spite of his promise now made, married a wife chosen for him by the king, and whom he had not previously seen, Caroline of Brunswick. At their first introduction he behaved with brutality worse than that recorded of Henry VIII. at his meeting with Anne of Cleves. He did not conceal the aversion he took to her person, uttering an exclamation

of disgust, and calling aloud for a glass of brandy. At the marriage he was drunk, and the pair separated immediately after the birth of their first child. His debts were paid by parliament, but Pitt insisted that henceforth no debt incurred by him should be valid after three months, and that his servants should be personally liable for all contracts they entered into on his behalf.

support the enormous burdens of that contest. The invention of the fly shuttle by John Kay, which made weaving more rapid; the process of roller spinning, worked by water-power, by which Arkwright superseded the spinning-wheel; Paul's revolving machine for carding cotton; Hargreaves's spinning jenny,³ which enabled many threads to be spun at once; Crompton's mule, which combined the inventions of Hargreaves and Arkwright; Cartwright's power loom, which enabled weaving to be done by machinery; the application of Watt's development of Newcomen's steam-engine by a separate condenser to supersede water-power; bleaching by chlorine, and Bell's invention for printing calicoes; and Humphry Davy's safety-lamp; were the beginnings. Canals were cut by Brindley, good roads made and bridges built by Telford, the former with the help of MacAdam's invention of metalling with small stones. The proximity of the coal and iron mines made the smelting of iron and the construction of machinery easy. Lancashire and Yorkshire became hives of industry and the homes of a swarming population. Fresh inventions followed rapidly. The first steamer passed down the Clyde in 1812. By 1823 215 miles of London streets were lighted with gas.

SECTION 2.—*The French Revolution⁴ and its effects in England*

The causes of the French Revolution were as long-standing as its outburst was sudden. Nowhere was government more despotic or corrupt; nowhere did privilege assume a more hateful and oppressive form; nowhere was the church more divorced from the people. Local government scarcely existed. The noblesse were divided by almost impassable lines from the bourgeoisie and peasants; deprived of all public duties, of all participation in government; but retaining the most cruelly oppressive rights over their tenants, almost complete exemption from direct taxation, and an absolute monopoly of all posts of honour and emolument, not only at court and in the army, but even in the church. The condition of the peasants was most miserable—worse than anything known by the villeins who rose under Richard II. They were crushed with compulsory labour on the roads and on their lords' estates; with taxation, which they almost alone paid, and which was enforced by atrocious cruelty; with innumerable restrictions of the most vexatious character upon their freedom of cultivation and barter. Nor had they any sym-

³ Hargreaves and his wife Jenny were hand weavers; he called his invention after her name. See on the whole of this subject, Lecky, ch. xxiii.

⁴ Mrs. Gardiner's 'French Revolu-

tion,' in *Epochs of Modern History*; De Tocqueville, *Ancien Régime*; Carlyle, *French Revolution*; Lecky, chaps. xx., xxi., xxii.

pathy from the bourgeoisie—the merchants, shopkeepers, and professional men: for, themselves partially exempt from taxes, all these looked upon the peasant with contempt as complete as that of the great lord. Thus there were in France a mass of famished and despairing men, ignorant of all but their own misery; and, living as it were in another world, an upper class which oppressed without governing.⁵

These causes had been acting for centuries. But during the past fifty years a succession of great writers in France had been exciting men's minds upon every subject of government and philosophy. Some had attacked the abuses of the church, and Christianity itself; some had demanded political reform, to be initiated by the government; others believed that reform could come only from the peasant. Advanced social and political doctrines were the fashionable talk, though only a few persons, at present obscure, dreamed of practical application. At length, upon the death of Louis XV., Turgot, a really great minister, attempted to transfer some of the burden of taxation from the peasants to the noblesse; but the influence of Marie Antoinette over her weak husband Louis XVI., secured his dismissal. Then came the American revolution and the war with England. The one strengthened the demand for liberty in France, the other left her bankrupt. The finance minister, Necker, who was trusted by the moneyed men as Walpole had been trusted in England, and who also tried to effect reforms, fell as Turgot had fallen; and the anger of the moneyed men determined them in favour of change. The lower classes had meanwhile, from the fact that reforms of abuses were being tried, conceived burning indignation against those abuses; whilst the noblesse, angry with the king for his evident sympathy with Turgot and Necker, themselves determined to control the crown. Ignorant of the passions beneath the surface, and supposing that they would have the work of reconstitution in their own hands, they demanded the summoning of the States-General, which bore some relation to our parliament. The meeting of this body, on May 5, 1789—the first opportunity since 1614 of constitutional expression of political feeling—was the beginning of the revolution.

The States-General were composed of three separate chambers, representing the noblesse, the church, and the ranks below the

⁵ A comparison with England heightens the picture. There, though with many imperfections, were a limited monarchy, popular if imperfect representation, parliamentary government, municipal and local self rule, a complete absence of aristocratic privi-

lege or caste, a gentry which, however imperfectly, took its share in public work, and thus vindicated its right to lead society, one law for all, taxation paid by all, the mixture of classes from highest to lowest, a church whose highest grades were open to all.

noblesse. Hitherto the last-named, called the *Tiers État* (Third Estate), had practically possessed no power against the other two. But now, backed by the nation, it extorted two great changes which made it master of the situation: first, that its members should equal those of noblesse and church together; and, secondly, that all three should form a single assembly, henceforth known as the 'National Assembly.' No actual violence took place until the king called in Swiss and German troops to overawe the members. Then Paris rose in insurrection; the guards joined the people; the Bastille, a fortress like our Tower of London, was stormed, July 14. The peasantry rose in the provinces at the news, burnt and pillaged the châteaux, murdered the nobles, and destroyed, like the villeins in the Peasants' Revolt (p. 128), the title-deeds which recorded the feudal services they were bound to pay. The army was in mutiny and the government powerless. On August 4 the assembly swept away the feudal privileges and abolished the payment of tithes to the church. It then issued a 'Declaration of the Rights of Man,' declaring all men equal, dissolving all orders and corporations, and freeing the press and public worship.

Every day it grew plainer what the revolution was to be. On October 6 a hungry mob, of women chiefly, marched to Versailles with a cry for bread. They broke into the palace and into the very bedchamber of the queen (p. 129); slew two of the royal guards; and returned in triumph, bringing back with them the king, the queen, and the dauphin, and bearing the heads of the slaughtered men before them. Sweeping reforms were then passed by the assembly; all church property was sold, monasteries and nunneries suppressed, and the church reorganised as a mere department of the state. Many of the nobles now left France, and called upon foreign powers to restore the king to his full authority; those who remained were the victims of a fresh outburst of the peasantry. The violent section of the assembly continually gained influence, while Paris itself fell completely into the hands of the fiercest of the agitators.

Thoroughly frightened, the king and queen tried to escape from the country, only to be brought back prisoners to Paris, June 1791. The queen then appealed to her brother, the emperor, in Austria, while the emigrant nobles gathered forces on the border. The Legislative Assembly, which had succeeded the National Assembly, declared the nobles traitors, gathered an army, and on April 20, 1792, declared war against Austria and Prussia. Invasion by these powers, and the insolent manifesto of the Duke of Brunswick, ordering unconditional submission, and threatening

Meeting of
the States-
General

Storming
of the
Bastille

Revolt of
the women

Foreign
invasion;
deposition of
Louis XVI

Paris with military execution, led to a second and more terrible revolution. The palace of the Tuileries was stormed, the imprisoned royalists massacred, Louis XVI. deposed, and a republic declared. The desperate courage of the army hurled back the invaders, and then the French burst into the Austrian Netherlands, or Belgium, the object of French ambition since the days of Edward III. On November 19 Decree of the Convention, which had in turn superseded the Legislative Assembly, issued the famous 'decree of defiance,' in which all nations were invited to follow the example of France, and overthrow their governments. On January 21, 1793, War declared against Louis XVI. was guillotined, and on February 21 war England was declared against England. 'The coalised kings threaten us,' said Danton; 'we hurl at their feet, as the gage of battle, the head of a king.'

We have seen how the American revolt acted upon Ireland and France. Throughout Europe, in like manner, this great upheaval roused the spirit of liberty and reform; and in England it was the determining factor in political and social opinion. Sympathy with revolution principles was keen among the comparatively unprivileged classes, dissenters and working men. It led to the formation of societies such as the 'Revolution Society,' the 'Friends of the People,' and the 'Unitarian Society,' all of which had branches in the large towns. Of the last, the leader in Birmingham was Dr. Priestley, a man of the highest scientific attainments. The members proposed to celebrate the anniversary of the taking of the Bastille by a banquet. This was opposed by the church party. The mob welcomed the opportunity for pillage; the houses of Priestley and of Hutton, the historian, were burned, and for four days Birmingham witnessed a repetition of the Gordon riots.

Very different was the effect upon the governing classes. For a time indeed one section of the opposition, that led by Fox and Sheridan, expressed unbounded admiration for the leaders of the revolution. Burke on the other hand, to whom crown, church, and parliament were sacred things, was shocked almost out of self-command at finding that anyone in England could support a movement which had become so atrocious in his eyes.⁶ This difference of opinion upon

⁶ He at once began that splendid series of speeches and writings, of which the most famous, 'Reflections on the French Revolution,' did more than anything to check the feeling in favour of the Revolution, and to crystallise English opinion against it, which was read with admiration throughout Eu-

rope, and which is still read as the greatest essay extant upon political philosophy. Not realising how terrible were the grievances against which the outbreak was the protest, he did realise, and displayed with matchless force, its follies and injustice; and his prophecies of its future course, especially of the

a matter where he would not listen to compromise caused a total breach of his long political friendship with Fox; and the separation, which brought forth his celebrated 'Appeal from the Old Whigs to the New,' illustrated a general break-up of the Whig party. Some followed Fox and Sheridan; of the remainder a part openly joined the government. As the news from France became more terrible, the conservative feeling in parliament deepened. The effect, speaking roughly, was to put back English political progress and intellectual freedom for a generation. The crown and the church, overthrown by disorder in France, became the symbols of order at home. The repeal of the Test Act, against which there had been in 1789 a majority of only 20, was in 1790 rejected by 194. Parliamentary reform could no longer obtain a hearing; and at the general election of 1790 there was an increased majority for Pitt.⁷ Before long even Fox gave up his advocacy of the Revolution; no liberal measure was listened to; royal proclamations enjoined vigilance and severity upon the magistrates. Alarmed at the formation of fresh societies to spread revolution doctrines—the 'London Corresponding Society' and the 'Constitutional Association'—the government resolved to strike at the first opportunity. But the prosecution of Tom Paine (p. 401, note) for the second part of his 'Rights of Man,' an answer to Burke's 'Reflections,' did but exasperate his friends in every town and village; and so threatening was the outlook that the militia were embodied, the Tower fortified, and other precautions taken against an outbreak.

The decree of the Convention of November 19, 1792, made war inevitable. Pitt, who had looked forward to a prolonged period of peace, was forced to take up the challenge. An 'Alien Act' was passed to place all foreigners under supervision, and to remove them, if necessary, from the country. The exportation of arms, ammunition, grain, and flour to France was forbidden. The forces were largely increased. The French declaration of war rallied all parties to the government, and Fox's endeavour to limit the war to defensive operations was rejected without a division.

Alarm of the government. Beginning of war

certainly that it would be followed by a military dictatorship, were almost without exception verified.

⁷ And yet in an early session was passed an act of great importance to liberty. In libel cases the function of the jury had hitherto been only to decide upon the fact of publication and the reference of the libel. The really important question, whether it was a libel, had been left to the judge. By

the act now passed by Fox this was given to the jury; and the importance of the change was soon manifested. The later legislation on the subject of libel is in Lord Campbell's Act, 1843, amended in 1845 and 1888, which prevents a publication being held 'malicious,' if for the public benefit.—Erskine May, *Constitutional History*, vol. ii. p. 114.

Dates

	A. D.		A. D.
Pitt, prime minister	1783	Insanity of George III.	1788
India Act and Free Trade	1784	French Revolution	1789
Impeachment of Warren Hastings	1786	Fox's Libel Act	1790
Beginning of slave trade abolition	1788	War declared with France	1793

SECTION 3.—*The War to the Peace of Amiens, 1802*

Revolutionary France now stood alone against all Europe. Royalist insurrections broke out in Lyons and La Vendée; the Austrians reconquered the Netherlands. The Duke of York with 10,000 British troops besieged Dunkirk; Hood blockaded and took Toulon. Then

Success of the French in Europe came the rebound; the insurrections were crushed with ferocious determination; the Austrian army which covered the English force before Dunkirk was beaten, and the duke forced to retreat with haste into Holland, leaving all his baggage and artillery to the French. Toulon was retaken; it was here that Napoleon Bonaparte first signalled himself by the skill with which he handled the artillery. At sea, however, Great Britain had taken St. Pierre, Miquelon, and Tobago. In India Pondicherry had fallen to us, and the French had been driven out of that country.

In England the revolutionary clubs were jealously watched. The government obtained a partial suspension of the Habeas Corpus Act; a Traitorous Correspondence Act prohibited all intercourse with France; large numbers of volunteers were enrolled; prosecutions for sedition were frequent; spies and informers were active; judges were subservient. But the juries which by Fox's act had to decide on the question of libel, showed great independence, and in case after case gave an acquittal. At sea we prospered still. On June 1, 1794, Howe won a great victory off Brest; several West Indian islands, with Corsica, were taken. But on land the victorious republic sent out a million of men and won a rapid succession of battles. The English were driven out of Holland, and the French invaded Germany. In 1795 Prussia, and soon afterwards Spain, were forced into alliance with France, while Russia joined us. An expedition to help the royalist revolt in Brittany, and another to Poitou, were miserable failures; but England wrested from the Dutch, now also the compulsory allies of France, Ceylon, the Malaccas, Java, and the Cape of Good Hope, and drove them from India, where, in 1792, we had forced Tippoo Saib (p. 411) to cede half his dominions, to pay 8,500,000*l.*, to release all prisoners, and to give up his sons as hostages.

Among the working classes, bad harvests, taxation, and want of trade were causing severe distress; and distress was causing sedition and bitter class hatred. A great meeting in Copenhagen Fields passed an address praying for reform, the dismissal of Pitt, and peace. The king was insulted by the mob, and was shot at in the streets; and this led to further acts for suppressing seditious meetings and revolutionary writings. Pitt was anxious for peace; and he entered into negotiations with the Directory of Five, the government which, representing the middle classes and the desire for order, had at length superseded the various forms of terrorism which had dominated Paris. But the haughty attitude of the Directory and the refusal to evacuate Holland made the attempt useless; while the successful invasion of the Milanese by the army of Italy under Napoleon intensified the confidence and aggressive spirit of the French.

Aware that Ireland was our weak spot, they now sent an expedition thither. But the attempt to land at Bantry Bay was frustrated with the loss to the invaders of four ships of the line and eight frigates. Another squadron succeeded in landing 1,400 men on the coast of Pembrokeshire; but they were forced to surrender to the militia and volunteers, and the convoying frigates were captured. These successes were put into the shade by the great victory of February 14, 1797, off Cape St. Vincent, over the Spanish fleet of twenty-seven line-of-battle ships and ten frigates, won by the seamanship and daring of Admirals Jervis and Parker and Commodore Nelson, who led a fleet of but eighteen ships: a victory which prevented the Spanish fleet from joining the French in Brest and the Dutch in the Texel, and forming with them an 'invincible armada' for the invasion of England. For this exploit Jervis received the earldom of St. Vincent with 3,000*l.* a year, and Nelson had the Order of the Bath. Then followed, on October 11, the destruction of the Dutch fleet off Camperdown by Admiral Duncan, just as it was sailing for another invasion of Ireland. The commerce of France, Spain, and the Dutch was now at our mercy. Trinidad was taken from Spain, and thousands of merchant ships were brought as prizes into our ports.

But though our navy was thus successful, its condition was thoroughly unsatisfactory. The sailors complained that the food provided by the government contractors was uneatable; that the pursers defrauded them of part of their earnings; that they were brutally treated by officers of all grades; that the hospital service was badly managed; that they had no pension when disabled; that they were allowed no liberty on shore; and, worst of all,

Distress in
England

The French
in Ireland
and Wales

Battles of
Cape St. Vin-
cent and
Camperdown

Mutinies in
the navy

that the scale of wages was precisely the same as in the time of Charles II. At length the crews at Spithead openly mutinied, but returned to their duty when the bulk of their demands were conceded by the Admiralty. At St. Helen's again, their complaints were found to be so just that an admiral, four captains, and seventy-one officers were dismissed. But the mutiny at the Nore was of a different and far more serious kind. There the sailors were infected with revolutionary ideas. They fired upon the frigates which would not join them, blockaded the Thames, and threatened to bombard Sheerness. The government acted with vigour; strong measures were passed through both Houses in a week; and unconditional submission was demanded. Finding no support either on shore or from the rest of the fleet, the mutineers at length surrendered. By a wise leniency Parker, the ringleader, formerly a lieutenant, alone was hung. Mutinies broke out also in the fleets off the Texel and Cadiz, and at the Cape of Good Hope. The crew of one ship, the 'Hermione,' killed their officers, and took her into a Spanish port. The danger served to compel attention to the sailors' grievances, and resulted in a great improvement in their condition.

Meanwhile no less than 185,000,000*l.* had been added to the national debt; fresh loans were raised, and fresh taxes continually imposed. The working classes suffered terribly; the price of all provisions was doubled, that of bread nearly trebled, while wages had scarcely risen. The rapid increase of the manufacturing population pressed heavily upon the food supply; between 1792 and 1796 no fewer than 1,532 acts were passed for enclosing common land for wheat-growing and stock farms.⁸ For all the expense nothing seemed gained; Austria, our only ally, had lost the Netherlands and northern Italy, and had made peace. The Commons grew uneasy; and Pitt, who had been utterly deceived as to the resources of France, was ever

more anxious for peace. But when, on November 5, the Directory, flushed with their successes,⁹ proclaimed the invasion of England, there was nothing for it, in spite of the secession of the Whigs under Fox's leadership from the House in protest, but to carry on the war at all costs.

The temper of the navy, under the leadership of the greatest seaman in history, was soon proved. Napoleon persuaded the Directory, whose master he was rapidly becoming, to abandon the idea of

⁸ This enclosure of land told very hardly upon the labourer who had hitherto had free feeding on common land for his cow or pig.

⁹ By the Treaty of Campo Formio

Austria ceded her Netherlands, the left bank of the Rhine, and all her Italian provinces, acquiring Venice and its territory.

invading England, and to send him instead with an army to Egypt, whence he hoped, after overrunning Syria, to threaten India. This

was a continuation of the great struggle for the New World, in which France had during a century been so worsted—a defeat he hoped to retrieve. Slipping out of Toulon, while

Malta captured by the French Nelson's blockading fleet was driven off by a storm, and sailing first to Malta, possession of which he obtained by treachery, he reached Alexandria on July 1, 1798. Egypt was rapidly overrun. For the complete success of his great scheme, however, he needed command of the sea; and this England was resolved he should not have. Nelson, who had gone in pursuit, had reached Alexandria before the French, while they were at Malta. Disappointed, he had sailed to Sicily for provisions, and during his absence there the French fleet had reached Egypt. Returning from Sicily, Nelson found them at anchor in Aboukir Bay, on the afternoon of August 1, 1798. The French had thirteen ships of the line and four frigates, carrying 1,196 guns and 11,230 men; the English also had thirteen ships of the line and one frigate, carrying 1,012 guns and 8,068 men. The

Battle of the Nile French were drawn up in one long and compact line, as close in shore as possible. But it was a well-known maxim in the service that where a ship can swing at anchor there is room for a ship alongside on either side of it. Five of the English fleet passed between the French and the shore; Nelson with the rest kept the sea side.¹⁰ The battle raged from sunset until six next morning. All the French line-of-battle ships were taken or burnt; two frigates were taken afterwards, and only two frigates escaped. Nelson was wounded in the forehead; Brueys, the French admiral, was killed, and his flagship, the 'Orient,' blown up. The effects of this battle were vast. France was once more powerless at sea; India was saved; Napoleon was shut up in Egypt; the hopes of Europe revived; and a fresh coalition was formed against France. Nelson was loaded with gifts and honours from all the sovereigns of Europe. By his own country he was made Baron Nelson of the Nile, with a pension of 2,000*l.* a year.

For a time the coalition prospered. The Austrians and Russians, with an English contingent under the Duke of York, drove the French across the Rhine; while all Italy, except Genoa, which was closely besieged, was also won back. But then the fortune of war changed. The invasion of France was checked by Masséna's defeat of the allies at Zurich, while the Duke of York was forced to capitulate, his army being allowed to return to England.

¹⁰ See atlases to Alison's *History of Europe*, and Gardiner's *Student's History of England*, where the position of each ship is carefully marked.

The capture of the Dutch fleet in the Texel was the only success we could claim.

Meanwhile Napoleon, invading Syria by the coast-road from Egypt, found his way blocked by the fortress of Acre. The place was barely tenable; but so gallant was the stand of the Turkish garrison, helped by a few English boats' crews, whom Sir Sidney Smith had thrown into the town at the critical moment, that, though the French won the outer works, they were forced, after desperate hand-to-hand fighting in the breaches, to abandon the siege at the end of nine weeks; and Napoleon re-entered Cairo with forces terribly reduced by the hardships of the retreat. Baffled in his scheme of Eastern conquest, but unable to transport his army to France, he left it under the command of Kléber, and, setting sail in a single vessel with a few officers, escaped the English fleet, and arrived safely in France. Before long he had fulfilled Burke's prophecy by overthrowing the Directory, and, as First Consul, with two nominal colleagues, becoming dictator. To rally all moderate men to his side, he released the state prisoners, reopened the churches and restored the priests, and repealed the revolutionary edicts. The people welcomed order, though under the protection of absolutism. Napoleon then tried to break up the coalition by making peace with Great Britain. When his offers were refused, he set himself to the war. While Moreau crossed the Rhine, overran Bavaria, and routed the Austrians in the battle of Hohenlinden, December 3, 1800, by which France got possession of Bavaria and the Tyrol, he himself suddenly crossed the Alps, marched rapidly upon the Austrians, who had taken Genoa, and turned defeat into victory on the plains of Marengo on June 14. Austria made peace at Lunéville, February 9, 1801, repeating the conditions of Campo Formio (p. 424, note); and Great Britain was again left to fight France single-handed. She had however recaptured Malta, and destroyed the French squadron which came to its relief.

War with France had meant war with India as well, where Tippoo Saib, the son of Hyder Ali (p. 422), had welcomed French help. In 1799 the English, under General Harris, stormed Seringapatam, his capital, and Tippoo was slain in the action. Mysore, with the Coromandel and Malabar coasts, and Srirangapatam itself, of which Sir Arthur Wellesley, brother of the governor-general, Lord Mornington, was made governor, were taken into British hands. Shortly afterwards, Mornington's plan of placing residents in the courts of the friendly native princes to direct their foreign policy led to a war with the warlike chiefs of the Mahrattas,

Siege of
Acre

Napoleon's
return to
France; his
dictatorship

Hohenlinden
and Marengo

British
success in
India

who ruled from Delhi to the Deccan. Wellesley, however, beat them at Assaye and Argaum in the south, and Lake at Laswarree in the north-east. The peace which followed, and the acceptance by the Mogul at Delhi of British overlordship, placed southern India and the Ganges valley completely in our hands.

The claim of the right of search of neutral vessels by England had led, in 1800, to a quarrel with Russia, which had been gained over by Napoleon, and with Denmark. On August 29 Russia suddenly seized all English property, took prisoners the crews of 800 merchant ships, and marched them inland. Denmark and Sweden joined her in reviving the Armed Neutrality league (p. 405), and, at the same time, France made a treaty with America on the same basis. Pitt could retaliate only by a similar embargo in England.

The Baltic powers, though not formally at war with England, were thus completely under French influence. Should their fleets be united against us, our position would be indeed critical. The government at once determined to prevent such a danger. The Danes defying us, Parker, with Nelson second in command, sailed to the Baltic. Nelson forced his way through the Sound and the intricate channels leading to Copenhagen, attacked the fleet in the harbour on April 2, 1801, and, after a tremendous contest of five hours, destroyed it. Denmark sued for peace; the Northern League was broken up. Nelson then sailed to Revel, and Russia, thus threatened, also made peace, restoring the ships and prisoners she had seized, June 17, 1801.

Meanwhile great events had happened in Egypt. Kléber, surrounded by foes, was forced to a treaty, January 24, 1800, by which his army was to be permitted to return to France. But the British government repudiated any convention but one of unconditional surrender. The French thereupon fought a desperate battle at Heliopolis, in which they routed 80,000 Turks; this was followed by another victory at Damietta; Cairo was retaken, and the French were again masters of Egypt. But on March 2, 1801, Kléber having been meanwhile assassinated, General Abercrombie effected a landing with a small force in the face of the enemy, and, on the 21st, won a hard fight at Aboukir, in which he was unhappily killed. Cairo was once more captured, and a fresh convention made, by which the French army was taken in English ships to France.

France and England were now both ready for at least a truce. The one was helpless at sea, the other could do nothing on land. On March 28, 1802, therefore, the Peace of Amiens

was signed. Great Britain restored all her French conquests, but retained Trinidad and Ceylon, the one Spanish, the other Dutch. Malta, Gozo, and Comino were to be given back to the Knights of St. John, who had held Malta for nearly 800 years, conditions being imposed to prevent French aggression; and Egypt was restored to Turkey. The Cape of Good Hope was made a free port. The independence of our ally, Portugal, threatened by France and Spain, was to be preserved.

Dates

	A. D.		A. D.
War with France	1798	Successes in India	1799
Howe's victory of June 1	1794	Victory of Aboukir	1801
Victories of Cape St. Vincent and Camperdown	1797	Victory of Copenhagen	1801
Victory of the Nile	1798	Peace of Amiens	1802

SECTION 4.—Ireland and the Resignation of Pitt

During the war Ireland had been the source of grave and increasing danger. The Catholics, forming three-fourths of the nation, who had received the franchise in 1793, and had been freed from many of the disabilities placed upon them by a long series of ferocious acts during the last three reigns, were striving for total emancipation. This was fiercely opposed by the Protestants, who, in memory of William III., called themselves Orangemen, and whose scorn and hatred of the Irish were what they had always been. The secret society of 'United Irishmen,' formed by Wolfe Tone, had for its object the establishment of a republic under French protection. In 1795 Pitt sent Earl Fitzwilliam to Dublin as viceroy, hoping to secure both Catholic emancipation and parliamentary reform. Fitzwilliam struck boldly at abuses; removed from their offices the solicitor and attorney-general for opposing him; and dismissed from his employment the chief of the great house of Beresford, which monopolised a fourth of all the public offices in the kingdom. But Beresford and Lord Fitzgibbon, the chancellor, appealed to the king, and persuaded him that Catholic emancipation would be a breach of the coronation oath. Upon this point the bigotry of George III. was invincible. Fitzwilliam was recalled, and Fitzgibbon made Earl of Clare. All hopes of a quiet settlement in Ireland vanished at this disappointment. Grattan and the moderate men lost control of the people. Beresford's house was attacked; Clare escaped death only by his cool courage; faction fights took place between Catholics and Orangemen. Plunder and outrage increased rapidly. Then the troops were let loose in retaliation, and men were shot or transported without trial or

inquiry. The Orange yeomanry were allowed a free hand, and flogging, torture, murder, and rape went on without check. An act of the Irish parliament, in 1796, actually gave the Protestants full indemnity, and this was continued by the Insurrection Act. Never, even in Ireland, had the subject race known atrocity so foul. The result was that, in 1797, 100,000 men were ready for insurrection; guns and pikes were distributed; Wolfe Tone, Lord Edward Fitzgerald, and Arthur O'Connor had already gone to France to arrange an invasion. We have seen how it was foiled at Bantry and Camperdown (p. 423). At the last moment the plot for a rising in Ireland was betrayed, and the leaders seized and executed. Partial disturbances however took place, and a fearful revenge was exacted for them. In Wexford alone the outbreak was really formidable; but the rebels were broken with much slaughter, first by Moore, and then by Lake at Vinegar Hill. Lord Cornwallis, the new viceroy (pp. 400, 414), was a calm and humane man. He at once issued an amnesty, and pardon to all who would come in; and of the leading rebels seventy-three were allowed to leave the country. Quiet was then restored. In August, 1798, French troops landed in Mayo and defeated the first force sent against them, the affair being known as the 'Castlebar Races'; but they were then surrounded and forced to surrender. The Irish who had joined the invaders were pursued and slaughtered without mercy. A second French expedition of nine ships, carrying 8,000 troops, was almost destroyed by an English squadron. Wolfe Tone, found on board with a French commission, was condemned to death, but escaped execution by suicide.

The complete legal independence of Ireland (p. 406); the violence of the ascendancy party; the impossibility of establishing religious equality while the parliaments remained separate; the disaffection and the danger from France, with the consequent rebellion, turned Pitt's thoughts still more strongly than the failure of his commercial policy (p. 414) towards union. The Irish parliament being utterly corrupt, he resolved to use corruption to secure his aim. Cornwallis, aided by his secretary, Lord Castlereagh, reluctantly complied. Votes were bought up wholesale at any price that was demanded; 5,000*l.* was paid to briefless barristers to write up the Union; more than a million and a quarter were spent in compensating the owners of eighty-four pocket boroughs, which returned 168 members; peerages, titles and promotions were lavishly bestowed; the occupiers of houses in Dublin were promised compensation for the expected depreciation of house property.^{10a} By such means the

^{10a} Lecky, *History of England*, vol. viii. pp. 337, 394.

Irish parliament was induced, February 5, 1800, after weeks of vehement debate, adorned by a magnificent protest from Grattan, and enlivened by several duels, to vote its own extinction. Pitt had already carried the act in the English parliament; and, on August 2, 1800, the Act of Union received the royal assent. Ireland was henceforth to be represented in the Imperial parliament by four spiritual peers, sitting in rotation, twenty-eight lay peers elected by their body, and 100 members in the Commons; free trade was established between Great Britain and Ireland. Ireland was to contribute to the revenue in the proportion of 2 to 15 for twenty years. Her laws, if not incompatible with the Union, were to be in force until altered or repealed by the Imperial parliament.

On January 22, 1801, the first parliament of the 'United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland' met. For the first time the title of 'King of France,' which had been used since Edward III., was omitted, and the French lilies were removed from the shield.

The promises of money payment were fulfilled. But Pitt had secured the support of the Catholic voters by leaving it to be understood that complete emancipation would follow; and every consideration of honour and policy urged him to fulfil this pledge also. The king however again expressed his resolve never to yield, and he was supported by the primates and lord chancellors of both countries, the principal judges, and half the cabinet. Pitt therefore resigned, after holding office for seventeen years, and all the men of mark in the ministry went with him.¹¹ He was succeeded by Addington, the speaker; but it was still Pitt to whom the country looked as the real guider of the state. Indeed, it is possible that Pitt was glad of the opportunity to put Addington in, since he saw that there must be a peace, but did not want to be the man to make it.

SECTION 5.—*The War from the Peace of Amiens to Trafalgar and the Death of Pitt, 1802-1806*

The battles of Aboukir and Copenhagen, and the conclusion of peace, had happened during Addington's ministry. But they were of course as much due to Pitt as the capture of Belle Isle (p. 890) had been due to his father. According to the burden of a song, written by Canning in his honour, he was 'the pilot that weathered the storm;' and a motion was carried by 225 to 52 that he 'has rendered great and important services to his country, and especially deserves the gratitude of the House.' Addington's cabinet was weak, for he

¹¹ He was deeply in debt when he left office, for he had utterly neglected his private affairs. The London merchants wished to give him 100,000*l.*, and the king offered 80,000*l.* from the privy purse. He refused both, consenting at length to borrow from a few private friends enough to free him from debt.

had but ordinary abilities, and Canning was his only really strong colleague.¹² Pitt honourably gave him his support; but the situation was

a dangerous one, and the country clamoured for Pitt's return Demand for Pitt's return to power, just as it had demanded that of his father in a to power similar crisis (p. 402). The alarm deepened when Napoleon annexed, first, Elba, and then Piedmont; when he occupied Parma and Placentia; and when he marched 40,000 men into Switzerland on pretence of mediating in the internal disputes of that country. Fresh efforts were made to induce Addington to give way to Pitt, but Pitt utterly refused to countenance them. Napoleon hated England as the steady opponent of revolution, as the main obstacle to his ambition, and especially as the conqueror of the New World. He had made peace only until he should be ready for a renewal of war. The

occasion was found in our refusal, on the ground of his Renewal of war annexations, to deliver up Malta in accordance with the treaty. Napoleon was specially anxious to get back Malta as the key to Egypt, whence he might again begin the attack upon India. The English *ultimatum* on this point meeting with an angry refusal, war was declared, May 18, 1803. Napoleon at once imprisoned all the English who were at that time in France. Then he overran Hanover. But his great design was the invasion of England. A veteran army of

100,000 men was collected at Boulogne, and a large fleet of Intended invasion of Great Britain flat-bottomed boats built for its transport.¹³ The intention was that the Toulon fleet, which was not blockaded by our ships, should sail first to Brest and next to Rochefort to disperse our squadrons and set free the ships in those ports; and that the united armament should then sweep the Channel to cover his passage. 'Let us be masters of the Channel,' he said, 'for six hours, and we are

¹² One curious legal question was settled during Addington's rule. Horne Tooke, a former opponent of John Wilkes, was a clergyman who had renounced his orders for thirty years, and had entered parliament for Old Sarum. It was now assumed that a clergyman could not renounce orders; and decided that a clergyman could not sit in the House. Ministers of the Church of Scotland were also disqualified, and the exclusion of clergy was extended to Roman Catholics at their emancipation in 1829: finally, an Act of 1870 made it possible for clergymen to renounce orders.

¹³ The spirit aroused in the country was shown by the great volunteer movement. By the close of the summer 800,000 men had been enrolled. Pitt, himself, as warden of the Cinque Ports, formed a regiment of 8,000 men,

and gave much personal attention to their drill and equipment. He got in readiness, too, 150 light gunboats. It was at the great review of 80,000 volunteers in Hyde Park that the Inns of Court corps gained from the king himself the title of the 'Devil's Own.' The alarm throughout the country was very real. A gentleman living in Suffolk has told me that his father, chief constable of his 'hundred,' had orders from government that the moment news arrived that the French had landed, as was expected, near Harwich, every stack in the 'hundred' should be fired, and the road made impassable by felling the trees. From a lady, the daughter of a clergyman in Derbyshire, I have heard how her father would lie awake at night, in misery at the thought that England would be a French province.

masters of the world !' So sure was he of success, that a medal was struck with the inscription, 'Frappée à Londres en 1804.' The sudden death of the admiral who was to carry out the scheme compelled him however to postpone it for a time.¹⁴

The crisis made Pitt's return to power imperative. Several events had led to estrangement between him and Addington. Addington's measures in finance and foreign affairs were unsatisfactory, and his preparations to meet the danger totally inadequate. At length Pitt joined Fox and Lord Grenville in opposition, and Addington immediately resigned, May 10, 1804. The king at once applied to Pitt, who requested that Fox, Grenville, and their friends might be included. But George utterly refused to accept Fox; and, though that statesman magnanimously urged his adherents to join in spite of his own exclusion, they refused, and Pitt was forced back upon Addington's cabinet and his own personal friends.¹⁵ Lords Eldon, Castlereagh, Harrowby, and Melville (formerly Mr. Dundas), with Canning, were the only men of mark. Addington was himself before long reconciled to Pitt, and joined the ministry as Lord Sidmouth. Pitt resumed office without a word about Catholic Emancipation, the cause of his former resignation. The Catholics had placed full trust in his former assurances, and had remained peaceable ever since on the strength of an appeal well known to have been made with his authority. The breach of faith is explained, though it cannot be approved or excused, by Pitt's knowledge that the agitation caused by the dispute had brought on an alarming recurrence of the king's illness; and by the fact that, recognising the evils which might thus be produced, he had solemnly promised George never to raise the question again. The Catholics, backed by Fox, now sent petitions to both Houses, but the Commons, by 386 to 124, refused to listen to them.

Pitt's great object, after making England herself as strong as possible, was to form a fresh coalition against Napoleon. Russia willingly assisted him; and when Napoleon, already created emperor, had himself crowned King of Italy also, and annexed Genoa and

¹⁴ A fresh Irish conspiracy at this time was formed under the leadership of Robert Emmett. A large number of men were sworn in, and arms and ammunition distributed. The lord chief justice, Lord Kilwarden, with his nephew, were dragged from their carriage and murdered in the presence of his daughter. The government had received warning that an attempt would be made upon the castle, and when the conspirators gathered in the streets

they were dispersed by the military. The leaders were seized. Emmett and others were tried by court-martial and hanged.

¹⁵ Had he remained firm to his opinion, he might, in union with Grenville and Fox, have been more powerful in opposition than he was in office, and would have compelled the king to accede to his terms. When he died the king admitted Fox.

Lucca, the league was joined by Austria and Sweden. Napoleon's object now was to effect the conquest of England before the coalition could act. He ordered Admiral Villeneuve to sail to the West Indies, in order to draw our fleet from the Channel, and then, while the Channel was clear, to return to escort the troops to England. In March 1805 Villeneuve accordingly sailed, pursued by Nelson in May. In June he had come back, still with Nelson at his heels. He now received Napoleon's orders to break the blockade at Brest, and then, in company with the ships set free, to drive Nelson from the Channel. But he was wanting in decision, and finally sailed off to Cadiz to join the Spanish fleet there. Napoleon, to whom every hour was of importance, since Russia and Austria were on the point of uniting their forces, was furious at seeing his great design thus wrecked. But without an instant's hesitation he hurried his troops away from Boulogne to meet the Austrians. On October 19, Mack, the Austrian commander, completely out-manceuvred, capitulated at Ulm with 80,000 men, leaving the road to Vienna open. Meanwhile Nelson, who had put into Portsmouth to refit, had sailed with Collingwood, after but a fortnight's rest in England, to meet the united fleets of France and Spain; and, on October 21, two days after Ulm, with twenty-seven large ships and four frigates, he encountered Villeneuve and Gravina, with thirty-three ships of the line and eight frigates, off Trafalgar. Flinging out the memorable signal, 'England expects every man to do his duty,' he advanced at noon in two lines. Collingwood with one line was to cut through the enemy at the twelfth ship from the rear, while he himself in the 'Victory' pierced the centre. Refusing to put off the orders which glittered on his breast, he became a mark for the enemy's riflemen, and was shot from above in the shoulder early in the action; three hours later he died with the words, 'Thank God, I have done my duty!' He lived to hear of victory. In the end twenty ships struck, Villeneuve was made prisoner, and Gravina died of his wounds. Neither France nor Spain could be regarded as a naval power during the remainder of the war.

All England, as when Wolfe fell before Quebec, or Blake died after his great achievement (p. 201), was in mingled joy and mourning. Nelson was buried in St. Paul's Cathedral; his brother received an earldom, with 6,000*l.* a year and 100,000*l.* for an estate. But the people recognised that Trafalgar was the reward of Pitt's steadfastness as much as of Nelson's heroism. When he went to dine at the Guildhall the horses were taken from the carriage and he was dragged thither in triumph. On this occasion

Second coalition against Napoleon

Invasion of England abandoned

Ulm and Trafalgar

Enthusiasm for Pitt

he made his last public speech. It consisted of but two sentences. He had been called the 'Saviour of Europe.' He ended thus: 'Europe is not to be saved by any single man. England has saved herself by her exertions, and will, as I trust, save Europe by her example!'¹⁶

Scarcely were the rejoicings for Trafalgar over when this hope was for the time crushed. Napoleon, after his triumph at Ulm, had occupied Munich and Vienna without firing a shot. On December 2, he ruinously defeated the Emperors of Russia and Austria at Austerlitz. Austria made peace at Presburg, ceding to the victor the Tyrol and Venice, while the Confederation of the Rhine, formed by Napoleon, placed a barrier between him and Austria. This ruin of his hopes killed Pitt. 'Roll up that map,' he said, pointing to the map of Europe; 'it will not be wanted these ten years!' The gout from which he constantly suffered flew to his head, and on January 23, 1806, he died, exclaiming, 'Oh, my country! How I leave my country!' On February 22, 1806, he was laid in the vault which held his father.

Pitt was succeeded as prime minister by Grenville, with Fox, whom George was now compelled to admit, for foreign minister.

Ministry of Grenville and Fox. Condemnation of the slave trade
 Abortive attempts at negotiation with Napoleon, and a resolution condemning the slave trade, followed by an act for its abolition in 1807, were all for which this ministry is to be remembered, except that Fox imitated Pitt in saying nothing about Catholic emancipation in Ireland. He followed his great rival to the grave in 1806; and, in 1807, a quarrel having arisen between ministers and the king upon the Catholic question, they were dismissed. The Duke of Portland, who had headed

Portland's anti-Catholic ministry
 the Whig seceders to Pitt after the Revolution (p. 421), then formed an anti-Catholic ministry. His chief colleagues were: Perceval, chancellor of the exchequer; Canning, foreign secretary; Castlereagh, secretary at war and for the colonies; Huskisson, secretary to the Treasury. Two of these, Canning and Castlereagh, had in former times actively assisted Pitt's attempt to

¹⁶ The stately reserve of Pitt's manner was one of his most marked characteristics. The resolution of the Commons, carried by the casting vote of the Speaker, for the impeachment of his life-long friend and colleague, Dundas, then Lord Melville, for corruption, was the one occasion on which this partially broke down. It formed a touching scene, and one which illustrates the bitterness with which his unequalled

supremacy was regarded by his opponents. As he pressed his hat low over his eyes the tears were seen to flow down his cheeks. A few of the baser sort came round to see 'how Billy looked after it,' and to exult over his distress. But his friends formed a close circle around him, and escorted him from the house without their being able to catch a glimpse of his face.

remove the disabilities they now united in opposing; but it must be remembered that Pitt himself had given up the cause. Parliament was shortly dissolved, and a large anti-Catholic majority returned.

Dates

	A.D.		A.D.
Union with Ireland	1800	Trafalgar	1805
Resignation of Pitt	1800	Austerlitz	1805
Renewal of war	1803	Death of Pitt	1806
Pitt's second ministry	1804		

SECTION G. — *The War to the First Peace of Paris, 1815*

Napoleon's victorious career had not ceased with Austerlitz. Prussia had held aloof from the coalition, and now reaped the fruits of her selfishness. In October 1806 she was utterly crushed at Jena and Auerstadt. But England was still the chief object of Napoleon's hatred. From Berlin he issued his famous Decrees, which forbade France and all her allies to trade with Great Britain, and declared all English ports under blockade, any vessel trading with Britain to be a lawful prize. But in the first place he had no fleet to blockade them; and in the second England could play the same game with far more effect. The 'Orders in Council' prohibited trade even by neutral nations with French ports or with ports in French possession; and this, as we had command of the sea, was no empty threat. Meanwhile Napoleon was still at war with Russia. Two fearful battles were fought at Eylau, in which he was nearly defeated, and at Friedland, in which he gained a crushing victory. The result was the Peace of Tilsit, June 25, 1807. The secret articles of this treaty declared that if France and Great Britain should be still at war on December 1, Prussia was to declare war against the latter; while for permission to conquer Sweden and Turkey if he could, and to annex the Danubian provinces, the Czar agreed, if England would not accept Napoleon's terms, to join him, and to force Denmark and Portugal to take part against her. Canning however got an inkling of the danger. He had reason to believe that the Danes were about to hand over their powerful fleet to Napoleon (p. 427). He resolved therefore to strike a blow which, as Denmark was neutral, could be justified only by necessity. The surrender of the fleet to England was demanded. Upon a refusal, a fleet and an army were at once sent to Denmark. The Danes resisted bravely, but were defeated on land; Copenhagen was bombarded by land and sea, and shamefully plundered after capitulation; and then the whole Danish fleet of sixteen ships of the line, nine frigates, and

fourteen corvettes, with all the vessels laden with naval stores, was led away captive to England.¹⁷

Secure in the east by the Peace of Tilsit, Napoleon now turned his eyes westward. He resolved to attack England through Portugal, then under a regency, and to conquer first that country and then Spain. The regent was ordered to close his ports to British vessels, to declare war upon England, and to confiscate all British property in Portugal; and, when he refused the first and last of these conditions, Napoleon forced the King of Spain to grant a passage to an invading force, under Marshal Junot. Marching with a haste which almost ruined his army, Junot occupied Lisbon on November 30, the royal family barely having time to escape to Brazil with their treasures.

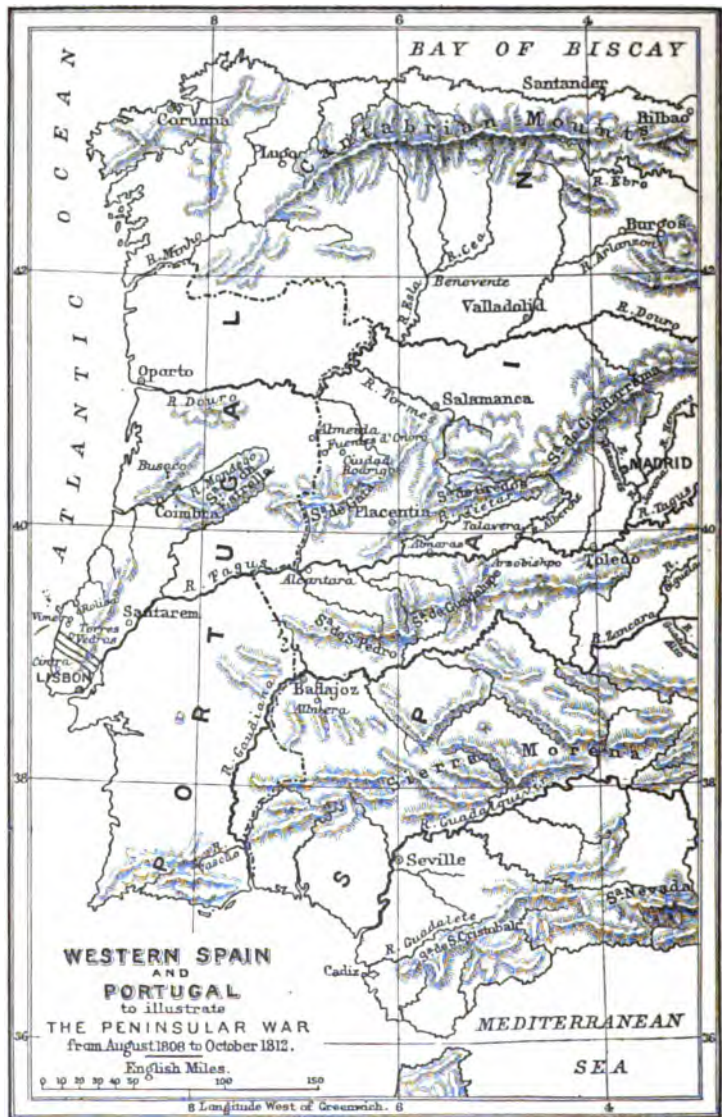
The full extent of Napoleon's design was then disclosed. Fresh troops gradually crossed the Spanish border, and on one ground and another possessed themselves of the frontier fortresses. The effete Bourbons of Spain, Charles IV. and his son Ferdinand, were compelled to abdicate in favour of Napoleon's brother Joseph. On March 1, 1808, Marshal Murat entered Spain in force, and, on the 23rd, was in possession of Madrid. But then the nation rose in its own behalf. Everywhere the scattered French forces were successfully attacked. One army of 23,000 men, under Dupont, was defeated, and capitulated at Baylen. Joseph was deposed, and the French forced to retreat in haste beyond the Ebro; Junot remaining with 30,000 men in Portugal.

Portugal now appealed to her old ally, England; and in July 9,000 men sailed under the command of Sir Arthur Wellesley,¹⁸ the victor of Assaye, whose career in India had displayed not only personal intrepidity, but consummate generalship, the most perfect temper, a great organising faculty, and indomitable will. Since his return from India he had been employed in an abortive expedition in North Germany and in the late Danish campaign. On August 1, 1808, he landed at the mouth of the Mondego. Here he

¹⁷ We also took Heligoland, commanding the Elbe, which we gave up to Germany in 1890. We had already, in 1806, made a final capture of the Cape of Good Hope. Expeditions to Buenos Ayres and Monte Video in 1807 were failures through bad generalship. But in 1810 we took the island of Mauritius, which we still hold, and thus put an end to the destructive privateer-

ing war upon our commerce which France waged from thence. A gallant but useless feat of arms was performed by General Stuart, who was defending Sicily against the French. In 1806 he crossed to Calabria, and defeated a greatly superior French force at Maida.

¹⁸ Brialmont's *Life of Wellington*, translated by Gleig.



Longmans, Green & Co., London & New York.

F.S. Weller.

was joined by General Spencer, who commanded a division of 12,000 men further south; and, hearing of the French disasters, he resolved to strike at once. On the 17th he beat Laborde at Rolica, and on the 12th completely defeated Junot himself at Vimiero, thirty miles north of Lisbon. He was however stopped from pursuing his advantage by the sluggishness of Sir Harry Burrard, who had been sent out by the undecided ministry to supersede him immediately after the expedition had sailed, and who arrived during the action. Junot then signed the Convention of Cintra, by which he agreed to evacuate Portugal on condition that his army was permitted to return untouched to France. This excited the utmost anger in England, which fell chiefly upon Wellesley. But he easily showed that it was no fault of his; and, on January 1, 1809, he received the thanks of both houses. He was now made secretary for Ireland.

The successful rising of the Spanish people aroused the spirit of resistance against Napoleon in other countries. Austria and Prussia began to arm. But Alexander of Russia was entirely under his influence; and in October a fresh alliance was formed between them at Erfurt. Prussia was forced to submit to the most humiliating terms, and Stein, her great patriot minister, was banished at Napoleon's demand. The emperor was thus again free for a second conquest of Spain, where his path was made easy by the weakness of the Junta, or central committee, chosen from the provincial councils. In November 1808 he crossed the Pyrenees in overwhelming strength, defeated the Spanish armies on the Ebro, in the north, centre, and south, and entered Madrid in triumph, after a short siege, on December 4.

Meanwhile Sir John Moore, the next best officer to Wellesley, had taken command of 20,000 British troops at Lisbon. His orders were to make for Madrid, and on November 18 he reached Salamanca. Here he learned of the Spanish defeats, of the siege of Madrid, that Soult had taken Burgos, and that he was marching with large forces to cut off his retreat. He determined to fall back. But then came despatches from the British minister at Madrid urging him to attempt its relief. He therefore advanced upon Valladolid, to cut the line of French communications. Suddenly, on December 4, he heard that Madrid had fallen ten days previously. He was now in the utmost peril, for Napoleon had guessed his movements, and on December 19 led 40,000 men by forced marches to cut off his retreat. Moore reached Benevente, where there was a bridge over

Victories at
Rolica and
Vimiero.

Convention
of Cintra

Subjection
of Prussia

Second
French
invasion of
Spain

Sir John
Moore and
Corunna

the Esla, only a few hours before Napoleon's vanguard. He blew up the bridge, and the defence of the river gave him a further start. On January 1, 1809, Napoleon, called back to France by fresh dangers, left Soult to press the pursuit. Moore made for Corunna. This winter retreat was memorable alike for its rapidity, for the terrible sufferings of the men, for their heroism, and for their excesses on the route. Halting at Lugo, through sheer inability to move further, Moore offered battle; but Soult's army was as fatigued as his own, and he held back. On January 11 the English reached Corunna, 14,000 strong. The transports were not there, and a battle was inevitable. Moore drew up his men on a range of low hills before the town, and met Soult's attack on January 16. Everywhere the English were victorious; but their heroic leader died at the moment of victory. The transports having now arrived, the army embarked that night and sailed for England.

Joseph Bonaparte was now again king of Spain, with 800,000 men and the best generals of France. The complete conquest of Spain was delayed only by the heroic resistance of Saragossa, which did not capitulate until February 20. In March, Soult entered Portugal, and established himself at Oporto.

Napoleon had been called away to cope with the renewal of war by Austria. In April he entered Vienna once more in triumph.

Renewal of war between France and Austria Crossing the Danube, he suffered his first defeat in Europe, at Aspern, on May 21; but repaired it by a second crossing and by a great victory in the two days' battle of Wagram, July 5 and 6. Austria however was not yet defeated; and on July 12 Peace of Vienna Napoleon was forced to conclude an armistice at Znaim, followed shortly by peace at Vienna, which set him free to attend again to Spain.

England had determined to throw more energy into the war there.

On April 22 Wellesley entered the Tagus. Soult lay at Oporto, and Victor, after a series of successes over the Spaniards, at

Sir Arthur Wellesley in Portugal Campaign of 1809 Talavera on the Tagus. Having restored confidence and organisation among the Portuguese, Wellesley resolved to attack Soult first. On May 9 he reached the Douro. The crossing on the 12th was perhaps the most daring, skilful, and successful operation of the whole war. Soult was driven

Crossing of the Douro out of Oporto with heavy loss, and, closely pressed, escaped northwards to Lugo. Wellesley at once returned, and marched up the Tagus to fight Victor, who retired to Toledo, but then returned with King Joseph and 50,000 veterans. Wellesley had 54,000, of whom however only 19,000 were British. His army was half-

starved, and there was good reason to fear treachery on the part of the Spanish general, Cuesta. An action on the 27th was followed by the great French attack next day. The fight was a desperate one; Wellesley finally gained a complete victory, with the loss of 6,800 men, the enemy losing 7,400 and fourteen guns.

Wellesley had intended to make for Madrid. But, like Moore, he suddenly found himself in the most imminent peril. Unknown to him, Soult had reformed his army, and had reached Placentia, far to his rear; should he succeed in securing the bridge of boats at Almaraz, Wellesley's retreat would be cut off. His decision was taken at once.

Leaving the Spaniards under Cuesta¹⁹ to guard Talavera, he quickly crossed to the left bank of the Tagus at Arzobispo, while Crawford, by forced marches, just managed to break down the bridge of boats at Almaraz before Soult's vanguard arrived there, and then made his way south-west to Badajoz, the fortress commanding the southern road into Portugal, as Almeida and Ciudad Rodrigo guard the northern.

Wellesley had been forced to retreat; but he had accomplished a great enterprise. 'With a handful of men and a good general, the English had made head in Spain against the best troops in the world.' He had beaten two French armies and destroyed their prestige, and had cleared Portugal of its invaders. All this had been done under extreme difficulties. His worst enemies were the conceit, the jealousy, the selfishness, and the incapacity of his Spanish allies, who were always well provisioned while his own men starved. So strongly did he feel this that henceforward his plans were made without reference to the Spaniards. He had, too, the constant task of strengthening the faltering spirit of his own government, which sent him neither men nor money. Had he lost a battle, had he suffered any serious reverse, the war would have been given up; and the knowledge of this made him feel that caution—incessant caution—must be his chief guide. The English people were in a fit of angry depression, and it was with difficulty, and only after prolonged debate, that the thanks of the Houses were offered him. He was now made Baron Douro of Wellesley and Viscount Wellington of Talavera; while both Spain and Portugal placed him in supreme command of their forces. It is only by a close study of the details of this memorable campaign that the clear foresight, the cool courage, the unflinching will and patience, and the decisive judgment—the pos-

¹⁹ Cuesta was utterly defeated at Ocana, east of Toledo, by Victor, November 19.

session of every quality which enables a commander to sustain the strain of prolonged and unceasing harassment, can be in any degree realised.

To all this a sad contrast was seen in the misconduct of another expedition. Before Austria declared war against Napoleon, she had

The Wal-
cheren
expedition

urged the despatch of an English force to North Germany. The ministry delayed action until July, and then determined to attack the French docks and fleet at Antwerp.

On July 28, under Lord Chatham, Pitt's elder brother, a man of the slenderest capacity, thirty-seven ships of the line, with 40,000 troops, sailed for the Scheldt. Chatham landed on the pestilent isle of Walcheren; but, instead of pushing on for Antwerp, he wasted time in bombarding and capturing Flushing, thus allowing the French to place Antwerp in a complete state of defence. In August the whole force sailed back, except 15,000 who were left in the marshes of Walcheren. There 2,000 died of pestilence, and then the rest were recalled.

The result was a change in the ministry. Canning and Castlereagh quarrelled over the failure; the quarrel led to a duel, and to the

Ministerial
changes

resignation of both. Then Portland also resigned, and Mr. Perceval became prime minister.²⁰ More important still

was the appointment of Wellington's able brother, the Marquis of Wellesley, formerly governor-general of India as Lord Mornington, to be foreign secretary. Wellington was thus sure of support at home. Two future prime ministers, Robert Peel and Lord Palmerston, were members of the ministry.

The French having conquered Andalusia, Napoleon now sent his best general, Masséna, with overwhelming forces against Wellington. But Wellington had foreseen and provided against the danger by enclosing the corner formed by the Tagus and the sea, on which Lisbon

The Lines of
Torres
Vedras

stands, in a triple line of fortifications—the famous Lines of Torres Vedras—upon which the engineers had for months been spending all their skill to utilise the advantages of nature, and which he was confident he could hold against any

force brought against him. Thither he slowly retired, making the country a desert right up to the lines. He allowed Ciudad Rodrigo to be taken rather than depart from the course he had marked out for himself. Once only, at Busaco, he turned to fight Masséna, and beat him heavily. On October 8, 1810, he entered the lines, which were guarded by 126 works, 247 guns, and 80,000 men. So well had the secret been kept, that Masséna was close to them before he was

²⁰ He was assassinated in May 1812, when Lord Liverpool became prime minister, remaining in office until his illness in 1827.

aware of their existence. Then he realised that he was foiled, and, soon starved out, went back into winter quarters at Abrantes and Santarem.

Though safe from the enemy, Wellington was in great straits. The king had once more become insane, and, as his condition grew more hopeless,²¹ the opposition at home attacked the war policy with increasing vehemence. The disorganisation of the Spaniards grew daily worse, and the jealousy between them and the Portuguese prevented co-operation. Wellington almost despaired of success. At length Masséna, unable to support his army any longer in the desolated country, retired northwards, March 1811. Wellington at once pursued, and drove him to Coimbra and over the Mondego. Finally, after losing baggage, artillery, and nearly 80,000 men, Masséna left Portugal, and, hoping to be joined by Soult from Andalusia, concentrated his forces at Salamanca. This retreat marked the ebb in Napoleon's fortunes. Portugal was left in a pitiful state; 2,000 square miles lay utterly desolate, almost without an inhabitant or sign of living thing.

Meanwhile, Soult had marched from the siege of Cadiz to join Masséna.²² On March 11 he took Badajoz, which was feebly defended by the Portuguese. Wellington then formed the siege of Almeida (p. 439), and, when Masséna advanced to the rescue, fought and beat him at Fuentes d'Onoro, May 5. Almeida was evacuated; Masséna was superseded by Napoleon and went into retirement.

Wellington had previously despatched Beresford with 20,000 Portuguese and 6,000 English to retake Badajoz. Beresford had scarcely invested the place when he heard that Soult was returning with 18,000 men. He at once raised the siege, and took up a position at Albuera, where, on May 16, was fought the bloodiest battle of the war. Out-generalled, Beresford nearly suffered a great defeat, which was turned into victory by the famous bayonet charge of the English infantry up the hill against Soult's massive columns. So terrific was the carnage that when the French broke and fled down the opposite slope 1,500 English alone stood alive out of 6,000; one regiment, the 57th, out of a total strength of 570, lost 23 officers and 400 men. It was reckoned that within a few hundred feet there were piled 7,000 corpses.

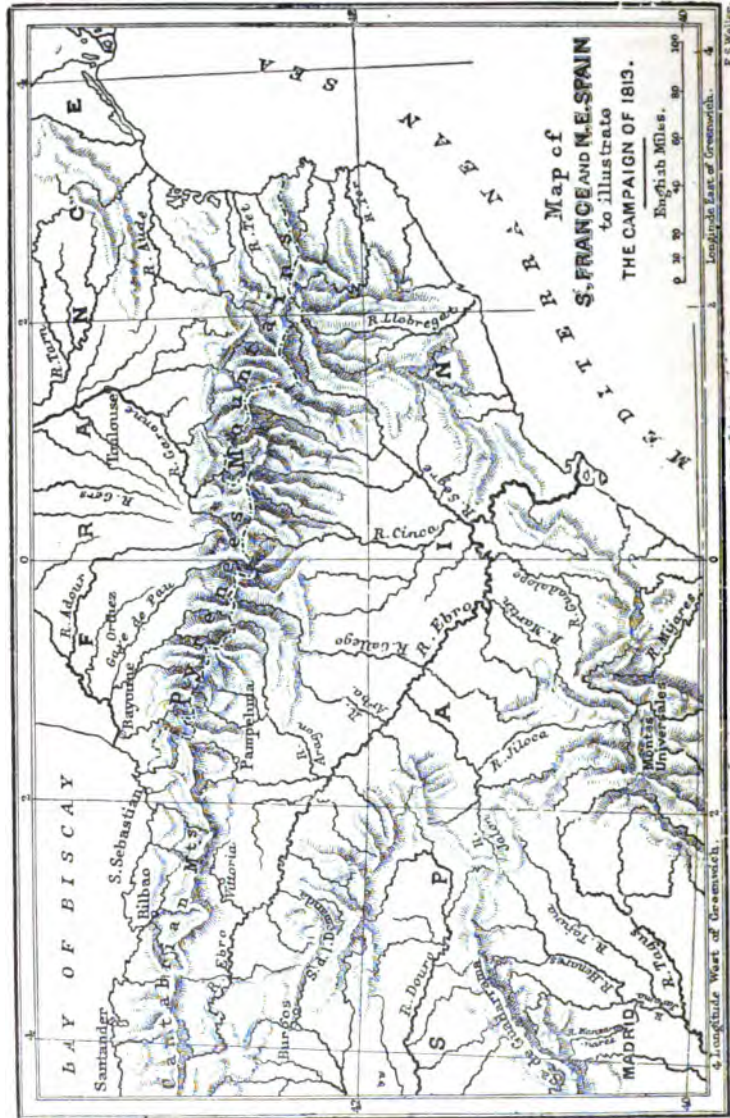
²¹ On February 5, 1811, the Prince of Wales was made regent, with the restrictions contained in Pitt's bill of 1788 (p. 416), to last until Feb. 1812.

²² Sir Thomas Graham, who commanded at Cadiz, had come out and defeated the French at Barrosa, but had been again forced to retire.

Wellington now joined Beresford, and invested Badajoz, June 8. But again Soult came on in such force that the siege was raised on the 12th, and Wellington retired into Portugal. He was not long idle. In July he marched north, and, deceiving Soult, invested Ciudad Rodrigo on January 7, 1812. He had heard that Napoleon, now intent upon that invasion of Russia which was to prove his ruin, had withdrawn 60,000 of the flower of the French army, and that the garrison was weakened. This was fortunate, for the British were in terrible distress, the men in rags and starving, the horses dying by hundreds for want of provender. No fewer than 20,000 men were in hospital. Ciudad Rodrigo was taken by storm on the 12th, a victory disgraced by the excesses of the troops. For this exploit, which opened the northern road into Spain, Wellington was made an earl, with 2,000*l.* a year, by his own country; a grandee of the first class, and Duke of Ciudad Rodrigo, by the Spaniards; and Marquis of Torres Vedras by the Portuguese.

Wellington at once returned to Badajoz, and invested it on March 17. The place was of great strength, commanded by a brave and determined man, at the head of 5,000 veterans. The English were utterly inexperienced in siege work, and, as at Ciudad Rodrigo, destitute of proper appliances. Torrents of rain impeded the work, and nothing but the unceasing vigour and indomitable will of Wellington could have overcome the difficulties which pressed upon him. At length the breaches were declared practicable, and at 10 P.M., on the night of April 6, 18,000 men were formed for the storm. For a long time the most heroic valour failed before the desperate defence; 8,000 men died in the first two hours. It was not until 6 A.M. that the governor at length capitulated, after the town had been won. And then followed an awful scene. For three days, maddened with slaughter, deaf to the entreaties of their officers—threatening them indeed with death if they interfered—the troops wreaked their passions in murder and outrage upon the wretched inhabitants. Never was heroism tarnished by such atrocity, which Wellington himself was powerless to stop. But the capture of Badajoz was the turning-point of the war; both northern and southern roads into Spain were now open, while the capture of Almanza and Alcantara by General Hill gave Wellington the command of the Tagus and assured his communications.

Wellington moved northwards again without a moment's unnecessary delay. On July 22 he won a great victory over Marmont



Map of
S. FRANCE AND N. SPAIN
 to illustrate
THE CAMPAIGN OF 1813.

English Miles.

0 20 40 60 80 100

Longitude East of Greenwich.

BAY OF BISCAY

MEDITERRANEAN SEA

SANTANDER

S. Sebastian

Bilbao

Pampeluna

MADRID

Longman, Green & Co., London & New York

at Salamanca. Marmont retreated to Burgos; King Joseph hurriedly left Madrid, and Wellington entered it on August 12, amid the enthusiasm of the inhabitants. On September 1 he marched to the siege of Burgos. The siege lasted until October 20, during which the English suffered severe loss. Then, hearing that Soult had raised his blockade of Cadiz, in order to join Joseph, and that three armies were converging upon him, Wellington hastily abandoned the siege, escaping a probable catastrophe only by the greatest skill and presence of mind, and went back into Portugal for winter quarters.

By the end of May, 1813, he had completely reorganised his army, and for the last time left Portugal. The French armies, constantly drained by Napoleon, could not face him. Burgos was abandoned, and Joseph retreated again behind the Ebro. Wellington followed hard. With a new base of operations in Santander, Bilbao, and Corunna on the north coast, he had no fear of his communications; and on June 21, 1813, at Vittoria, he utterly defeated Joseph, who narrowly escaped capture, and whose papers, valuables, and court equipments fell into the hands of the conqueror. No victory so great had been won by English soldiers against France since Blenheim. Its effects spread far beyond Spain: Austria was emboldened to take up arms once more. On July 28 Wellington invested San Sebastian, both by land and sea—a border fortress of great strength, and well garrisoned. The attempts at storming were repulsed with appalling loss of life. Soult advanced to the rescue. Wellington, without losing hold of San Sebastian, fought no fewer than ten engagements in nine days, during which he lost 7,500 men, and the French nearly twice as many. Soult was completely foiled, and the siege was taken up with renewed vigour. As before, the English were totally lacking in siege appliances, and had to trust to the valour of the troops in storming. On September 8, after a siege of seventy-three days, the place was taken by assault, with a loss of 5,000 men, and suffered the same hideous fate as that which was meted out to Badajoz.

Then Wellington crossed the Bidassoa into France, while Pampeluna was besieged and taken. On November 10 he drove Soult, by the battle of the Nivelle, from entrenchments which he had hoped would be to him what the Lines of Torres Vedras had been to Wellington. Battles took place almost daily, as the English, barefooted and starving, forced their way through the wintry gorges of the Pyrenees. On February 12, 1814, Soult was driven from his fortified camp at Bayonne and routed at the great

Battle of
Salamanca.
Failure at
Burgos

Campaign of
1813

Battle of
Vittoria

Siege and
storm of San
Sebastian

Wellington
enters
France.
Defeat of
Soult

battle of Orthez, February 27, in which Wellington was slightly wounded. On the 28th the Adour was passed. Beresford was sent to capture Bordeaux; and Wellington, fighting all the way, followed up Soult to Toulouse, where the last battle was contested with almost equal numbers, and the last victory won. On April 12 the news arrived that Napoleon had abdicated.

This was the end of the war which had cost England a hundred millions sterling and at least 50,000 lives; of the French no fewer than 200,000 men had perished. The English army was re-embarked; part was sent to fight in America,²³ part to the West Indies. Wellington went first to Paris, where he heard that he had been created a duke, with a gift of half a million; the fact that the opposition had insisted upon the sum being raised to this amount from the 800,000*l.* proposed by the government shows how English feeling had altered. No such scene of enthusiasm as that which greeted him at Dover and London on his return to England had been witnessed since Henry V., with the cleft helmet and dinted armour, had returned after the triumph of Agincourt. With every possible solemnity the thanks of Lords and Commons were granted him. The most famous man in Europe, he accepted the eulogies which were showered upon him with the same calm self-respect as he had shown during four years of censure and obloquy.

We must now briefly trace the circumstances since the Peace of Vienna (p. 488) which led to the fall of Napoleon. This peace, by his marriage with the daughter of the Emperor of Austria, caused a coolness with Russia, whose trade had moreover been almost ruined by the action of the Berlin Decrees. In 1810 the Czar issued an order opening the ports of Russia to all vessels bearing a neutral flag, and placed a duty upon French products. The order was an effective check to Napoleon's plan of destroying the commerce of England, hatred to whom was still his ruling passion; and the whole of 1811 was spent in enormous preparations by both countries for the inevitable war. Austria and Prussia, who were in Napoleon's grasp, were forced to become unwilling allies; and on June 23, 1812, Napoleon crossed the Vistula with 450,000 men. His difficulties began at once in the breakdown of the transport service; the country through which he moved was a desert; sickness broke out; and by September no fewer than 175,000 men were sick, dead, or missing. Each day's march, it was reckoned, now cost the

²³ War had broken out in 1812 with the United States through the anger caused by the interference with American trade resulting from the Orders in Council. It was brought to a close in 1814 by the Treaty of Ghent.

French 8,000 men. At the Borodino, seventy miles from Moscow, the Russians ceased their retreat, and fought a tremendous battle, in which 70,000 men were left dead on the field. They were driven from the ground; and on the 14th Napoleon entered Moscow, which had been utterly deserted by the people. That night fires broke out in several quarters, which did not cease until the 20th, when three-fourths of the city had been destroyed. Feigned negotiations delayed Napoleon until October 19, when the memorable retreat began. With but 100,000 men he endeavoured to take a new road; but the Russians barred the way, and he was forced back on the desolated line by which he had come. He reached Smolensk on November 9 with 65,000. Then the frost began: swarms of Cossacks pressed upon them; and when at length they crossed the Vistula once more they were but a remnant of 20,000.

In that awful campaign 400,000 men had been left on the plains of Russia. The Czar at once marched into Prussia, and drove the French through Berlin. Prussia threw off the French yoke, and declared war, March 17, 1813. Napoleon meanwhile had collected a fresh army in France; twice he beat the Prussians, at Lutzen and Bautzen, and then granted an armistice. But in August Austria joined the allies; and though utterly beaten at Dresden on the 26th and the 27th, the united armies won battle after battle, until at Leipsic, in a three days' struggle, on October 16, 18, and 19, through sheer numbers they inflicted so crushing a defeat upon Napoleon that he was driven across the Rhine. When he refused favourable conditions, first at Frankfort and then at Châtillon, they invaded France in January 1814, and, in spite of more than one defeat in a last desperate campaign, entered Paris, March 31. The only part England had in this campaign was the despatch of a small force to Holland, which was badly beaten in an attempt upon Bergen-op-Zoom.

The Bourbons were recalled in the person of Louis XVIII., the brother of Louis XVI.; while Napoleon was forced by his own marshals to abdicate, and was banished with a body-guard and revenue to Elba. The first Peace of Paris, on May 20, between the allies and Louis XVIII., at which Wellington represented England, restored First Peace of Paris the frontiers of January 1792, with some additions, to France. Great Britain gave back the colonies, except the Mauritius, which she had taken from France, and France was allowed to retain almost all the art treasures of which Napoleon had despoiled the different countries of Europe. Switzerland was declared independent; the various states of Germany were also to remain independent, but united by a federal tie. Secret clauses provided that Austria should receive

Venice and Northern Italy to the Ticino; and that Holland and Belgium should form a single kingdom, in order that there should be a strong barrier against France on the north-east.

A congress met at Vienna, September 14, to settle all remaining questions, when Wellington and Lord Castlereagh, now foreign secretary, Congress of attended on the part of Great Britain. Before it had ended Vienna, its deliberations it was suddenly broken up by the news Return of Napoleon that Napoleon had escaped from Elba and had landed in France; that the whole army, with Ney at its head, had gone over to him; that Louis XVIII., who had already made himself hated, had fled to Brussels; and that Napoleon had again been received with acclamation in Paris. The work had to be done again, and the great powers at once accepted the challenge. They declared Napoleon the common enemy of the world; agreed that each should provide 150,000 men for the maintenance of the Treaty of Paris, and that they would not cease from war except by common consent, and until Napoleon was utterly disabled.²⁴

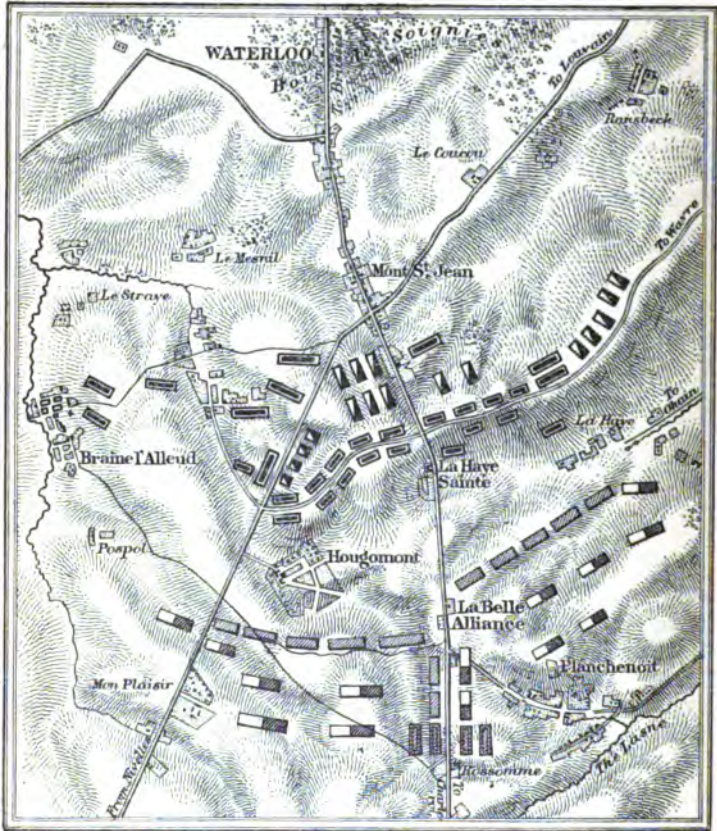
Dates.

	A.D.		A.D.
Berlin Decrees; Orders in Council	1807	Torres Vedras	1810
Capture of Danish fleet	1807	Fuentes d'Onoro; Albuera	1811
Wellesley in Portugal; Vimiero	1808	Ciudad Rodrigo, Badajoz, Sala-	
Moore in Spain; Corunna	1808-1809	manca	1812
Wellesley in Portugal; the		Vittoria, San Sebastian	1813
Douro; Talavera	1809	Orthez, Toulouse	1814
Walcheren expedition	1809	First Peace of Paris	1814

SECTION 7.—*The Waterloo Campaign and Second Peace of Paris*

The next three months were spent in preparation for the final struggle. Exhausted though France was by the slaughter of twenty-five years, Napoleon raised an army of 200,000 men, and on June 12, 1815, left Paris to place himself at their head. Wellington had a mixed force of 106,000 under his command; but the flower of his old Peninsular troops were in America, and his regiments were largely made up of raw recruits. Blücher had 120,000, and Russia and Austria were getting ready. It was arranged that a forward movement should not be made until all were prepared; but Napoleon resolved to anticipate this, and to strike at Wellington and Blücher at once. His plan was to thrust his army like a wedge between Wellington at Brussels and Blücher at Namur, and to crush each separately. He, therefore, concentrated his force between the Sambre and the Meuse. Wellington meanwhile had 80,000 men at Quatre Bras, where the great roads from Nivelles to Namur and Charleroi to Brussels cross; while Blücher lay

²⁴ Hooper, *Waterloo, Downfall of the First Napoleon*, in Bohn's series.



BATTLE OF WATERLOO

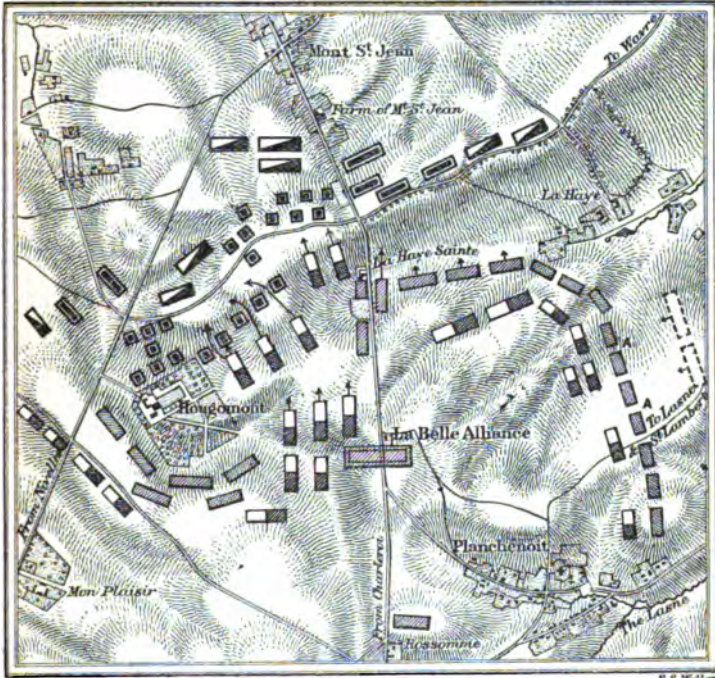
18th June 1815 at 11 a.m.









- | | | | |
|--|------------------|--|------------------|
| | Allied infantry. | | French infantry. |
| | Ally cavalry. | | French cavalry. |
| | Imperial Guard. | | |

Longmans, Green & Co., London & New York.

BATTLE OF WATERLOO.

18th June 1815, at 5. 30 p. m.



- | | |
|--|--|
|  Allied infantry. |  French infantry. |
|  in square |  cavalry. |
|  cavalry. |  Imperial Guard. |
|  Prussians advancing on right rear of French. |  A A French facing Prussians. |
- Longmans, Green & Co., London & New York.*

with 60,000 at Ligny. On June 16 Napoleon sent Ney against Wellington, while he himself attacked Blücher. At Ligny, after a long day of carnage, in which 80,000 men died, Blücher was forced to give way. But so skilfully was the retreat conducted that while Napoleon thought he had gone east to Liège, and under that belief sent Grouchy with 85,000 men to follow him thither, he had really gone northwards to Wavre, so that his communication with Wellington was still maintained. Ney meanwhile had attacked the English at Quatre Bras. A stubborn battle raged from two in the afternoon till nightfall, with no other result than the loss of about 4,500 men on either side.

Wellington, aware of Blücher's movements, now fell back, June 17, fighting all the way, to a position he had already selected at Mont St. Jean, on the Charleroi and Brussels road, behind which stands the village of Waterloo. Blücher promised to join him next day, and when Grouchy, having found out his mistake, marched to Wavre, was far on his way.

Wellington drew up his army in front of Mont St. Jean on a low range of hills running east and west, divided at right angles by the
 Position at Waterloo Charleroi and Brussels road. The ridge falls sharply towards the south; the summit is a narrow plateau, whence the ground slopes gently to the north. Thus the movements of the English rear line were hidden from the enemy, while communication was perfectly free, the country being unenclosed. At the foot of the slope, on the western side, stood the château of Hougoumont, with a walled garden, outhouses, orchards, and wood. This was strongly held by a force of English guards, with some Dutch and Hanoverians. In the centre of the position on the great road was the farm of La Haye Sainte, on the lower part of the slope. This, too, was occupied, but not in great strength. On the extreme east were the hamlets of Papelotte, La Haye, and Smolain, also held by the English. Expecting to be helped by Blücher on the left, Wellington made the defence of his right wing his great care. He had with him 70,000 men, of whom 12,000 were good cavalry, and 156 guns. Napoleon's army was drawn up on a parallel range of somewhat lower hills to the south; he had 72,000 men, of whom 15,000 were cavalry, and 240 guns. Thus, while the numbers were nearly even, Wellington was clearly overmatched in artillery.

Fully believing that Blücher was far away, Napoleon was so confident of success that he had had a proclamation prepared, dated from Brussels, and ready to be issued as soon as he entered that
 Attack on Hougoumont city. His plan was to strike hard at the weaker part of Wellington's line, the left and centre; while, to divert attention, Hougoumont was attacked in force. The battle thus fell into six distinct

parts: (1) At 11.15 Hougoumont was furiously attacked by large masses of infantry. But it was defended with splendid resolution throughout the day, and, though set on fire, was never taken. (2) The great attack on the British left was delayed by the appearance of the Prussian vedettes on the French right flank. At 1.30 Napoleon gave the word, and, covered by a tremendous artillery fire, Ney led four massive infantry columns across the valley. They mounted the slope to the east of the Charleroi road and reached the ridge; there, charged with the utmost vigour by our foot and horse, they were repulsed and hurled back down the slope. But our pursuing horse went too far—right up to the French guns on the other side of the valley; and there, while their horses were blown and they were in confusion, they were fallen upon by the French heavy cavalry and terribly cut up. (3) Repulsed by our left, Napoleon launched his infantry against the centre, along and on either side of the Charleroi road. La Haye Sainte, where the defenders had not been properly supplied with ammunition, was carried, after a severe fight, and held in force; but that was all that Ney could do; while the necessity of despatching a large force to his right flank to check the steady advance of the Prussians made it impossible for Napoleon to send reinforcements. (4) The French infantry had thus been foiled in every part of the field. But the cavalry were untouched, and they were now called upon; a tremendous artillery duel, in which our forces were grievously over-weighted, preceded the charge. About 4 P.M. 5,000 splendid horsemen, cuirassiers in shining steel, lancers in red, and chasseurs in green and gold, rode majestically across the valley between the Charleroi road and Hougoumont, and, undeterred by the fire of the English artillery, rushed the slope and took the guns. The gunners, abandoning their pieces, ran back into the British squares, which the French charged with splendid but unavailing courage. Staggering under the cool fire from the squares, unable to break through the gleaming line of bayonets, and charged repeatedly by our cavalry, 'big men on big horses,' the French fled down the slope, pursued by a pitiless fire from the British guns, to which, the moment their backs were turned, the gunners ran out from the squares. Time after time the French reformed on the slope and charged again, but always with the same result. The British squares, torn though they were by the fire of the French guns, waited in grim patience for each charge, and stood immovable amid the surging waves of horsemen. Then Napoleon ordered a second body of 5,000, the whole of the cavalry he

Great
infantry
attack
on the
British left

Infantry
attack on
the centre

Great
cavalry
attack

had in reserve, to try to win where their comrades had failed. It was all in vain, and when at length they fell back discomfited, at least a third of 10,000 splendid horsemen lay dead around the squares. This combat had lasted an hour. (5) The fifth period of the battle was that which tried the English most. Swarms of skirmishers on both sides of La Haye Sainte, supported by heavy bodies of still undaunted cavalry, mounted the slope and poured in an incessant and galling fire upon the allies. The British, impatient to charge, were held resolutely back, and died where they stood. One German regiment charged; the French skirmishers ran back, and, before the regiment could form square, their cavalry crashed into its flank and well-nigh destroyed it. The English guards then charged to rescue the Germans, and, more skilfully handled, formed square rapidly and drove off the foe. The slaughter among the British and Germans during this period was terrible. 'Regiments of horse had been reduced to squadrons; battalions of foot to companies.' Many guns had been disabled, hundreds of the gunners slain; hundreds more had gone to the rear with the wounded; one regiment of horse, the Cumberland Hussars, had fled. But for the advance of the Prussians, which obliged Napoleon still further to weaken his attacking force, it is impossible to say how the fight would have ended.

(6) The sun was setting when Napoleon made his grand final assault. The famous Imperial Guard, 15,000 strong, and still untouched, were ordered to carry the position held by the British right. As they came on in two deep, narrow columns, the French artillery fire, more terrible than ever, tore through the exposed squares, while their skirmishers along the whole line kept up at short range a searching fire into the very heart of our position. Led by Ney on foot—his horse had been shot under him—the right-hand column made straight for the spot where Maitland's brigade of guards was lying concealed at the top of the ridge. Nothing was seen but the duke and his staff standing motionless in the angle of a battery on Maitland's right. The moment the leading files of Ney's column showed above the ridge, Wellington gave the word. The guards sprang to their feet and poured in a volley upon the astonished French at fifty yards' distance. The battery where the duke stood opened fire with fearful effect. Then the guards charged with the bayonet and swept the column away. The second column was broken in the same manner, and, as it staggered back, three British regiments, the 52nd leading the way, wheeled to the left, took it in flank, and tore through it from west to east. And then the cavalry were let loose upon the confused mass, and all together, pursuers and pursued,

went streaming across the valley and up to the opposite slope. (7) The battle was won, though not yet over. 'On the ridge near the guards, his figure standing out amidst the smoke against the bright north-western sky, Wellington was seen to raise his hat with a noble gesture—the signal for the wasted line of heroes to sweep like a dark wave from their covered positions, and roll out their lines and columns over the plain. With a pealing cheer, the whole line advanced just as the sun was sinking; and the duke, sternly glad, but self-possessed, rode off into the thickest of the fight, attended only by two officers, almost the last of the splendid squadron which careered around him in the morning.' The French guards rallied under Napoleon in squares supported by cavalry. But so unremitting was the pursuit, so fierce were the charges of the British horse, so rapid the progress of the Prussians, that they at length gave way. The resolute defence of Planchenoit, Napoleon's head-quarters, against Blücher, and the devotion of his horse grenadiers, alone prevented his being taken prisoner. When night fell, the whole French army was in hopeless rout. Wellington and Blücher met on the high road, and then by moonlight and all through the night the Prussians relentlessly pursued the flying foe. On this great day the English had lost 15,000 men, the Prussians 7,000, the French 30,000 and 5,000 prisoners. The work of the English army was finished for forty years.

Napoleon fled to Paris, and abdicated in favour of his son. On July 8 Paris capitulated. Napoleon then tried to escape to America, but was forced to surrender himself on board the English ship the 'Bellerophon,' expressing his intention, in a letter to the Prince Regent, of residing henceforward in England.

But the enemy of public peace was to have no further chance of troubling Europe. By common consent he was exiled to the distant island of St. Helena; and there he died in 1821. Louis XVIII. was again restored. By the Second Treaty of Paris,

Second
Treaty of
Paris

November 20, 1815, the northern provinces were to be held by an allied force of 150,000 men, at the expense of France, for five years. An indemnity of forty millions was exacted. The pictures, statues, and other works of art carried off by Napoleon, which the allies had allowed France to retain in 1814, had already been restored to their rightful owners. Chiefly through the efforts of Wellington, scarcely any territory was taken from France; for he was persuaded that if she were dismembered there would be a national uprising, and the work would have to be done again. Holland and Belgium were united into the kingdom of the Netherlands, and Austria took Venice and North Italy instead of Belgium according to the secret clauses of the First Treaty (p. 445). No country had borne

such burdens and sacrifices for the welfare of Europe as England. The National Debt, which at the beginning of the war was 240,000,000*l.*, was now 861,000,000*l.* All she asked in return was a single benefit to humanity. So rapid had been the growth of national feeling against

the slave trade that the government had been forced to put this question foremost in its dealings with other nations.

In 1813 Sweden, and in 1814 Holland, had yielded to English pressure. Portugal had agreed to prohibit the trade north of the equator. France, at the first Treaty of Paris, had promised to abolish it in five years. Spain refused.²⁵ Castlereagh obtained now from the Congress of Vienna a solemn condemnation of the slave trade, as contrary to the principles of civilisation and human right. Napoleon had so recognised the English feeling that on his return from Elba, as a bid for her friendship, he had abolished the slave trade during his stay in Paris; and Louis XVIII. was now compelled to maintain the abolition.

The nation was proud of the triumphs of the army. But the traditional dislike of a standing army (pp. 289, 336, 347) was as keen as ever. When the troops returned after Marlborough's campaign, the soldiers were treated with coldness; and this was still more the case after Waterloo. 'It's us as pays they chaps!' was the cry which greeted the regiments as they landed.²⁶ The navy, on the other hand, was as much the object of an Englishman's pride as a standing army of his suspicion; and the triumphs of Howe, Jervis, Duncan, and Nelson had erected a firm belief in its invincibility, and in the power of the English sailor to face any odds—a belief but little affected by the not unfrequent reverses of single ships during the late American war (p. 444, *note*). It had one more exploit to accomplish before the long repose began. For centuries the pirates who issued from the harbours of the Barbary States on the north coast of Africa, of which Algiers was the chief, had been the scourge of the Mediterranean. During the war their ravages had multiplied; and hundreds of Christian captives were kept in slavery. Great Britain, as mistress of the seas, was entrusted with the work of putting an end to an intolerable nuisance; and in 1816 Lord Exmouth, commanding in the Mediterranean, was instructed to demand from the Dey of Algiers and the Beys of Tunis and Tripoli the surrender of all slaves without ransom, and a promise never to treat prisoners of war as slaves. Algiers was defended by strong works armed with 500 cannon and

²⁵ In 1817 she agreed to abolish the trade north of the equator, and from 1820 entirely; and Great Britain paid her 400,000*l.* as compensation. But

this was largely evaded.

²⁶ Spencer Walpole, *Hist. of England*, vol. i. p. 195.

held by 40,000 men. But when the Dey refused compliance, Exmouth, with only five ships of the line and ten smaller vessels, English and Dutch, sailed into the harbour, disabled the batteries, and destroyed the town with his fire. The Dey then acceded to every demand made upon him, and the Mediterranean became the secure highway of commerce.

SECTION 8.—*The Beginning of the Great Peace. Distress*

Under all the stress of war England had flourished apace. Untouched by its ravages, her development had gone on in perfect security, while the whole face of industry was being changed by the mechanical discoveries and engineering improvements already mentioned. She had monopolised the carrying trade of the world, and the wealth of other nations had been spent among her manufacturers and farmers. People supposed that peace would but heighten this prosperity; but they were terribly disappointed. War had brought glory and solid advantage; peace brought commercial panic, and misery to the poor. Every nation cut down its expenditure by one half; England ceased to be the only provider, and the demand for her productions—and, therefore, prices—

fell greatly and at once. But the main cause for the paralysis which had set in was the resumption of cash payments. In the early years of the war, when export of merchandise was dangerous and difficult, the drain of gold to pay for our imports was so serious that in 1797 the Bank Restriction Act freed the Bank of England from the obligation to honour its notes in cash. Since a paper currency, having no intrinsic value, will never be really worth its nominal cash value, unless it can be changed into cash at will, the price of everything rose considerably. But in 1821 cash payments

were resumed,²⁷ with the result that prices fell at once below that from which they had risen. Thus the merchant who had stored goods to sell again at a profit found himself obliged to sell at a loss. The landowner who, while wheat was at famine price, had borrowed 1,000*l.* at high interest to drain and enclose a farm of inferior land, now found himself burdened with this interest, although from the fall in the price of wheat and stock his tenant had failed to pay his rent or had thrown up the farm, which was allowed to fall out of cultivation again. The poor, of course, suffered most. The demand for labour of all kinds fell, and the rate of wages, which had not risen in proportion to the rise in prices, fell with it.

Unhappily the harvest of 1816 was almost a total failure. The

²⁷ The actual resumption did not take place until 1821; but the knowledge that it was intended had the effect mentioned.

price of bread rose through the operation of the Corn Law of 1815,²⁸ while wages still fell. Thousands were thrown upon the rates, and their numbers were swelled by the disbanded soldiers, who wandered through the country without employment. In the agricultural counties the distress was expressed in the burning of farm buildings and hayricks; these were followed by arrests and executions, and then the people settled down into silent despair. The artizan was no better off; his anger was directed specially against the new machinery which threw out of employment so many hand-workmen. In December

1816 thousands met in Spa Fields and marched into the City, collecting arms as they went; but the danger was averted by the firmness of the lord mayor and the City constables. An attack upon the regent robbed the 'radicals,' as they were now called, of sympathy. In February 1817 the Habeas Corpus Act was suspended for the last time in England; the Seditious Meetings Bill made death the penalty for refusing to disperse when called upon, and practically put a stop to political discussion; magistrates were authorised to apprehend persons accused of libellous

publications. The only idea of the government, which the 'Blanketeers' was positively hated by the people, was repression. On March 10 a great meeting was held at Manchester to protest; a march to London was resolved on; the men came provided with blankets to sleep in on the way; and this has, therefore, been known as the march of the 'Blanketeers.' Large numbers began the journey; but the impulse soon died away, and before many miles had been covered the people had dispersed. General risings with more dangerous aims were arranged for March 30 and June 9, but in each case the government received early information, and took sufficient precautions. The country generally was not, however, in sympathy with harsh measures, and except in the case of the June rioters at Derby, where murder had taken place, juries refused to convict. Fortunately the

harvest of 1817 was abundant; trade rapidly improved, and discontent as rapidly fell. A measure abolishing many sinecure offices pointed to the revival of the reforming spirit in parliament, while the establishment of savings' banks gave the working classes an opportunity for thrift. Still the government persevered in prosecuting radical writers. The most famous of these trials was that of Hone, a humble bookseller who had published witty parodies, directed against the government, on the Litany, the Creeds, the Lord's Prayer, and the

Abolition of sinecure offices. Savings' Banks

Hone's trial

²⁸ This prohibited the importation of corn until the price of wheat should reach 80s. a quarter.

Catechism. Three times the government indicted him, and three times he was acquitted, proving himself at each trial more than a match for judges and counsel in boldness, readiness, and knowledge.

In 1818 took place the first organised strike, that of the Lancashire cotton-spinners, when the strikers were regularly maintained by the men still in work; it lasted from July to September, and ended in a compromise, by which the men gained their chief ends. Temporary prosperity this year was followed by depression in 1819; the weavers and colliers especially suffered; it was declared that for fourteen to sixteen hours a day a weaver could earn no more than 2s. 7d. per week. Parliamentary reform was meanwhile rapidly coming to the front, and reform meetings were held throughout the country. A

Peterloo massacre vast assembly met at St. Peter's Fields, in Manchester, on August 16. The magistrates were alarmed; yeomanry and hussars were brought upon the ground, and, through sheer mismanagement, were allowed to charge the crowd; many persons were killed, others arrested and punished with imprisonment for a seditious meeting. A general outburst of indignation arose at what was always known as the 'Peterloo Massacre'; the common council of the City, which had the privilege of admission on demand to the royal presence (p. 396), being specially outspoken in its remonstrances. The government, however, were unable to stop in their course of repres-

The Six Acts sion. By the Six Acts, for which Castlereagh and Lord Sidmouth were responsible, the magistrates were empowered, among other things, to search for arms and to seize blasphemous and seditious libels; all drilling of men was prohibited; a second conviction for libel was to be punished with transportation; further restrictions were placed upon public meetings; and a stamp duty was imposed upon small publications, so as to hinder the spread of cheap radical literature. Surrounded by all this discontent and oppression,

Death of George III. but unconscious of it, the old king—blind, deaf, and insane, died on January 29, 1820, at the age of eighty-one; and the prince regent (p. 416) succeeded him as George IV.

The new reign was inaugurated by a conspiracy of a very different kind from anything which had yet taken place. Arthur Thistlewood, who had been an officer in the army, but had subsequently, during travels in America and France, become imbued with revolutionary doctrines, had been one of the leaders at the Spa Fields in 1817, and in 1818 had been sentenced to a year's imprisonment. Upon his release he again threw himself into agitation; but when the Seditious Meetings Bill was passed he decided upon a measure of great atrocity. With some thirty associates from the lowest orders, he

resolved to assassinate the entire cabinet, set fire to the Mansion House, barracks, &c., and in the confusion establish a provisional government. February 23, when the cabinet were to dine together at Lord Harrowby's, was fixed upon for the deed. But, as usual, the plot was betrayed, and a body of constables and troops were sent to arrest the conspirators at Cato Street, where they were assembled. In the scuffle an officer was shot dead, and others wounded; the whole gang, however, was arrested, and Thistlewood, with four of his companions, paid with their lives on May 1. Riots at Glasgow and Bonnymuir were dispersed, though not without bloodshed; and with them ended five of the most miserable years of modern times.

Dates

	A. D.		A. D.
Spa Fields	1816	Death of George III.	1820
The Blanketeers	1817	Cato Street Conspiracy	1820
Peterloo	1819		

Summary of the Eighteenth Century

The eighteenth century has seen the disappearance of one dynasty, with the succession, the dangers, and the permanent settlement of that which still rules; the gradual development of party government (pp. 334, 354, 363), and of administration by a cabinet (p. 363, *note*). It has witnessed the crown under restraint, and the absorption of all political power by the 'grandeess' (p. 389). It has seen that restraint broken through by the pertinacity of George III., and the compliance of North, and that absorption of power checked, while the possible rebound towards autocracy on the part of the crown has been frustrated, by the great government of the second Pitt. It has seen a gigantic extension of dominion, the result of the heroism of Chatham and of the men into whom he infused his spirit; and it has seen an empire lost through the obstinacy of a king and the narrow folly of his advisers. It has seen the progress of political reform delayed for a generation by the most tremendous outburst of revolt against tyranny that the world has ever seen. In Chatham it has possessed the statesman in whom beyond all others was concentrated the national spirit, and under whose spell the nation has arisen from a sordid acquiescence in incapacity to a superb confidence; and it has seen that confidence led in arms by the greatest sailor and one of the greatest generals of history.

But most of all the eighteenth century, or rather the longer period from the Revolution of 1689 to Waterloo, is the history of the expan-

sion of England;²⁹ an expansion gained by a war which has been active during sixty-four years, or more than half the whole period, and which, in differing forms, has throughout been against France. It has been well called the 'Second Hundred Years War' (p. 118) for the possession, not of France, but of the New World. It falls into seven clearly marked periods: (1) The war of William III. against Louis XIV., 1689-1697, wholly in Europe. (2) Marlborough's war, 1702-1713, called the war of the Spanish Succession, the true meaning of which is seen at the Peace of Utrecht, by which France is prevented from possessing Spain and her colonies, but a Bourbon is placed on the Spanish throne; and England gains Gibraltar, Minorca, Hudson's Bay, Newfoundland, Nova Scotia, and, especially, the sole right to carry slaves. Then, after a long period of peace through exhaustion, (3) the war of Jenkins's ear, 1739-1748—a colonial and trading war against Spain and her Bourbon king, transformed into war against France in 1744. Then another period of peace—which is no peace, but a time of incessant, though informal, conflict in America and India—is followed by (4) the war of Pitt, Wolfe, Clive, and Howe, 1756-1762—a war of direct rivalry for the New World, in which England is left completely victorious; (5) the American war, 1775-1783, when France, by helping the revolted colonies, tries hard to regain her footing in Canada and the West Indies; (6) the first French war, 1793-1802, when Napoleon seeks to strike at England's power through Egypt,³⁰ and is foiled by Nelson's victory at the Nile—a war glorious at sea and humiliating on land; and (7) the second French war, begun because England will not give up Malta, which Napoleon wants as the key to Egypt, whence he may once more try to regain India; and ending with the capture of Mauritius, the last place from which France can threaten our empire there—a war in which, after Trafalgar, the work of the British fleet is well-nigh done, and our triumphs are henceforth won by Wellington and the army, until with the great day of Waterloo the rivalry of a hundred years is ended, and a long repose settles upon Great Britain.

²⁹ Seeley, *The Expansion of England*. ³⁰ Seeley, *Napoleon the First*.

BOOK X

THE ERA OF REFORM

CHAPTER I

GEORGE IV. 1820-1830

SECTION 1.—Free Trade and Reform

WE have seen how completely the French Revolution had checked political reform in England. But a generation had grown to manhood since that time, and this effect was rapidly passing away. The reign of George IV. is consequently memorable as the beginning of the era of reform. At the outset, however, all attention was concentrated upon two questions of importance in the royal family. The aversion of the king for his wife, Caroline of Brunswick (p. 416, *note*), had led to their separation after the birth of their only child, Charlotte, in 1796. In 1816 the young princess was married to Leopold of Saxo-Coburg, but died the next year after giving birth to a dead child. Of the six remaining sons of George III., the Duke of York had no children; the marriage of the Duke of Sussex was invalid; the Duke of Cumberland, the youngest, had children, but his character (p. 416) and that of his wife were such that the possible succession in his line was not welcomed. The other three, the Dukes of Clarence, Kent, and Cambridge, were therefore now hastily married. The first had two daughters, who died in infancy; the second had one daughter, Victoria, born in 1819; the third had a son and two daughters.

Since 1814 Caroline of Brunswick had lived abroad. Stories of very indecorous, if not culpable, conduct came to England; and her husband, bent on a divorce, induced the government to send a committee of investigation to Milan. At the accession she was refused the royal title, and the Liturgy was altered so as to omit her name. But the people, who had no love for the king, were enthusiastic in her favour; and when she boldly came to England her journey from Dover, and through the City, was one long triumph. All attempts at conciliation breaking down over the question of the omission of her name, Liverpool brought in a bill of pains and penalties, to deprive her of her title and to secure a divorce. Chiefly through the brilliant

advocacy of her counsel, Brougham and Denman, it passed the Lords only with difficulty: and the certainty of its rejection by the Commons compelled its withdrawal. Canning, the one man of mark in the government, resigned in disgust at the treatment of the queen. The unhappy woman did not long enjoy her triumph. At the coronation in July, 1821, she was turned away from the doors like a common intruder, and the insult broke her heart. She died next month. Even then the scandal was not complete. By her own desire she was to be buried at Brunswick. The king refused to allow her body to pass through the City. The mob insisted; the military escort fired, and killed several persons. But the people then blockaded the streets with such resolution that they had their way, and the lord mayor himself headed the procession through the City. Thus ended an episode as disgraceful to the king as to the government that had obeyed his shameful commands.

While the manufacturing industries continued to improve, agriculture grew more and more distressed. The old Corn Law of 1815 had encouraged over-production: the abundant harvest of 1820 still further lowered the price of wheat, and the glut in the market was so great that the failure of the succeeding harvest had scarcely any effect upon prices, but only added to the farmers' distress. Hundreds of farms were thrown out of cultivation, and landlords and tenants were alike impoverished. They clamoured for help from parliament, for the wholesale reduction of taxation, depreciation of the currency, and repudiation of the national debt; but all that they could gain from parliament in face of the growing strength of free-trade feeling was the repeal of the old Corn Law (p. 453, *note*), and the passing of another which appeared to be, but was not, more in their favour. The result was that this conservative class suddenly became political agitators: landlords and tenants joined the radicals in demanding parliamentary reform.

An August 12, 1822, Lord Londonderry, better known as Lord Castlereagh, died by his own hand. The effect of this event can scarcely be overstated. For many years he had been practically prime minister, and the mainstay of Toryism. Though a kindly man, he hated popular movements, and had been the unflinching advocate of repression at home, while abroad he exerted the influence of England against the spirit of revolt aroused by the French revolution. His place was filled by his old rival, Canning, whose friends Robinson and Huskisson became chancellor of the Exchequer and president of the Board of Trade, and the

Trial and
death of the
queen

Agricultural
distress

The landed
interest
become
reformers

Effects of
death of
Lord Castle-
reagh

result was a complete revolution both in domestic and in foreign policy.

The first illustration of the change was the reform of the Criminal Code. Up to 1808 death was the legal penalty for more than 200 offences, the larger number being of the most trivial character, such as cutting down a tree, or personating a Greenwich pensioner. Such a code was at once barbarous and useless: from 1805 to 1817, for instance, out of 655 prisoners convicted of stealing five shillings'-worth from a shop not one was hanged, though 118 had been sentenced to death. But, on the other hand, many executions revolting in their cruelty had taken place;¹ and from 1808 onwards Romilly, and then Mackintosh, fought unceasingly, but almost in vain, for reform against the opposition of the Lords, and especially of the bishops. In 1823, however, Sir Robert Peel took up the cause, and carried four acts exempting more than 100 felonies from death. For the first time the Tory party had passed a popular measure.

Then followed the partial repeal of the Navigation Act. Passed in 1651 (p. 285), this act had been the leading cause of the supremacy of England at sea, and had placed in her hands the carrying trade of the world. But this effect could continue only so long as other nations refrained from retaliating. The Americans soon saw this, and imposed heavy duties on all articles imported into the States in British ships. The result was that an American ship taking goods from England or an English ship taking goods from America returned in ballast, and each thus only earned half profits. In 1815, therefore, the act was repealed for America, and shortly afterwards for Portugal. In 1823 trade was freed from one of its principal trammels by power being given to the king in council to form treaties with foreign powers for the admission of their ships into English ports, and *vice versa*, on equal terms. Several other acts were passed in the direction of free trade. The bounty system, by which the home trade was encouraged by a payment from government on export, and by which, therefore, the manufacturer was enabled to sell cheaply abroad and dear at home, was partially or totally abolished. To revive the depression in the West Indies, which had followed the abolition of the

¹ Lecky, ch. xxiii.; Walpole, ch. ii. The more humane temper that was springing up was shown by acts passed against cruelty to animals, and abolishing the revolting regulations for the burial of suicides. In 1824 the

Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals was founded by Richard Martin, member for Galway. The horrors of prison life had already been mitigated by Howard and others.

slave trade, rum was admitted on payment of a duty equal to the tax on British spirits, while the illicit manufacture and smuggling of Scotch and Irish whisky was checked by reduction of duty. The various duties on coal were replaced by a uniform tax of 5*s.* a ton. Hitherto all coals imported into London had come by sea from Durham and Northumberland, since a heavier duty and other restrictions had prevented their entrance from inland counties by river or canal. By the change now made this monopoly was done away with, and a great impulse given to coal-mining. Of late years the export of raw wool had been prohibited, and free import allowed, in order that our manufacturers might obtain it cheaply. To meet the remonstrances of the graziers, a duty had then been placed upon import. Naturally, the manufacturers in turn raised an outcry. To satisfy both, the import duty was reduced, and export allowed on a small duty. Still more important was the change effected in the silk duties. To secure a monopoly to the manufacturer in Great Britain, the importation of silk goods had hitherto been absolutely prohibited; while, to induce him to get the raw material from British possessions only, prohibitive duties had been placed upon raw silk from India, China, and Italy. These regulations had led to smuggling to an enormous extent, since silk is at once valuable and light. They were now swept away. Silk goods from abroad were admitted on payment of a duty of 80 per cent. on their value, while the British weavers were encouraged by the reduction of the duty on the raw material to almost a nominal sum. The chief seat of the silk trade, introduced in Elizabeth's reign (p. 217, *note*), was originally in Spitalfields. By various acts, up to 1811, power had been given to the magistrates there to fix the wages paid to the men and women employed in the trade, and this had resulted in skilled and unskilled men earning the same wage, and in weaving by machinery being paid at the same rate as weaving by hand. Thus it followed that all improvements in machinery were discouraged, and the trade was driven away to Norwich, Manchester, and other towns. These acts were now repealed.

Finally, the Combination Acts, which made it illegal for workmen to meet for the discussion of the rate of wages, and the act which made it penal for an artisan to leave the kingdom, and subjected him to imprisonment for the mere intention to do so—acts intended to secure cheap labour for the manufacturer—were done away with. They had led to continual conflict between masters and men, and had been largely evaded. At first all combinations were legalised, but intimidation forbidden on either side. Unfortunately the earliest effect was to increase the ill-feeling on both

The Spital-
fields
weavers

Labour laws

sides. A strike in a single factory in Glasgow was met by a general lock-out on the part of the masters there; and this led to riot and assassination. In 1825 the law was repealed, and another was passed which lasted for more than forty years, and which, while allowing freedom of discussion, prohibited any person doing any act, or making any threat, to induce a manufacturer to alter the rules of his factory, or a workman to accept or leave any employment or join any club. In other words, combination for a strike was illegal.²

A period of rapid manufacturing prosperity followed these changes, while a rise in the price of corn relieved the farmers and landlords. People began to acquire wealth, and to look for profitable investments abroad. The Spanish American colonies, which had become independent, wanted capital to work their silver mines, and a rage for speculation set in. An impulse was given directly to the iron, machinery, and shipbuilding trades, and through them to every other. This second South Sea Bubble lasted until April 1825. Then the reaction set in. The companies called up the unpaid capital of their shares; this caused a drain on the private banks, which were brought in many cases to ruin through the heavy advances they had made to speculators on insufficient security at the time when trade was good, and through them on the Bank of England. The confident attitude of the government alone averted a commercial disaster. Much of the harm had arisen from the unchecked issue by the small banks of 1*l.* and 2*l.* notes; thus an excessive paper currency had been established, which, when the run came, the banks were unable to redeem. An act was passed now to prevent the issue of these notes.³ In Scotland however, where they had been in use for a very long period, an opposition at once sprang up as violent as that in Ireland over 'Wood's halfpence' (p. 364); it was led with great spirit and humour by Sir Walter Scott, whose letters, under the signature of 'Malachi Malagrowther,' achieved the same fame and success as the 'Drapier's Letters' of Dean Swift (p. 364). The act was therefore limited to England alone. Another effect was the establishment of joint-stock banks, as in Scotland; possessing large capital, they had been able to withstand the crisis. In the wake of the panic came renewed distress. The employers attacked the late legislation; the unemployed

² Violence and intimidation are still offences; but combination to do any act in a trade dispute is not a criminal conspiracy, unless the act is one which if done by a single person would be punishable as a crime. This change

was made in 1875.

³ A proposal was made in 1801 by Mr. Goschen, the chancellor of the exchequer, for the reintroduction of 1*l.* notes, but went no further.

broke out in riots and destruction of machinery, which were not checked without bloodshed.

In the midst of all this trouble Lord Liverpool was struck down with apoplexy in 1827. A gentle, industrious, and conciliatory man, of tact, judgment, and ability, he had never been really prime minister. Castlereagh for the first ten years, and Canning, who succeeded him, for the last four, had ruled the state.

Canning,
prime
minister

SECTION 2.—*Removal of Religious Disabilities*

The question of the removal of Catholic disabilities had meanwhile become prominent. In Ireland indeed, except that they could not be members of parliament, Catholics had obtained, in 1793, practical equality with Protestants. But in Great Britain they could neither vote, become magistrates, nor serve as officers in the army. The Union made the contrast absurd. From 1812 their cause made constant progress in the Commons; but all attempts at relief were frustrated by the Lords, headed by the king's brother, the Duke of York. In 1821 a bill for the entire abolition of the disabilities, due safeguards being given to the Established Church, passed easily in the Lower House, to be rejected in the Lords by thirty-nine, who, as it was said, 'saved the Thirty-nine Articles.' The necessity of a settlement was made more clear by events in Ireland, where distress and disorder were universal in the teeming population, and where armed bands of Catholics and Protestants were frequently in collision.⁴ In 1823, Daniel O'Connell, with a few other lawyers of repute, founded the Catholic Association, which from small beginnings soon became the rallying-point for all his co-religionists. It organised the whole country, established a branch in

Catholic
disabilities

The Catholic
Association

⁴ An enormous increase in the population of Ireland, from three and a half to seven millions in a generation, had resulted in terrible destitution. They were too many for the soil, and both the woollen and linen industries, which had grown up in Dublin and Belfast under the free trade she had won in the reign of George III. (p. 406), had been almost ruined by the introduction of machinery in England, with which Ireland, having neither coal nor iron, could not compete. A swarming population was thus turned adrift. Moreover, when the 40s. freehold franchise was gained by the Catholics (p. 428), every landowner increased his political power by cutting up his land

into these small freeholds, which led to a further growth of the population. But in 1816 the harvest failed, while an Ejectment Act, passed to render eviction easy, was cruelly taken advantage of. Before long it was reckoned that a million persons were living by beggary, plunder, and outrage, in spite of the severest measures. In 1822 the potatoes failed, the most terrible calamity that can fall upon the Irish, and absolute famine was barely staved off by liberal subscriptions from England. In 1823 the injustice caused by the cruel exactions of tithes from Catholics for the support of the Protestant Established Church was to a great degree removed by the Tithes Act.

every town and village, with a secretary to collect regular subscriptions, and sat openly in Dublin. Its funds were spent in agitation and in defence of Catholics who were prosecuted for sedition. The alarm of the government was shown in an abortive prosecution of O'Connell for treasonable language, and in an act for the suppression of the Catholic Association, which was easily evaded, and which served only to increase the irritation in both countries. A brighter prospect seemed to open when, upon Liverpool's retirement, Canning became prime minister in 1827. The strict Tories—Wellington, Peel, Lord Eldon the chancellor, and four others—resigned, and Canning fell back upon the Whigs, who agreed with him about emancipation. Unfortunately his

Death of
Canning.
Wellington
prime
minister

health, always weak, gave way before the vexation of seeing a fresh corn law, by which imported wheat was to pay duty on a sliding scale, rising or falling as the price fell or rose, defeated in the Lords. On August 8, 1827, he died. His follower Robinson, now Lord Goderich, succeeded; but he was unfitted to lead a party, and his ministry lasted only to January 9, 1828, when Wellington formed a cabinet partly of Tories, of whom Peel was the chief, and partly of Canning's friends, Lord Lyndhurst, Huskisson, and Lord Palmerston. But the radical difference of opinion upon the Catholic question soon rendered it unworkable. Huskisson, Palmerston, and others resigned; and, Lord Lyndhurst having joined him, Wellington then formed a purely Tory ministry. Strangely enough, it was this very ministry which was to pass the long-delayed measure. They were forced to it by the supremacy which O'Connell had established in Ireland, and by the remarkable display of his power in inducing his followers to keep the peace at a moment when Ireland was again ranged in two bitterly hostile factions, ready to fly at one another's throats. Wellington looked at a political question as he looked at a campaign. He saw that emancipation had become a necessity, as a retreat in the field was sometimes a necessity; and Peel agreed with him. In spite of the vehement counter-agitation which at once rose,

The Relief
Bill carried
by a Tory
ministry

and which made men fear a repetition of the Gordon riots; in spite of Peel's rejection by the University of Oxford, his constituency; and in spite of the strenuous opposition of the king, they insisted; and the Catholic Relief Bill became law on April 16, 1829.⁵ The franchise in Great Britain was given to the Catholics. The regency, the lord lieutenantcy, and the lord chancellorship in either country were alone excepted from the offices which they

⁵ The course of this measure led to a duel between Wellington and Lord Winchilsea. The duke fired first, and missed, and Lord Winchilsea then fired

into the air. For Peel's conduct see Thurstfield's 'Peel,' in *Twelve English Statesmen*, ch. iv.

might hold. Parliament was thrown open to them. At the same time, to prevent the Protestant interest in Ireland from being utterly swamped, an act was passed to raise the freehold qualification there (p. 462, *note*) from 40*s.* to 10*l.*; the Catholic Association had been already suppressed by a more effective act than the last. Unfortunately, the Relief Act was robbed of its grace by the exclusion of O'Connell from sitting for Clare, on the ground that he had been elected before the passing of the act, which referred only to members elected subsequently. A fresh election merely meant a fresh triumph for O'Connell, who at once began an agitation for the restoration of the 40*s.* freeholders and for the repeal of the Union. Continued distress from bad trade in Ireland, the discontent of the ousted Catholic freeholders, and of the Protestants who had lost their supremacy, led to an intensity of hatred which showed itself in sanguinary faction fights and in universal lawlessness. Great Britain was suffering also, and, had the opposition been united, the government would probably have fallen. At length Lord Althorp, a man of admirable sense and of the highest personal character, became the leader of a united party, bent upon economy and parliamentary reform. But at this moment occurred the sudden death of George IV., June 26, 1830, an event lamented by no one, for he was one of the most worthless of our kings. His constant affection for his first wife, Mrs. Fitzherbert (p. 416), is the only creditable thing recorded of him. A locket containing her portrait was found upon his neck when he died.

Previous to the passing of the Relief Bill, the disabilities of Protestant Dissenters had in like measure disappeared. Ever since the reign of William III. the Test and Corporation Acts had been habitually violated, and an Indemnity Act, passed each year, had released the Dissenters from the penalties they had legally incurred. In 1828 Lord John Russell, a son of the Duke of Bedford, carried the repeal of these acts. On swearing 'solemnly and sincerely in the presence of Almighty God and upon the true faith of a Christian' never to attempt injury to the Established Church, they were relieved of all disabilities. The form of the oath, however, still kept the Jews outside the pale.

SECTION 3.—*England and Liberty abroad*

In nothing did the death of Castlereagh and Canning's accession to power have more striking effect than in the foreign policy of England. The impulse of the French Revolution had spread rapidly in other lands; the Spanish colonies had gained their independence by the volunteer help of England; Spain, Portugal, and

Naples had successively thrown off the kings imposed upon them after 1815, and had set up popular governments. But in 1815 the autocratic rulers of Russia, Austria, and Prussia, joined shortly by France and Spain, had formed the Holy Alliance, by which they had agreed to be governed by Christian principles. In 1820 they decided that these revolutions were unchristian. Their principle was that 'useful changes in legislation and administration ought only to emanate from the free will and intelligent and well-weighed conviction of those whom God has burdened with the responsibilities of power.' In other words, governments were to be despotisms. Austria therefore overran Italy, and restored the Bourbon despotism in Naples; while France, with the encouragement of Russia, made ready to march into Spain. These movements had not been opposed by Castlereagh, who had no sympathy with popular aspirations; but Canning at once declared that England would be no party to them. In spite however of his remonstrance, France invaded Spain, and restored the Bourbon Ferdinand VII., who destroyed every vestige of liberty. Canning hereupon, backed by the United States, formally recognised the independence of the Spanish colonies, Buenos Ayres, Columbia, and Mexico. 'I resolved,' he said, 'that if France had Spain, it should not be Spain with the Indies. I called the New World into existence to redress the balance of the Old,' as Chatham had determined to 'conquer France in America' (p. 880). When the French troops threatened our ancient ally Portugal, Canning made it clear that such a step would lead to war; so, also, in 1826, when Spain was about to invade her, the despatch of English troops put an end to the scheme. The magnificent speech in which Canning in that year condemned the whole policy of the Holy Alliance ranks with the greatest orations of Chatham or Fox.

But it was the revolt of Greece against the Turks in 1821 which chiefly roused British sympathy. During 1821 and 1822 a terrible war went on. Enthusiasm for the Greeks was intensely excited by the heroic defence of Missolonghi in 1825, and burning indignation by the massacre of every soul in the town except women and children, who were carried into slavery, when it was at length stormed. Learning that the Turks actually intended to carry off the entire Greek population into bondage, Canning at once declared it should not be permitted. In July 1827 he secured the consent of Russia, Turkey's invariable foe, and of France, which always acted in concert with Russia, that force should be used if necessary to compel Turkey to grant the Greeks

their independence on payment of tribute. The Turkish fleet was lying in the harbour of Navarino, intending to join the Egyptian ships in an attack upon the Ionian Islands. Sir Edward Codrington, the English admiral, forbade its moving; and, when the Turkish commander persisted, he sailed into the harbour with the united English, French, and Russian squadrons, and utterly destroyed the enemy's fleet, leaving but a single frigate and fifteen small ships out of sixty (October 18).

Canning had died very shortly before this event. Wellington, as was natural, took a different tone. As a soldier, he always sympathised with authority, and he used language about Navarino which roused great anger in England. He desired, also, to see Turkey strong in her war with Russia, whose evident intention to seize Constantinople was already the source of anxiety to the western nations. In the end however Turkey was obliged to concede tributary independence to the Greeks, and, although Constantinople was saved, to sign a very humiliating treaty with Russia at Adrianople. In the affairs of Portugal Wellington showed a similar backwardness to help the cause of liberty, which provoked sharp comparisons with Canning. He was, indeed, singularly unfortunate in foreign policy. Two of the main results of Waterloo and the settlement which followed had been the restoration of the Bourbons to the French throne, and the annexation, sorely against its will, of Catholic Belgium to Protestant Holland (p. 450). Both were now undone. In France the bigoted folly of Charles X., brother and successor of Louis XVIII., brought about a revolution in July 1830, which resulted in the placing of Louis Philippe, duke of Orleans (p. 842), on the throne; while in the same year Belgium revolted from her enforced union, and soon after regained her independence.

Dates

	A.D.		A.D.
Trial and death of Queen Caroline	1821	Illness of Lord Liverpool	1827
Death of Lord Castlereagh	1822	Canning prime minister	1827
Canning foreign secretary	1822	Death of Canning	1827
Canning favours liberty abroad	1822-1827	Battle of Navarino	1827
		Wellington prime minister	1828
Catholic association	1822	Repeal of Test and Corporation Acts	1828
Reform measures	to 1825	Catholic Relief Act	1829
Commercial panic; joint-stock banks	1825	Death of George IV.	1830

CHAPTER II

WILLIAM IV.¹ THE REFORMED PARLIAMENT. 1830-1837SECTION 1.—*Parliamentary Reform. 1830-1832*

THUS, at the accession of William IV., Wellington was discredited as a foreign minister, and disliked both by Radicals for opposing parliamentary reform and by Tories for having yielded to the demand for Catholic emancipation. Distress was widespread, and the reforming spirit was excited by the success of the July revolution in Paris. In Birmingham a powerful political union was formed, pledged to the cause of reform; and an indiscreet expression of Wellington, that the representation could not be improved, merely added to the storm against his ministry.² In November he resigned. Lord Grey, now sixty-six years of age, who had proposed reform thirty-seven years ago, became prime minister; Althorp was chancellor of the exchequer; Palmerston, foreign secretary; Lord Melbourne, home secretary; Brougham, lord chancellor; Russell, paymaster of the forces; and Edward Stanley, grandson of the Earl of Derby, Irish secretary.³ Only four of the ministers were in the Commons: the ministry which was to carry reform was an almost purely aristocratic body. The opposition was led by Sir Robert Peel.

The first business of the government was one of repression. The southern counties were under a veritable reign of terror. Bodies of peasants, 1,500 strong, fought the yeomanry, destroyed machinery, burnt farm buildings, and levied contributions. They were at length crushed by superior force, and more than 1,000 persons were tried by a special commission.

On the question of reform there were wide differences in the cabinet. The bill upon which they at length agreed, with the king's approval, proposed the disfranchisement of all boroughs with less than 2,000 inhabitants, and the semi-disfranchisement of all with less than 4,000; the extension of the franchise to all

¹ Duke of Clarence (p. 457). For this reign, and that of Victoria up to 1858, see Spencer Walpole's *History of England*.

² Before it fell, Peel had created the London police force. The use of spring guns, and similar methods of protecting property, had been made illegal, and the police was established to give the protection necessary. When chief secretary for Ireland in 1814, he

had extended throughout that country the police force which Wellington, in 1809, had formed for Dublin—now the Royal Irish Constabulary. They at once acquired the nicknames of 'Bobbies' and 'Peelers'; and these were now transferred to the London police.

³ For the characters of these ministers, see Thursfield's 'Peel,' in *Twelve English Statesmen*, p. 102.

10%. householders in boroughs, and 50%. leaseholders and 10%. freeholders in counties; the grant of a member to every town of over 10,000, and of two members to every town of over 20,000 inhabitants; and of additional members to all counties with 150,000. Of the 167 members thus free for disposal, five each were allotted to Scotland and Ireland, one to Wales, fifty-five to English counties, and forty-four to large unrepresented towns; the total number being thus lessened. Both in Scotland and Ireland the borough franchise was to be the same as in England, the county franchise in the former being also the same; in Ireland the county franchise remained unaltered (p. 464).

The bill passed its second reading by only one vote, and was then defeated on an amendment that the number of members in England and Wales should not be diminished. The Tories hoped that Grey would resign. When it was found that he had determined to appeal to the country their anger was as great as that of the Whigs had been when Pitt refused to dissolve (p. 412). In the Lords a scene of the wildest confusion took place, the peers nearly coming to blows. But the country was delighted. London was illuminated, and the windows of Wellington and other Tory peers were smashed by the mob. A great Whig majority was returned at the new elections, to the cry of 'The bill, the whole bill,

and nothing but the bill!': it was at once reintroduced, and passed with ease by the Commons, to be thrown out by the Lords on the second reading, October 8, 1831. Indignation was loud and deep. The Whig newspapers appeared in mourning; the common council of London met to support the government. Yeomanry resigned because their officers had voted against the bill. In Birmingham muffled peals of the church bells were rung; 150,000 persons met and passed resolutions to refuse to pay taxes until the measure was carried. Riots broke out in other large towns. At Bristol a terrible scene was witnessed, the result of the gross mismanagement of the authorities: the bishop's palace and the mansion-house were burned, and much bloodshed took place. Reform unions were established throughout the country. Such was the state of things when the

Reform Bill was brought in for the third time. It differed from the previous ones (1) in retaining the full number of English and Welsh members; (2) in basing disfranchisement not solely on the population, but on the number of houses and amount of assessed taxes as well, thus disfranchising only thirty, instead of more than fifty, boroughs. The third reading was carried in the Commons without a division. To override the hostile majority in the Lords, Brougham proposed a wholesale creation of new peers (p. 859).

To avoid this the king interposed with such success that the second reading passed by a majority of nine; but it was again defeated on an amendment postponing the disfranchisement. Earl Grey at once resigned, May 9, 1832. But it was found impossible to form an anti-reform government, and Wellington himself urged the recall of Grey, who resumed office on condition that he might create any number of peers necessary to carry the bill: the Lords gave way, and on June 7, 1832, the famous Reform Bill, which transferred political power to the middle classes, received the royal assent.⁴

Resignation
and recall
of Earl Grey.
Passing of
the Reform
Bill

A vast change had taken place in the country since 1815. The population of Great Britain and Ireland had increased from nineteen to twenty-four millions; and wealth had increased in a double ratio. The whole system of locomotion had been revolutionised by the creation and development of railways, in which the capital withdrawn from agriculture was invested.⁵ Under Peel and Brougham the worst abuses in the law courts had been removed, the Welsh judicature abolished, the number of judges increased, and uniformity of practice introduced in the common law courts. The criminal code had been further reformed by the removal of house-breaking, horse and sheep stealing, coining, and most cases of forgery from the death-list. Althorp had done away with the absurd restrictions of the game law by an act permit-

Changes
since 1815

Railways

Legal
reforms

⁴ It came at a time of widespread confusion and distress. 'Disturbances in Ireland, riots in the provinces, the organisation of the working classes, a stagnant trade, an inelastic revenue, an overstocked labour market, a pauperised population, were portending trouble at home. The cholera'—which had broken out in 1831, and which found a fertile field for its ravages in towns reeking with dirt, and among a people enfeebled by hunger and the neglect of all sanitary laws—'was striking down its helpless victims in every village; fanatical preachers were exciting the superstitious feelings of a frightened people; political agitators were bestirring them to action; the king had lost his popularity from his fainthearted support of his ministry; the old ruling classes were regarded with detestation for opposing the wishes of the people; numbers were arrayed against property; the old machinery of government had been abolished; a new untried machinery had been substituted for it; and

men gloomily asked each other where the revolution, which had already begun, was to end.'

⁵ The only method of land locomotion besides roads was that of wooden or iron tramways with horse power. Steamboats were already in use; the first was constructed by Fulton, an American, in 1808; in 1838 a steamboat crossed the Atlantic. Murdoch, Trevithick, and Gurney had tried steam coaches on roads. In 1812 George Stephenson, a collier's son, made a locomotive which would draw heavy loads on iron rails at three miles an hour. On September 27, 1825, the Stockton and Darlington Railway was opened. The Liverpool and Manchester line, engineered by Stephenson over the famous Chat Moss, was opened in 1829, when Stephenson's engine, the 'Rocket,' travelled at thirty-five miles an hour. Wellington and several of the ministry attended, and Huskisson was unfortunately killed by the 'Rocket.'

ting anyone to take out a licence to kill or sell game. Abuses in the appointments in the church had been lessened. Real estate had been made liable to debt—i.e. a man might no longer sell his estate and hold back the money from his creditors. Another act had taken from Drury Lane and Covent Garden theatres the monopoly they enjoyed of exhibiting regular drama. In 1828, for the first time, the City admitted converted Jews to the privilege of citizenship. The Established Church in Canada—an absurdity in a country chiefly peopled by French Catholics and Scotch Presbyterians—was allowed to die out. It was no longer possible for debtors to escape arrest by buying seats in the house; and an act was now passed depriving members of the power of defying the ecclesiastical courts, which had jurisdiction over cases of probate and divorce. The principle running throughout these and the greater measures which have been mentioned more in detail, was the abolition of privilege and monopoly: and it was this principle which was crowned by the Reform Bill.

SECTION 2.—*Work of the First Reformed Parliaments,*
1832-1837

The first reformed parliament met on January 29, 1833. The reformers had 486 seats, their opponents 172. Actually there were now four well-defined parties: (1) Radicals, who looked for the most drastic reforms; (2) the Moderate Whigs, who soon took the name of Liberals; (3) the Moderate Tories, or Conservatives, under Peel's leadership; (4) the Old Tories, represented by Eldon. The second and third often coalesced, and were attacked by the other two—by the Tories because they went too far in the path of reform; by the Radicals because they did not go far enough.

Ireland was first dealt with. Tithes were extorted only at the point of the bayonet, and the people were angry that the Reform Bill had not restored the forty-shilling freeholder (p. 464). O'Connell, the 'uncrowned king' of Ireland, was again agitating for the repeal of the Union, and terrorism by murder and outrage reigned throughout the land. A policy of 'kicks and kindness' was adopted.

A strong Coercion Act was followed by a Church Act, which reduced the archbishoprics and bishoprics from four and twenty-two to two and twelve respectively. The bishops' lands were to be sold, and the salaries of future bishops reduced. A tax was laid upon all benefices, and those where no duty had been done for three years were suspended.⁶ The important question then was, to

⁶ Stanley had, too, given a great boon to Ireland in the Board of National Education, composed of Catholics as well as Protestants, to regulate all

what purpose the revenues of the suppressed bishoprics should be applied. The government wished to appropriate them to lay purposes, but were defeated; while the Lords successfully insisted that the funds from the suspended benefices should be applied to building churches. Stanley now dealt with the tithes. He had carried an act in 1831 commuting them for a fixed payment from the occupier. But the small Catholic farmers refused to pay, and the Protestant clergymen, though backed by the whole power of the government, could not collect them. In 1833, therefore, the government themselves paid 1,000,000*l.* arrears to the tithe owners, and undertook to collect them in future. Other Irish tithes vain attempts were made to settle the difficulty; and in 1838 Lord John Russell carried a bill laying a reduced charge on the landlord instead of the occupier, paying arrears to the amount of 650,000*l.*, and abandoning 260,000*l.* more.

In 1833 Stanley became secretary for the colonies. He at once had his hands full with the task of abolishing slavery in the British West Indies, the horrors of which—worse, if possible, than those of the slave trade—had been laid bare by Thomas Fowell Buxton in 1823, from facts procured for him by Thomas Clarkson. As one story after another of abominable cruelty was proved to the House of Commons, the determination to have done once for all with the accursed thing deepened rapidly. On May 14, 1833, Stanley brought in his bill. To abolish slavery without causing too great an injury to the colonists, the slaves were nominally freed from August 1, 1834, but were apprenticed to their owners for seven years, after which they were to be absolutely free, while 20,000,000*l.* were paid to the planters in compensation. Unfortunately the masters determined to get all they could out of their apprenticed slaves during the years still left them; and their sufferings, in spite of all the efforts of the government, were probably greater during those years than before.⁷

But we had slaves at home. Much of the work in factories could be done well and cheaply by children. Thousands of children, from five years of age and upwards, were swept into the factories

state-aided schools. In a few years 170,000 children were in schools under this board.

⁷ The feeling roused by these atrocities was so strong that it was finally decided that the date of emancipation should be August 1, 1838. The slave trade to America continued with all its horrors. Some 150,000 slaves were carried every year. English cruisers

received so much prize-money for every slave they found on captured ships. But the captains had a simple way of avoiding this: if pursued, they threw the slaves overboard. The change by which a bounty was given to the capturing ship upon the tonnage of any ship proved to be carrying slaves did much to check the traffic, 1839.

of Yorkshire and Lancashire, apprenticed to practically irresponsible masters, and consigned to a life of suffering or shame. Many hundreds of both sexes were literally carted out of London by the local authorities for this purpose. For twelve or thirteen hours a day, with two short half-hours for meals, part of which was often occupied in cleaning machinery, these poor children stood at their work in an unwholesome atmosphere amid coarseness and brutality, with no chance of leisure or education. A badly managed factory, it was shown, united the horrors of the slave-gang and the brothel. In 1831 Mr. Sadler proposed that no one under eighteen should be employed for more than ten hours a day. In 1833 Lord Ashley, better known as Lord Shaftesbury, obtained a commission on the whole subject. The result was Althorp's Factory Act,⁸ by which children under thirteen were not to work more than eight hours a day; those above thirteen and under eighteen not more than twelve hours a day, or sixty-nine a week.⁹

Two great commercial questions were now settled. The charter of the Bank of England was renewed, but only upon conditions which enabled it to be watched more carefully than hitherto. Its notes, from 5*l.* upwards, were made legal tender, and its accounts were henceforth published quarterly. The charter of the East India Company was also renewed; but its monopoly of the Chinese and Indian trades was abolished, and offices under government were thrown open to natives and foreigners. India was henceforward to be governed for Indians, not for English alone. But the great change, that which completely altered the face of labour throughout the rural districts, was the amendment of the Poor Law.

Up to the middle of the eighteenth century the spirit of the Tudor laws (pp. 202-228) had been fairly observed, and pauperism had been

⁸ Nothing can express the conditions of labour so terribly as the simple fact that the greatest opponents of the Factory Acts were the *parents*.

⁹ In 1840 the use of children as chimney-sweepers was forbidden, and Lord Ashley obtained a commission on the employment of women and children in mines, when a shocking tale of cruelty and misery was disclosed. In 1842 the employment of women was forbidden, of boys under ten, and girls under thirteen. From ten to thirteen, boys might still be employed on three days in the week. An attempt still further to improve the lot of factory children in 1843 failed, while Catholics and Dissenters united to reject a bill compelling

the inhabitants of the districts in which the factories were to provide schools under Church management, even though a conscience clause was introduced. In 1844, however, the minimum age for child employment was raised from eight to nine. In 1847, though out of parliament, Ashley carried a measure against the Government, forbidding the employment of a 'young person' for more than ten hours a day—'a victory of the people over official England.' He had already secured the prohibition of the employment of children under eight, of all girls, and of boys under thirteen, at night. In 1868 the Factory Acts were applied to many other trades.—*Spencer Walpole*. iii. 416.

regarded as a disgrace. But in 1796 Pitt had passed an act legalising a custom already in vogue—namely, the giving relief to labourers, able-bodied or not, in their own houses. It was given in many ways, all bad; the usual form was to supplement the wages given by the farmers with grants from the poor rate. Every labourer who by residence had a ‘settlement’ in any parish had a right to this help, which was increased according to the size of his family. If the overseer refused it, ‘he could select the most benevolent fool who happened to be a justice of peace in the county’ and obtain an order overriding the overseer. The result was disastrous. A race of free men rapidly became a race of paupers. Improvident marriages, large families, and the profligacy which is still so bad a feature of rural life, were legally encouraged by the dole for each child, whether legitimate or not. Wages of course went down, and the poor rates went up. The farmer got his labour for next to nothing; all who paid poor rates, whether employers of labour or not, were extortionately burdened to supplement the pittance he gave. Whole villages were, as it were, eaten up by the rate. In 1785 the poor rate was 2,000,000*l.*; in 1832 it was 7,000,000*l.*; and one person in every seven was a pauper. Each parish naturally tried to get rid of its own poor. Many landlords demolished the cottages on their estates, so as to compel their poor to sleep in adjoining parishes, and, by doing so, to transfer the liability of their maintenance thither. Others threw their lands out of cultivation, since no one would incur the rate by taking them. Girls were bribed to marry out of the parish, boys were apprenticed to masters elsewhere. The result was a distribution of the people without regard to their welfare or to utility.

In 1832 a commission of inquiry was appointed; it reported in January 1833; and in July 1834 the Poor Law Amendment Act was passed. It was of the most thorough character. A central board, with unprecedented powers of taxation and administration, supervised the whole system, and introduced reforms at its own will at convenient times and according to varying circumstances. Parishes were joined into unions,¹⁰ and workhouses built. Outdoor relief, beyond medical aid, was prohibited to any able-bodied man. The mother was compelled to support her illegitimate child; and birth and marriage alone were to create a ‘settlement,’ imposing upon the parish the duty of supporting the impotent poor. The bill was fiercely opposed—by the Tories from dislike of innovation, by the

¹⁰ In 1865 the union was made the area for the levy of a rate, instead of the parish, so as more effectively to check the migration in search of settlements, and to lessen the temptation to landowners to demolish their cottages.

Radicals as the 'Poor Man Robbery Bill.' Its effect was rapid. The paupers became once more free men. In five years the poor rate fell from 7,000,000*l.* to 4,000,000*l.*; and the population soon became distributed according to the needs of the country.¹¹

In 1833 the beginning of another great social revolution was made. A few schools for poor children had here and there been built by Education private benefaction; and, but for these, there was no such grant thing as elementary education. In that year Mr. Roebuck proposed a system of universal national education; the government gave the miserable grant of 20,000*l.* a year, to supplement local contributions; in 1839 it was increased to 30,000*l.*,¹² to be spent by the National Society and the British and Foreign School Society in building school houses; and there the matter remained for many years.

The conflict over the Irish tithes, and over the disposal of the revenues of the Irish Church (p. 471) led to a great change in the ministry. Stanley and three other ministers resigned, and some joined Peel and the moderate conservatives. The Reaction reforms of Grey's ministry had aroused the opposition of a host of vested interests. The government lost ground, and Wellington, whose windows had been broken in 1832, was now the most popular man in the country. Dissension arose in the cabinet over the renewal of the Coercion Act for Ireland; Littleton, the Irish secretary, and Althorp, resigned, and then Earl Grey himself. Lord Melbourne was ordered to form a government, and Althorp joined him. But the ministers were unable to make head against the reaction, and when Althorp was removed to the Lords as Earl Spencer by his father's death, the king

¹¹ The first effect of the act was to create much distress, since a million pensioners found themselves deprived of their doles, and wages did not rise rapidly. There was, too, a good deal of harshness in the administration of the 'tyrants of Somerset House.' Several attempts, happily unsuccessful, were made to repeal the act. In 1844 an act was passed enabling the mother of an illegitimate child to recover the cost of its maintenance from the father; allowing indoor relief under certain circumstances; and providing for the night relief of destitute persons without reference to their place of birth. Another act forbade the removal of poor people from any place where they had lived for five years; of a wife from her husband's parish, or of children from their

parents' parish; and these acts greatly lessened the hardships of the act. The act was extended both to Ireland, in 1838, and Scotland, in 1845.—See Carlyle, *Chartism*, ch. iii.

¹² At first the Church would not touch this grant, since the money was to be distributed by a political body—a committee of the privy council—even though the inspectors were chosen with the approval of the bishops, and had to report to them as well as to the council. She very soon, however, changed her mind, and shortly absorbed most of the money. The National Society was a Church of England society, teaching its doctrines and catechisms in her schools. The British and Foreign Society admitted any Protestant, and read the Bible, but taught no catechism.

dismissed them; and on Wellington's suggestion Peel became prime minister. But he, too, was helpless in face of the Whig majority and the Radicals, and when Russell carried a motion to apply the Irish Church revenues to lay purposes—the old question—he resigned. Melbourne then came back to office with Russell and Palmerston as home and foreign secretaries; and, with a very short interval, his government lasted for nearly seven years (1835–1841).

One necessary piece of work, the reform of municipal corporations, was accomplished at once. These corporations consisted as a rule of a small number of councillors chosen for life, who themselves filled up vacancies on this body, with a mayor, who in the smaller boroughs had almost sole authority and power over the funds. To enrich themselves, and to further their special political opinions, were the chief objects of these corporations. Often they possessed their own magistrates and courts of law; but in these there was no uniformity. Thus, 'in Bath, with 50,000 inhabitants, the local courts could not try a felony; in Dunwich, with 232, they could sentence a man to death.' All sorts of antiquated rights and trading privileges belonged to individual freemen or to the whole body. Their chief source of income had often been the sale of the representation to some great lord.

Municipal reform had already, in 1833, been carried out in Scotland; in 1835 Russell brought in a bill for England. The council was henceforth to be elected by ratepayers of three consecutive years' standing; a third part were to retire annually. A certain number of aldermen were to be appointed for six years. The large boroughs were divided into wards by revising barristers, and each ward was to elect its own councilmen. The freemen were to retain the franchise; but all pecuniary rights, and all exclusive trading privileges, except for existing freemen, were to cease. With the energetic help of Peel the hostile amendments of the Tory peers were rejected, and the bill became law in September 1835. The abuses in Irish corporations were as great as in England; and their constitution enabled them to perpetuate Protestant ascendancy by refusing to allow a Catholic on the corporation. The Commons passed a reform bill for them also; but the Lords spoil it, and the Commons gave way. In 1840, however, it was again brought in and passed. The town councils were henceforth elected by 10% householders.

Then followed the settlement of the tithe question in England. The effect of tithes, varying with the productiveness of the crop, was to discourage agriculture, and to produce quarrels and jealousies

between clergy and people in every parish.¹³ In 1836 Russell carried an act encouraging a voluntary arrangement by the voice of the majority of tithe payers and owners, and in some cases empowering commissioners to effect a commutation by which the tithe-owner was to receive not less than 60 nor more than 75 per cent. of the nominal value of the tithe reckoned on the average prices of wheat, barley, and oats for the seven preceding years.

From 1753 to 1836, marriages, except in the case of a Quaker or a Jew, could be performed only by clergymen of the Church of England, who kept also the register of baptisms, marriages, and burials. All attempts at relief had failed; but Russell now passed an act with general consent, in spite of the resistance of the Lords, allowing persons desiring to be married without banns to give notice to a registrar, their names to remain publicly on the notice-book for twenty-one days; they might then be married in church or chapel, or before the superintendent registrar in London.

Lastly came the removal of 'taxes on knowledge.' The heavy duties upon newspapers and pamphlets had led, like all heavy duties, to smuggling—to the unlicensed issue, that is, of the papers: and the prosecutions had fallen upon the poor hawkers who sold them. To take a newspaper meant a payment of 9*l.* a year; so that it was beyond the reach of a poor man. The wonderful success of the 'Useful Knowledge Society' had shown that cheap literature of a sound kind was certain of a large sale. In 1836, through the efforts of Bulwer Lytton, the newspaper tax was reduced from 4*d.* to 1*d.*; and the excise on paper itself was also lessened.

In spite of all these reforms the action of the government was far too moderate for the Radicals, who were specially angry at its failure to remove church rates; while it was opposed by the whole force of the Tories as well. It would no doubt have fallen, but for the sudden illness and death of the king, June 19, 1837.

SECTION 8.—*Foreign Policy under Palmerston*

Ever since 1830 Palmerston had been foreign secretary, and under his guidance England had played an important part in Europe. The revolution in Paris of July 1830 had created a general ferment. Belgium had thrown off her enforced connection with Holland (pp. 450, 466), and a conference was held in London to agree to terms upon

¹³ The rector held the great tithes, farmyard produce. In many cases lay rectors (p. 192) held the great tithes. Those on corn, hay, and wood; his vicar or curate had the small tithes—Nonconformists had to pay tithes like those on cattle, poultry, and other other produce.

which the separation should be recognised. Leopold of Saxe-Coburg, husband of the Princess Charlotte (p. 457), accepted the Belgian throne; and when the Dutch, refusing the terms agreed to, invaded Belgium, England and France in concert forced them to give way by blockading their ports and driving the Dutch garrison from Antwerp, October 1832.

Outrages on British persons and property by Don Miguel, the usurper and tyrant who ruled in Portugal, brought a demand for satisfaction from Palmerston, to which he was forced to attend. A little later Miguel's brother Pedro, with French and British volunteers, and with a navy commanded in succession by two British officers, Captains Sartorius and Charles Napier, drove him from the throne. Pedro's daughter Maria was then made queen.

In Spain the worthless Ferdinand VII. (pp. 486, 465) had died in 1833, leaving a rightful heir—Don Carlos, his brother—but making Isabella, the eldest daughter of his fourth marriage, with his own niece Christina, his successor. A war of horrible cruelty on both sides followed, in which Don Carlos and Miguel fought the cause of despotism against Isabella and Maria, who were supported by France and England. No formal intervention took place, but the services of the 'British legion,' a force serving in Isabella's pay under Sir De Lacy Evans, had much to do with her final success.

Stimulated by the movement of 1830 (p. 466), Italy rose against Austria, and Russian Poland against Russia. The Poles appealed both to France and to Britain; but Palmerston refused to interfere, and to the indignation of the people the gallant Poles were sacrificed after a desperate struggle. Turkey was threatened with dissolution by the growing might of her nominal subject, Mehemet Ali, pacha of Egypt. His son Ibrahim had taken Acre and Damascus, had defeated the Turks in a great battle, and had made himself master of Syria. A second victory brought him to the Bosphorus. The Sultan appealed to Britain and Egypt; but our navy was occupied with the blockade of the Dutch ports, while France was friendly with Mehemet. Russia however, glad of any excuse to gain a hold on Turkey, sent a force which stopped Ibrahim's further advance, exacting in return, by a secret treaty, a promise from Turkey to allow none but Russian war-ships to pass the Dardanelles. Thus the Black Sea became a Russian lake.

The knowledge of this treaty made Palmerston resolved to support Turkey as a barrier against Russian ambition, especially when, in 1835, after advancing into Turkish Asia, Russia formed an alliance with the other despotisms, Austria and Prussia. In 1836 Austria

absorbed the little republic of Cracow, which lay between the three. Anger ran high in England. When therefore Mehemet Ali insisted upon independence, Palmerston declared that this would mean war with England. The danger passed for a time; but in 1839 the Turks were again utterly defeated in Asia by Ibrahim, and their fleet deserted to Mehemet. The Sultan died of despair, and was succeeded by Abdul-Medjid, a boy of sixteen. The skilful diplomacy of Palmerston hereupon brought about a Quadrilateral Alliance with Austria, Russia, and Prussia, July 1840, which was soon joined by France, who would otherwise have been isolated; and in July 1841 a treaty was negotiated with Turkey, by which the Bosphorus and the Dardanelles were closed to war-ships of all European powers alike.

Dates of Reign of William IV

	A.D.		A.D.
The Reform Bill	1832	Municipal Reform	1835
First Education Grant	1833	Commutation of English Tithes	1836
Slave Trade abolished	1834	Reduction of Newspaper Tax	
First Factory Act	1834	and Paper Excise	1830
New Poor Law	1834		

CHAPTER III

VICTORIA. TO THE END OF THE INDIAN MUTINY. 1837-1858

SECTION 1.—*Peel's Ministry, 1841-1846. Chartism. Repeal of the Corn Laws. Irish Famine*

THE desire to save from embarrassment the young girl¹ (pp. 354, 457) who ascended the throne, and whose simple and winning dignity evoked intense loyalty, kept the Melbourne government in office, though not in power. Its weakness was at once shown by the manner in which it dealt with the pressing question of Canada.

That great territory had been divided in 1791 into Western or Upper Canada and Eastern or Lower Canada. The former was peopled exclusively by settlers, chiefly from Great Britain; in the latter there was an overwhelming majority of the old French inhabitants, who were, however, compelled to watch lands,

¹ The succession of a female sovereign dissolved our formal connection with the Continent, which had often been a source of trouble. The crown of Hanover could be worn only by a male; and that kingdom fell, therefore, to the Duke of Cumberland, the queen's uncle.

wealth, and power rapidly passing to the minority of more active and enterprising British, with whom they never blended. Each province had its separate legislature—namely, an elective assembly, a second chamber nominated by the crown, and a governor and executive council. In Lower Canada the French population had, of course, a great majority in the elective house; but they were thwarted, especially in financial matters, by the second chamber, which the crown was careful to fill with Englishmen. In 1831 the demand was made that the latter should be elective also; and refusal led to armed revolt in 1837, which was, however, easily put down. Then Lord Durham, a man of great capacity and zeal for reform, but of harsh and despotic temper, was sent out as governor. The strong measures which he took upon his own authority to crush disaffection roused a storm in parliament; and Melbourne was too weak to support his subordinate, who therefore resigned his post. But a constitution which he had suggested was established by his successor, Lord Sydenham, in 1841. The two provinces were united, with a single assembly chosen by each in proportion to its population, and having legislative independence and complete control over finance; a council nominated in harmony with popular feeling; and a governor-general appointed by the crown.²

The inability of a ministry which existed only on sufferance to deal with many pressing questions was so obvious that Melbourne shortly resigned. Peel was invited to form a government; but he insisted as a condition that the queen should part with the great Bedchamber question Whig ladies of the bedchamber. She refused to comply, and the Melbourne cabinet came back. Exposed to the scoff that they had taken refuge 'behind the petticoats of the ladies of the bedchamber,' their case was worse than before, and, as defeat followed defeat, became intolerable. In June 1841 Melbourne dissolved parliament, and appealed to the country. The fact that O'Connell and the Catholics supported the government had alarmed the Protestant feeling in the country, and a great Conservative majority was returned. The bedchamber question was settled by the voluntary resignation of the ladies,³ and Peel became prime minister as

² In consequence of the dissatisfaction of Upper Canada, a fresh union was formed in 1867 by the legislative confederation of all the British North American possessions. Upper and Lower Canada, with Nova Scotia, New Brunswick, Prince Edward's Island, Manitoba, British Columbia, and the North-east Territories form the 'Dominion of Canada,' with a governor-general and a privy council, a senate of life

members summoned by the governor, and an elective house of commons. A lieutenant-governor and council manage the North-West Provinces, not yet organised. In 1876 the population was four millions.

³ This was brought about through the advice of Prince Albert of Saxe-Coburg, whom the queen had married in 1840.

a Conservative reformer, with Lyndhurst as lord chancellor, Aberdeen foreign secretary, and Stanley secretary for the colonies.

Before the Melbourne government fell, it had passed one memorable measure—the establishment of penny postage. This was the suggestion of Rowland Hill, the son of a Birmingham schoolmaster. Hitherto the postal system had been extremely intricate and expensive; letters were not prepaid, and it was reckoned that on an average it took a postman two minutes to collect the postage on every letter which he left at a door. No letter was carried for less than 2*d.*; while the postage from London to Durham was 1*s.* The result was that poor people did not write letters at all; or, if they did, often contrived to give sufficient information, by some mark on the envelope, to their correspondent, who, having seen it, refused to take the letter in. Others, who could get their letters ‘franked’ by a member of parliament, paid no postage at all. Hill’s proposal, which was carried in 1839 and put in force in 1840, was that the uniform charge should be 1*d.*, prepaid.⁴ The immediate result was the loss of more than 1,000,000*l.* to the revenue, since it was some while before people learned to write letters. Another permanent result was that letter-writing—that is, the writing of letters which were literary compositions as well as budgets of news—became a lost art.

The work of the Reform Bill had been, speaking roughly, to transfer political power from the great landowners to the middle classes. For that very reason the zeal for further reform had now died out among the middle classes; while among the Radicals, and among the poor, powerless, unfriended, and miserable, it grew the keener every day. No adequate idea can here be given of the squalid wretchedness of the poor in our great towns. In 1841, 800,000 hand-loom weavers earned 2½*d.* a day; in Manchester, Rochdale, and elsewhere, 1*s.* a week was a frequent wage. Crowded in courts, alleys, or cellars—one-tenth of the population of Manchester and one-seventh of that of Liverpool lived in cellars, neither drained nor ventilated—and in houses run up without the slightest provision for decency or health, the poor were a prey to starvation, vice, and disease.⁵ In the country districts things were as

⁴ In 1840 postage was paid on 42,000,000 letters; in 1875 on 962,000,000.

⁵ ‘Children fought each other in the streets for the offal which rich men do not allow their dogs to touch. A gentleman saw a labourer standing over his swill-tub, voraciously devouring the wash intended for the pigs. Twenty women begged a farmer to allow them to disinter the body of a cow, which he had buried thirty-six hours before as unfit for human food. Starving men and women, or, worse still, men and women seeing their children starve before their eyes, readily seized the vilest substances which enabled them to protract for a

bad. The wholesale demolition of cottages by the landlords had led to shameful overcrowding, and the consequent immorality: in one Dorsetshire parish there were thirty-six persons to every house. The hardships which followed the first introduction of the new Poor Law added to the distress (p. 474).

The protest against all this took two distinct forms—Socialism⁶ and Chartism.⁷ The idea of the Socialist was to give the poor man com-
 fort; of the Chartist to give him political power, that he
 might help to make the laws under which he lived. This
 had been the idea of Tom Paine and the 'Corresponding
 Society' (p. 421); but like every other scheme of reform it had been
 smothered in the reaction which resulted from the French Revolution.
 After the war it sprang into life again. In 1817 five objects were
 aimed at—manhood suffrage, the ballot, annual parliaments, no prop-
 erty qualification for members of parliament, and the payment of
 members—in other words, every poor man was to have a vote, to give
 that vote without fear of loss, and to be able to sit in the Commons.

In 1837 these demands were embodied in the 'People's Charter,'
 from which the name 'Chartist' is derived. It expressed the right of
 'every freeman who breathed God's pure air, or trod God's
 free earth, to have a happy home.' The stream rapidly
 gathered strength. In October 1838, 200,000 persons met on Kensal
 Moor to frame a petition to parliament. One leader, Stephens, urged
 violence if their claims were not met; and he paid for his advice with
 eighteen months' imprisonment. In 1839 delegates from all the
 manufacturing towns met at a national convention in London to
 prepare their petition. Chartist newspapers were established, the
 'Northern Star' being the chief. Fergus O'Connor, an Irishman;
 Lovett and Vincent, artisans; and Jones, a barrister, were the chief

few hours longer their miserable lives.'
 —*Spencer Walpole*, vol. iv. p. 363.
 'The misery of the labouring man was
 aggravated by the "truck" system of
 wage payment.'—*Ibid.* p. 370.

⁶ Robert Owen, a Lanarkshire manu-
 facturer, was the first experimenter in
 Socialism. He resolved to change the
 conditions of labour in his own factory.
 Holding that education was the root of
 all, he established an infant school.
 Then he set up co-operative stores, and
 a public kitchen; and he devoted all
 his profits over 5 per cent. to the educa-
 tion and improvement of his men. In
 1817 he proposed a scheme for con-
 struction of villages, whose inmates

were to be employed and educated at
 the public expense. Everything was
 to be in common; 'association was to
 supersede competition; labour was to
 supersede money.' Unfortunately, he
 attacked Christianity; the poor, who,
 indeed, saw little to thank Christianity
 for, rapidly espoused his views, and
 thus the name of Socialist became dis-
 credited.

⁷ See Charles Kingsley's *Alton
 Locke*—especially Mr. Hughes's pre-
 face—*Yeast*, and the *Letters of Parson
 Lot*; Carlyle's *Chartism*; and Mrs.
 Gaskell's *Mary Barton* and *North and
 South*.

leaders of the movement. The petition was presented, and rejected with contempt. Riots at once broke out in the large towns. Night Riots after night the Bull Ring at Birmingham, whither the national convention had transferred its head-quarters, was the scene of great meetings. The police suppressed a riot; but ten days later the mob rose again and did much damage. Incendiarism increased alarmingly in the country districts. The government acted with vigour; the army and London police were strengthened; police forces were established in Birmingham and Manchester, and in the counties. Vincent and Lovett were imprisoned, O'Connor arrested; and at the end of 1839 the convention was dissolved. But on November 8 Frost, a magistrate, with a large body of Chartists in South Wales, suddenly rose and marched upon Newport. Their coming was anticipated, and twenty were shot down. Frost and the other leaders were transported for life, and then there was quiet for three years.

While the working men were thus agitating, the anti-corn-law movement was in vigorous activity in the class above them. The laws of 1815 and 1822 had failed: in 1828 the duty had been made to vary with the price of wheat. This duty, of course, made bread dearer than it otherwise would be: wages of artisans consequently rose, and with them the price at which the master could make his articles. This rendered them open to under-selling by foreigners: and the outcry for the repeal of the corn laws was thus a manufacturers', middle class, cry; the landlords, of course, wanted the duty maintained. In 1838 the Anti-Corn-Law League was established at Manchester, and soon found its ablest exponents in Richard Cobden and John Bright. But the landlords were too strong, and Mr. Villiers's proposal of repeal was beaten in 1838 by 342 to 195, Peel heading the majority. In 1839 the League renewed its work by pamphlets, meetings, and lectures; and it was helped by unfavourable harvests and a high price of corn. It now appealed to the poor to resist the 'anti-bread' tax; and by 1845 it had collected no less than 245,000*l.* to help the agitation.

The Melbourne government had left the finances of the country in disorder. Peel dealt with them at once, as boldly and in the same spirit as Pitt. By an income tax of 7*d.* in the pound for three years, from which the Irish, except absentee landlords, were excepted, and by other simple methods, he converted the large deficit bequeathed him into a handsome surplus. This surplus he applied in a way which gave the first alarm to the Protectionists, of whom he was regarded as the leader. By deciding to admit all raw materials at a 5 per cent.

duty, partly manufactured goods at 12 per cent., and completely manufactured at 20 per cent. of their value, he dealt straightway with 750 of the 1,200 which at present paid heavy toll on entering the kingdom. Convinced that the population was outstripping the food supply, he encouraged the importation of cattle and meat. Logic pointed to similar encouragement in regard to corn. The Protectionists began to lose heart, the Anti-Corn-Law League to grow more active and confident. The majority against Mr. Villiers's repeal motion grew less and less every year.⁸ Among the poor, Peel's policy had the happiest effect. The demand for labour grew, while the price of provisions went down: pauperism, and with it crime, decreased by one-half between 1842 and 1845. The marvellous development of railway enterprise gave employment to both labour and capital: in 1843 there were 65,000,000*l.*, in 1848 200,000,000*l.* sterling invested in railways, which stimulated production by the increased ease of distribution.⁹

For Peel, as for every English minister, Ireland was the great difficulty. The subdivision of land into small freeholds, and the ease with which life could be sustained upon potatoes, created a swarming population, while the absence of coal forbade the rise of manufactures to employ them. Famine was ever imminent, while wholesale evictions—and of these there were 160,000 between 1846 and 1849—left thousands of homeless and exasperated men upon the ground. Up to 1841 the cry for the repeal of the Union had languished. But nowhere was that feeling of nationalism which had been fostered by

⁸ It was in the corn law debates that William Ewart Gladstone, son of a Scotch merchant in Liverpool, born in 1809, first showed his wonderful grasp of financial questions. He began life as the Tory member for the Duke of Newcastle's borough of Newark. He had already distinguished himself by his defence of the planters in the West Indies, where his father had possessions. In Peel's first short-lived government (p. 475) he was junior lord of the Treasury, and then under-secretary for the colonies. He was at this time vice-president of the Board of Trade, master of the Mint, a privy councillor, and Peel's ablest lieutenant. Another man of great ability, destined to be Mr. Gladstone's rival, Benjamin Disraeli, was also in parliament, and had already told Melbourne he intended one day to be prime minister. But the sober-

minded Peel had no appreciation of his wayward genius, and did not give him office. The effect of this was seen in his bitter opposition when the repeal of the corn laws came on. Mr. Villiers still lives (1892).

⁹ Steam locomotion was the great invention of the century; another of vast importance was that of the electric telegraph. In 1837 Cooke and Wheatstone in England, and Morse in America, had applied electricity to this purpose; in that year a telegraph was placed on the Great Western line, and the system was rapidly extended in succeeding years. England was joined to France by telegraph in 1851, to Ireland in 1854, to Malta in 1861, to India in 1865, and to New York in 1866. In 1868 the control of all the telegraph lines in the kingdom was acquired by the government.

the policy of Canning (p. 465) so strong as in Ireland: and in 1843 the 'Nation,' a paper conducted by Gavan Duffy and Thomas Davis, gave eloquent expression to the feeling. Subscriptions flowed in: in May 1843, 100,000 people assembled at the call of O'Connell, and in June half a million came to Mallow demanding repeal. But the government was firm: a force of 85,000 men was placed in Ireland, squadrons were sent to the coasts, and the barracks were fortified. At length O'Connell summoned the people to meet him at Clontarf, outside Dublin. The meeting was proclaimed. O'Connell shrunk from violence, and at his word the people abstained from coming together. This did not save him from arrest, trial, and conviction of sedition; but the sentence was reversed by the Lords. From this time, however, his influence was gone.¹⁰

The state of Ireland hastened Peel's progress towards free trade. In 1845 the potato crop failed, and a formidable famine took place.

To keep the people alive an increased importation of wheat was necessary; and this fact convinced Peel that the corn laws must go. He at once braved the anger of his party by proposing to reduce the duty by a shilling every year until it had vanished; and, when the cabinet declined to uphold him, he resigned. Russell, however, was unable to form a ministry, on account of the mistrust excited among the Whigs by Palmerston's high-handed conduct, and Peel came back, with Mr. Gladstone, now converted, like his chief, in the place of Lord Stanley at the Colonial Office. He at once proposed a great free trade measure. Since the duties on raw materials had been so largely remitted, he called upon the manufacturers to give up those, still heavy, on manufactured articles (p. 483); he reduced the duties on seed, maize, and other things used by farmers, and in like manner called upon them to lessen the protective duties on butter, cheese, and hops by one-half, to admit live stock and meat free, and from February 1849 to consent to a duty of only one shilling upon

imported corn. Furious at this betrayal, the Protectionists, led by Lord George Bentinck and Mr. Disraeli, offered the keenest opposition. But Peel was steadfast, and on May 28 the Corn Law Bill and the Customs Bill became law. This was supplemented in 1849 by the total repeal of the Navigation Acts (p. 459). The effect may be seen in the following figures. In 1815 the exports were 49,500,000*l.*; in 1842 only 47,500,000*l.*; in 1869 they were 190,000,000*l.*

¹⁰ Something was meanwhile done for the Catholics. Large grants were made to Maynooth, the Catholic college, and three Queen's Colleges were established in the north, south, and west of Ireland.

In carrying the repeal of the corn laws, Peel had been joined by the Radicals. But at the same time he had introduced a bill for coercion in Ireland; and on the night on which the Lords ^{Resignation of Peel} passed the Corn Law Bill the angry Protectionists joined the Radicals to defeat the former measure. Peel therefore, his work done, resigned.

SECTION 2.—*Russell's Ministry. Irish Famine. Chartist Petition. Palmerston, 1846-1852*

Russell became prime minister, with Lord Palmerston for foreign secretary. He at once carried an act making the repeal of the corn laws total and immediate; and he also reduced the duties on foreign-grown sugar to those imposed on colonial sugar, a measure which had hitherto been successfully resisted, by the Tories as Protectionists, and by the Abolitionists because it was the result of slave labour.

Unhappy Ireland then claimed attention once more, and in a startling manner. The potato crop of 1846 failed utterly, and in a moment a famine to which that of 1845 had been as nothing ^{Great Irish famine} came upon the teeming and thriftless population.¹¹ By March 1847, in spite of every effort at relief, no fewer than 240,000 persons were dead of starvation. Relief committees kept three millions alive until the time of harvest; but between 1845 and 1851 the Irish people had diminished by two millions.¹² This awful calamity threw into the shade another scene of equally intense though less widespread distress. The people on the coast of the Western Highlands of Scotland gained a precarious living by extracting from the kelp, or seaweed, which lined the shore an alkali largely used in making soap. Unhappily for them, it was found that the same alkali could be obtained in greater quantities from a foreign plant called the barilla. For a long time their industry was protected by the heavy duties upon foreign alkali; but in 1845 the duty was repealed. The occupation of the kelp burners was gone, and they too died in great numbers from sheer famine.

The successful revolution in Paris of 1848, which drove Louis Philippe from the throne, and which threw all Europe into turmoil

¹¹ 'Ireland has near seven millions of working people, the third unit of whom it appears by statistical science, has not for thirty weeks each year as many third-rate potatoes as will suffice him.'—Carlyle, *Chartism*, ch. iv. (written in 1839).

¹² The Irish repaid England in a

terrible way. They swarmed across the channel to England to find work, bringing with them infectious fevers, which took such a hold in this country that the death-rate was sensibly increased. Irish immigration, too, has always had the effect of lowering wages in England.

once more, stimulated the Irish Nationalists to activity. The 'United Irishman' outbid the 'Nation' in the violence of its language. Fresh coercive laws were passed to meet it, and Mitchell, the editor, and Smith O'Brien, a member of parliament, were tried and transported. Racial hatred was as bitter as ever in the 'distressful country.' On July 12, 1849, a fierce fight took place at Dolly's Brae, in county Down, in which nearly fifty Ribandmen were killed or wounded, and their houses sacked and burned. But in August a pleasanter scene was witnessed. The young queen, with her husband and children, paid a visit to the country. Everywhere she was received with enthusiastic loyalty by the emotional race, and her visit did more momentary good than any legislation. Two measures were then passed to conciliate the people; by one the burden of the poor rate on the small occupiers was lightened, large sums being advanced to the unions; the other extended the franchise. For some time Ireland, though always an anxiety, called for no further active measures.

But there were other difficulties besides Ireland. During 1847 railway speculation reached its height. For railway work, loans of no less than 700,000,000*l.* were asked for. Then came a sudden crash, during which very few banks survived the rush upon them; and the crisis taxed the financial ability of the government to the utmost. In 1848 the Chartists again became clamorous. A monster petition, with nearly six million signatures, was to have been escorted to parliament by an enormous crowd. The government wisely forbade this, and the petition went ignominiously in a cab. So great, however, was the alarm created, that Wellington was charged with the duty of guarding against an outbreak; large numbers of special constables were enrolled; troops were held in readiness, and artillery placed so as to command the approaches to Westminster. A careful examination proved that the signatures to the petition were largely fictitious, and this sufficed to secure its rejection with ridicule.

In June, 1850, occurred the death of Sir Robert Peel by a fall from his horse. To none of her statesmen has England greater cause to be thankful. Like Walpole, but on a far higher moral elevation, he possessed a frankness of mind which enabled him to accept either the necessity or the advisability of changes which he had long and vehemently opposed, and a fearless honesty which gave him strength to face the charge of treachery from the crowd of disappointed partisans. He had accepted the Reform act of 1832 as irrevocable, and had at once assumed the

lead of the great middle class to which that act had transferred political power. With their help he had done more to unshackle commerce than even Walpole (p. 367 note) or the second Pitt (p. 413). The greatest master of finance between Walpole and Gladstone, he had, in his earlier days, as chairman of the committee upon whose advice cash payments were resumed in 1821 (p. 452), placed the currency upon a sound basis; and he had given stability to the banking system (p. 472). He had established a police force and reformed the Criminal Code (pp. 459, 467); he had carried Catholic emancipation when the alternative seemed to be civil war; and he had repealed the corn laws at the demand of the class in whom political power was now placed, when it was seconded by the warnings of famine and by his own convictions.¹³

His death left Russell without a rival. But the government was surrounded with difficulties. In 1850 the Pope Pius IX. roused the jealousy against Catholicism, which had lain dormant since the Gordon Riots, by dividing England and Wales into twelve sees, Cardinal Wiseman being made archbishop of Westminster. Lord Russell himself inveighed against the Pope in unmeasured terms. An Ecclesiastical Titles Bill, practically repealed in 1871, was introduced forbidding the assumption of territorial titles by Catholic prelates, declaring all gifts made to them, or acts done by them, under those titles, null and void, and forfeiting any property bequeathed to them. The measure was delayed by the defeat and consequent resignation of Russell on a motion which Mr. Locke-King carried in 1851 for assimilating the county and borough franchise; but, as no one was ready to take his place, he came back at once, and the bill was then passed.

As in the case of Melbourne when he resumed office (p. 479), Russell's ministry now existed on sufferance only. The actual cause of its fall was the conduct of the one strong man in the cabinet, Lord Palmerston. Palmerston was a great foreign minister, and during his rule England had the respect of every European court. But, impatient of control, he acted without reference to his colleagues or even to the queen herself. In his own genial phrase, he liked 'to make a stroke off his own bat.' This excited the resentment of the court, and in 1850 the queen, acting always under her husband's advice, sent a memorandum to the cabinet insisting that this independent action should cease. But Palmerston was irrepresible. In 1851 Kossuth,¹⁴ who had led the Hungarian revolt

¹³ Thursfield, 'Peel,' in *Twelve English Statesmen*.

¹⁴ He still lives (1891).

against Austria, visited England, and was received with enthusiasm. As a rebel of Austria, her ally, the queen of course could not receive him; and her annoyance was great at hearing that her foreign minister had openly approved of language in which 'despot,' 'tyrant,' and 'assassin' were the epithets applied to the Emperors of Austria and Russia. But he soon committed a worse offence. The revolution of 1848 in Paris had been followed by a republic, of which Louis Napoleon, nephew of the great emperor, had obtained the presidency for three years. But his ambition went further; and in December 1851, when his term of office was at an end, he suddenly arrested

all his opponents, dissolved the assembly, appealed to the universal suffrage of the people, and by dint of every kind of bribery, intimidation, and church influence, got himself made president for life. In this matter the queen had insisted upon absolute neutrality; Palmerston, however, did not hesitate to express to the French ambassador his warm approval of the *coup d'état*. This could not be borne, and Palmerston was dismissed. But he proved himself as formidable out of office as in it. The mere name of Napoleon had created a fear in England that he would attempt to do what his great namesake had done, and the government was urged to put the country in a state of defence. Upon a bill brought in for the purpose, Palmerston defeated the government, and Russell at once resigned.

He was succeeded by Lord Derby—the Edward Stanley of former days—with Mr. Disraeli as chancellor of the exchequer. The fear that they would endeavour to bring back protection was soon found to be groundless, for Disraeli at once turned his back upon his former principles, and brought in a purely free-trade budget. But, unpractised in finance, he gave an easy opening to the greatest master of the subject, Mr. Gladstone; the government were defeated in December 1852, and resigned. Lord Aberdeen then formed a cabinet, with Gladstone for chancellor of the exchequer, Russell at the foreign office, Palmerston for home secretary, and Lord Granville and the Duke of Argyle. But the great event of 1852 was, not the formation of a ministry, but the death of the foremost Englishman for fifty years, the Duke of Wellington.

Like everything else, the church had felt the hand of reform since 1832. The two great scandals, the inordinate wealth of the upper clergy contrasted with the poverty of the lower, and the evils of pluralities and non-residence, had been largely remedied. In 1836 the Ecclesiastical Commission had effected a re-

Napoleon III

Dismissal of
Palmerston
and fall of
Lord Russell

Mr. Disraeli
and Mr.
Gladstone

The
Aberdeen
ministry

Church
reform

distribution of the bishops' incomes, the union of the smaller sees, and the creation of fresh ones. In 1838 it was decided that no clergyman should hold more than one preferment; nor more than one benefice with any cathedral preferment; nor more than two benefices more than ten miles apart, or amounting in the aggregate to 1,000*l.* a year; nor two benefices in any case if the united population was over 8,000. In 1839 and 1840 the cathedral establishments were reduced, and the money spent in increasing the incomes in populous places. The old power of the ecclesiastical courts was also greatly limited. Vain attempts were made to relieve Dissenters from the payment of church rates (p. 476) and to open the universities to them.

In Scotland, under the leadership of Dr. Chalmers, took place a great secession from the established Presbyterian Church, upon the Free Church question of the right of the congregation to veto the nomination of a minister by the patron. The law courts decided in favour of the patron; thereupon 474 ministers left the kirk, May 24, 1843, and founded the Free Kirk of Scotland. By 1848 they had raised 1,250,000*l.*, and had built 654 churches.

Up to 1852 foreign affairs had been ably conducted by Aberdeen and Palmerston. Disputes with America about the Canadian frontier line and the right to search ships bearing the American flag, but suspected of carrying slaves, had been sensibly compromised. Queen Maria of Portugal (p. 477) had been supported against her revolted people, and the liberal Pope Pius IX. against the influence of Austria; when Greece inflicted an outrage upon the person and property of a foreigner named Don Pacifico, who happened to be a British subject, Palmerston had obtained full redress by the seizure of Greek merchantmen and the threat of war. With Louis Philippe good terms were kept until his purpose to secure French influence in Spain through the marriages of Isabella (p. 477) and her sisters was accomplished by gross and shameful trickery. His fall in 1848 was the signal for revolution both in North Italy and Hungary against Austria.

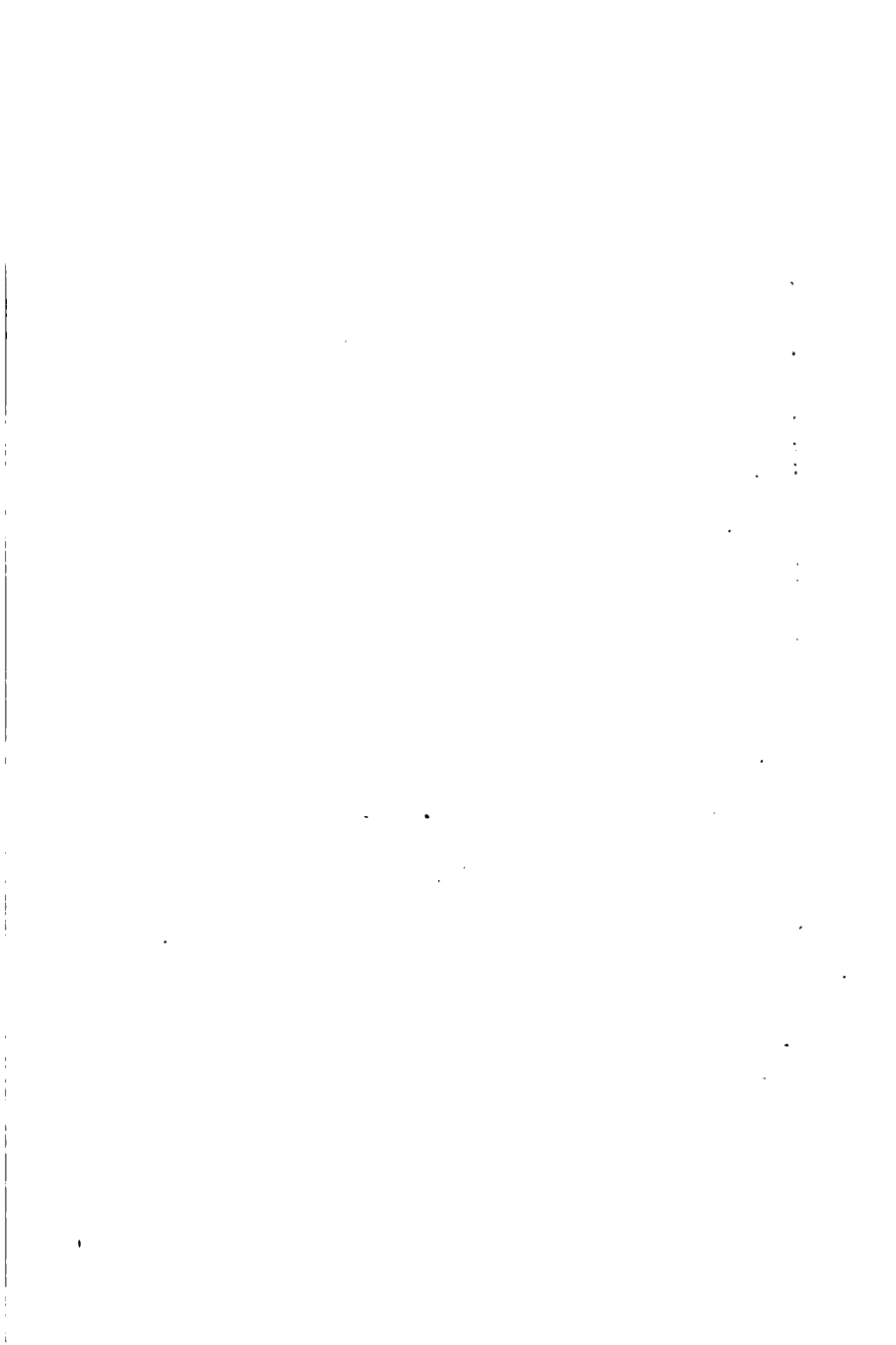
Palmerston sympathised with both, but no active steps were taken to help them. North Italy was brought again under the heel of Austria, and Hungary was crushed. In 1850 all seemed peaceful, and the Great Exhibition of 1851, containing the produce of every land which owned the sway of England, inaugurated, it was hoped, a long reign of peace. Unhappily, events were at that moment taking place which soon led to a terrible war.

SECTION 8.—*The Crimean War*

There were four leading causes for the Crimean war : (1) the natural impatience of Russia at the exclusion of her warships by treaty (p. 478) from access to the Mediterranean out of the Black Sea, and her consequent longing to acquire Constantinople at the first chance ; (2) the fact that a large part of the Sultan's subjects were of the Slav race and professed the Russian form of Christianity ; (3) the jealousy of Russian ambition, which had become traditional in English policy ; and (4) the fact that Napoleon, now emperor of the French, needed the prestige of successful war to maintain an ill-gotten throne.

The ostensible cause of quarrel was of the most trifling character. A long-standing dispute between the monks of the Latin Church—the form of Catholicism, that is, professed by the western nations—and those of the Greek or Russian Church, as to the custody of the holy places in Jerusalem ceded to the Christians by Turkey, suddenly assumed grave importance. In May 1850 Napoleon, wishing to conciliate Western Catholicism, asserted the right of France to put the Latin monks in full possession. This claim the Czar Nicholas I. repudiated, the more strenuously because his jealousy was aroused by the emperor's assumption of the title of Napoleon III.,¹⁵ as if there had been no breach in Napoleonic rule ; just as in reckoning the years of Charles II.'s reign the Commonwealth was ignored. Turkey was unable to frame a satisfactory compromise ; and Nicholas saw the chance of at last dividing the inheritance of the 'sick man.' A personal friend of Aberdeen, he reckoned upon British co-operation. But Aberdeen declared that the 'sick man' might fairly be expected to recover ; and in the end Stratford de Redcliffe, a man of iron will, and an earnest opponent of Russian ambition, was sent as ambassador to Constantinople. The question of the holy places was now in a fair way of settlement ; but he found that Nicholas was pressing his right to protect the Christians in Turkey, and he persuaded the sultan to reject this demand. The Russians hereupon invaded the Danubian provinces of Wallachia and Moldavia, which they had long coveted ; and Stratford de Redcliffe, in reply, on his own responsibility ordered the British fleet to the Dardanelles, thus making Great Britain a principal in a quarrel with which ostensibly she had nothing to do. The country generally was in perfect sympathy with him. Aberdeen himself, indeed, strove earnestly for peace ; but the

¹⁵ The so-called Napoleon II., the emperor's designs was shared by England. The first volunteer rifle corps and died young. This jealousy of the was formed at Cheltenham in 1852.



MAP
to illustrate the
CRIMEAN WAR.



The Alma River runs into the Black Sea about 15 miles North of Sebastopol.

----- March of allies from N. to S. of Sebastopol.

----- Previous March of Russians evacuating Sebastopol.

----- Railway made in 1855.

English army and siege batteries

French

Turks

A Charge of Heavy Brigade under Scarlett.

Light Cavalry

Longmans, Green & Co, London & New York.

nation, utterly unprepared though she was for a great war, was possessed by the war fever. Forty years had passed since Great Britain had known ^{war feeling} war on a great scale, and her only traditions were those ^{in England} of the glories of the Peninsula and Waterloo. Thus we drifted into war with a light heart. Turkish troops under Omar Pasha crossed the Danube and defeated the Russians; thereupon the Russian fleet in the Black Sea attacked and destroyed the Turkish squadron at Sinope, November 30, 1853. The war-cry in England, sedulously encouraged by Napoleon, grew irresistible. Without waiting to secure the alliance of Austria, an ultimatum was sent to Russia, to be contemptuously rejected by the czar. Had we been content to blockade the Black Sea and the Baltic, and thereby ruin the Russian trade, peace might have been gained without bloodshed. Unhappily it was decided to cripple Russia by destroying Sebastopol, her great arsenal and dockyard on the Crimea, the peninsula which juts out from Southern Russia into the Black Sea. Lord Raglan, who, when Lord Fitzroy Somerset, had lost an arm at Waterloo, had the command, while Marshal St. Arnaud led the French. Meanwhile Omar Pasha had driven the Russians from the Danubian provinces, the campaign being remarkable for the gallant defence of Silistria by a few English officers under Captain Butler, who, like Clive at Arcot (p. 386), had thrown themselves into the place at the critical moment.

On September 18 the joint expedition landed to the north of Sebastopol. On the 20th was fought a great battle on the little river Alma, ^{The Alma} fifteen miles from the city, the brunt of which fell upon the English, and which resulted in a complete victory. Had the invaders marched straight forward, Sebastopol, practically indefensible, must have fallen at once. Prince Menschikoff indeed, the Russian commander, evacuated the place with the main part of the army and retired into the interior. But a fatal delay took place, during which Korniloff, and the great engineer Todleben, the one commander who made a reputation in this war, were able to make the fortress as strong as it had previously been weak. The allies had meanwhile carried their whole army from the north to the south of Sebastopol, nearly intersecting Menschikoff's retreat, and established themselves on the Chersonese; and in October a tremendous bombardment was opened both by land and sea.

This movement of the allies had left the communications of Sebastopol with Russia on the north unhindered; and very soon troops were poured in, until the garrison, 120,000, was twice as large as the besieging force. They therefore determined to take the offensive. The English, forming the right of the line of siege, drew

their supplies from the little harbour of Balacava, due south of Sebastopol; while the French rested on the sea at Kamiesch. The valley at the mouth of which Balacava is situated rises to a causeway called the Woronzoff Road, upon which we had redoubts garrisoned by Turks, and thence slopes downwards towards the north to the Tchernaya, the river running from east to west into the harbour of Sebastopol. On October 25, covered by batteries on the north and east, the Russians attacked the redoubts, drove out the Turks, and then crossed into the southern valley, hoping to surprise Balacava. Here they were brilliantly and successfully charged by the Heavy Brigade, under General Scarlett, and driven off. Then the British tried to recapture the redoubts; and this led to the still more famous charge of the Light Brigade of 600 men—'magnificent, but not war'¹⁶—against the Russian batteries supported by many thousands of troops in the northern valley, in which two-thirds of their number went down under a terrific cross-fire. In the end the Russians remained masters of the heights commanding the southern valley. Ten days later another attack with 60,000 infantry was made upon the Inkerman hill, the extreme right flank of the British, held by Pennefather and a few thousand men. This stern fight proved the individual prowess of the British soldier. It was a struggle, carried on for the most part in a fog so dense that combined action was impossible, of men who acted on their own responsibility, small groups, with or without officers, holding their own for hours against the most desperate odds—

'Groom fought like squire, squire like knight,
As fearlessly and well.'

French reinforcements at length came up, and the enemy were hurled back with a loss of 12,000 men; the English had lost 2,600, the French 1,800.

Then followed the terrible winter of 1854, during which our men suffered the extremity of hardship, aggravated by disease so grievous that in four months 9,000 men died, and by gross mismanagement at home. So bitter was the outcry against this mismanagement that the Aberdeen ministry was forced to resign, and Lord Palmerston's ministry became prime minister. His vigorous conduct of affairs rapidly changed the outlook. A railway was made from Balacava to the camp; ample supplies and reinforcements were sent out.

¹⁶ The result of a blunder in the instructions. The masterly charge of the Heavy Brigade has occupied less attention, because Lord Tennyson wrote at the time a poem on one and not on the other. He has since (1886) written on the charge of the Heavy Brigade.

Pélissier, a general of great vigour, succeeded to the command of the French, hitherto in incapable hands; Sardinia and Sweden joined the alliance. The English however lost Lord Raglan, worn out by his labours. He was not a great commander, but firm and patient, and skilful in keeping on good terms with the French. In September 1855 the French took the Malakoff, a redoubt which commanded Sebastopol; our men however failed in two gallant assaults upon the Redan. At

Capture of length the south side of Sebastopol fell into our hands.¹⁷ The
Sebastopol Czar Nicholas had meanwhile died. Napoleon was eager for peace, since he had now no more to gain by war. In 1856 a

Congress of congress was held at Paris. The claim of Russia to inter-
Paris fere in the internal affairs of Turkey was given up; the

Black Sea was neutralised, the Russians agreeing to leave there neither arsenal nor more than six small ships of war;¹⁸ the navigation of the Danube was declared free. Moldavia and Wallachia,¹⁹ with Servia, obtained their freedom, though Turkey was permitted to maintain garrisons in Servia; and there was a general restoration of conquests. At the same time the Declaration of Paris—the only permanent result

Declaration of the war—decided a vexed question of international law.
of Paris Henceforward (1) privateering was forbidden; (2) a neutral flag was to cover an enemy's goods, except contraband of war; (8)

neutral goods, unless contraband, were no longer to be liable to seizure, even in an enemy's ship; (4) blockades, in order to be binding, must be effective—that is, maintained by a force sufficient to prevent access to the enemy's coast.

The war had been signalised by many gallant deeds.²⁰ But one name above all others stands out for remembrance and honour, and it is that of a woman. Unprepared as England was for

Florence in nothing did this unpreparedness show itself so
Nightingale war, calamitously as in the hopeless mismanagement of the hospitals which had been established at Scutari, on the southern side of the Black Sea. If was reckoned that of those who came thither sick or wounded, two out of five died. At length, upon the invitation of Sidney Herbert, the secretary for war—an invitation which crossed her own offer—Florence Nightingale, a lady who still lives to carry on her devoted and beneficent work, went out with a

¹⁷ During a great part of the siege Sebastopol had been subject to a terrific fire—the *feu d'enfer*—from several hundred guns. At the time of greatest slaughter, 1,200 men were slain by this fire every day.

¹⁸ A condition so intolerable to a nation like Russia could not be expected to be permanent. In 1871

Russia threw it over, and at the Conference of London in that year Europe acquiesced.

¹⁹ Shortly united into the kingdom of Roumania under a Prussian prince.

²⁰ Especially the defence of Kars in Asiatic Turkey by Colonel Williams and a few English officers in command of a Turkish garrison.

band of nurses. Through her skill, her patience against professional jealousy, her indomitable courage in the face of all adverse circumstances, and, not least, her proud humility, she worked such a change in those houses of death that they were before long as healthy as the best hospitals at home.²¹

SECTION 4.—*India and the Mutiny*

In India war and annexation had gone on continually since the time of Warren Hastings. Oude, Delhi, and the country between the Jumna and the Ganges; the Terai, or jungle and pasture land of Nepaul, on the slopes of the Himalayas, inhabited by the Ghoorkas; and the Central Provinces, with Bhurtpore; had come directly or indirectly under our sway; while we had gained influence among the Sikhs, or 'disciples,'²² a warlike race in the north-west of the Punjab. A war with Burmah had given to the company Assam, Arracan, and Tenasserim, and a British resident was placed at Rangoon, the capital.²³

Under the governorship of Lord Auckland (1836-42), European politics definitely influenced the course of affairs in India. Aware of the ill-will of England, Russia determined to threaten our Indian frontier, and spared no pains to secure influence in Persia. Then Afghanistan, ruled over by Dost Mohammed, became the object of attention from both Russia and England. In 1837 Alexander Burnes was sent to Cabul, the capital of Afghanistan, on a political mission; while Persia, under Russian influence, and with Russian help, laid siege to Herat, the gate of India. At the same time Russia gained such influence over Dost Mohammed at Cabul, and his brother at Candahar, that Auckland resolved to replace them by Shah Soojah, a dispossessed ruler of the country. Meanwhile, an English subaltern officer, named Eldred Pottinger, had thrown

²¹ No more perfect tribute exists in the English language than that to Florence Nightingale in Kinglake's *History of the Crimean War*. There is an admirable short history of this war by Sir E. Hamley, in *Events of our own Times*.

²² The Sikhs were a religious sect, disciples of Nanak, a preacher of Lahore in the latter part of the fifteenth century. They maintained the abolition of caste, the unity of the Godhead, and purity of life, and were distinguished for the steadiness of their religious fervour.

²³ The memorable rule of Lord

William Bentinck was one of reform and non-intervention. Economy was studied; the natives were encouraged to take part in the government; the cruel custom of suttee, by which the favourite wife of a dead man was bound to sacrifice herself on her husband's funeral pile, was abolished, as was also the sect of Thugs, whose religion was murder. Under Metcalfe, who followed Bentinck, the press was freed, natives and British were put on an equal footing before the law, through the action of Macaulay the historian, a member of the Council of India; and English instruction was given to the natives.

himself into Herat (1839) at the critical moment (pp. 886, 491), and had so ably conducted the defence that the siege was raised, and the Russian forces were withdrawn.²⁴ Two ways were open to Auckland—through the Khyber Pass to Cabul, or through Scinde, by the Bolan Pass, to Quetta and Candahar. To secure the latter, Scinde was overrun: in May 1839 the Bolan Pass was forced, and Shah Soojah enthroned at Candahar. Then the army moved by Ghuznee, which was gallantly stormed, to Cabul, 300 miles north of Candahar, where Dost Mohammed surrendered; and by August 1841 the land appeared quiet.

The army, under Macnaghten, was now encamped in fancied security outside Cabul, while Sir Robert Sale occupied Jellalabad with a small force. Suddenly the populace in Cabul, angered by the licentious conduct of the English, rose: Alexander Burnes and Captain Broadfoot were murdered; the movement spread like wildfire; the stores, carelessly guarded, were carried off by a surprise; and thus, in a moment, the whole army—4,500 fighting men, with 10,000 camp followers—was rendered helpless. In December a treaty was made with Akbar Khan, the son of Dost Mohammed, by which the English gave up their arms on condition of being allowed to retreat unharmed to Jellalabad. The story of that retreat is one of the most awful in British history. An omen of what was to come was seen in the murder of Macnaghten. The helpless mass entered the gorges, and were there shot down by Afghans, who lined both sides of the pass. Out of nearly 15,000 who left Cabul, *one* sorely wounded man—Dr. Brydon—reached Jellalabad. Then followed, from January to March 1842, Sale's heroic defence of that place against Akbar Khan. The besieged had to contend not merely with the enemy, but with nature. An earthquake suddenly destroyed their ramparts, leaving the place defenceless: fortunately this happened at night, and by morning the desperate energy of Sale and his little garrison had partly repaired the damage. Then, boldly sallying out against five times his number, Sale utterly routed Akbar Khan. Before long General Pollock forced the Khyber Pass to his relief, while Nott occupied Candahar. Afghanistan was then evacuated, Dost Mohammed restored, and this rash and ill-conducted war at length brought to an end.

In 1843 Lord Ellenborough, who had succeeded Auckland, resolved to annex Scinde, that the valley of the Indus and the Bolan Pass

²⁴ Russia again made a diversion on this side during the Crimean war; but the peace put an end to these operations, and after that there was no anxiety from that quarter.

might be in our hands. A great victory was won by Sir Charles Napier with but 2,800 men, against ten times his number, at Meeanee, close to Hyderabad. Hyderabad was then taken, and Scinde annexed. For this aggression there was slight excuse; but the results to Scinde itself, which had been a prey to misrule, were very beneficial. Under Napier's rule it became a flourishing and contented part of our empire. Then an opportunity was found for attacking the Rajah of Gwalior: two battles were fought, and a British resident, with practically supreme power, was placed in Gwalior.

Under Sir Henry Hardinge, Ellenborough's successor, a still greater extension of our rule was carried out. As in Scinde, the disorder which ruled in the Punjab, the land of five rivers, gave an excuse for interference. Two great victories, at Moodkee, on December 18, 1845, when Sir Robert Sale was slain, and at Ferozeshah, three days later, when we lost 2,415 men; two under Sir Harry Smith, at Durrumkote and Aliwal, on the Sutlej, in January, 1846; and the glorious victory of Sobraon, on February 8, when Gough stormed an entrenched camp of great strength, and almost annihilated the Sikh army, completely broke their power. The Punjab was overrun, and a large part annexed; and the Maharajah Dhuleep Sing, with Sir Henry Lawrence as resident, was left with a diminished sovereignty—Sir John Lawrence governing the annexed territory. But in 1848 a revolt of the Sikhs took place, and Dalhousie, who had succeeded Hardinge, was forced to a second Sikh war. On January 13, 1849, a desperate battle at Chillianwalla resulted in something like defeat for Gough; but he redeemed the check brilliantly at Gujerat on February 21. The Punjab was then entirely annexed, and was governed with great success by a commission headed by the two Lawrences. In 1852 a fresh expedition to Burmah took Rangoon, and annexed further territory; while, in 1856, Oude, whose position practically cut the British power in two, was taken entirely into our hands. And with this the occupation of India was completed. The rule of Dalhousie, like that of Bentinck, was memorable for other things than war. It saw the first railways and the first telegraphs, the wide development of canals for navigation and irrigation, the establishment of native schools, and the opening of the civil service to competition. In 1856 he was succeeded by Lord Canning, younger son of the great statesman.

Our empire in India had been possible because the inhabitants were not one race, but many races, a diversity of which successive governors had availed themselves with great skill. And not only so, but the armies with which our battles were fought were largely com-

posed of the natives themselves. Out of a total force of 280,000 men, 235,000 were natives, the best being Sikh and Ghoorka regiments. Of these, five-sixths were Hindoos, the followers of Brahmin; the rest were Mohammedans. Among both the binding feeling was that of caste—and the loss of caste, from the failure, even involuntary, to observe one of a thousand religious obligations, the most dreaded calamity. In 1806 a serious mutiny had broken out when some regulation of dress threatened this loss of caste; another in 1824, and a third in the second Burmese war, when the soldiers were ordered to cross the sea. In 1856 Canning ordered that none should be permitted to enlist who would not consent to do so. Thus the sepoy was obliged either to abandon a military life, the only one for which he cared, or to risk the loss of his caste.

Many other causes led to the great outbreak. The very improvements effected by Dalhousie and Bentinck induced the belief that all Indian customs were to be swept away. Every dethroned prince was of course an enemy. The sepoys serving in Oude had special reasons for discontent. A prophecy ran that after a hundred years the British drums should be heard no more; and a hundred years had now passed since Plassey.²⁵

A curious circumstance, whose effects were unforeseen, was skilfully used by the main instigators of revolt to bring all this discontent and these aspirations to a head in Bengal. During the Russian war an improved firearm—the Minié rifle, so-called from its inventor—had been introduced. The cartridges were greased, that they might be the better rammed down; and one end had to be bitten off in order to set the powder free. It was asserted that the grease used was the fat of swine and cows—the one hateful to the Mohammedans, the other the sacred animal of the Hindoos—and that the British were bent on thus destroying the Hindoo caste and on defiling the Mohammedans. Several small mutinies occurred at once, which were easily crushed. But in the spring of 1857 secret signals passed throughout Bengal, by means of *chipâtis*, or small cakes, and in May a serious revolt took place at Meerut. The ring-leaders were captured and sentenced to severe punishment; but the next day the 3rd Native Cavalry rose and released the prisoners, killed their officers, and marched straight upon Delhi, where there was no European regiment, and where they were joined by the native troops, who butchered an English chaplain and fifty women and children. Many isolated bodies of English, living in fancied security, suffered the same fate. Sir Henry Lawrence, with a small

²⁵ Malleon's 'Indian Mutiny,' in *Events of Our Own Times*.

garrison, defended Lucknow, and was killed there. Cawnpore, where there were 1,000 English, chiefly women and children, was besieged at the same time by the Mahratta Nana Sahib, the adopted son of a dethroned prince, who for a long time had been on intimate terms with the English officers, but who thought himself injured by the refusal of a pension. This man displayed a hideous cruelty. On June 27 it was agreed that the English should be allowed to sail down the river to Allahabad. But no sooner were they on the boats than the natives opened fire upon them, and the larger part died there. The remainder were reserved for a worse fate. They were brought back to Cawnpore, and there butchered in cold blood; their bodies were thrown into a deep well.

Luckily Sir John Lawrence was at Lahore, and his Sikhs were faithful. They did not observe caste, and the people of Oude were ancient foes. He at once sent them forward to Delhi under Nicholson, while European troops hurried from Alipore and Meerut. A victory was won outside the city, which was then besieged. Reinforcements came up, and on September 20 Delhi was taken by storm. Unhappily Nicholson was killed.

Lucknow meanwhile was holding out, though in dire distress. Neill, with a fusilier regiment, followed by Havelock with two more which had been serving in Persia, came by forced marches through the burning Indian sun to the relief; and on September 25 they forced their way through the streets to the residency, where the little band held out, Neill falling gloriously in the fight. But the situation was desperate, for they were still surrounded by many times their numbers. At length, on November 17, Sir Colin Campbell, sent out in haste from England, finally came to the rescue. Then reconquest went steadily on; the last battle was against the Queen of Jhansi, who had been treated by Dalhousie as harshly as Nana Sahib, and who died fighting in the plains of Gwalior.

The horrors of the mutiny had been terrible; those which followed its suppression were still more so. The British were frenzied at the murders of their wives and children; they had been living under the stress of incessant peril; and they now gave full rein to a ferocious, if natural, desire for revenge. Officers vied with men in deeds of such a character that it was rare to find anyone who had participated in them willing in a year or two to talk on the subject. One man alone—the governor-general—tried hard to place a check upon this savage spirit of revenge; and he earned the nickname of ‘Clemency Canning.’

The mutiny had one important result. The long controversy of

the relation of the government of India to the crown was at length brought to an end. In 1858 the East India Company, with the court

of directors and board of control, was abolished by parliament, and the government of India transferred to the crown. India is now managed by a secretary of state in England, a viceroy, and a council of fifteen, of whom eight are appointed by the crown, and seven in the first instance by the directors, vacancies in their places being filled up by the council itself.

Meanwhile we had been at war with China also. The Chinese laws forbade the use of opium, which we insisted upon introducing; and in 1840 a short war ensued. The result was the acquisition of Hong Kong, the opening of other ports to our ships, the payment of nearly 4,500,000*l.* to Britain and 1,250,000*l.* to the opium merchants. In 1856 the quarrel again broke out, nominally over the seizure of a smuggling ship carrying the British flag. We were completely in the wrong, as we had been in 1840; but 'Our country, right or wrong' was Palmerston's motto, and war followed. Palmerston was attacked by Peelites, Whigs, Conservatives, and the Manchester peace party under Bright and Cobden. An appeal to the country however sent him back to power with a large majority, and before his government fell two years later the Chinese had been again crushed.

Principal Dates

	A.D.		A.D.
Penny postage	1840	Repeal of the Corn Laws	1845-1849
Peel prime minister	1841	Death of Peel	1850
Union of Canada	1841	Ecclesiastical Titles Bill	1851
War in Afghanistan	1841-1842	Great Exhibition	1851
Chartism	1837-1848	Death of Wellington	1852
Anti-Corn-Law League	1838	Crimean War	1854-1856
First Irish Famine	1845	Chinese War	1856
Second Irish Famine	1846	Indian Mutiny	1857

SECTION 4.—*Emigration and Colonisation*

Emigration had for many years been increasing as the demand for agricultural labourers fell off, and facilities for locomotion increased; the peasants found it more advantageous to emigrate than to go to the towns, and government helped them to do so. Between 1840 and 1846, 246,000 went to Canada, and 862,000 to the United States; the number settling in Canada afterwards decreased, while nearly 1½ millions, a large proportion being Irish, sailed between 1850 and 1859 for America. The West Indies had rapidly declined since the world's markets had been thrown open to us at the peace of

1815. But on the other hand Great Britain was founding an empire in the southern hemisphere. The Cape of Good Hope, which had come into our hands in 1806, had a mild climate and a soil suited for cattle rearing. Thither the government had in 1819 sent some 5,000 emigrants, and the experiment had been successful. Between 1819 and 1849 wars had taken place with the native Kaffirs, in each of which the British border was pushed further east, until it reached the Kei river. But besides the Kaffirs, we had to deal with the slave-owning Boers, or original Dutch settlers, who, after the passing of the Slavery Abolition Act, left the Cape and settled in Natal and the Orange River Free State. In 1843 we annexed Natal to the Drakenberg range, and by 1856 possessed 240,000 square miles, with a population of 270,000.

Australia had been visited by Spanish, Dutch, and Portuguese two centuries before an English foot was placed upon it, but no settlement had been left. In 1769 an expedition was sent out to Otaheite by government to observe the transit of Venus across the sun's disc—an event of rare occurrence, the observations on which enable astronomers to correct the calculation of the sun's distance from the earth. The commander was Captain Cook, who was instructed to explore the Australian coast after completing the scientific work at Otaheite. In 1770 he landed on New Zealand, and in 1771 reached Botany Bay on the coast of Australia, close to where Sydney now stands. He took possession of the east coast in the name of George III., and gave it the name of New South Wales, from the shape of the coast line. The first use made of the discovery was to establish a penal settlement; and the first colonists were 800 convicts, who founded Sydney in 1788. But the soil was sandy and unproductive; and it was only by the free gift of land, labour, tools, and food to emigrants, and by granting lands to released convicts, that it was found possible to maintain a settlement. In 1821 New South Wales, with Norfolk Island and Van Diemen's Land, contained 40,000 persons; but the colony was likely to perish through the prevailing drunkenness and immorality. At the end of the eighteenth century, however, sheep rearing was introduced by a settler named McArthur, and the future of Australia was assured. In 1856 there were in New South Wales 265,000 persons and nearly eight million sheep. Melbourne was founded in the early years of the nineteenth century. In 1826, to put an end to an attempt of the French to settle, Great Britain claimed the whole continent. The progress of Western Australia was very slow; but by 1840 Southern Australia held 15,000 persons and 200,000 sheep. In 1825 Tasmania, or Van

Diemen's Land, was made a separate colony. Victoria was carved out of New South Wales in 1851, and Queensland in 1859. In 1838 New Zealand was acquired, largely by purchase from native chiefs, and made a colony by royal charter in 1840. This has led to the rapid extinction by war, drink, and vice, of the Maories—a splendid people of the Malay race. The Tasmanians have entirely disappeared, under circumstances of atrocious cruelty on the part of the conquering race.

The main drawback to the prosperity of Australia and New Zealand was the transportation system, which filled the colony with the worst characters from England, and kept down the wages of free labour. So loud was the outcry that in 1840 transportation to New South Wales ceased. But Van Diemen's Land and Norfolk Island were the more

Abolition of transportation flooded, until the evil grew so intolerable that the government in 1849 attempted to ship the convicts to the Cape.

There the colonists rose almost in rebellion, and forced them to re-embark. A league was then formed throughout Australia for ridding the colony of this blighting system. In 1853 transportation ceased to Van Diemen's Land, though Western Australia still received convicts; and in 1869 the system was abolished throughout; henceforward penal servitude has been carried out in our prisons at home.

In 1842 New South Wales was placed under a legislative council appointed jointly by the crown and the inhabitants; and in 1849 Victoria, Southern Australia, Van Diemen's Land, and Western Australia had similar constitutions. In 1850 power was given them to alter their form of government. New South Wales followed by the others, at once reproduced the home system—an elective house of commons and a second chamber nominated by the crown. The discovery of gold in 1851 brought a rapid influx of people; in 1850 Australia had 265,000, in 1890 over three millions.

CHAPTER IV

VICTORIA.¹ 1858-1897

SECTION 1.—*The Second Reform Bill. Irish Legislation*

ON January 14, 1858, an attempt which barely failed of success was made in the streets of Paris to murder Napoleon III. The plot had been hatched in London, and the French inveighed against England in the most unmeasured and menacing terms. To satisfy French feeling Palmerston brought in a bill for

Conspiracy to Murder Bill

¹ Molesworth's *History of England*, and McCarthy's *History of Our Own Times*, 'The Reign of Victoria.'

punishing such conspiracies ; but the vapouring of the French caused so strong a feeling in the country that a hostile amendment was carried, and Palmerston resigned.² Lord Derby then became prime minister for the second time, with Mr. Disraeli as chancellor of the exchequer. The life of their ministry was short. A new reform agitation, for the extension of the franchise, which was led with his utmost eloquence by John Bright, compelled the government to move, and Disraeli brought in a bill which would have extended the franchise certainly, but in such a way as to give votes almost entirely to the classes naturally conservative. It was at once contemptuously thrown out ; parliament was dissolved ; a Liberal majority was returned, and in June a vote of no confidence was carried.³ Palmerston came back

to office, with Mr. Gladstone, who was constantly growing more progressive, as chancellor of the exchequer, and with Lord John Russell, Sidney Herbert, Cornwall Lewis, Lord Granville, and the Duke of Argyle, in the cabinet also. A reform bill upon radical lines was at once brought in by Lord Russell ; but Palmerston was no lover of reform, the country was lukewarm, and the bill was withdrawn. The chief interest was in Mr. Gladstone's

Free trade
treaty with
France

budget, and in the new treaty of commerce with France, mainly the work of Cobden. By this great free-trade measure Great Britain abolished totally all duties upon French manufactured goods, and reduced those on French brandy and wines, the former to that paid on colonial brandy ; France in return reducing her duties upon coal and all articles of staple British manufacture.⁴ In 1859 the property qualification for members of parliament laid down in Anne's reign (p. 850) was abolished.

Mr. Gladstone's proposal to repeal the paper duty led to a quarrel with the Lords, who by rejecting it asserted their right to alter a money bill, a right never put forward since the time of

Interference
of the Lords
in money
bills

Charles II.⁵ Lord Palmerston at once introduced three resolutions rejecting this claim ; and, to overcome the Lords' resistance, the repeal of the duties was 'tacked' to the budget (p. 838), so that both must be passed or rejected together. The

² Another practical expression of English feeling was shown in the universal formation of volunteer rifle corps (p. 490, note).

³ Several events testifying to national security, wealth, and advancement had meanwhile taken place. The Social Science Association, the South Kensington Museum, the British Museum Reading Room, the Art Treasure

Exhibition in Manchester, the Handel Festival, the 'Great Eastern' steamship, and the laying of the Atlantic cable—all belong to this period. The National Gallery was founded in 1824.

⁴ In 1866 a similar treaty was made with Austria.

⁵ Airy, 'The English Restoration and Louis XIV.', in *Epochs of Modern History*, p. 172.

Lords have never again revived the claim. During this session a bill for the abolition of compulsory church rates (p. 476) was rejected by the casting vote of the speaker; in 1861 it was defeated by two votes. It was finally passed in 1868.⁶

In 1861 broke out the disastrous civil war between the Northern and Southern States of America, which resulted in the abolition of slavery there. It began with the repudiation by South Carolina, followed by that of ten other states, of the authority of the Union. The Northern States were free, the Southern slave-owning. The Northern States, too, were largely manufacturing, the Southern were not; and questions regarding tariffs embittered, if they were not the principal cause of, the quarrel. Formal neutrality was observed by all other nations; but in Great Britain, while the working men were steadfast in their sympathy with the North, there was among the upper classes, in spite of the question of slavery, a strong feeling for the South; and we were within a short distance of war when a British steamer, the 'Trent,' was stopped by a Northern cruiser and four Southern gentlemen forcibly carried off. Our law officers declared this action illegal; the country was vehemently excited; but the North hesitated to give way, and we made ready for instant war. Their final acquiescence in our demands was due not only to their own necessities, but to the conciliatory though firm language of the despatches, in the framing of which the Prince Consort⁷ had a large share.

The southern coasts being strictly blockaded, no cotton could reach England. The result was that the trade of Lancashire was at a standstill, and 800,000 wage-earning men were robbed of their livelihood. Their behaviour was an honour to the whole working class. Had we joined the South, their sufferings would have ended. But they raised no cry for this; they knew that the cause of the South was the cause of slavery. Soon help flowed in; every class gave according to its means; servants gave from their wages, children from their pocket-money; even the Northern States sent subscriptions; and thus the people, though in enforced idleness, were kept supplied until the end of the war. The stoppage of the cotton supply had another result. It was felt that we must no longer

⁶ War broke out in 1859 between France united to Sardinia and Austria. The latter was expelled from North Italy; while in the south Garibaldi freed Sicily and Naples. In 1861 Victor Emmanuel was proclaimed king of Italy by an Italian parliament, Austria still retaining Venice, and the

Pope being master of the church states. France acquired Savoy.

⁷ Unfortunately he died, December 11, 1861, at the early age of forty-one. In 1863 the Prince of Wales was married to the Princess Alexandra of Denmark.

Lancashire
cotton
famine

be dependent upon a foreign nation for the material of a staple trade; and cotton growing in India was therefore rapidly developed.

Though formally neutral, we had become seriously compromised. The 'Alabama' and other vessels built at Birkenhead were fitted out as The 'Alabama' of the remonstrances of the American minister. The damage done to the commerce of the Northern States by these cruisers was very great; but they were in no condition to enforce redress at the time. It was not until 1872 that arbitrators were appointed by Great Britain, America, Italy, Switzerland, and Brazil, to settle the claim against us. They finally decided that we should pay 3,000,000*l.* In that year a second arbitration took place regarding the island of San Juan, which was given against us in favour of the United States.

During 1864 motions were introduced to make the county and borough franchises the same (p. 467), and to lower the latter. They were defeated through Palmerston's opposition; but they served to emphasise Mr. Gladstone's position as future leader of an advanced Liberal party.⁸ At the general election of 1865, which was fought upon the question of reform, he was in his own phrase 'unmuzzled' by being defeated for the University of Oxford, his old constituency, and elected instead in South Lancashire. The death of Lord Palmerston cleared the way; Lord Russell became prime minister, and Mr. Gladstone chancellor of the exchequer. Two other notable men died in this year—Cobden, and Abraham Lincoln, president of the United States, the latter by the hand of an assassin.⁹

In March 1866 Mr. Gladstone brought in his reform bill; but a

⁸ Up to 1861 Austria was the leading power in Germany. But in that year William I. became king of Prussia, with Count Bismarck for his chief minister. Bismarck's idea was to make Prussia the head of a united German empire. In 1864 Austria and Prussia joined to wrest from Denmark the provinces of Schleswig and Holstein, whose inhabitants were of German birth. Our sympathy was with the Danes, and Lord Russell used menacing language, the failure to back which by deeds brought upon him from Lord Derby the taunt that his policy was 'meddle and muddle.' In 1866 Austria and Prussia quarrelled. A war, lasting only six weeks, ended in a complete victory for Prussia, in a great measure through the excellence of her 'needle

gun,' an improved rifle. Austrian influence in North Germany was completely destroyed. By the treaty which followed, Italy acquired Venice (p. 503, *note*), Rome still remaining in the hands of the Pope.

⁹ The agitation against the liquor traffic had begun in 1852; the United Kingdom Alliance was founded in 1858. A bill was introduced in 1864, providing that if two-thirds of the ratepayers were in favour of prohibiting the sale of intoxicating liquors in any town, such sale should be illegal; but it was rejected. The contest has gone on unremittingly ever since. On March 20, 1891, the High Court of Appeal decided that magistrates may refuse to renew a licence to a public-house at their discretion.

party was formed against it amongst the Liberals themselves, led by Mr. Lowe and Mr. Horsman, which will always be remembered less for its success than for the name of 'Adullamites' applied to its members by Mr. Bright, because, like David, they had called into their cave of Adullam 'everyone that was in distress and everyone that was discontented.' Hereupon Lord Derby and Disraeli again came into office. Urged on by the general feeling that the question must be settled somehow—by the activity of the Reform League, by the action of the mob, who, forbidden to meet in Hyde Park, tore down the railings and held their meeting in despite of authority, and by great meetings in the large towns, especially one in Birmingham addressed by Mr. Bright—Disraeli determined, in spite of the resignation of three members of the government—Lord Cranborne (the present Marquis of Salisbury), Lord Carnarvon, and General Peel—to bring in a bill himself. Like the last, it was drawn mainly to suit the Conservatives: (1) in the boroughs the franchise was to be given to any householder of two years' occupation who also paid rates. This cut out all lodgers, as well as the very large class called 'compound householders,' who lived in houses of a poor class where the landlord compounded for the rates, paying on a lower scale than that paid by persons inhabiting houses of a higher rental; (2) in the counties no one occupying a house of less rateable value than 15*l.* was to have a vote—thus even the better class of agricultural labourers were unenfranchised; (3) any one who paid sufficient direct taxation, and who was also an occupier paying rates, was to have two votes; (4) there were then what Mr. Bright called the 'fancy franchises'—votes were given to university graduates, or those who had passed the senior middle-class examinations, ministers of all denominations, barristers, attorneys, medical men, and certificated schoolmasters, and to any one who on July 1 in any year, and during the two years immediately preceding, had had a balance of 50*l.* in savings-banks, or had during the past year paid 20*s.* for assessed tax and income-tax; (5) towns with less than 7,000 inhabitants were to be partly disfranchised, and the members thus set free were to be distributed chiefly among the counties, not among the large towns. This bill looked very different after it had undergone Mr. Gladstone's manipulation. Disraeli, not having a majority in the house, accepted alterations one after another, which transformed it into a thoroughly Liberal measure. The dual vote and the exclusion of the compound householder were both abandoned, the latter alteration admitting four times as many as Disraeli had intended; lodgers paying 10*l.* a year rent had the fran-

The bill altered by the Liberals

chise given them; the fancy franchises vanished; the county franchise was lowered from 15*l.* to 10*l.*; the two years' compulsory residence in boroughs was reduced to one; the standard for partial disfranchisement was raised from 7,000 to 10,000; and Manchester, Liverpool, Birmingham, and Leeds each got an additional member. The Lords however succeeded in an important alteration: in places returning three members each voter was to have two votes, so that the candidate of the minority might gain a seat; the lodger franchise was also raised to 12*l.* With these changes a Radical measure was passed perforce by a Conservative minister. The Reform Bill of 1832 had given political power to the middle classes; this gave it to the working classes.¹⁰

To the intelligence and enterprise of the working men themselves, more than to any legislation or help from outside, is due a vast improvement in their condition. Foiled on the side of Chartism, they had, as early as 1843, turned to Socialism (p. 481); and the history of co-operation is worthy of a place beside the greatest legislative triumphs of the era of reform. In that year twenty-eight Rochdale weavers, calling themselves the 'Rochdale Equitable Pioneers,'¹¹ subscribed a sovereign each to set up a shop where, for ready-money only, they might buy good groceries at a reasonable price, dividing the profits among themselves. Soon their numbers increased; the grocer's shop developed into a store for the sale of all that workmen wanted; and libraries and news-rooms were attached. Then came corn mills, a manufacturing society, land and building societies, all on the same principle. In 1861, instead of twenty-eight members with a capital of 28*l.*, the Rochdale society had 8,500 members, with a capital of 125,000*l.* After the beginning of the American war their example was followed in all the great manufacturing towns. In 1852 the 'Industrial and Provident Societies Act' gave these societies power to carry on trade as general dealers, to sell, that is, to non-members; another act in 1862 enabled them to hold more than a single acre of land, to which they had hitherto been restricted. The principle of co-operation has spread from the working class to every other, until co-operative stores and co-operation generally—the idea of Robert

¹⁰ The worst form of the no-popery spirit was excited at this time, chiefly in the Midlands, by the lectures of one Murphy, an itinerant lecturer, against the Catholic priesthood and the confessional. He was aided by the undoubted growth of Ritualism in the Church of England, and by the English working man's dislike of the Irish, who

lowered wages (p. 485, note). His pamphlet, 'The Confessional Unmasked,' had a very wide sale, and his coarse invectives attracted vast audiences, which for two or three days subjected Birmingham to a repetition of the Gordon riots.

¹¹ Molesworth, *History of England*, iii. p. 206.

Owen (see page 481, *note*)—have become common throughout the country.

Unhappily there is a less pleasant side of the life of the working classes at this time to be mentioned. Trades-unions were common in England. Some were reasonably administered; but in others obedience to the rules of the union was enforced, or men unwilling to join were compelled to do so, by coercion which often took the form of outrage, and more than once of murder. In Sheffield especially, under the direction of Broadhead, the secretary to the union, who himself gave evidence, an appalling tyranny existed, which was disclosed in 1867 before a government commission.

In February 1868 Lord Derby resigned the premiership to Mr. Disraeli.¹² Ireland was once more to absorb attention. The Fenian¹³ Association, which began in 1858, and came to its height during the American war—was led by Stephens, one of the agitators of 1838. A plot to seize Chester Castle was betrayed, and the leaders arrested. An attempt to rescue them as they were being driven through the streets failed, but a police sergeant was killed in the fight, September 18, 1867. On December 10 a barrel of gunpowder was exploded against the wall of Clerkenwell prison, a large part of which was blown down; but the authorities had had warning of an attempt to rescue the Fenian prisoners confined there, and the plan miscarried. These events led Mr. Gladstone to resolve to clear away one great Irish grievance; and on April 30, 1868, his resolution that it was expedient to disestablish and disendow the Irish Church was carried against the government. Mr. Disraeli therefore appealed to the country, when a majority of 120 was returned pledged to support Mr. Gladstone, who at once became prime minister, and a great period of legislative vigour began.

Mr. Gladstone in power. Disestablishment of the Irish Church

On March 1, 1869,¹⁴ he brought in his bill; and on July 26, after a brilliant debate in the House of Lords, the last in which

¹² In 1867 an expedition was sent under Sir Robert Napier to Abyssinia, to secure the release of some British subjects whom King Theodore had imprisoned. In April 1868 it reached Magdala, the capital, after a toilsome march of four hundred miles through a mountain country destitute of roads. There a battle was fought, in which the wild rush of the Abyssinians was foiled by the discipline and rifles of the English: 500 of them were killed, and 1,500 wounded. Of the English not a man was killed, and only nineteen

wounded. Magdala was then stormed, King Theodore dying by his own hand. Sir Robert Napier was made Lord Napier of Magdala.

¹³ The word 'Fenian' is of uncertain meaning, said to be the name for the ancient Irish soldier.

¹⁴ In 1869 imprisonment for debt, unless it were fraudulent, was abolished. An Endowed Schools Bill was passed, to apply more usefully the funds of the numerous schools endowed in early days, which had been largely diverted from their proper objects.

the veteran Lord Derby took part, it received the royal assent. From January 1, 1871, the Irish Church, with the ecclesiastical courts, ceased to exist. On February 15, 1870, Mr. Gladstone brought in his second great Irish measure. His Land Bill gave Irish Land facilities to tenants to purchase their holdings, and to Act landlords to prepare waste lands for occupation; awarded compensation to the tenant for eviction and for improvements he had made on his farm; and to the landlord for damages done by the tenant. After a prolonged struggle of six months, this bill became law.

At the same time there was passed, through the energy of Mr. Forster, the great Education Act of 1870, which remedied the educational destitution of the poorer classes.¹⁵ It provided that in all localities where the school supply was inadequate to the population, school boards should be compulsorily formed to build and manage new schools provided out of the rates. These boards were empowered to frame bye-laws, compelling the attendance of the children, and settling at what age they might leave school. As proposed by Mr. Forster, they might also aid existing schools, and give whatever religious instruction they thought well in their own; and over this arose the principal debates. Dissenters, and those who held that no religious instruction at all should be given in rate-aided schools, opposed it with all their force; while they further maintained that the aid already given to voluntary schools ought to be discontinued so long as religious instruction was given in them. At length a compromise was arranged. In the board schools enabling children to be withdrawn from it when desired by the parents; nor might any religious catechism or distinctive formulary

¹⁵ For the state of public education up to 1839, see p. 474. Until that time the grant had been 80,000*l.* a year for building school houses only. In 1840 compulsory inspection was introduced. A training college for teachers was founded at Battersea, 1840, and was aided with a Government grant. In 1843 this was handed over to the National Society, and the British and Foreign Society established another at Borough Road. By 1846 the annual education grant had risen to 1,000,000*l.* In that year the system of pupil teachers was begun; and it was stipulated that schools receiving grants should be properly furnished and supplied with books and apparatus. By 1859 there were 6,878 certificated teachers, and 15,224 pupil teachers. This progress was the work of Sir

James Kay Shuttleworth, secretary to the Committee of Council. In 1861 the Duke of Newcastle's commission inquired into the state of things; and Mr. Lowe, then vice president, issued the revised code, by which the system of payment by individual pass was stamped upon the system. It has only been got rid of in 1890. Matters remained thus until 1870. In 1860 the public grant, spent on 920,000 children, was 750,000*l.*; in 1885, from parliament and rates, 4,000,000*l.*, spent on 3,500,000 children.—*The Reign of Queen Victoria*, vol. ii., 'Schools,' by Matthew Arnold. Finally, a bill has now (1891) been passed by Lord Salisbury for making elementary education free—for abolishing, that is, the fees hitherto paid by the children; the state giving an equivalent to the managers,

be used. The voluntary schools were to go on receiving grants, but they too were to have a 'conscience clause;' and the children attending the day school were not to be forced to attend the Sunday school. The school boards were to be elected by the ratepayers. Board and voluntary schools were alike placed under the Committee of Council, with the same curriculum of subjects, and under the same system of compulsory inspection. No school might receive from parliament more than the greater of two sums, 15*s.*, afterwards increased to 17*s.* 6*d.*, per head, or the amount of income voluntarily raised. This act was passed in July, 1870.

In 1871¹⁶ the system by which officers in the army purchased their commissions was abolished by royal warrant without the passing of an act of parliament. The religious tests required at Oxford and Cambridge for degrees were swept away, and the main clauses of the Ecclesiastical Titles Act (p. 487) repealed. Voting by ballot—one of the Chartist demands—was passed to discourage both bribery and intimidation. In 1873 a Supreme Court of Judicature was established for hearing appeals from the Queen's Bench, the Common Pleas (p. 71), and the Court of Chancery.

To complete his scheme of Irish reform, Mr. Gladstone in 1873 brought forward his Education Bill, by which he provided for a great university at Dublin, from which the teaching of theology and moral philosophy should be excluded. But both Catholics and Protestants disliked it, and it was beaten by three votes. Since Mr. Disraeli was unprepared to form a government, Mr. Gladstone retained office for a short time, during which tests were abolished at Trinity, Dublin, as they had been at the English universities. Then he dissolved parliament, January 1874. A widespread Conservative reaction declared itself. The country was tired of far-reaching legislative reforms, during which many vested interests had been touched. The Liberals were routed, and Mr. Disraeli came, not only into office, but, for the first time, into power, with a majority of 60 votes.¹⁷ Lord Cairns was lord chancellor; Lord Derby—son of the old earl—foreign secretary; Lord Salisbury, secretary for India; Lord Carnarvon, colonial secretary; Mr. Cross,

¹⁶ During 1871 attention was almost entirely engrossed by the tremendous struggle between France and Prussia, which ended in the downfall of Napoleon, the siege and capture of Paris, the horrors of the Commune, the loss of Alsace and Lorraine by France, and the union of all the German states under the King of Prussia, who became emperor, and in the establishment of a

republic. During the war Italy, under Victor Emmanuel, took Rome, and the temporal power of the Pope was abolished.

¹⁷ A little war with the Ashantees, a fierce and warlike tribe on the Gold Coast of Africa, was successfully finished at Coomassie by Sir Garnet Wolseley just after the dissolution.

home secretary; Mr. Hardy, secretary for war; Mr. Ward Hunt, first lord of the admiralty; and Sir Stafford Northcote, chancellor of the exchequer. Mr. Gladstone now gave up the leadership of the Liberal party to Lord Hartington, and for a time took no part in public affairs.

SECTION 2.—*Anti-Russian Policy. Home Rules*

The government was not happy in domestic legislation. The Public Worship Act, which was passed in consequence of the complaints against ritualism, and which gave power to aggrieved parishioners to invoke the interference of the bishop against the clergy, and to the bishop to act, led to little good and to much ill-feeling. In 1874 Samuel Plimsoll, who had espoused the cause of merchant seamen against the carelessness and selfishness of many shipowners, brought in a bill making provisions for their safety. It was thrown out; but the government felt bound to introduce a bill of their own. This however they soon dropped; when Mr. Plimsoll expressed his disappointment so vehemently as to cause him to be reprimanded by the speaker, but to excite also such strong sympathy in the country that the government had again to take up the bill in 1875 and carry it through.

Mr. Disraeli then suffered another rebuff. A circular was issued to captains in the navy, which practically recognised the right of a slave owner to recover a fugitive slave, even when he had sought refuge on a British ship. So sharp and immediate was the outcry from the whole country that the circular had at once to be withdrawn. One most useful act was passed by Mr. Cross—the Artisans' Dwellings Act—enabling local authorities to pull down houses unfit for human habitation, and rebuild on the sites. During this parliament flogging in the army was thanks to the advantage taken by its opponents of every form of obstruction allowed by the rules of the House of Commons—abolished.

It is for his foreign policy that Mr. Disraeli's last government will be remembered. It was full of dramatic strokes, prompted by the feeling that Great Britain was especially a great eastern power. In 1875 the country was surprised by the announcement that we had purchased from the Khedive of Egypt, for 4,000,000*l.*, his 400,000 shares in the Suez Canal, thus acquiring a direct proprietary right in the highway to India. Then the Prince of Wales was sent on a tour through

Public Wor-
ship Regula-
tion Act

Merchant
Seamen's
Act

The Slave
Circular

Artisans'
Dwellings
Act

Disraeli's
foreign
policy.
India

India, with every circumstance of pomp. India itself was put more directly under the secretary of state, and Lord Lytton was sent out to carry through the government policy. In 1876 the title of 'Empress of India' was, at the prime minister's wish, assumed by the queen.

Of the designs of Russia in the east Mr. Disraeli had the suspicion traditional to English politicians (p. 490) in a pronounced form. The blood and treasure poured out in the Crimean war seemed indeed to have been spent in vain. The rule of Turkey over her subject races was detestable, while Russia, growing stronger every day, was keenly alive to the advantages given her by the discontent thus created. Insurrections against Turkey broke out in Turkey Bosnia and Herzegovina in 1875; and Austria, Germany, and Russia now united in a remonstrance, to which Great Britain reluctantly assented. When however a fresh memorandum was proposed, which threatened force in case Turkey failed to carry out her promises, Mr. Disraeli refused to accede to it, and it was therefore dropped.

Then followed an insurrection in Bulgaria, suppressed by Turkey with atrocities which aroused a tempest of indignation in England. Nothing so weakened Disraeli in popular estimation as the apparent levity with which he treated the accounts of these outrages—'coffee-house babble,' he called them—though abundantly verified. Mr. Gladstone came from his retirement to head the burst of feeling. But his demand that Turkey should leave her Christian provinces, 'bag and baggage,' produced a counter-reaction. The object of Lord Beaconsfield—for Mr. Disraeli had now accepted a peerage—was to maintain Turkey as a barrier to Russia; while Mr. Gladstone, looking to her incapacity for decent rule, would have let her power disappear.

Before long Servia and Montenegro declared war against Turkey. Servia was soon conquered, but Montenegro held out until Russia insisted on an armistice. Then a conference of all the powers took place at Constantinople, when the influence of England had the same effect in strengthening the resistance of Turkey to Russian demands as in the time preceding the Crimean war (p. 490). On April 24, 1877, therefore, Russia declared war, and crossed the Balkans, and at the same time invaded Asia Minor. The campaign was bitterly contested, but the fall of Plevna to the genius of Todleben, the defender of Sebastopol, after a siege of the most murderous character, laid open the road to Constantinople.

Intense excitement now reigned in England;¹⁸ and it was made

¹⁸ It was at this time that a famous political nickname was invented, referring to a speech of Lord Beaconsfield at the Lord Mayor's banquet in

still keener when Lord Beaconsfield ordered the British fleet to the Dardanelles, and obtained a vote of 6,000,000*l*. Had Russia persisted in going to Constantinople war would have followed. When news came that Russia had made a treaty with Turkey at San Stephano, containing conditions which Beaconsfield would not accept, orders were sent to bring a large contingent of Indian troops to Malta.¹⁹ Lord Derby and Lord Carnarvon disapproved of so warlike a policy, and resigned, Lord Salisbury now becoming foreign minister.

Russia gave way, and in 1878 a congress was held at Berlin, where Lord Beaconsfield and Lord Salisbury represented Great Britain. They returned with the famous 'Peace with Honour,' which caused a fresh burst of enthusiasm among the Conservatives, during which the mob broke Mr. Gladstone's windows. Roumania, Servia, and Montenegro were made independent states. North of the Balkans there was formed a tributary, but self-governing state, of Bulgaria; south of the Balkans a new kingdom of Eastern Roumelia; the Grecian boundary was rectified. Russia received Ardahan, Kars, and Batoum in Asia Minor, with Bessarabia; Austria took Bosnia and Herzegovina. Two secret treaties concluded by Great Britain and Russia and Turkey respectively, previously to the congress, had secured this agreement. By the first, Great Britain had promised to Russia the lands she now gained; by the second, she guaranteed the Asiatic possessions of Turkey in return for the island of Cyprus.

But Beaconsfield was bent upon a further check to Russia. As in former days (p. 494), it was believed that she had designs upon India, and her influence in Afghanistan was dreaded. An armed mission was therefore sent in 1879 to Shere Ali at Cabul, and both Cabul and Candahar were occupied. A paper treaty with Shere Ali's son, Yakoob Khan, gave us some strong places, forming a 'scientific frontier.' Then, following precisely the course of former events (p. 495), came the revolt, the murder of Cavagnari, the head of the mission, and of his escort, followed by a fresh invasion and occupation of Cabul.

1876, in which he intimated that England was well prepared, if need be, for a prolonged conflict. There was a music-hall song much in vogue, the burden of which was:

'We don't want to fight; but, by Jingo,
if we do,

We've got the ships, we've got the
men, we've got the money too.'

The name 'Jingoes' was at once affixed

by their opponents to supporters of Lord Beaconsfield's policy.

¹⁹ This raised a very important constitutional objection. The Mutiny Act settles each year the number of soldiers to be maintained in England. But, if this could be overridden at any moment, without parliamentary consent, by drawing upon India, the safeguard provided by law was rendered nullity.

During 1879 there was war in South Africa also. North-east of Natal, divided from it by the Tugela river, were the Zulus; beyond them lay the Transvaal, inhabited by the Boers, or Dutch settlers (p. 500). The latter quarrelled with two great Zulu chiefs—Cetewayo and Secocœni—and were beaten. To guard against the danger of the Zulus overrunning the Transvaal, and then falling upon Natal, we annexed the former, and Sir Bartle Frere went out as lord high commissioner. War broke out with Cetewayo, and on January 22, 1879, our troops suffered a severe defeat by the savages at Isandhlwana, followed by the memorable stand of Lieutenants Chard and Bromhead at Rorke's Drift—one of the most brilliant episodes in the history of the British army—and redeemed soon afterwards at Ulundi by Lord Chelmsford. Cetewayo was then hunted down and imprisoned. In one of the skirmishes of this war the Prince Imperial, son of the Emperor Napoleon, who was serving with our army, was killed.

In March 1880 Beaconsfield dissolved parliament. Just as the country had under Mr. Gladstone been weary of reform, so now it was weary of surprises and a spirited foreign policy, and it was disappointed at the failure in domestic legislation. The High Churchmen in especial were alienated by the Public Worship Regulation Act. In his famous 'Midlothian campaign,' Mr. Gladstone roused feeling to the utmost against both the foreign and domestic policy of the government, with the result that at the general election the Liberals were in a majority of 106. Mr. Forster now became Irish secretary; Lord Granville, foreign secretary; Lord Hartington, secretary for India; and Mr. Chamberlain, president of the Board of Trade. Lord Beaconsfield died in the following year, and Lord Salisbury became the Conservative leader.

The last parliament had seen the beginning of that revival of the agitation for the repeal of the union with Ireland, or Home Rule, which, working at first through the Land League, and led by Mr. Parnell, has largely occupied the years that have since passed. In his hope of removing the wrongs of which Ireland still complained, Mr. Gladstone at once brought in and carried a new Land Act, by which a commission was formed to fix rents for fifteen years in advance; and through its operation rents were largely reduced. Unhappily, the agitation was accompanied with such a revival of murder and outrage that it was felt necessary to pass a fresh Coercion Act; and upon the issue of a manifesto advising tenants to pay no rent at all, Mr. Parnell and other

Irish leaders were arrested. But before long Mr. Parnell was released, against the advice of Mr. Forster, who thereupon resigned.

More than once Mr. Forster had narrowly escaped assassination. His successor, Lord Frederick Cavendish, was less fortunate. Within a few days of his arrival he was murdered in broad daylight in the Phoenix Park, with Mr. Burke, the under-secretary. A fresh and severer Coercion Act was at once passed.

Meanwhile our annexation of the Transvaal had led to war with the Boers, who inflicted a serious defeat upon our troops under General Colley at Majuba Hill; and, though their ultimate subjugation was certain, Mr. Gladstone resolved to restore their independence. Afghanistan, also, was evacuated.

Affairs in Egypt, which, as commanding the route to India (p. 510), was of the utmost importance to us, and where Great Britain and France exercised a dual control, the Khedive being only a nominal ruler, then demanded attention. An Egyptian officer named Arabi Pasha headed the army in a national movement, and held the forts of Alexandria. The English fleet straightway bombarded Alexandria, and destroyed the forts; and then Arabi was defeated in the field by Sir Garnet Wolseley at Tel-el-Kebir. He was soon afterwards taken prisoner, and sent to Ceylon, where he is still living (1892).

The warlike Arabs of the Soudan, a southern province on the Nile, long subject to Egypt, now revolted under a religious adventurer called the Mahdi. An Egyptian army, led by General Hicks and a few other English officers, marched against them, but was cut to pieces in the desert, scarcely a man remaining alive. The government then ordered the Khedive to abandon the Soudan; and General Gordon, the type in these days of Christian chivalry, who knew the country and its people well, volunteered to go and effect the peaceful withdrawal of the garrisons. He reached Khartoum, the capital of the Soudan, but was there besieged by the Mahdi. A force was sent to his rescue, which fought its way through the desert almost to within sight of Khartoum, only to find that it had already fallen, and that the gallant Gordon was dead.

There had been an unfortunate delay in sending out the relieving force, and this sad ending of a heroic enterprise caused a great outburst of feeling against the government.

The Reform Bill of 1867 had not extended the household franchise to the agricultural labourers, and this was now remedied in 1884. The Lords however refused to pass the bill

Murder of
Lord
Frederick
Cavendish
and Mr.
Burke

War with
the Boers

Bombard-
ment of
Alexandria

Battle of
Tel-el-Kebir

The Soudan

Death of
General
Gordon.

Enfranchise-
ment of the
agricultural
labourer

until a conference between the leaders of the two parties had drawn up a scheme of redistribution of seats, which also provided for splitting the large constituencies into several divisions, each returning one member.

In 1885 Mr. Gladstone was defeated on the budget and resigned. On most questions however the Liberals were in a majority; Lord Salisbury therefore advised a general election in the autumn, which resulted in the return of 332 Liberals, 250 Conservatives, and 85 Irish members pledged to Home Rule, who formed under Mr. Parnell a separate party which acted without reference to either Liberals or Conservatives. At first they joined the Liberals, and Lord Salisbury's government was at once defeated. Mr. Gladstone came into power for the third time.

Suddenly the country was startled by hearing that he had become convinced of the necessity of Home Rule. This was the first time that an English minister had been bold enough to espouse the principles of O'Connell, and the effect was not unlike that produced when Peel proposed the repeal of the Corn Laws. In April 1886 he brought forward two great measures—one to effect Home Rule, and one to buy out the landlords, in order that the tenants might become owners of their holdings, at a valuation based upon the rents fixed by the Land Commission (p. 513). The Home Rule Bill proposed: (1) an Irish parliament in Dublin to consider all matters except those reserved for the imperial parliament—except, that is, foreign affairs, the control of the army and navy, and the customs; (2) that for questions which do not concern the constitution of the Irish government, Irish peers and members should no longer sit in the parliament at Westminster; (3) an executive responsible to the Irish parliament; and (4) that Ireland should still contribute to imperial expenses.

These drastic proposals added a fourth to the three parties into which the House of Commons had been divided since the Parnellites resolved to act independently; for the Marquis of Hartington, Mr. Bright, Mr. Chamberlain, Mr. Goschen, Sir Henry James, Sir George Trevelyan, Mr. Courtney, and a number of less prominent Liberals refused to follow their chief. The bill was consequently rejected by 341 votes to 311. A dissolution immediately followed, and the country pronounced distinctly against 'Separation,' returning 316 Conservatives and 78 Liberal Unionists, to 191 Liberals and 85 Irish Home Rulers. Mr. Gladstone thereupon resigned and the Marquis of Salisbury became Prime Minister for the second time. The Liberal Unionists, while

giving him general support, would not at first take any actual share in the government. Early in 1887, however, Mr. Goschen accepted the position of Chancellor of the Exchequer.

Soon afterwards Mr. Arthur J. Balfour, Lord Salisbury's nephew, was appointed Chief Secretary for Ireland. To the Plan of Campaign,³⁰ in which the disappointment of the Home Rulers found expression, he opposed a vigorous policy described by his party as the 'enforcement of law and order,' and by others as 'coercion.'

Parliament, having almost run its normal course, was dissolved in 1892. In the elections the Conservatives lost nearly 50 and the Liberal Unionists nearly 80 seats, and Mr. Gladstone was called upon to form his fourth Administration. Next year he introduced a second Home Rule Bill, differing from the first in several important respects, particularly in its proposal to retain the representation of Ireland in the British Parliament. After much debate the Bill was carried in the House of Commons by 847 to 804, but the House of Lords rejected it summarily by 419 to 41.

Contrary to expectation Mr. Gladstone did not resign, but in 1894 advancing years and failing eyesight compelled him to relinquish public life. The Earl of Rosebery succeeded him in office, but hardly in power. The majority for the Government was so small in the House of Commons, and the majority against it was so large in the House of Lords, that effective legislation was impossible, and in 1895 advantage was taken of an adverse vote on a small question of supply to dissolve.

The elections were an unparalleled triumph for the 'Unionists,' giving them a majority of 150. The alliance between the two sections of the party had been growing closer since 1886, and the Government leaders of the Liberal Unionists did not hesitate now to take office with the Conservatives. Lord Salisbury's third Ministry included Mr. Chamberlain, the Duke of Devonshire (formerly the Marquis of Hartington), Lord James (formerly Sir Henry James), the Marquis of Lansdowne and others, who, prior to 1886, were followers of Mr. Gladstone.

In the year 1888, with the hearty concurrence of all parties, the Local Government Act was passed. This important measure gave

³⁰ By the Plan of Campaign tenants, instead of paying to their landlord the rent agreed upon, were to pay to the National League what they considered

a fair sum, and the League would hand this over to the landlord if he would accept it as payment in full.

the people of each county full control of their own affairs, the administrative functions hitherto discharged by the justices of the peace in Quarter Sessions being transferred to County Councils elected on a popular franchise. A complementary Act was passed in 1894, vesting in District Councils the powers exercised by Rural and Urban Sanitary Authorities, and entrusting to Parish Councils the management of the civil business transacted by vestries. In 1891 nearly all the elementary schools became free, the managers accepting a state grant of 10s. per child in lieu of fees.

In June, 1887, the Jubilee of Victoria's accession was celebrated with great rejoicing, and ten years later her 'Diamond Jubilee' was made the occasion of a pageant of Imperial unity. The Queen drove in state from Buckingham Palace to St. Paul's, attended by the Colonial Premiers and escorted by representatives of the Army and Navy, and detachments from the local forces of every British possession. The thousands who joined in the magnificent procession, and the millions who lined the streets to view it, though differing in race, in language, and in religion, were one in their honour to the noble life and gentle rule of the Queen, one in their loyalty to the Empire under which all enjoy equal liberty and equal protection.

Vast as are the bounds of that Empire, they are constantly expanding, almost automatically. The savage and semi-savage kings living beyond its confines are constantly provoking wars, which generally end in their defeat, and, sooner or later, in the annexation of their domains. This is what happened in 1885 with Thee Baw, King of Upper Burmah. In 1889, a charter, granted to the British South Africa Company, brought within the sphere of our influence an immense tract on both sides of the river Zambesi. This tract (generally called 'Rhodesia,' after Mr. Cecil Rhodes, the moving spirit of the Company) is inhabited by the mild Mashonas and the fierce Matabeles. In 1893 the Matabeles invaded Mashonaland and came into collision with both the Chartered and the Imperial police. A punitive expedition was thereupon sent into Mashonaland, and Buluwayo, the chief town, was taken.

In 1895 there was a disputed succession in Chitral, a small native state on the north-west frontier of India. Mr. Robertson, the British agent, who supported one of the claimants was shut up in the capital by the other. His little band defended themselves with great gallantry till relieved by General Low.

The same year a force was sent into Ashantee to compel King

Prempeh to abolish human sacrifices, discontinue the slave trade, and consent to the presence of a Resident at Coomassie. Prince Ashantee Henry of Battenberg, one of the sons-in-law of the Queen, went out as a volunteer. He was struck down by fever and died in January 1896. Four years earlier, the Duke of Clarence, Deaths eldest son of the Prince of Wales and second in the direct succession to the throne, died on the eve of his marriage.

Dates.

	A.D.		A.D.
Commercial Treaty with France	1860	Upper Burmah annexed	1886
American Civil War	1861	Queen Victoria's Jubilee	1897
Reform Bill	1867	County Councils established	1888
Fenians	1867	British South Africa charter	1889
Disestablishment of Irish Church	1869	Death of the Duke of Clarence	1892
Irish Land Act	1870	Second Home Rule Bill	1893
Elementary Education Act	1870	District and Parish Councils established	1894
Merchant Seamen's Act	1875	Mr. Gladstone's retirement	1894
Purchase of Suez Canal shares	1875	Chitral	1895
Russo-Turkish War	1877	Ashantee	1895
Treaty of Berlin	1878	Death of Prince Henry of Battenberg	1896
Wars in Afghanistan and Natal	1879	Queen Victoria's 'Diamond Jubilee'	1897
War with the Boers	1881		
Egypt and the Soudan	1882		
Agricultural Franchise	1884		
First Home Rule Bill	1886		

Summary of the Era of Reform.

With the year 1897, the sixtieth year of the reign of the Queen, who in 1898 still rules over an empire in every quarter of the globe, we close this brief account of the Era of Reform, of the war against privilege, which began afresh at the accession of George IV. Three Reform Acts, in 1832, 1867, and 1884, have transferred political power from the great landowners and the wealthy purchasers of rotten boroughs, first to the middle classes, and then to the great mass of the people. The church, the law, the army have all felt the beneficial touch of reform. Every department of local government has been taken from the hands of irresponsible or corrupt bodies, and, like that of the country at large, has been placed in those of the people to whom that government is all-important. A criminal code defaced by revolting cruelty and injustice has been rendered effective by the removal of its most odious features. The law no longer encourages pauperism, nor permits the growth of a population in ignorance as gross as that of the beasts that perish. The light has been thrown upon the sorrows of the poor, and the worst of the hardships to which mothers, and children barely removed from infancy, were subject, have been put down by an advance of that humane feeling which had already been roused on behalf of animals.

The nation has wiped away the stain of slavery for which, in a special degree, it was responsible; it had taken the lead in the accursed traffic, and it has redeemed itself by taking the lead in abolishing it. While an established church has been maintained, the injustices which made it hated have been swept away; the universities are open to all, without respect of creed; a free press has been brought within the reach of the poorest man; commerce has been set free. The relation between labour and capital, the question of centuries, the question that was first fought out by the peasants of England in the reign of Richard II., is still far from settlement. But at least the artisan is now free to combine with his fellows in the interests of labour; at least he is politically equal with his employer; he can vote with him without fear of intimidation at the poll; he can sit by his side on the benches of the House of Commons, and prove his title to respect. Ireland, the disgrace of centuries, is still our reproach; but no thinking man is now without the sense of duty to Ireland, and remorse for what the bad government of past centuries has brought upon her and upon us. In England, in Scotland, and in Wales the whole face of life has been altered. And, as must ever be the case in any self-governing race, with every advance in freedom, with every fresh expression of trust in the people, has come an advance in order, in happiness, and in self-respect.

Chief Dates of the Era of Reform.

	A.D.		A.D.
Reform of the Criminal Code	1823	Church Reform	1836-1840
Repeal of the Navigation Act	1823	Repeal of Corn Laws	1846-1849
Repeal of Test and Corporation Acts	1828	Free Trade with France	1860
Catholic Emancipation	1829	Second Reform Bill	1867
Reform Bill	1832	Disestablishment of Irish Church	1869
First Education Grant	1833	Irish Land Act	1870
Slave Trade Abolition Act	1833	Elementary Education Act	1870
First Factory Act	1834	Agricultural Franchise	1884
New Poor Law	1834	Mr. Gladstone proposes Home Rule for Ireland	1886-1893
Municipal Reform	1835	County Councils established	1888
Reduction of Newspaper Tax	1836	District and Parish Councils established	1894
Commutation of English Tithes	1836		
Penny Postage	1840		

APPENDIX I.

A SUMMARY OF THE LEADING FACTS.

B.C. 55–A.D. 409. I. ROMAN MILITARY OCCUPATION.

- B.C. 55** Julius Cæsar effects his first landing at Pevensey.
- 54** Julius Cæsar effects his second landing, and receives the submission of Cassivellaunus.
- A.D. 43** Aulus Plantius and Vespasian conquer the south and east of Britain.
- 50** Ostorius Scapula overthrows Caractacus, and partially conquers the south-west.
- 61** Suetonius Paulinus conquers the north and west, and subdues the Druids in their stronghold of Anglesey. 70,000 Romans perish in a revolt of the east and south under Boadicea, who is defeated by Paulinus with a loss of 80,000, and then poisons herself.
- 78** Julius Agricola continues the conquest in Wales.
- 81** Agricola draws a line of forts from the Forth to the Clyde to secure his conquest of the Lowlands of Scotland.
- 84** Agricola overthrows the Picts under Galgacus with a loss of 10,000 men at the foot of Mons Graupius. His fleet makes the circuit of North Britain, and even reaches the Orkneys.
- 120** The Emperor Hadrian builds a wall from the Solway to the Tyne, and garrisons it with 80,000 men.
- 210** The Emperor Severus loses 50,000 men in a campaign in the North, and again strengthens the wall of Agricola.
- 303** A persecution breaks out under Diocletian, and St. Alban becomes the First British Martyr.
- 409** The last legionaries are recalled from Britain to defend Italy.
- 429** The Britons unaided win the 'Hallelujah Victory' over the Picts and Scots.

THE TRIBES OF THE ANCIENT BRITONS.

- In the South : The Cantii lived in Kent.
 The Belgæ lay west of the Cantii as far as Dorset and Somersetshire
 The Damnonii lay west of the Belgæ to Land's End.
- In the East : The Cassii were on the left bank of the Thames west of London.
 The Trinobantes occupied Essex.
 The Iceni spread from the Stour to the Humber.
 The Brigantes extended from the Humber to the Tyne.
- In the West : The Silures lay between the Wye and the Dee.
 The Ordovices dwelt among the Welsh mountains.
- In the Midlands : The Coritavi }
 " " The Cornabii } inhabited the centre of the island.
- In the North : The Mæatae roamed north of the Tyne.
 The Caledonii lay north of the Mæatae.
- The Mæatae and Caledonii together were known as Picts.
- N.B.—In the above list Kent, Dorset, &c. merely indicate the districts inhabited by the tribes; the names themselves did not originate till Saxon times.

THE ROMAN ROADS.

- Watling Street** led from London North by St. Albans, Fenny Stratford, Northampton, and Tamworth to Wroxeter, near Shrewsbury.
- Ermine Street** ran from London to Lincoln by Colchester and Cambridge
- Foss Way** led from Cornwall to Lincoln, crossing Watling Street at High Cross, between Coventry and Leicester.
- Icknield Street** probably ran from Bury St. Edmunds to Salisbury and Southampton.

THE FOUR CLASSES OF ROMAN TOWNS IN BRITAIN.

- (1) **9 Colonizæ**, granted to Roman veterans with the laws, customs, and officers of Rome itself. Richborough, London, Colchester (Camolodunum), Bath, Gloucester, Caerleon-on-Usk, Chester, Lincoln, Chesterfield.
- (2) **2 Municipia**, with their own magistrates and laws and all the rights of Roman citizens. St. Albans (Verulamium), York.
- (3) **10 Towns possessing the Latin right**, where there was an annual election of magistrates.
- (4) **Stipendiary Towns**, governed by Roman officials and paying tribute; these formed the majority of the towns in Roman Britain.

449-1066. II. SAXON ENGLAND.

- 449** The Jutes under Hengist and Horsa land at Ebbsfleet.
- 449-500** Various bands of Jutes, Saxons, and Engles land in Britain.
- 520** The West Saxons are overthrown by the British at Badbury.
- 552** The West Saxons storm the British stronghold of Old Sarum.

- 577** By their victory at Deorham the West Saxons cut the British in Wales off from their brethren in Cornwall.
- 591** Ceawlin, king of the West Saxons, is defeated at Wansborough, and all further progress by Wessex is stopped for two centuries.
- 597** Augustine introduces Christianity into Kent.
- 600-635** The several English kingdoms struggle for supremacy.
- 613** Ethelrith of Northumbria wins the battle of Chester, and cuts off the British of Wales from those of the North.
- 617** Edwine is acknowledged King of Northumbria.
- 626** Edwine holds for a time the supremacy over his rivals of Mercia and Wessex.
- 627** Edwine is converted and becomes the champion of Christianity.
- 633** Penda of Mercia, the champion of paganism, overthrows Edwine at Hatfield.
- 635** Oswald, Edwine's successor, at Heavensfield crushes the last great effort of the British, in alliance with Penda. Aidan settles in Lindisfarne on the invitation of Oswald.
- 642-652** Oswy succeeds Oswald on his defeat and death at Maserfeld, and reunites Northumbria.
- 655** Penda is defeated and slain by Oswy at Winwaed. Mercia accepts Christianity.
- 664** Oswy declares for conformity with Rome at the Synod of Whitby. Theodore is made Primate and reorganises the Church.
- 670** Death of Oswy.
- 757-796** Offa, the great king and lawgiver, rules Mercia.
- 787** The Danes appear for the first time.
- 802-839** Egbert, the 8th Bretwalda, is King of Wessex.
- 835** Egbert crushes a revolt of the Britons of Cornwall at Hengestdun, and is acknowledged 'King of the English.'
- 851** The Danes in 850 ships make their first serious invasion, and are defeated at Aclea.
- 866-871** The Reign of Ethelred I., the grandson of Egbert.
- 871** The Danes attack Wessex, but are routed with great loss by Ethelred and his younger brother Alfred at Ashdown.
- 871-901** The reign of Alfred.
- 877** Alfred drives the Danes under Guthrum from Exeter.
- 878** Guthrum is reinforced and compels Alfred to retire to Athelney. Alfred utterly routs the Danes at Ethandune. By the peace of Wedmore Guthrum accepts Christianity, and the Danes are confined to the Danelaw.
- 884** The Danes renew their invasion, and are driven from London and Rochester.
- 893-4** The Danes renew their invasion in Kent and Essex.
- 895** Alfred completely routs the Danes on the Lea, and enjoys peace for the rest of his reign.
- 901-925** Edward 'The Unconquered' succeeds Alfred.
- 919** Ethelrith, 'The Lady of the Mercians,' captures from the Danes the boroughs of Derby, Leicester, and York.
- 924** Edward is acknowledged King of all Britain.
- 925-940** Ethelstan succeeds his father Edward.
- 937** Ethelstan defeats a league of Scots, British, and Danes at Brunanburgh.

- 940-946 **Edmund succeeds his brother Ethelstan, conquers Strathclyde, and gives it in fief to Malcolm I. of Scotland.**
- 946 **Edmund is murdered.**
- 946-955 **Edred is elected king, by English, Welsh, and Danes assembled in a Witanagemot. Dunstan, Abbot of Glastonbury, is his chief adviser.**
- 947 **A revolt of the North under Wulfstan of York is suppressed.**
- 955 **Edred dies 'Cæsar of the whole of Britain.'**
- 955-959 **Edwy becomes king, and immediately creates a new ealdormany of Mercia, which declares for his brother Edgar. During these troubles Dunstan is forced to flee.**
- 959-975 **Edgar 'The Peaceful' is sole king.**
- 969 **Dunstan is recalled and made primate. He reforms the Church.**
- 975-979 **Edward II., 'The Martyr,' is murdered after a short and stormy reign.**
- 979-1016 **The reign of Ethelred II., 'The Unredig.'**
- 988 **The death of Dunstan.**
- 1001 **'Danegeld' to the amount of 24,000*l.* is paid.**
- 1002 **A great massacre of Danes is carried out on St. Brice's Day.**
- 1003-1013 **Sweyn, King of Denmark, in revenge, ravages the country.**
- 1013 **Sweyn is acknowledged king: Ethelred escapes to Normandy.**
- 1014 **Sweyn dies. Ethelred is recalled, but Canute is chosen king by the Danes.**
- 1016 **Ethelred dies and Edmund Ironside is elected king by the people, and Canute by the overawed Witan. The Danes inflict a crushing defeat on the English at Assandun. Peace is made at Olney on the basis of the peace of Wedmore. The death of Edmund Ironside.**
- 1016-1035 **Canute is king, and adopts an English policy.**
- 1020 **Godwine, Earl of Wessex, marries into the Royal Family**
- 1025 **Canute goes on a pilgrimage to Rome.**
- 1031 **Malcolm II. swears allegiance to Canute for Scotland.**
- 1035-1040 **Harald 'Harefoot' rules in the North, and Hardicanute, the rightful heir, in the South, by arrangement of Godwine and the Witan.**
- 1040-1042 **Hardicanute is sole king on the death of Harald.**
- 1042-1066 **Edward III., 'the Confessor,' succeeds; a king of Norman sympathies. Godwine, holding a policy of England for the English, revolts, and is outlawed.**
- 1053 **Godwine returns, and Edward is forced to yield. Stigand is made Primate.**
- 1053 **Godwine dies, and Harold, his son, becomes Earl of Wessex.**
- 1066 **(January to October) Harold is king. Harold defeats Tostig at Stamford Bridge. William the Norman lands at Pevensey, and Harold is defeated and slain at Senlac.**

1066-1154. III. ANGLO-NORMAN KINGS AND FEUDALISM.

1066-1067. THE REIGN OF WILLIAM THE CONQUEROR.

- 1067 **William returns to Normandy. The English revolt against the oppression of Odo, Bishop of Bayeux, and FitzOsbern.**
- 1068 **William returns, takes Exeter, and crushes the revolt in the South-west, and then forces Edgar and Morkere in the North to submit.**

- 1069 Edgar renews the revolt in the North. William devastates Yorkshire.
- 1070 Archbishop Stigand is deposed, and Lanfranc made Primate. Lanfranc proceeds to remodel the Church, and in particular founds Spiritual Courts in which alone Ecclesiastical cases are tried.
- 1070-1071 The English, under Hereward 'the Wake' and Morkere, make their last stand on the Isle of Ely, but are overcome after a long resistance.
- 1072 Malcolm submits to William, and does homage for Scotland.
- 1074 Waltheof, the last great English noble, and other earls conspire against William while he is reconquering Maine.
- 1076 Waltheof is executed.
- 1077 Robert, William's eldest son, revolts against his father.
- 1079 William and Robert meet at the fight of Gerberoi, and are reconciled.
- 1082 Odo meditates securing the papacy by force, but is thrown into prison by William.
- 1083 Queen Matilda dies. A fresh revolt breaks out in Maine. A danegeld of 72 pennies on each hide of land is levied, to assist in the collection of which a general survey of the country is ordered. The result is the compilation called 'Domesday Book' (1085-1086).
- 1086 The Salisbury Decree makes every freeman the king's as well as his immediate lord's 'man.'
- 1087 War breaks out with France, and William is fatally injured at the destruction of Mantua.

1087-1100. THE REIGN OF WILLIAM 'RUFUS.'

- 1087 William II., 'Rufus,' is elected king by the Witan, or Great Council, by the aid of Lanfranc.
- 1088 The barons revolt, but William is supported by his English subjects.
- 1089 On the death of Lanfranc, Ralf Flambard, afterwards justiciar, rises into power. The old 'moots' and danegeld become mere engines of extortion.
- 1091 William and Robert, Duke of Normandy, his elder brother, enter into a compact (called the Treaty of Caen), by which, on the death of one, the survivor succeeds to the dominions of both. Malcolm III. of Scotland raids through the North in support of Edgar, grandson of Edmund Ironside, but is forced to renew his homage.
- 1093 Malcolm III. repeats his raids, but is defeated and slain. After a four years' vacancy and quarrels about investiture William makes Anselm Primate.
- 1096 Robert pledges Normandy to William for 10,000 marks, and then sets out for the Holy Land on the first Crusade. William invades Wales, and builds castles on the borders to keep the Welsh in order. The Barons under Mowbray, De Lacy, and Bigod revolt for the second time, but are ruthlessly crushed. William takes possession of all Normandy. (The first acquisition of Normandy.)
- 1097 Anselm goes to Rome to receive the pallium after much opposition from William.
- 1099 William loses Maine by a revolt, but recovers it the same year.
- 1100 William is slain in the New Forest.

1100-1135. THE REIGN OF HENRY I.

- 1100** Henry secures the goodwill of the English by his great Charter, and by marrying Edith, an English princess; and pleases the Church by filling up vacancies and recalling Anselm. Ralf Flambard is thrown into prison. The English and the Church support Henry against Robert and the Barons, when Robert claims England, in 1101.
- 1103** Henry consents to a papal decree enforcing the celibacy of the clergy.
- 1104** Henry invades Normandy.
- 1106** Henry defeats Robert at Tenchebrai, and takes possession of Normandy. (Second acquisition of Normandy.) Robert remains a prisoner for the remaining twenty-eight years of his life.
- 1107** The investiture dispute is settled by a compromise with the Pope, in which, however, Henry maintains his supremacy over the Church.
- 1109** Anselm dies, and the See of Canterbury is kept vacant for five years.
- 1111, 1114, 1121** The English make steady progress in the conquest of Wales.
- 1113** The peace of Gisors, by which Henry compels the King of France, who had taken up the cause of Robert's son, William Clito, to cede him the overlordship of Brittany and Maine.
- 1119** Louis, King of France, supports a fresh revolt in favour of Clito, but is defeated at Noyon, or Brenneville. Henry's son and heir, William, is married to Matilda, daughter of Fulk of Anjou. Death of the Queen.
- 1120** Henry's only son, Prince William, is drowned in the English Channel.
- 1127** The desultory wars in France come to an end, and the death of Clito follows next year.
- 1128** In the absence of a male heir, Henry forces the Great Council to swear allegiance to the Empress Matilda, widow of Henry of Germany, as his heir. Matilda is then married to Geoffrey Plantagenet of Anjou.
- 1133** Henry visits Normandy for the last time.

1135-1154. THE REIGN OF STEPHEN.

- 1135** Stephen is elected king by the Great Council, and issues a Charter of Conciliation.
- 1136** The Barons under Bigod and Baldwin of Redvers revolt, but are easily suppressed.
- 1137** David of Scotland invades England on behalf of Matilda; peace is made by the cession of Cumberland and Carlisle to David.
- 1138** David renews his invasion, but is defeated with the loss of half his army by the English 'fyrd' under Thurstan, Archbishop of York, in the **Battle of the Standard**.
- 1139** After conquering Normandy, Matilda, with Robert of Gloucester, lands in England, and a civil war breaks out which lasts eight years.
- 1141** Stephen is taken prisoner at the battle of Lincoln.
- 1147** Matilda having alienated her supporters returns to Normandy.
- 1152** Henry, son of Matilda, is knighted by David of Scotland. By his marriage with Eleanor he adds Aquitaine to Brittany, of which he was already overlord.
- 1153** By the peace of Wallingford it is arranged that Stephen shall retain the crown for life, and Henry shall succeed.

1154-1217. IV. DOWNFALL OF FEUDALISM. THE GREAT CHARTER.

THE REIGN OF HENRY II.

- 1154** Henry II. succeeds to the throne, and makes Thomas of London his chancellor. Nicholas Breakspear, under the title of Adrian IV., becomes the only English pope.
- 1155** Henry is commissioned by Adrian IV. to reduce Ireland.
- 1158** Henry seizes Nantes, and proceeds to master Brittany, Toulouse, and the Vexin.
- 1160** During this war a *scutage* of forty shillings is imposed on all knights' fees in lieu of personal service.
- 1161** Louis is forced to conclude peace.
- 1162** Becket is made Primate, and, to Henry's anger, throws up the chancellorship, and is henceforth the champion of the Church only, the chief point of dispute being 'benefit of clergy.'
- 1164** The *Constitutions of Clarendon* became law. Henry forces Thomas to agree to the *Constitutions of Clarendon*, but the Primate escapes from England, and the Pope condemns the *Constitutions*.
- 1166** Thomas is appointed papal legate for England. The *Assize of Clarendon* extends the grand jury system to criminal cases. Dermot, King of Leinster, receives permission from Henry to seek allies among the nobles on the Welsh marches.
- 1169** Richard 'Strongbow' and others settle in Ireland.
- 1170** Henry suddenly removes all the Sheriffs, and inquires into their conduct. Prince Henry is crowned by the Archbishop of York. Thomas is permitted to return, but is murdered the same year by four of Henry's knights in the cathedral of Canterbury.
- 1171** Henry lands in Ireland, and receives the homage of nearly all the native kings.
- 1173** A great revolt of the *Bárons* breaks out in England, Normandy, Brittany, and Aquitaine, but Henry, being supported by the native English, stamps out the revolt.
- 1174** The revolt breaks out again, and William the Lion of Scotland is taken prisoner. Henry does public penance, and rapidly crushes the rebels in England, Normandy, Brittany, and Aquitaine. Henry's success is followed by a general peace made at Falaise.
- 1176** By the *Assize of Northampton* the 'Justices in Eyre' are sent on circuit.
- 1177** The Norman Barons in Ireland do homage to John.
- 1178** Five judges are appointed to sit as a court of appeal at Westminster: from them originate the *Courts of King's Bench and Common Pleas*.
- 1181** The *Assize of Arms* prescribes the arms to be worn by freeholders, and gives fresh importance to the fyrd.
- 1188** On the news of the fall of Jerusalem before the Saracens, Henry imposes the *Saladin tithe* of one-tenth of all personal property. (*Note.* All previous taxation had been on land only.) Henry aids Richard, whose duchy of Aquitaine, with the help of Philip, king of France, had revolted.
- 1189** Richard joins Philip, and the defeat and downfall of Henry are soon followed by his death.

THE DOMINIONS OF HENRY II.

England. Inherited through his mother as the daughter of Henry I., according to the terms of the peace of Wallingford in 1153.

Normandy. } Inherited from his mother.
Brittany. }

(*Note.*—Henry only acquired the overlordship of Brittany from his mother, but completely annexed the country during the years 1158–1169.)

Anjou. } Inherited from his father, Geoffrey of Anjou, on his death in 1151.
Maine. }
Touraine. }

Aquitaine. Secured by his marriage with Eleanor, Duchess of Aquitaine, the divorced wife of Louis VII., in 1152.

(*Note.*—Eleanor's duchy included Poitou, La Marche, Saintonge, Angoumois, Guienne, Gascony, Limousin, Bourbonnais, Auvergne, Lyonnais.)

Toulouse. Claimed as part of his wife's dominions, but only secured by conquest.

1189–1199. THE REIGN OF RICHARD I.

- 1189** The coronation of Richard is the occasion of a massacre of Jews. Richard sets out for the Holy Land on the Third Crusade, leaving Hugh of Durham and the Chancellor William of Longchamp as his justiciars.
- 1191** After a long delay at Messina, Richard sets sail, captures Cyprus on the way, and marries Berengaria of Navarre. On his arrival Acre surrenders after a two years' siege. Philip of France at once returns and plots with John against Richard. John deprives Longchamp of his power, and drives him from the country.
- 1192** On his way home Richard is captured near Vienna, by Leopold of Austria, and claimed by the Emperor Henry VI. as Leopold's overlord.
- 1193** Richard is ransomed for 100,000*l.*
- 1194** Richard returns to England, but soon retires to Normandy, leaving Hubert Walter in command. Hubert greatly extends the **Grand Jury system.**
- 1195** The '**Justices of the Peace**' take their origin.
- 1198** The Barons in the Great Council and the bishops under Hugh of Lincoln refuse to furnish knights for foreign service. Hubert Walter resigns his justiciarship at the bidding of Pope Innocent III., but before he does so carries out a new survey of the country, and a permanent land-tax called '**Carucage**' is imposed.
- 1199** Richard, during a war with Philip, dies of his wounds.

1199–1216. THE REIGN OF JOHN.

- 1199** Arthur of Brittany, heir of John's elder brother Geoffrey, being a minor, John is king by election not by inheritance. Arthur is acknowledged in Anjou, Touraine, and Maine; Philip then attacks John in Normandy.
- 1201** The tenants-in-chief refuse to accompany John to Normandy.
- 1203** Arthur is murdered, probably by John.
- 1204** Normandy is lost by John. Aquitaine is now his only continental possession.

- 1205** On the death of the Primate Hubert, John is involved in a quarrel with the Church.
- 1206** Innocent III. causes the monks to elect Stephen Langton, but John resists.
- 1208** The Pope lays England under an interdict.
- 1209** John is excommunicated.
- 1213** John, who had been deposed by the Pope, submits to Pandulph, the papal legate. Philip prepares to invade England, but is defeated in a sea fight off Damme. The Barons summon the reeve and four representatives from each township to St. Albans.
- 1214** His quarrel with the Church ended, John invades Poitou. The English are disastrously defeated by Philip at Bouvines. The Barons meet at Bury St. Edmunds to formulate their demands.
- 1215** **Magna Carta is signed by the King**, but the Pope annuls it. Civil war begins, and John, profiting by a split in the Baronage, ravages Yorkshire.
- 1216** In despair the Barons offer the crown to Philip's son Louis. Louis therefore lands in England. John dies at Newark, when on the point of triumphing over his enemies.

1217-1377. V. THE STRUGGLE FOR THE CHARTERS.

1216-1272. THE REIGN OF HENRY III.

- 1216** At his coronation Henry renews his fealty to the Pope. William, the Marshal Earl of Pembroke, is named regent and guardian of the King.
- 1217** Louis is defeated at the 'Fair of Lincoln.' The Justiciar, Hubert de Burgh, destroys the French fleet off Sandwich. By the treaty of Lambeth, Louis and his followers are allowed to retire in peace. **The Great Charter is issued for the first time in its final form.**
- 1219** On the death of Pembroke, Hubert de Burgh becomes the principal figure in the country, and represents English interests in opposition to the foreign influences of Peter des Roches.
- 1219-1232** The administration of Hubert de Burgh.
- 1226** **The Great Council declares that the laws of England do not sanction payment of the Pope's extortionate demands.**
- 1227** Henry is declared of age, and misgovernment begins.
- 1228** The Barons refuse payment of the demands of Gregory IX. on the death of Stephen Langton.
- 1231** A secret society called the 'Commonwealth of England' resists the 'Papal Provisions.'
- 1232** Hubert de Burgh is dismissed, and the country becomes the prey of Peter des Roches and his friends.
- 1233** The Earl of Pembroke, De Burgh, and the Barons rise in revolt.
- 1234** Henry is forced to dismiss Peter and the whole Poitevin 'gang.'
- 1236** Henry marries Eleanor of Provence, and the country is overrun by her Provençal adherents.
- 1238** An attempt is made to assassinate Henry. Simon de Montfort is made Earl of Leicester, and marries Eleanor, the King's sister.
- 1242** The English invade Poitou, and are defeated at Taillebourg.

- 1244** The Barons, assembled in council, demand a responsible ministry, and promise money on condition that it be expended under their supervision.
- 1254** Knights of the Shire—elected by the 'Shire moot'—are summoned by writ to a council at Westminster.
- 1258** The 'Mad' Parliament meets at Oxford. The executive is taken from the King. This scheme is known as the 'Provisions of Oxford.'
- 1264** By the Mise of Amiens, Louis annuls the Baronial reforms. Simon, however, refuses to consent, and war breaks out. The Barons under Simon defeat the royal forces at Lewes. The 'Mise of Lewes' appoints a new body of arbitrators to control the King.
- 1265** In the Parliament summoned by Simon cities and boroughs are represented as well as shires. Simon's party is defeated by the royal forces at the battles of Kenilworth and Evesham, and Earl Simon is slain.
- 1266** The Dictum de Kenilworth contains the terms on which the King's enemies surrender.
- 1267** The Statute of Marlborough grants all the demands of the 'Mad' Parliament except the appointment of ministers and sheriffs.

1272-1307. THE REIGN OF EDWARD I.

- 1274** On his return from the Holy Land, Edward is crowned. He orders a new survey (see 1278).
- 1275** The First Statute of Westminster is issued; in return the King receives from Parliament a permanent grant of the customs on wool, skins, and leather.
- 1277** Edward determines to subdue the Welsh, and their prince Llewellyn is forced to submit.
- 1278** By the Statute of Gloucester the nobles are required to show 'quo warranto'—by what warrant—they hold their lands and privileges. Compulsory knighthood is forced on all freeholders of an estate worth 20*l.* a year.
- 1279** The Statute 'de Religiosis' (Mortmain).
- 1282** Llewellyn and his brother David revolt. Llewellyn is slain in battle.
- 1283** David is executed, and Edward finally subjugates Wales.
- 1284** Edward of Carnarvon, the first Prince of Wales, is born.
- 1285** The writ of 'Circumspecte agatis.' The second Statute of Westminster settles the law of entail. The Statute of Winchester. Edward relinquished all claim to Normandy for 10,000*l.*
- 1286** Edward is absent in France for three years. On the death of Alexander III. of Scotland a dispute arises about the succession.
- 1289** On the death of the Maid of Norway the line of William the Lion becomes extinct. Bruce, Baliol, and Hastings are claimants for the throne.
- 1290** Edward banishes the Jews; they do not return for nearly 400 years. The third Statute of Westminster ('*Quia Emptores*').
- 1291** Edward claims the guardianship of Scotland, and confirms Baliol's claim. Baliol does homage for Scotland in 1292.
- 1293** The French fleet is destroyed off St. Malé by the unauthorised warfare of English sailors. In revenge Philip obtains possession of Guienne.

- 1295** Edward recovers Guienne, but the failure of the English at Bordeaux is followed by a rising in Scotland. The 'Model' Parliament is summoned—at which barons, prelates, knights, and burghers are fully represented.
- 1296** Edward crushes the Scotch at Dunbar, and Baliol surrenders his crown. Parliament enters on a conflict with Pope Boniface VIII., and resists his Bull, '*Clericis Laicos*.'
- 1297** Wallace defeats the English at the battle of Stirling. Edward, absent in Flanders at the time, consents to the '*Confirmatio Cartarum*.'
- 1298** Hastily making peace with France, Edward returns and defeats Wallace at Falkirk with a loss of 15,000 men.
- 1300** In the '*Articuli super Cartas*' Edward reconfirms the Charters.
- 1301** At the Parliament of Lincoln the Barons reject the claims of the Pope.
- 1303** Guienne is restored by Philip in accordance with Prince Edward's marriage contract of 1299. Wallace reappears, and the Scotch difficulties are renewed.
- 1304** On the fall of Stirling, Wallace is taken and executed (1306).
- 1306** Scotland rises under Robert Bruce, who is crowned as king and defeated at Methven.
- 1307** Bruce returns and renews the war. Edward marches against him, but dies on the way.

1307-1399. VI. CAUSES OF THE POWER OF THE COMMONS.

1307-1327. THE REIGN OF EDWARD II.

- 1307** Edward recalls his favourite, Piers Gaveston, and makes him Earl of Cornwall.
- 1308** The Barons compel Edward to dismiss Gaveston.
- 1309** Gaveston is again recalled.
- 1311** The '*Ordinances*' are issued by the Council of 21, into whose hands the Barons had placed the executive. Gaveston is recalled a third time, and the King takes him on a campaign in Scotland.
- 1312** Gaveston is put to death by the Barons.
- 1314** Roused by the success of Bruce (1311-1314) Edward marches into Scotland, but is defeated disastrously at Bannockburn. Scotland is virtually independent (see 1328). This defeat leaves Edward powerless before the Barons, who, under Lancaster, assume the direction of affairs.
- 1316** Lancaster becomes President of the Council. Pestilence, murrain, and famine rage in the country.
- 1318** The Scotch campaign is ended by the English defeat of the '*Chapter of Mitton*.'
- 1321** The Despensers, Gaveston's successors in the favour of the King, are banished.
- 1322** By a sudden act of vigour Edward defeats Lancaster at Boroughbridge and executes him. Parliament is forced by Edward to repeal the '*Ordinances*.'

- 1323** Edward makes an unsuccessful campaign in Scotland. Queen Isabella afterwards goes to France and there conspires with Roger Mortimer.
- 1326** Isabella and Mortimer invade England.
- 1327** Parliament elects Edward III. in place of his father. Edward II. is then deposed, and shortly afterwards murdered.

1327-1377. THE REIGN OF EDWARD III.

- 1328** Edward III. is married to Philippa of Hainault. The independence of Scotland is formally recognised by the peace of Northampton.
- 1329** Death of Robert Bruce.
- 1330** At the Parliament of Nottingham, Edward seizes and executes Mortimer: the internal peace of the country is at length restored.
- 1333** Edward supports Edward Baliol, and defeats the Scots with a loss of 80,000 men at Halidon Hill.
- 1338** The hundred years' war begins. Parliament grants Edward half the last wool crop: Edward lands at Antwerp to support his claim to the French crown.
- 1339** Edward besieges Cambrai—but fails.
- 1340** Edward surrenders the right of exacting tallage from the towns, in return for liberal supplies. Edward destroys the French fleet off Sluys with a loss of 28,000 men. Parliament lays down the doctrine of the responsibility of ministers.
- 1346** The French are defeated at Crécy with enormous loss. Bruce is defeated at Neville's Cross with a loss of 20,000, and remains a prisoner till 1359.
- 1347** Calais is captured and made a 'staple' port. On the conclusion of a truce Edward returns to England.
- 1348** The Black Death carries off one-third of the population.
- 1349** The Statute of Labourers is passed, obliging the labourers to work at the rate of wages which existed in 1347.
- 1350** Edward defeats the Spanish in the battle of L'Espagnols sur mer, and receives the title of 'King of the Sea.'
- 1351** The Statute of Provisors forbids people to receive preferment from the Pope.
- 1352** The Statute of Treasons lays down the definition of the crime of treason.
- 1353** The First Statute of Præmunire is directed against the power of the papal courts.
- 1355** The invasion of France is renewed. Edward himself invades Scotland on 'Burnt Candlemas.'
- 1356** The French are defeated with great loss at Poitiers, and the country is reduced to a terrible condition by a revolt of the peasants called the Jacquerie.
- 1360** A treaty of peace is made at Brétigny, by which Edward keeps all the possessions derived from Henry II. personally.
- 1363** The English language is appointed to be used in Law Courts. Edward agrees to lay no tax on wool without the consent of Parliament, and gives up the right of purveyance.
- 1365** The first Statute of Præmunire is repeated in a stronger form.

- 1366** The three estates refuse to pay John's tribute, or Peter's pence, to the Pope.
- 1367** The Black Prince crosses the Pyrenees, and wins the victory of Navarrete.
- 1369** Charles V. renews the war. The Black Prince captures Limoges (1370).
- 1375** A truce is agreed to at Bruges. In consequence of the failure of John of Ghent, the English only retain Calais, Bayonne, Brest, Cherbourg, and Bordeaux.
- 1376** The 'Good Parliament' is encouraged by the Black Prince, but opposed by John of Ghent. Death of the Black Prince. The Good Parliament is dissolved.
- 1377** John of Ghent is supreme over the new Parliament. The 'Canterbury Tales' are published. Wiclif is cited before Convocation at St. Paul's for heresy, but is supported by John of Ghent.

1377-1399. THE REIGN OF RICHARD II.

- 1377** Parliament makes liberal grants of money, but on condition that its expenditure should be in the hands of two treasurers. Parliament also insists that during the minority the Great Officers of State should be appointed by Parliament.
- 1379** The Commons impose a graduated poll-tax.
- 1380** Parliament imposes an ungraduated poll-tax of 1s.
- 1381** The villeins revolt in Essex and Kent. The Kentish insurgents under Wat the Tiler march to London, but are persuaded to disperse. Wat the Tiler is killed. A conservative reaction follows, and the landowners are able to wreak their vengeance. Wiclif translates the Bible into English.
- 1382** For the first time Parliament gives a guarantee for loans to the Crown.
- 1384** The death of Wiclif.
- 1385** Richard creates his uncles Edmund and Thomas dukes of York and Gloucester, and sends John of Ghent to Spain to prosecute his claims upon the crown of Castille.
- 1386** The Baronial party are reformed by Thomas of Gloucester and Henry of Derby, who impeach and imprison Suffolk, Richard's Chancellor. A Commission of Regency is appointed under Gloucester.
- 1387** Richard's Council of Nottingham declares the Commission unlawful. Gloucester, Warwick, and Arundel march to London, and Richard submits. The King's supporters are defeated at Radcot Bridge by Henry of Derby.
- 1388** The 'Appellants' accuse the King's advisers of treason in the 'Merciless' or 'Wonderful' Parliament. Arundel defeats the French, Flemish, and Spaniards in a great sea fight. The battle of Otterbourn is fought between Percy and Douglas.
- 1390** Richard assumes the Government. This is the fourth failure of attempts to rob the Crown of its authority. Richard now begins six years' Constitutional rule. John of Ghent fails in his Spanish enterprise.
- 1390** A more stringent Act of Provisors is passed.
- 1391** The Statute of Mortmain (de Religiosis) is extended.
- 1393** A stronger Statute of Præmunire is passed; also an ordinance against 'maintenance' and 'livery.'
- 1394** Richard's Queen Anne of Bohemia dies childless, and the King's temper suddenly seems to change.

- 1396 Richard marries Isabella, daughter of the French King.
- 1398 The packed Parliament of Shrewsbury surrenders its powers to Richard, repeals the Commission of Regency, and reverses the acts of the 'Merciless' Parliament. Norfolk and Henry of Derby, now Duke of Hereford, are banished.
- 1399 Richard displays great folly, seizes the Lancastrian estates on the death of John of Ghent, and sails for Ireland. Henry, now Duke of Lancaster, returns. Richard is deserted and captured, and then compelled to abdicate.
-

1399-1485. VII. HOUSES OF LANCASTER AND YORK.

1399-1413. THE REIGN OF HENRY IV.

- 1399 Henry IV. is made king by Parliamentary Grant. An Act is passed that Charges of Treason are henceforth to be decided in the law courts, not by appeal. The Acts of the 'Merciless' Parliament are reconfirmed, and the Treason Statute of 1351 restored. A stronger act of Livery is passed in Henry's first Parliament.
- 1400 In consequence of the weakness of Henry's title, Richard's supporters conspire. Richard himself shortly afterwards dies at Pontefract—probably murdered.
- 1401 The Statute 'De Heretico Comburendo' is passed, and William Sawtré is the First English Martyr. Parliament for the first time demands that redress of grievances should precede supply.
- 1402 Owen Glendower inflicts a serious defeat on the English. The Percys defeat the invading Scots at Hambleton Hill.
- 1403 The Percys revolt and join Glendower, but are defeated by Henry and the Prince of Wales at the battle of Shrewsbury.
- 1404 The 'Unlearned Parliament' desires to seize the property of the Church, insists on retrenchment in the royal expenditure, and on control of the national finances by its own treasurers.
- 1405 The Percys revolt a second time. On the collapse of the revolt, Scrope, Archbishop of York, is executed. The King thereby alienates the clergy. James, the heir of Robert of Scotland, is captured at sea. Robert's brother, Albany, usurps the rule in Scotland.
- 1406-7 Parliament demands the public audit of Government accounts. The principle that the Commons are the source of all money grants, is established.
- 1408 The Percys revolt for the third time. Northumberland is defeated and slain at Bramham Moor.
- 1408-10 The Commons propose to confiscate the lands of bishops and religious corporations.
- 1411 The King's health fails, and he never leaves Westminster Palace till his death in 1413.

1413-1422. THE REIGN OF HENRY V.

- 1413 Parliament grants Henry the wool revenue for four years.
- 1414 The Lollards hold a great meeting in St. Giles's Fields, and the persecution against them is renewed.

- 1415** Whilst an English army is waiting at Southampton to start on an expedition to France, a conspiracy in favour of the Earl of March is discovered and the conspirators executed. Henry sails for France, having revived Edward the Third's claim to the French throne. Harfleur, then the chief seaport at France, is captured. Henry defeats the French with great loss at Agincourt. Gascony, Calais, Harfleur, are now in Henry's hands.
- 1416** The English win a great naval victory at Harfleur.
- 1417** Henry invades and conquers most of Normandy. Sir John Oldcastle, the leader of the Lollards, is executed for heresy.
- 1419** The fall of Rouen completes Henry's conquest of Normandy. Henry renews the war and takes Pontoise.
- 1420** By the Treaty of Troyes Charles VI. is to be king during his lifetime, and Henry is to succeed him, meanwhile Henry is to be Regent. Henry marries Katherine, daughter of Charles VI.
- 1421** Henry returns to England, but is recalled by the defeat of the English at Beaugé, and soon recovers all that was lost.
- 1422** The Dauphin still holds Central France, and Henry takes the field against him, but is struck down by dysentery and dies.

1422-1461. THE REIGN OF HENRY VI.

- 1423** The Duke of Bedford is made Regent in France and Humphrey of Gloucester Protector in England.
- 1423** The English severely defeat the Dauphin at Crévant. James I. is released from captivity, and a treaty made with Scotland.
- 1424** The victory of Verneuil marks the high tide of English success.
- 1428** The siege of Orléans begins.
- 1429** The English win a victory at the 'Battle of Herrings.' Henry is crowned king.
Jeanne Darc relieves the siege of Orléans, and Charles VII. is crowned at Rheims.
- 1430** Jeanne attempts the relief of Compiègne, but is captured, and burnt next year at Rouen as a witch.
- 1431** Henry VI. is crowned at Paris.
- 1435** Soon after the fruitless Congress of Arras the death of Bedford takes place and the Burgundian alliance comes to an end. Bedford is succeeded by Richard, Duke of York.
- 1441** Richard, who had been recalled in 1437, is sent out again to save Guienno from Charles.
- 1444** A truce for two years is concluded.
- 1445** Henry VI. is married to Margaret of Anjou.
- 1447** Gloucester is arrested at Suffolk's instigation. His death is soon followed by that of his opponent Beaufort.
- 1448** Charles breaks the truce, and the English suffer a disastrous defeat at Formigny.
- 1449** Parliament, angry at failure, demands redress before supply.
- 1450** The fall of Cherbourg completes the final loss of Normandy. Suffolk is impeached, banished, and murdered, and the popular wrath is shown still more emphatically in Cade's rebellion. York and Somerset are now the rival leaders.

- 1451 Gascony and Guienne are lost almost without a blow, Calais alone remaining to England.
- 1453 On the failure of the final attempt under Talbot, Gascony and Guienne (including Bordeaux) are lost for ever. The birth of the Prince of Wales. Henry VI. is afflicted with lunacy.
- 1455 **The Wars of the Roses.** Civil war breaks out and the King's friends are defeated by the Duke of York at the first battle of St. Albans.
- 1458 The rival Yorkists and Lancastrians are formally reconciled.
- 1459 Margaret renews the war, but is defeated at Bloreheath. Henry, however, disperses his opponents, and the Yorkists are all attainted of treason.
- 1460 Edward, Salisbury, and Warwick defeat the King at Northampton; Henry is taken prisoner, but the Queen escapes to Scotland. Margaret rallies the North; Richard of York is defeated and slain at Wakefield.
- 1461 Edward defeats the Lancastrians at Mortimer's Cross. **Henry VI. is deposed and Edward elected king.** Margaret wins the second battle of St. Albans, and recovers possession of the King.

1461-1483. THE REIGN OF EDWARD IV.

- 1461 After a skirmish at Ferry Bridge the Lancastrians are defeated by Edward at Towton. Margaret and Henry escape into Scotland. Edward is crowned, and Parliament confirms his claims. An act of attainder is passed against the Lancastrian party.
- 1463 Wales alone holds out for Henry VI.
- 1464 The Lancastrians are defeated at Hedgely Moor and Hexham. Edward marries Elizabeth, widow of the attainted Lancastrian, Sir John Gray. Warwick desires a French alliance, but Edward favours a Flemish one, and on the death of Philip of Burgundy marries his sister (1468) to Charles the Bold of Burgundy, the overlord of Flanders.
- 1469 A Lancastrian revolt breaks out and Edward's troops are defeated at Edgecote. Edward himself is captured by Warwick.
- 1470 Lincolnshire is raised for Henry VI., but the rebels are defeated at 'Lose-Coat Field.' Aided by Louis XI., Warwick and Clarence invade England. Edward escapes to Flanders, and Henry VI. is restored. Warwick earns his title of 'Kingmaker.'
- 1471 Edward lands at Ravenspur and is rejoined by Clarence. Warwick is defeated and slain at Barnet. Margaret lands at Weymouth, but is defeated at Tewkesbury, and Edward Prince of Wales slain. On the mysterious death of Henry VI. in the Tower, Henry Tudor, Earl of Richmond, is the sole Lancastrian claimant left.
- 1475 Edward invades France, but in the **Treaty of Pecquigny** Louis XI. agrees to give Edward a large sum of money and a pension, and a truce is made for seven years.
- 1477 Death of Charles the Bold at Nancy.
- 1478 Quarrels arise in the Royal Family. Clarence is arrested for his treason of 1470, and executed.
- 1480 War breaks out with Scotland.
- 1482 Peace is made with Scotland on the restoration of Berwick to England.
- 1483 Sudden death of Edward IV.
- 1483 (April-June), Edward V. is king, though never crowned. Lord Hastings,

the chief friend of Edward IV., is arrested and executed, and Richard of Gloucester is declared protector. Richard claims the crown and is informally elected.

1483-1485. THE REIGN OF RICHARD III.

- 1483** The two sons of Edward IV. are murdered in the Tower. Bishop Morton's scheme for marrying Henry Tudor to Elizabeth daughter of Edward IV. is favoured by Buckingham. Buckingham revolts in Wales and is put to death.
- 1484** Parliament confirms Richard's title and attaints Richmond and all his friends. **Benevolences are declared illegal by Act of Parliament.** Henry Tudor, now in Brittany, swears to carry out Morton's scheme.
- 1485** Henry lands at Milford Haven, and Richard III. is defeated and slain at Bosworth.

1485-1603. VIII. THE TUDOR DESPOTISM.

1485-1509. THE REIGN OF HENRY VII.

- 1485** Parliament confers the crown on Henry and his lawful heirs. Tonnage and poundage are conferred on him for life. Edward, Earl of Warwick, nephew of Edward IV., is favoured as heir by the Yorkists and is thrown into the Tower.
- 1486** Henry marries Elizabeth, daughter of Edward IV., and thus unites the two houses of Lancaster and York. A rising of Lord Lovel is suppressed. The birth of Prince Arthur.
- 1487** Lambert Simnel, personating the Earl of Warwick, lands at Dublin and is accepted by Kildare the Deputy. Simnel lands in England, but is defeated at Stoke. Elizabeth is publicly crowned to conciliate the Yorkists. **The Court of Star Chamber** is established, the scope of which is constantly extended till by an act of 1504 it covers almost every crime.
- 1488-9** Parliament urges Henry to aid Duchess Anne of Brittany against Charles VIII.: Henry receives the grants but does practically nothing.
- 1491-1497** **Perkin Warbeck.** 1491, Warbeck lands in Cork under the name of Richard, Duke of York, one of the murdered princes, and thence goes to France and thence joins Margaret, Dowager Duchess of Burgundy and sister of Edward IV.
- 1492** Henry invades France but is bought off by a payment of 150,000*l.* at the **Treaty of Étapes.** Columbus discovers the New World.
- 1494** **Poynings** (Deputy in place of Kildare) has an act passed that no law is to be submitted to the Irish parliament till it has been sanctioned by the king.
- 1495** An act is passed that **The king 'de facto' is also king 'de jure.'**
- 1496** **The Intercursus Magnus** establishes freedom of trade between England and Flanders.
- 1497** The Cornishmen revolt and march to London, but are defeated with great

loss. Warbeck lands in Cornwall but surrenders without fighting, Cabot, sailing from Bristol, reaches the mainland of America, and Vasco de Gama doubles the Cape of Good Hope.

- 1499-1504** The Tudor dynasty being now safe, Henry rules without a parliament.
1499 The Earl of Warwick and Warbeck are executed.
1501 Prince Arthur is married to Catherine of Aragon.
1502 Death of Arthur. Catherine is contracted to Arthur's younger brother, Henry.
1503 James IV. of Scotland is married to Henry's eldest daughter, Margaret. The remainder of Henry's reign is chiefly distinguished for the extortions of Empson and Dudley.

1509-1547. THE REIGN OF HENRY VIII.

- 1509** Empson and Dudley are attainted and executed next year.
1511 Henry joins the 'Holy League' against Louis XII.
1512 The English make an unsuccessful expedition in Guienne.
1513 Henry lands at Calais and defeats the French at Guinegate (the **Battle of the Spurs**) and takes Terouenne and Tournai. James IV. and the invading Scots are defeated at **Flodden** with a loss of 10,000 men and James IV. is slain.
1514 Peace is made with France, and Louis XII. marries Henry's sister Mary.
1515 **Wolsey** (by this time Archbishop of York), whose policy is peace and the preservation of the balance of power, is made a Cardinal and Henry's Chancellor.
1517 Luther makes his 'protest' against Rome.
1519 Charles V. becomes emperor.
1520 Henry and Francis meet at the field of the cloth of gold.
1521 The Duke of Buckingham, heir to the throne after Mary, is executed. Henry is named 'Defender of the Faith' by the Pope.
1523 The French war having been renewed, parliament is summoned after an interval of eight years and Wolsey demands an immense subsidy.
1525 Francis I. is taken prisoner at Pavia by Charles V. An 'amicable loan' is demanded from the clergy.
1527 Rome is sacked by Charles V. An alliance is made between England and France.
1529 Wolsey and Campeggio hold their Legatine Court to try the case of Catherine of Aragon. Charles V. and Francis agree at the peace of Cambrai to support the Pope. **The Statute of Præmunire is enforced against Wolsey**, and More made chancellor in his place.
1530 Henry consults the Universities of Europe as to the legality of his marriage with Catherine. Wolsey is pardoned and restored to his archbishopric. The arrest and death of Wolsey follow later in the year.
1531 The whole clergy having been threatened with præmunire, convocation acknowledges Henry to be the supreme head of the church—independent legislation of convocation, appeals and payment of 'Annates' to Rome are abolished.
1533 Henry secretly marries Anne Boleyn. Cranmer is made primate. Cranmer holds a court at Dunstable, and declares the king's marriage with Anne Boleyn valid.

- 1534** The Act of Supremacy declares the king 'the only supreme head on earth of the Church of England.' The appointment of bishops is taken away from the Pope, and now depends on a 'congé d'élire' from the king. An Act of Succession declares Elizabeth heir.
- 1535** Thomas Cromwell becomes Henry's **Vicar General** in matters ecclesiastical. Visitors are sent to inquire into the monasteries. More, Fisher, as well as the Prior and some monks of the Charterhouse, are executed.
- 1536** The smaller monasteries are dissolved. Anne Boleyn is executed. The **Ten 'Articles** to establish Christian quietness' are issued, and Coverdale's translation of the Bible authorised to be set up in churches. A rising breaks out in Yorkshire called the '**Pilgrimage of Grace**' and is continued in 1537.
- 1537** The birth of Edward VI. and death of Jane Seymour. The greater monasteries are attacked, and the Friaries in 1538.
- 1539** The **Six Articles** are published. Parliament passes an act giving to Henry's proclamations the force of laws.
- 1540** Henry marries Anne of Cleves. Cromwell is arrested and executed. Henry marries Catherine Howard.
- 1541** The Countess of Salisbury is executed.
- 1542** Henry takes the title of King instead of Lord of Ireland. War breaks out with Scotland, and the invading Scotch are defeated at Solway Moss. Catherine Howard is executed.
- 1543** It is made a capital crime to disagree with Henry's theological opinions. Henry marries Catherine Parr.
- 1544** Henry besieges and captures Boulogne.
- 1547** Peace is made with France. The Earl of Surrey is executed.

1547-1553. THE REIGN OF EDWARD VI.

- 1547** Seymour, Earl of Hertford, now Duke of Somerset, is made Protector. Parliament repeals the Six Articles, the act giving royal proclamations the force of law, and other enactments of the last reign. Somerset invades Scotland and defeats the Scots at Pinkiecleugh.
- 1549** Cranmer publishes the **Catechism and Book of Common Prayer**, the use of which is enforced by an **Act of Uniformity**. Revolts break out in the east (agrarian, under Ket) and west (religious), and are suppressed by the aid of mercenary troops. Somerset being accused by Dudley, Earl of Warwick, afterwards Duke of Northumberland, retires from power and Warwick takes his place.
- 1550** Peace is made with Scotland and France, and Boulogne is surrendered.
- 1552** Somerset is executed on a charge of conspiring to kill Warwick. A severe act is passed to suppress vagabondage. Churchwardens are empowered to exact collections in their parishes for the support of the poor. The **Second Prayer Book** is issued and accompanied by a fresh Act of Uniformity.
- 1553** The '**forty-two Articles of Religion**' are published by Cranmer. Edward VI. is induced to settle the succession on Jane Gray, who had married Northumberland's son, Guilford Dudley. Death of Edward VI.

1553-1558. THE REIGN OF MARY.

- 1553** Northumberland causes Lady Jane Gray to be proclaimed queen. Mary is proclaimed, and Northumberland is arrested and executed. The Mass is restored, but not the Papal Supremacy or the Church Lands.
- 1554** The revolt of Sir Thomas Wyatt is suppressed, and results in the execution of Lady Jane Gray and her husband. Mary is married to Philip, son of Charles V., and afterwards (1556) Philip II. of Spain. Cardinal Pole, who had been made Papal Legate in 1553, is now allowed to land; the two houses vote for reunion with Rome and receive absolution.
- 1555** The 'Grand Bill' restores the state of things existing before 1529. The Lollard Statutes are revived, and the jurisdiction of the bishops' courts restored. Elizabeth's rights, however, remain unimpaired. A fierce persecution against the Protestants breaks out; Hooper, Ridley, Latimer, and Cranmer (1556) being the chief victims.
- 1557** War breaks out between Spain and France. The French are defeated at St. Quentin; an English force is sent to aid Philip.
- 1558** The French, led by the Duke of Guise, take Calais by a sudden assault, after it had been in English hands for 211 years (1347-1558). Worn out by disappointment and disease, Mary dies, and her death is soon followed by that of Cardinal Pole.

1558-1603. THE REIGN OF ELIZABETH.

- 1559** The Second Act of Supremacy forces all beneficed clergy and crown officials to take an oath against the papal authority under penalty of death. The Second Act of Uniformity orders the acceptance of a new prayer book in which religious differences are compromised. Peace is made with France at Câteau Cambresis.
- 1560** By the Treaty of Berwick Elizabeth agrees to aid the 'Lords of the Congregation.' In the Treaty of Edinburgh peace is made between Francis and Mary (now king and queen of France), the congregation and Elizabeth. The Scotch parliament accepts Calvinism.
- 1561** Mary, whose husband Francis II. had died December 1560, lands in Scotland.
- 1562** The Statute of Labourers, the First English Poor Law, is passed (see 1601).
- 1563** The Test Act is passed, strengthening the Act of Supremacy of 1559, and compelling assent to the thirty-nine Articles.
- 1564** The birth of Shakespear.
- 1565** Mary marries Henry Stuart, Lord Darnley.
- 1566** Darnley murders David Rizzio, Mary's Italian secretary. The birth of James, afterwards king of England.
- 1567** Darnley is murdered. Mary marries James Hepburn, Earl of Bothwell. Bothwell is driven from the kingdom, and Mary confined in Lochleven Castle. Murray is appointed regent for the young king James VI. Philip sends the Duke of Alva to suppress a revolt of the Protestants in the Netherlands.

- 1568 Mary escapes, but is defeated by Murray at Langside. Mary escapes to England and is confined at Tutbury.
- 1569 A Huguenot rising in France is put down. The Catholic nobles in the north revolt against Elizabeth. The regent Murray is assassinated.
- 1570 The Pope excommunicates Elizabeth.
- 1571 Parliament retorts by passing severe acts against Mary, the Pope, and the Catholic refugees.
- 1572 Norfolk and Northumberland are tried and executed. The Netherlands again rise against Spain. A terrible massacre of the Huguenots is carried out on St. Bartholomew's Day (August 24).
- 1575 Parliament obeys the queen's message to meddle no more with religion.
- 1576 In the pacification of Ghent the states of the Netherlands form themselves into a confederate republic, whose aim is to expel the Spaniards.
- 1577 English volunteers and merchants aid the Netherlands. William of Orange forms the seven northern provinces into the Protestant Union of Utrecht.
- 1577-1580 Drake sails round the world.
- 1580 Philip conquers Portugal. The Jesuits, Parsons and Campion, land in England.
- 1581 Severe Recusancy Acts are passed against the Jesuits.
- 1583 Whitgift becomes primate. The High Commission Court is organised.
- 1584 William of Orange is assassinated. A plot to murder Elizabeth is discovered.
- 1585 An English force under Leicester is sent to help the Dutch; Sir Philip Sidney is killed at the battle of Zutphen, 1586.
- 1587 On the discovery of another assassination plot, Mary Queen of Scots is executed at Fotheringay. Drake singes the Spanish king's beard at Cadiz.
- 1588 The Great Armada sets sail against Elizabeth, but the English Catholics remain loyal. The Armada is defeated and shattered by storms.
- 1589 Henry IV. of Navarre accepts Catholicism, and becomes king of France.
- 1590 Spenser's 'Faerie Queen' appears.
- 1596 Philip captures Calais, and soon afterwards a combined French and English expedition under Howard and Essex sacks Cadiz.
- 1597 Essex is sent to intercept the Spanish West India fleet.
- 1599 Essex fails to put down a rebellion which had broken out in Ireland in 1595 under O'Neale, Earl of Tyrone. Having been prosecuted before the Star Chamber, Essex tries to cause an insurrection.
- 1601 Essex is executed. Parliament compels Elizabeth to surrender monopolies. A Poor Law is enacted and remains in force down to 1884.

1603-1689. IX. PARLIAMENT AND PREROGATIVE

1603-1625. THE REIGN OF JAMES I.

- 1603 Cecil is confirmed in power as secretary of state. The Puritans present their 'Millenary' Petition to the king. The Catholic 'Bye' and Protestant 'Main' plots are formed; the conspirators in the 'Main'

- hoped to place Arabella Stuart on the throne. Raleigh being implicated is imprisoned for thirteen years.
- 1604** James summons the **Hampton Court Conference**, the only result of which was the version of the Bible issued in 1611. James's first parliament refuses to pass the canons issued by the conference; later on they present an address called **The 'Apology' of the Commons**, defining their position in relation to the king. Peace is made with Spain on favourable terms.
- 1604-1605** **Gunpowder Plot** is formed by Catholic malcontents to blow up king, Lords, and Commons. The Catholics are in consequence persecuted.
- 1606** Colonies are founded in Virginia by royal charter.
- 1607** On the flight of Tyrone and Tyrconnel **Ulster is gradually 'planted' with Protestant colonies** of English and Scotch.
- 1610** By mediation James secures a twelve years' truce between the Dutch and Spanish. **The Great Contract** is attempted between king and parliament, which is dissolved in anger without a settlement (1611). James partially re-establishes Episcopacy in Scotland.
- 1612** On the death of Cecil the rule of favourites begins, the first one being Robert Carr, earl of Somerset. The death of Henry, James's eldest son.
- 1613** **The Princess Elizabeth is married to Frederick, the Elector Palatine.**
- 1614** **The 'Addled' parliament** meets and is dissolved.
- 1614-1621** James rules without a parliament.
- 1615** On the downfall of Somerset, George Villiers, afterwards Duke of Buckingham, rises into power.
- 1617** **Sir Francis Bacon** is made chancellor and Viscount Verulam. Having been conditionally released Raleigh sails to Guiana on his last voyage, and is executed on his return (1618).
- 1618** James goes to Scotland and forces the General Assembly of the Kirk to accept the **'Five Articles of Perth.'** James issues the **'Declaration of Sports.'**
- 1618-1648** **The Thirty Years' War.**
- 1620** The **'Pilgrim Fathers'** sail in the **'Mayflower.'** Frederick is driven from his Palatinate.
- 1621** James's third parliament meets and assails monopolies. Impeachment, disused since 1450, is revived. Bacon is impeached for bribery, fined, imprisoned, and deprived of office. Parliament, more and more Protestant, desires to aid Frederick and to see Prince Charles married to a Protestant.
- 1622** James tears the protests out of the Parliamentary Journals and dissolves parliament.
- 1623** Catholics are allowed by James to worship in private houses. Charles goes in disguise with Buckingham to Madrid to woo the Infanta. The match is broken off, to the delight of the nation.
- 1624** A new parliament meets, and is joined by Buckingham in urging war against Spain. A treaty is signed for a marriage between Charles and Henrietta Maria. Buckingham joins the Protestant League against Spain.

1625-1649. THE REIGN OF CHARLES I.

- 1625** The first parliament of Charles I. meets in ill-humour, and on disputes arising about supplies &c. is dissolved. An expedition to Cadiz ends in disaster.
- 1626** Sir John Eliot leads the opposition in Charles's second parliament. Buckingham is impeached, but Sir John Eliot is thrown into prison and parliament dissolved.
- 1627** Buckingham leads an unsuccessful expedition to Rhé (Rochelle).
- 1628** In the third parliament of Charles Sir Thomas Wentworth and Eliot lead the opposition. The **Petition of Right** is drawn up, and receives the royal assent. A remonstrance is presented against Popery, Arminianism, &c. The Puritans, as they are gradually driven from the church, join the parliamentary opposition. **Wentworth joins the king.** Buckingham is murdered, and the expedition to Rochelle ends in failure.
- 1629** After a violent scene, the third parliament is dissolved. Eliot is imprisoned, and dies in the Tower in 1632.
- 1629-1640** The country is governed without a parliament.
- 1633-1640** Wentworth, as Lord Deputy in Ireland, carries out his policy of 'Thorough.'
- 1633** Laud is made primate, and reforms the church. Charles and Laud go to Scotland, where Charles is crowned with full ritual.
- 1634** Noy, the attorney-general, suggests the imposition of **ship-money**, and in 1635 Fitch extends it from the maritime counties to all the others.
- 1637** The judges support the king in levying ship-money. Hampden resists the exaction. An attempt to enforce the use of a new Prayer Book causes a riot in St. Giles's Church, Edinburgh.
- 1638** The **National Covenant** is formed against the Prayer Book and Episcopacy.
- 1639** War breaks out between Charles and Scotland, but is ended by the peace of Berwick. Wentworth is made Earl of Strafford.
- 1640** John Pym continues the opposition in the **Short Parliament** (April 13—May 5). The Scots invade England, but the English regard them as deliverers, and a treaty is made. The **Long Parliament** begins. Severe measures are passed against the Catholics.
- 1641** The **Triennial Bill** is passed. Strafford is impeached, but the Commons, fearing an acquittal from the Lords, substitute attainder. Strafford is abandoned by the king and executed. The king consents not to dissolve or prorogue this parliament without its consent. The army is disbanded. The courts of Star Chamber and High Commission are abolished. A revolt breaks out in Ireland. The **Grand Remonstrance** is carried and presented to Charles. The Commons resolve to impeach the queen.
- 1642** Charles goes down to the House to arrest the five members, but they escape. Charles refuses his assent to the Militia Bill. The king fails in two attempts to secure Hull. The royal standard is raised at Nottingham.

1642-1649. THE GREAT CIVIL WAR.

- 1642 Episcopacy is formally abolished. Charles wins a partial victory at Edgehill.
- 1643 The royalists are successful at Stratton, Exeter, Roundway Down, Bristol, Adwalton Moor, and other places. Hampden is killed at Chalgrove Field. An Assembly of Divines is held at Westminster to consider what form Puritanism shall take. Parliament sends a deputation to ask help from the Scots; the result is the formation of a 'Solemn League and Covenant' between the two kingdoms. Gloucester, besieged by the king, is relieved by Essex. The first battle of Newbury is fought without result. The Covenant is imposed on all, and a joint committee of both kingdoms appointed.
- 1644 The Scotch cross the Tweed to help parliament, and the fortunes of war begin to turn against Charles. The royalists are defeated at Marston Moor. Montrose temporarily revives the king's cause in the Highlands. The second battle of Newbury is fought with doubtful issue.
- 1645 Archbishop Laud is attainted and executed. The 'New Model' comes into force. The Self-denying Ordinance is passed. The defeat of the king at Naseby virtually ends the war in England. Montrose continues his successes in the Highlands.
- 1646 Charles goes to the Scotch camp, but on his refusal to abolish Episcopacy is given up to parliament.
- 1647 The Scots return home and the king is lodged in Holmby House, whence he escapes to Carisbrooke Castle. Charles signs an 'engagement' with the Scotch Commissioners. Parliament passes a 'vote of non-addresses.'
- 1648 A second civil war is caused by a reaction in the king's favour. The Presbyterian party are for the time supreme in parliament. Hamilton, who, as a result of the 'engagement,' had marched from Scotland to aid the king, is defeated at Preston. The army turns on the parliament and presents a Grand Army Remonstrance. Charles continues to negotiate with parliament. The army removes Charles to Hurst Castle and thence to Windsor. The Commons, having rejected the Grand Army Remonstrance, are 'purged' by Colonel Pride, the Independent remainder being called the Rump.
- 1649 Charles is tried and executed.

1649-1660. THE COMMONWEALTH.

- 1649 The House of Lords and the monarchy are abolished. Cromwell crosses over to Ireland and takes Drogheda and Wexford by storm. Charles II. is acknowledged in Scotland.
- 1650 Montrose is routed at Corbiesdale. Charles lands in Scotland. Cromwell marches against the Scotch and defeats them at Dunbar. Argyle coalesces with the royalists, and Charles is crowned at Scone. Charles marches south, and is defeated by Cromwell at Worcester, and finally escapes to France. The Navigation Act is passed, and war with the Dutch ensues.
- 1652 Blake is defeated by Van Tromp.

- 1653** Blake wins three victories over the Dutch. Cromwell dissolves the 'Rump.' The 'Barebone' Parliament is summoned by Cromwell and dissolved. Cromwell is made Lord Protector under the Instrument of Government.
- 1654** 'Triers' and 'Ejectors' are appointed to secure fit persons as ministers. The Dutch come to terms. Parliament meets, but violates the 'Instrument,' and is dissolved by Cromwell.
- 1655** England is put in a state of siege and governed by 'major-generals.' War breaks out with Spain, and an English squadron captures Jamaica. A commercial treaty is made with France.
- 1656** Another parliament is called. The Petition and Advice presented to Cromwell is made law, but the kingship which was offered him is refused.
- 1657** An offensive alliance is made with France. Blake destroys the Spanish ships and forts at Teneriffe, and shortly afterwards dies at Plymouth.
- 1658** The 'Ironsides' take Dunkirk and Gravelines. Parliament proving refractory is dissolved. Cromwell dies on September 8, the anniversary of Dunbar and Worcester, after nominating his son Richard as his successor. The army demands a republic and independence of the civil power.
- 1659** The army restores the 'Rump.' Richard Cromwell resigns. Lambert ejects the 'Rump'; Lambert's troops revolt, and the 'Rump' is restored.
- 1660** Monk marches from Scotland and enters London. The members expelled by Pride's Purge are restored. The Long Parliament is finally dissolved. A royalist 'Convention' parliament is returned. Charles signs the Declaration of Breda, and lands at Dover.

1660-1685. THE REIGN OF CHARLES II.

- 1660-1667** The administration of Edward Hyde, earl of Clarendon, lord chancellor.
- 1660** An Act of Indemnity is passed, from which only some of the regicides are excepted. The Coldstream Guards are retained as the nucleus of a standing army. A fixed revenue of 1,200,000*l.* from tonnage and poundage and excise is granted for life. The 'Convention' parliament is dissolved. The 'Pensionary' or 'Cavalier' parliament reverses the acts of the Long Parliament.
- 1661** The Corporation Act is the beginning of a series of persecuting statutes against Dissenters.
- 1663** The Act of Uniformity is passed, and 2,000 of the nonconforming clergy resign their livings rather than take the oath. Charles marries Catherine of Braganza, the Infanta of Portugal, who brings as her dowry Bombay and Tangiers. Dunkirk is sold to Louis XIV. for 200,000*l.*
- 1664** The First Conventicle Act is passed.
- 1665-1667** The First Dutch War.
- 1665** A great plague rages in the country. Parliament insists on the appropriation of supplies. James, duke of York, wins a victory over the Dutch off Lowestoft. The Five Mile Act is passed.
- 1666** Parliament demands the appointment of Commissioners to investigate the expenditure. The Dutch defeat the English at sea, but are beaten by

- the English two months later. Most of the City is destroyed by **The Fire of London**.
- 1667** The Covenanters revolt in Scotland, and are suppressed. The Dutch sail up the Thames and Medway and burn the shipping. '**Paradise Lost**' is completed and published. **The Treaty of Breda**, by which each nation retained its own conquests, ends the Dutch war. Clarendon is dismissed from office, and, being impeached, escapes to France, where he dies in 1674.
- 1667-1673** **The 'Cabal' Administration**.
- 1668** **The Triple Alliance** of England, Holland, and Sweden is formed: Louis in consequence makes peace with Spain at **Aix-la-Chapelle**.
- 1670** Charles makes the **secret Treaty of Dover** with Louis and publishes a sham one. **The Second Conventicle Act** strengthens that of 1664. The Catholic priests are banished. The right of juries to find verdicts against the crown is established.
- 1672** Charles's debts force him to a fraudulent bankruptcy called the '**Stop of the Exchequer**.' **The Declaration of Indulgence** is issued by Charles.
- 1672-1674** **The Second Dutch War**, in which the Dutch were on the whole victorious.
- 1673** A fresh parliament is summoned, which compels Charles to cancel the Declaration of Indulgence and passes **the Test Act**. Parliament refuses supplies, and attacks the Cabal.
- 1674** **The Peace of Westminster**, by which England acquires **St. Helena**, ends the Dutch War.
- 1674-1679** **Danby's Administration** returns to the policy of Clarendon.
- 1675** **The Non-resisting Test** passes the Lords but not the Commons. Parliament is divided between the '**courtiers**,' led by Danby, and the '**country**' party, led by **Shaftesbury**. Bribed by Louis, Charles prorogues parliament for fifteen months.
- 1677** Parliament reassembles: the country party are defeated and their leaders imprisoned. Mary, eldest daughter of James, is married to William of Orange. Louis then allies himself with the opposition.
- 1678** **The Peace of Nimwegen** ends the war between France and Holland. Louis makes another secret treaty with Charles. A terror of Papists seizes the nation, and is increased by the pretended disclosures of **Titus Oates**.
- 1679** **Danby is impeached** by the Commons, and to save him Charles dissolves the Pensionary parliament. Archbishop Sharp is murdered in Scotland. The Covenanters defeat the royal forces under Claverhouse, but are defeated at **Bothwell Brigg**. A new parliament under Shaftesbury passes **The Habeas Corpus Act**, and is dissolved to thwart a proposed Exclusion Bill.
- 1680** Charles throws over the country party and dismisses Shaftesbury. The '**Chits**' come into power. Charles's third parliament is summoned. **The Exclusion Bill** passes the Commons but not the Lords, and parliament is dissolved.
- 1681** Charles's fourth and last parliament rejects a Regency Bill, proposes an Exclusion Bill, and is dissolved.
- 1681-1685** The country is governed without a parliament by the aid of pensions from Louis. A '**Tory**' reaction sets in against the '**Whigs**,' or exclusionists, and Shaftesbury escapes to Holland, where he dies in 1683.

1683 By writ of 'Que warranto' many charters are forfeited, and the municipalities made subservient. The Rye House Plot is formed to murder the king.

1685-1689. THE REIGN OF JAMES II.

1685 The Penal Laws are suspended by Royal Proclamation. A subservient parliament is elected which gives James an income of 2,000,000*l.* for life. Argyle lands and heads a rebellion in Scotland, but is captured and executed. Monmouth lands and heads a rebellion in the west, but is defeated at Sedgemoor and executed. Jeffreys holds the 'Bloody Circuit,' and is rewarded by James making him lord chancellor and a peer. Stirred by the revocation of the Edict of Nantes of 1598, the opposition in parliament increases.

1686 An ecclesiastical commission is appointed to coerce the clergy. Rochester, the leader of the moderate party at court, is dismissed when he refuses to become a convert.

1687 Liberty of conscience is proclaimed in the Declaration of Indulgence. The Universities are required to admit Catholics, and the fellows of Magdalen Hall, Oxford, are expelled for refusing to elect a nominee of James. 'Regulators' are appointed to remould the corporations.

1688 For refusing to read the Declaration, the Seven Bishops are sent to the Tower. They are brought to trial for sedition, and acquitted amidst general rejoicing. A son, afterwards called the Old Pretender, is born to James. William of Orange is invited to England. William lands at Torbay. James, deserted by his children, attempts to escape. James returns to London, but is frightened away and received by Louis at St. Germain's, where he dies in 1701.

1689 A convention parliament is called which declares the throne vacant. The crown is offered to William and Mary on the conditions set forth in the Declaration of Right. The First Act of Settlement provides for a Protestant succession.

1689-1820. X. THE NEW MONARCHY.

1689-1702. THE REIGN OF WILLIAM III. (1689-1694, IN CONJUNCTION WITH MARY II.)

1689 The 'nonjurors' resign their livings rather than take the oath of allegiance to William. The Mutiny Act is passed. The Toleration Act is passed. The royal troops are defeated by Claverhouse at Killiecrankie. The siege of Londonderry is relieved, and James's troops are defeated at Newtown Butler. The Bill of Rights is passed.

1690 The Corporation Bill is passed and parliament is dissolved. The new parliament grants William a 'civil list' of 800,000*l.* William settles the indemnity question by sending down an Act of Grace. The Dutch are defeated by the French off Beachy Head. William lands in Ireland and defeats James at the Boyne.

1691 Ginkell defeats St. Ruth at Anghrim and captures Limerick; the war is closed by the Treaty of Limerick.

1692 The Macdonalds are massacred at Glencoe. Russell defeats the French off La Hogue. William is defeated at Steinkirk.

- 1693** A loan proposed by Montague originates the National Debt. A new Triennial Bill is passed, but vetoed by William. William is defeated at Landen, or Neerwinden. About this time William trusts entirely to the Whigs, instead of holding the balance between the parties: thus party government begins.
- 1694** The Bank of England is founded. William assents to the Triennial Bill. Mary dies of smallpox. The English make an unsuccessful attack on Brest.
- 1695** William retakes Namur.
- 1696** A plot to assassinate William is discovered. A Treason Act is passed. The silver coinage is reformed under the direction of Sir Isaac Newton.
- 1697** The Peace of Ryswick is arranged between England, Holland, Spain, and France, and later the emperor.
- 1698** The First Partition Treaty is arranged in view of the possible death of Charles II. of Spain. A new Tory parliament is elected which still further reduces the army.
- 1699** The death of the Electoral Prince. A bill for inquiring into William's Irish grants is 'tacked on' to the Land Tax Bill.
- 1700** The Commons pass a bill for annulling the Irish grants. The Second Partition Treaty is necessitated by the death of the Electoral Prince. The death of Charles II. of Spain.
- 1701** The Second Act of Settlement is necessitated by the death (July 1700) of the Duke of Gloucester, the last of Anne's children: by one of its clauses the independence of the judges is secured. Louis XIV. seizes the 'Barrier Towns.' The Kentish and other petitions urge war against Louis, and the Grand Alliance is formed between England, Holland, and Austria. The Abjuration Oath is imposed on all clergymen and schoolmasters. Prussia joins the Alliance, which is now quadruple.
- 1702** William dies from the effect of an accident.

1702-1714. THE REIGN OF ANNE.

- 1702** A Tory ministry is appointed which favours peace, but the influence of Marlborough is decisive for war. (The War of the Spanish Succession.) The Occasional Conformity Bill passes the Commons, but is rejected by the Lords (and again in 1708). Marlborough captures Liège and is made a duke.
- 1703** Marlborough takes Bonn.
- 1704** The anti-war Tories are dismissed, and Harley and St. John become secretaries of state and war. By his victory at Blenheim Marlborough saves Austria from destruction, and checks French aggression for a century. Gibraltar is captured by the English.
- 1705** Parliament is dissolved: the new parliament and ministry are Whig. The Earl of Peterborough takes Barcelona. The Regency and Place Bills are passed: the Tories raise the cry of 'the church in danger.'

- 1706** The 'wonderful' year. Marlborough defeats Marshal Villeroi at Ramillies.
Peterborough enters Madrid, but his enterprise ends in failure and he withdraws to Italy. Louis XIV. offers peace, but Marlborough refuses.
- 1707** The Act of Union between England and Scotland is passed.
The English and their allies are defeated at Almanza. A Tory attack upon Marlborough fails. Robert Walpole becomes secretary of war.
- 1708** Marlborough and Eugene overthrow Marshal Vendôme at Oudenarde, and then take Lille, Ghent, and Bruges. Sardinia and Minorca are seized by General Stanhope.
- 1709** Louis again desires peace, but refuses the conditions. Marlborough and Eugene defeat Villars at Malplaquet and retake Mons.
- 1710** The trial of Sacheverell causes an outburst of high church feeling and the downfall of the Whigs. Harley and St. John join the ministry; parliament is dissolved, and there is a strong Tory majority in the new parliament.
After a series of failures in Spain (1708-1710), the English under Stanhope are forced to capitulate at Brihuega, and Philip V. is left master of Spain.
Harley is made Earl of Oxford. The property qualifications in force down to 1858 are imposed on members of parliament.
- 1711** Charles VI. becomes emperor on the death of Joseph I.; it is therefore no longer the English interest to make him king of Spain.
The Occasional Conformity Bill is passed by a coalition of Whigs and extreme Tories.
Marlborough is accused of corruption and dismissed.
- 1713** The Peace of Utrecht is signed.
- 1714** Bolingbroke passes the Schism Bill to retain the support of the church. Oxford is dismissed, and Bolingbroke left supreme.
On the death of Anne the Whigs seize the government and the Tories are driven out.

1714-1727. THE REIGN OF GEORGE I.

- 1714** A new Whig ministry comes into power.
- 1715** The Whigs have a strong majority in the new parliament; Bolingbroke and Ormond are attainted and Harley sent to the Tower.
The Riot Act is passed.
Though deprived of his chief support by the death of Louis XIV. the pretender lands in Scotland, where the Earl of Mar was already in revolt.
The southern revolt collapses; the rebels under Foster march south to Preston and surrender. The northern revolt collapses when, after the indecisive Battle of Sheriffmuir, the rebel forces melt away.
- 1716** Derwentwater and other rebels are executed. The Septennial Act is passed; the Occasional Conformity and Schism Acts are repealed.
A treaty is made with France.

- 1717** Holland joins the treaty, which thus become a Triple Alliance. Townsend and Walpole leave the ministry in consequence of a split in the Whig party.
- 1718** England, France, the emperor, and Holland join in a Quadruple Alliance to check the aggressiveness of Spain, now reviving under Cardinal Alberoni.
Byng destroys a Spanish fleet off Cape Passaro.
- 1719** Two frigates out of a Spanish armada reach Scotland. Alberoni craves for peace, but England insists on his banishment and Philip V. joins the Quadruple Alliance.
The Peerage Bill is introduced by Sunderland and Stanhope, but defeated through Walpole. Townsend and Walpole rejoin the ministry.
An act is passed enabling the English parliament to make laws for Ireland.
- 1720** The South Sea Bubble originates in a scheme for the reduction of the National Debt, and results in widespread financial ruin.
- 1721-1742** Walpole's administration.
- 1721** Walpole is called in to remedy the mischief, and becomes first lord of the Treasury and the first 'prime minister.' Under his guidance the Whigs become the party of peace and diplomacy.
A Jacobite conspiracy encouraged by the birth of Charles Edward, the young pretender, is detected and suppressed.
- 1724** Carteret becomes lord-lieutenant in Ireland, where the excitement about Wood's Halfpence compels the withdrawal of the patent.
- 1725** Disturbances are caused in Scotland by the substitution of a duty of 3*d.* on every barrel of ale for the malt tax.
Bolingbroke returns, and with Pulteney and the 'Patriots' opposes Walpole in the 'Craftsman.'
By the Treaty of Vienna Spain forms an alliance with the emperor against England, and guarantees the Pragmatic Sanction.
By the Treaty of Hanover England, France, and Prussia, and later on Sweden and Holland, form a counter-alliance.
- 1727** The Spaniards fail in a siege of Gibraltar. Peace is made at Paris.

1727-1760. THE REIGN OF GEORGE II.

- 1727** By the help of the queen, Caroline of Anspach, Walpole retains power.
- 1729** England, France, and Spain form a defensive alliance in the Treaty of Seville; the 'Assiento' is confirmed to the South Sea Company.
- 1731** Walpole secretly makes the Second Treaty of Vienna and guarantees the Pragmatic Sanction.
- 1733** Walpole proposes an Excise Bill to check smuggling, but is compelled to withdraw it.
The Family Compact is signed between the Bourbon kings of France and Spain.
- 1735** William Pitt enters parliament, and soon becomes the foremost of Walpole's opponents.
- 1736** The Porteous Riots break out in Edinburgh.
- 1737** The death of Queen Caroline.

- 1739** In consequence of 'Jenkins's ear' and other outrages Walpole is forced to declare war against Spain. Admiral Vernon captures Portobello.
- 1740** On the death of Charles VI. **Maria Theresa** succeeds to the Austrian dominions, but France and Spain repudiate the Pragmatic Sanction, upheld by England and Holland.
- 1741** Frederick the Great invades Silesia and defeats Maria Theresa at Molwitz.
A new parliament meets, in which Walpole has a diminished majority.
- 1742** Walpole resigns and is made Earl of Orford. The Elector of Bavaria is chosen emperor as Charles VII.
- 1742-1743** Lord Wilmington's administration, in which, however, Carteret is virtually prime minister.
- 1742** Carteret aids Maria Theresa, who cedes Silesia to Frederick and drives the French out of Bohemia.
- 1743** The English under George II. defeat the French at **Dettingen**.
- 1743-1754** Pelham's administration.
- 1743** Henry Pelham becomes prime minister on the death of Lord Wilmington.
A French invasion in support of the Young Pretender is frustrated by a storm.
- 1744** An indecisive action is fought between the English and French fleets off Toulon.
Anson returns from a triumphant voyage round the world.
Pitt, as paymaster of the forces, joins the government, now known as the 'Broad Bottom' ministry.
- 1745** On the death of the Emperor Charles VII. the question of the Austrian succession is peaceably settled. Maria Theresa makes the **Treaty of Dresden**, by which Frederick keeps Silesia and acknowledges Francis, husband of Theresa, as emperor.
- Cape Breton** is wrested from the French.
A rebellion under the young pretender Charles breaks out in Scotland; his victory over Cope at **Preston Pans** gives him command of most of Scotland. He marches south as far as **Derby**, whence he is compelled to retreat.
- 1746** Charles defeats General Hawley at Falkirk, but is defeated by Cumberland at Culloden and escapes to France, where he dies in 1788.
- 1747** Cumberland and the Prince of Orange are defeated at Lauffeld; Anson and Hawke defeat the French at sea.
- 1748** The Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle ends the war.
- 1750** The interest of the National Debt is reduced to 3 per cent.
Dupleix begins to build up the French power in Madras.
- 1751** The death of Frederick, prince of Wales.
The calendar is reformed.
Clive beats off his besiegers at Arcot, relieves Trichinopoly, defeats Dupleix, and returns to England.
- 1753** Hardwick's Marriage Act is passed.
- 1754-1756** The Duke of Newcastle's administration.
- 1754** The Duke of Newcastle becomes prime minister on the death of Pelham.
Dupleix is superseded and sent home.
- 1755** Fox joins the ministry.
General Braddock, who had been sent out in consequence of the

- establishment of Fort Duquesne on the Ohio by the French, is defeated by the French and Indians.
- War is declared against France.
- 1756** **Minorca**, unrelieved by Byng, capitulates.
England forms an alliance with Frederick the Great against Louis XV.
Clive returns as governor of Fort St. David; Surajah Dowlah throws 145 Europeans into the 'Black Hole of Calcutta,' and only 23 escape alive.
Fox and Newcastle resign.
- 1756-1757** **The Duke of Devonshire's administration**, in which Pitt was really, though not nominally, prime minister.
- 1756** The Highland regiments are enrolled and the militia reorganised.
- 1757** Byng is executed for failure to relieve Minorca.
Pitt is dismissed.
Clive recaptures Calcutta and Chandernagore, defeats Surajah Dowlah at Plassey, and is made governor of Bengal.
- 1757-1763** **Newcastle's second administration**, formed by the coalition of Newcastle and Pitt; Fox joins as paymaster.
- 1758** Pitt repudiates the Convention of Closterseven, which had been agreed to in 1757 in consequence of the defeat of Frederick at Kolin and Cumberland at Hastenbeck.
Fort Duquesne is captured and called Pittsburgh.
- 1759** Rodney bombards Havre, and Boscawen defeats a French fleet off Lagos; a triple expedition is sent to conquer Canada.
Clive reduces Masulipatam.
Ferdinand of Brunswick, with his British troops, wins the battle of Minden.
Quebec is captured, with the loss of Wolfe and Montcalm.
Hawke defeats the French off Quiberon.
- 1760** Eyre Cootte defeats the French at Wandewash. Montreal is taken, and all Canada becomes English.
Frederick recovers his lost ground at Torgau.

1760-1820. THE REIGN OF GEORGE III.

- 1761** The government refuse to declare war against Spain, and Pitt resigns. By the capture of Pondicherry, Cootte finally destroys the French power in India.
- 1762** The aggressive tone of Spain brings about a declaration of war; France loses her West Indian Islands, and Spain Havannah and the Philippines.
- 1762-1763** **The administration of Lord Bute.**
- 1763** **The Peace of Paris** ends the war. Bute resigns.
- 1763-1765** **The administration of George Grenville.**
- 1763** **No. 45 of the 'North Briton'** appears; those responsible are arrested under a general warrant, and Wilkes is thrown into the Tower in spite of his privilege as a member of parliament. Chief Justice Pratt declares general warrants illegal.

- 1764 Wilkes is expelled from the House and outlawed.
- 1765 Grenville's Stamp Act is passed.
- 1765-1766 The first Rockingham administration.
- 1766 The Stamp Act is repealed: the Declaratory Act is passed.
- 1766-1770 Pitt's ministry (till 1768, after which Grafton's).
- 1766 Pitt becomes Earl of Chatham.
- 1767 Townsend passes an act for taxing the American colonies.
- 1768 Wilkes returns from France, and is elected for Middlesex. Hyder Ali invades the Carnatic, and in 1769 surprises Madras. Chatham resigns, and Grafton is left head of the government.
- 1769 Wilkes is expelled from the House, and in spite of his re-election is not allowed to sit. Luttrell is seated by the Commons.
- 1770 Grafton resigns.
- 1770-1782 Lord North's administration secures the supremacy of the 'king's friends.'
- 1770 North repeals all the American taxes except that on tea.
- 1771 The right of printing reports of debates is conceded.
- 1772 The Royal Marriage Act is passed.
- 1773 The 'Mohawks' at Boston throw the tea into the harbour. The East India Company being in financial difficulties, Lord North relieves them with a loan, but reforms their constitution; Warren Hastings is the first governor-general.
- 1774 Gage occupies Boston; the colonists hold a congress at Philadelphia, and later another congress in Massachusetts.
- 1775 The increased government majority at the elections lessens the hope of compromise. Gage is defeated at Lexington (the first fight in the war) and besieged in Boston. George Washington is made colonial commander-in-chief. The colonists are defeated at Bunker's Hill; they invade Canada but fail.
- 1776 Howe, Gage's successor, evacuates Boston and captures New York. The colonists issue their Declaration of Right and (July 4) their Declaration of Independence.
- 1777 An indecisive engagement is fought between Washington and Cornwallis at Princeton. Howe defeats Washington at Brandywine, and captures Philadelphia. Burgoyne captures Ticonderoga, but is compelled to capitulate with 6,000 men at Saratoga. France thereupon acknowledges the independence of America and enters into an alliance.
- 1778 The Duke of Richmond proposes to recall the troops and make peace; Chatham, rising to answer him, falls back in a swoon and dies soon afterwards. A Catholic Relief Bill is passed. Warren Hastings takes Chandernagore and Pondicherry from the French.
- 1779 Spain declares war, and the siege of Gibraltar begins.
- 1780 Russia, Denmark, and Sweden, and later Holland, join an 'armed neutrality' against England. Holland joins the war against England. 'No Popery' riots are headed by the mad Lord George Gordon. Rodney wins a victory off Cape St. Vincent and relieves Gibraltar.
- 1781 Cornwallis drives the enemy out of North Carolina by his victory at Guildford. Cornwallis is forced to capitulate at York Town, and the war is virtually over. Eyre Coote defeats Hyder Ali at Porto Novo. The Dutch are driven out of India.

- 1763** France and Spain make a supreme effort to take Gibraltar and fail. Minorca is surrendered to the Spanish. Lord North resigns.
- 1763** **Rockingham's second administration.** The legislative independence of Ireland is secured by the repeal of the act of 1719. The Revenue officers (60,000 out of 300,000 electors) are disfranchised; Burke's scheme of economic reform is carried. **Rodney defeats the French in the West Indies.**
- 1762-1763** Shelburne's ministry comes into power on the death of Rockingham, with Pitt as chancellor of the exchequer.
- 1763** The **Treaty of Versailles** ends the war. A coalition ministry is formed by Fox and North, with Portland as nominal prime minister. Fox brings in his **India Bill**, which is defeated in the Lords, and the ministry is dismissed.
- 1763-1801** The administration of **William Pitt**, who at first is almost alone in the House.
- 1764** Parliament is dissolved; the elections give Pitt an immense majority—thus the king finally triumphs over the Whigs. Pitt reforms the finances and establishes a sinking fund. Pitt's **India Bill** is passed, and remains in force till 1858.
- 1765** Pitt introduces a bill for parliamentary reform, which is thrown out. Attempted reforms in Ireland have also to be abandoned.
- 1766** Burke and Sheridan move the impeachment of **Warren Hastings.**
- 1768** **Warren Hastings is impeached.** The slave trade agitation begins, and attains its object in 1807 and 1833. The king becomes insane; Fox maintains, in opposition to Pitt, that the Prince of Wales can assume the regency by constitutional right.
- 1769** The king recovers. The **States-General** are summoned at **Paris** for the first time since 1614. The populace of Paris storm the Bastille.
- 1791** The king and queen of France try to escape, and are brought back to Paris.
- 1792** The 'Legislative Assembly' declares war against Austria and Prussia; Louis XVI. is deposed and a republic proclaimed. A 'Decree of Defiance' is issued by the 'Convention' inviting all nations to overthrow their monarchical governments. Fox passes his **Libel Bill.**
- 1793** England, Spain, and Holland join Austria and Prussia in the **first coalition against France.** The 'Convention' guillotines Louis XVI. and declares war against England. Parliament passes an **Alien Act.** The French defy all Europe on land, but are beaten by the English at sea.
- 1794** Howe defeats the French off Brest.
- 1795** Prussia and Spain are forced into alliance with France; a British expedition to relieve the royalist insurgents in Brittany fails. Ceylon, Java, the Malaccas, and the Cape of Good Hope are wrested from the Dutch, now the compulsory allies of France.
- 1796** Futile French expeditions are sent to Ireland (under Hoche) and Wales.
- 1797** Great victories are won by the English over the French at **Cape St. Vincent** and (October) **Camperdown.** The Bank of England suspends cash payments. A **mutiny at Spithead** is checked by timely concessions; a more serious **mutiny at the Nore** is also put down.
- 1798** A partial rising takes place in Ireland; the insurgents are broken up at **Vinegar Hill.** Some French troops, who had landed in Ireland, capitulate.

- late. Napoleon takes Malta and lands in Egypt; Nelson destroys the French naval power in the battle of the Nile.
- 1799 A second coalition of England, Austria, and Russia is formed against France; after some reverses the French under Masséna defeat the allies at Zurich. Napoleon invades Syria; Acre is successfully defended by the Turks, aided by Sir Sidney Smith. Napoleon returns to France, overthrows the 'Directory,' and becomes 'First Consul' (i.e. dictator). The Austrians are defeated by the French at Hohenlinden. The English storm Seringapatam; Sir Arthur Wellesley defeats the Mahrattas at Assaye and Argaum.
- 1800 The Austrians are defeated by Napoleon at Marengo. The Act of Union between England and Ireland is passed. Russia, Denmark, and Sweden revive the Northern League, and resist the right of search claimed by England.
- 1801 Austria having made peace at Lunéville, England is left to fight France single-handed. Pitt resigns on the king's refusal to grant Catholic relief.
- 1801-1804 Addington's administration.
- 1801 The English under Abercrombie defeat the French at Aboukir. Nelson destroys the Danish fleet at Copenhagen, and the Northern League is broken up.
- 1802 The peace of Amiens ends the war.
- 1803 The refusal of England to surrender Malta on account of fresh annexations by Napoleon leads to a renewal of the war.
- 1804 Napoleon is proclaimed emperor; preparations for the invasion of England are made at Boulogne.
- 1804-1806 The second administration of Pitt.
- 1804 Pitt gives up the Catholic Emancipation question.
- 1805 England, Russia, Austria, and Sweden join in a new coalition against Napoleon. The invasion of England is abandoned. The Austrians under Mack capitulate at Ulm. Nelson destroys the united French and Spanish fleets at Trafalgar. Napoleon defeats the Austrians and Russians at Austerlitz; Austria makes peace at Presburg.
- 1806-1807 On the death of Pitt, Grenville forms the ministry 'of all the talents.'
- 1806 Prussia, which had held aloof from the coalition, is defeated by Napoleon at Jena and Auerstadt. Napoleon issues the 'Berlin Decrees,' to which the English retort (1807) by the 'Orders in Council.'
- 1807 An act for the abolition of the slave trade is passed.
- 1807-1809 The Duke of Portland's administration.
- 1807 Napoleon fights the Russians at Eylau, and defeats them at Friedland. The Peace of Tilsit is signed, in consequence of the secret articles of which Canning, the foreign secretary, bombards Copenhagen and seizes the Danish fleet. The French invade Spain.
- 1807-1814 The Peninsular War.
- 1808 The king of Spain is deposed in favour of Napoleon's brother Joseph, who is soon afterwards driven out by a national rising. Sir Arthur Wellesley is sent to Portugal and defeats the French at Rolicá and Vimiero; Junot signs the Convention of Cintra. Napoleon crosses the Pyrenees and enters Madrid in triumph.
- 1809 The English under Sir John Moore make good their retreat and defeat

- Soult at Corunna. The war is renewed between France and Austria; Napoleon repairs a defeat at Aspern by a victory at Wagram. Peace is made between Austria and France at Vienna. Wellesley crosses the Douro, drives Soult out of Oporto, and defeats Victor at Talavera, but is then forced to retreat. An English expedition to the isle of Walcheren ends in disaster. The ministry resign.
- 1809-1812** Perceval's administration; Wellington is better supported at home, his brother, the Marquis of Wellesley, being foreign secretary.
- 1810** Wellington defeats Masséna at Busaco and enters the Lines of Torres Vedras. The king becomes permanently insane.
- 1811** The Prince of Wales is made Regent. Masséna retreats northwards and abandons Portugal; Wellington defeats Masséna at Fuentes d'Onoro and captures Almeida. Soult is defeated at Albuera by Beresford, who had invested Badajoz. Wellington again invests Badajoz, but retreats northwards on the advance of Soult in force.
- 1812** Wellington storms Ciudad Rodrigo; Badajoz is now invested for the third time and stormed. Perceval is assassinated.
- 1812-1827** Lord Liverpool's administration.
- 1812** Napoleon having resolved to invade Russia, crosses the Vistula with 400,000 men; after fighting the battle of Borodino he enters Moscow. The burning of the city compels a retreat; only 20,000 eventually recross the Vistula. Wellington defeats Marmont at Salamanca, but fails in the siege of Burgos.
- 1812-1814** War between England and the United States because of the Orders in Council.
- 1813** Napoleon defeats the Prussians at Lutzen and Bautzen, and the Austrians at Dresden; Napoleon is himself defeated at Leipzig. Wellington defeats Joseph at Vittoria, storms San Sebastian, and takes Pampluna.
- 1814** An English force is landed in Holland, and fails in an attempt on Bergen-op-Zoom. Soult is defeated at Orthez by Wellington, who had by this time crossed the Pyrenees. Soult is defeated at Toulouse, in the last battle of the war. The allies invade France and enter Paris. Napoleon abdicates and is banished to Elba. The restored Bourbon, Louis XVIII., signs the first Peace of Paris with the allies.
- 1815** A congress at Vienna is broken up by the return of Napoleon. A Corn Law is passed prohibiting the importation of corn till it has reached 80s. a quarter. Ney attacks Wellington at Quatre Bras, and Napoleon Blücher at Ligny. Napoleon is defeated at Waterloo, abdicates, and is sent to St. Helena, where he died in 1821. Russia, Austria, Prussia, France, and Spain join in the Holy Alliance, directed against popular movements. The second Treaty of Paris restores peace to Europe; England insists on the abolition of the slave trade.
- 1816** Lord Exmouth destroys Algiers and stamps out piracy in the Mediterranean. The failure of the harvest adds to the prevailing distress, and riots break out at Spa Fields.
- 1817** The Habeas Corpus Act is suspended for the last time in England. The Seditious Meetings Bill is passed; the 'Blanketeers' march from Manchester to protest, but disperse on the way. A number of sinecure offices are abolished; savings banks are established. With the return of prosperity discontent subsides.

- 1818 The first organised strike breaks out among the Lancashire cotton-spinners.
- 1819 The depression returns; an attempt of the authorities to disturb a seditious meeting results in the Peterloo Massacre. The Six Acts are passed to strengthen the hands of the authorities.

XI. THE ERA OF REFORM.

1820-1830. THE REIGN OF GEORGE IV.

- 1820 The Cato Street Conspiracy is discovered, Thistlewood and other ring-leaders are caught and executed. A bill of pains and penalties brought in by Lord Liverpool against Queen Caroline has to be withdrawn.
- 1821 The Greeks rise in insurrection against the Turks. A bill for the entire abolition of Catholic disabilities passes in the Commons, but is rejected in the Lords. The queen is refused admittance at the coronation and dies soon afterwards; her funeral is the occasion of a riot in London. The resumption of cash payments by the Bank of England temporarily causes great distress.
- 1822 Lord Londonderry (Castlereagh), one of the chief opponents of reform, dies by his own hand; his place is taken by Canning.
- 1823 Sir R. Peel reduces by 100 the number of crimes punishable with death. (Note—Romilly and Mackintosh had in vain agitated for reform of the criminal law since 1808.) The Navigation Act is partially repealed; several measures are passed in the direction of free trade. Daniel O'Connell founds the Catholic Association. Canning recognises the independence of the Spanish colonies.
- 1824 Certain acts prejudicial to the Spitalfields silk trade are repealed. The laws against the combination of workmen are repealed.
- 1825 The First Burmese War results in the annexation of Aracan and Tenasserim. A prosecution of O'Connell for treasonable language has to be abandoned; an act is passed for the suppression of the Catholic Association, but is easily evaded. Great prosperity leads to a second South Sea Bubble, followed by commercial panic. The Stockton and Darlington railway is opened. (The first practical application of steam locomotive power.)
- 1826 Canning prepares to protect Portugal against invasion by Spain.
- 1827 Canning becomes prime minister on the resignation of Lord Liverpool. Canning forms an alliance with Russia and France; the allied fleet defeats the Turks at Navarino. Lord Goderich (Robinson) becomes prime minister on Canning's death, and resigns early next year.
- 1828-1830 The Duke of Wellington's administration.
- 1828 The Test and Corporation Acts are repealed by Lord John Russell.
- 1829 The Catholic Relief Bill is passed by the Tory ministry; at the same time the freehold qualification in Ireland is raised from 40s. to 10l.

1830-1837. THE REIGN OF WILLIAM IV.

- 1830 In consequence of a revolution at Paris Louis Philippe becomes king in place of Charles X. Belgium secures its independence. Wellington resigns.

- 1830-1834** The Whig ministry of Lord Grey—opposed by Sir R. Peel.
- 1830** Serious risings of peasants occur, especially in the south of England.
- 1831** The first Reform Bill is brought in by Lord John Russell, but fails to pass; parliament is dissolved. In the new parliament the Whigs have an immense majority. The second Reform bill passes the Commons and is thrown out by the Lords. The popular indignation leads to dangerous riots, especially at Bristol. The third Reform Bill is brought in.
- 1832** Owing to the resistance of the Lords, Earl Grey resigns, and is recalled at the instance of Wellington, who is unable to form a ministry. Brougham suggests the wholesale creation of peers to coerce the Lords; the opposition peers yield to the intervention of the king and the bill passes the Lords.
- 1833** The first reformed parliament meets. O'Connell still agitates for the repeal of the Union; a strong Coercion Act is consequently passed. A Church Act is passed to deal with the Irish church. Government undertakes the collection of Irish tithes and pays 1,000,000*l.* of arrears. Slavery is formally abolished by act of parliament. The first education grant is made. The first Factory Act is passed.
- 1834** The Poor Law is amended. The ministry resign on the question of renewing the Coercion Act for Ireland. Lord Melbourne becomes prime minister for a few months and is then dismissed.
- 1834-1835** Sir R. Peel's administration. Lord J. Russell carries a bill for applying the Irish church revenues to lay purposes, and the ministry resigns.
- 1835-1841.** Lord Melbourne's administration.
- 1835** The Municipal Reform Bill is carried.
- 1836** The Tithe Commutation Act is passed. The marriage laws are reformed. The 'taxes on knowledge'—i.e. the Newspaper Tax and Paper Excise—are reduced. The Ecclesiastical Commissioners begin their reforms in the management of church property.

VICTORIA.

- 1837** The accession of Queen Victoria; Hanover, where no female could wear the crown, falls to the Duke of Cumberland. A revolt in Canada is suppressed. The points demanded by the Chartists are embodied in the People's Charter.
- 1838** The Anti-Corn-Law League is established and led by Cobden and Bright.
- 1839** Melbourne resigns, and Peel is invited to take office, but the Bedchamber Question occurs and Melbourne returns. A Russian siege of Herat fails; the Bolan Pass is forced, and Shah Soojah enthroned in place of Dost Mohammed.
- 1840** B. Hill's postal reform comes finally into force. The queen marries Prince Albert of Saxe-Coburg. A Municipal Reform Bill for Ireland is passed. The First Chinese War springs from the Opium Question, and results in the occupation (1841) and cession (1842) of Hong Kong.
- 1841** Upper and Lower Canada are united. The Afghans rise against the English at Cabul; one man out of 15,000 British reaches Jellalabad. Lord Melbourne resigns.
- 1841-1846** Sir R. Peel's administration (Conservative reformer).

- 1842** Jellalabad is heroically defended by Sale till its relief by Pollock. The English are finally victorious in Afghanistan, and Doat Mohammed is restored. Peel imposes an income tax of 7*d.* for three years, and remits some duties, thereby initiating Free Trade.
- 1843** Distress in Ireland leads to a demand for repeal of the Union; O'Connor is arrested. A great schism in Scotland leads to the establishment of the Free Kirk of Scotland. Sir Charles Napier annexes Scinde.
- 1845** A failure of the potato crop causes a famine in Ireland; Peel proposes a gradual abolition of the Corn Duties. The cabinet refuse to support him and he resigns. Russell fails to form a ministry and Peel returns to office.
- 1845-1846** The First Sikh War. The British victories at Moodkee and Ferozshah are the first steps in the annexation of the Punjab. Further victories at Aliwal and Sobraon in 1846 conclude the war.
- 1846** Peel passes a bill for the gradual abolition of the Corn Laws, to be complete by 1849. Sir R. Peel resigns on the defeat of a Coercion Bill for Ireland.
- 1846-1852** Lord John Russell's administration.
- 1846** A renewed failure of the potato crop causes a terrible famine in Ireland; 240,000 people perish of sheer starvation.
- 1847** Over-speculation in railways leads to much commercial disaster.
- 1848** Louis Philippe is driven from France by a revolution; Ireland is thereby thrown into a tumultuous state and fresh coercive laws have to be passed.
- 1848-1849** The Second Sikh War.
- 1849** A serious faction fight occurs in Ireland; later in the year a visit of the queen to Ireland causes greater tranquillity there. Gough retrieves a partial defeat at Chillianwalla by the victory of Gujerat, and the Punjab is completely annexed. The Navigation Act of 1651 is totally repealed (*see* 1823).
- 1850** Sir R. Peel is killed by a fall from his horse.
- 1851** The Great Exhibition is opened. The Ecclesiastical Titles Bill is passed in consequence of the re-establishment by Pius IX. of Roman Catholic dioceses in 1850. Lord Palmerston, the foreign secretary, is dismissed for expressing his approval of the *coup d'état* by which Napoleon made himself president for life.
- 1852** Lord John Russell resigns and Lord Derby becomes prime minister. The second Burmese War ends in the capture of Rangoon and the annexation of Pegu. The death of the Duke of Wellington. Napoleon III. is proclaimed emperor.
- 1852-1855** Lord Aberdeen's administration.
- 1853** War breaks out between Russia and Turkey.
- 1854-1856** The Crimean War.
- 1854** A British ultimatum is sent to Russia and rejected. An allied army of English and French lands in the Crimea; the Russians are completely defeated by the English on the Alma, partially at Balaklava, and completely at Inkerman.
- 1855** Owing to the terrible mismanagement in the Crimea the ministry resign.
- 1855-1858** Lord Palmerston's first ministry.
- 1856** The death of the Czar Nicholas. The French take the Malakoff redoubt, and Sebastopol falls after nearly a year's siege.

- 1856** Peace is made, and the results of the war summed up in the **Declaration of Paris**. The annexation of Oude virtually completes the occupation of India.
- 1856-1858** The Second Chinese War, during which Canton is taken and treaty ports opened to European trade.
- 1857** The **Indian Mutiny** breaks out and **Delhi falls**; the **Massacre of Cawnpore** is perpetrated by Nana Sahib. The English recover Delhi and **Lucknow is relieved**. 'Clemency' Canning, the governor-general, tries to check the ferocious vengeance of the English.
- 1858** Sir Colin Campbell finally suppresses the mutiny. In consequence of an attempt to murder Napoleon III. Palmerston brings in, but fails to pass, a bill to punish such conspiracies. The ministry then resign.
- 1858-1859** **Lord Derby's second administration.**
- 1858** The property qualifications imposed on members of parliament in 1710 are repealed. **The government of India is transferred from the East India Company to the crown.**
- 1859** A Franchise Bill introduced by Disraeli is lost and the ministry resigns.
- 1859-1865** **Lord Palmerston's second administration.**
- 1859** By his budget **Mr. Gladstone**, the chancellor of the exchequer, shows himself a skilful financier.
- 1860** A Free Trade Treaty is negotiated with France by Mr. Cobden. **The Lords interfere in a money bill for the last time** on the occasion of a proposed repeal of the paper duty.
- 1861** A civil war breaks out between the Northern and Southern States in America; the 'Trent' is stopped by a Northern steamer, and war nearly breaks out with England. Victor Emmanuel is proclaimed king of United Italy. The death of the Prince Consort. Great distress is caused in Lancashire by the **cotton famine** resulting from the American War.
- 1862** The 'Alabama' sails from Birkenhead fitted as a cruiser for the Southern side. The consequent claim for damages is settled by arbitration in 1872.
- 1864** The American Civil War ends in a complete victory for the North.
- 1865** The death of Lord Palmerston.
- 1865-1866** **Lord J. Russell's administration.**
- 1866** Gladstone's Reform Bill is defeated by the 'Adullamites.'
- 1866-1868** **Lord Derby's third administration.**
- 1867** Disraeli brings in a 'Reform Bill,' which is altered by the Liberals till it becomes a democratic measure, and is then passed. Fenian outrages are committed in England, and there is an abortive rising in Ireland.
- 1868** On the resignation of Lord Derby, Disraeli becomes prime minister. Gladstone's bill for the abolition of compulsory church rates is passed. An expedition to Abyssinia ends with the capture of Magdala. Gladstone carries against the government a resolution to disestablish and disendow the Irish church. Disraeli resigns, when a general election gives a Liberal majority.
- 1868-1874** **Gladstone's administration.**
- 1869** Gladstone's Irish Church Bill is finally carried.
- 1870** Gladstone's Irish Land Act is passed. **Forster's Elementary Education Act is passed.**

- 1871** The purchase of commissions in the army is abolished. Religious tests at Oxford and Cambridge are abolished.
- 1872** The 'Alabama' case (1862) is settled by arbitration, and England paid 8,000,000*l.* as compensation to the United States. The Ballot Act (proposed and lost 1871) is carried.
- 1873** A Supreme Court of Judicature is established for hearing appeals. Gladstone's Education Bill for Ireland is defeated; Mr. Gladstone retains office till the general election, when a strong Conservative reaction discloses itself.
- 1874-1880** Disraeli's administration.
- 1874** The Ashantee War is ended by the burning of Coomassie. The Public Worship Regulation Act is passed.
- 1875** Plimsoll's Merchant Seamen's Act is carried. The government are compelled to withdraw the Slave Circular. Cross's Artisans' Dwellings Act is carried. Flogging in the army is abolished. The Khedive's shares in the Suez Canal are purchased by England.
- 1876** The 'Bulgarian Atrocities' cause great excitement in England. The queen is proclaimed Empress of India.
- 1877** Russia invades Turkey; the fall of Plevna leaves the road open to Constantinople.
- 1878** The British fleet is ordered to the Dardanelles. Russia makes the treaty of San Stephano with Turkey. Indian troops are brought to Malta. A congress is held which results in the Treaty of Berlin. An armed mission is sent to Shere Ali at Cabul to check Russian designs; Cabul and Candahar are occupied.
- 1879** Cavagnari and his escort are murdered at Cabul. In the Zulu War the British are defeated at Isandhlwana; the national honour is retrieved by the defence of Rorke's Drift and the victory of Ulundi. The Zulu king Cetewayo is captured.
- 1880-1885** Gladstone's administration.
- 1880** The 'Midlothian Campaign' results in a large Liberal majority.
- 1881** The death of Lord Beaconsfield. Gladstone carries an Irish Land Act, but the continued agitation in Ireland necessitates a fresh Coercion Act. The English annexation of the Transvaal leads to war with the Boers; the British are defeated at Majuba Hill and the Transvaal is evacuated.
- 1882** Lord F. Cavendish, secretary, and Mr. Burke, under-secretary, are murdered in Phoenix Park, and a severer Coercion Act is passed. Arabi Pasha heads a rebellion in Egypt against the Khedive; an English fleet bombards Alexandria; Arabi is defeated at Tel-el-Kebir.
- 1883** An Egyptian army under Hicks is cut to pieces in the Soudan.
- 1884** The franchise is extended to agricultural labourers.
- 1885** General Gordon having been sent to hold Khartoum, is lost through the late arrival of the relieving force. Mr. Gladstone is defeated on the budget and resigns. The Third Burmese War ends with the deposition of King Theebaw and the annexation of Upper Burmah.
- 1886** After a short-lived government of Salisbury, Gladstone comes into power for the third time. The Home Rule Bill splits up the Liberal party. By the aid of the Liberal Unionists Lord Salisbury comes into power.
- 1887** Mr. Goschen joins the government as chancellor of the exchequer. The Queen's Jubilee is celebrated.

APPENDIX II.

A GLOSSARY

OF TECHNICAL AND OTHER TERMS.

- Abhorrrers**, afterwards called Tories: those who in 1680 disapproved of the attempt of Shaftesbury's party to force the king to summon parliament by petitions. Their opponents were the **Petitioners**.
- act**: a proposal which has passed into law and is accepted by all three branches of the legislature.
- Act of Grace**: a proposal of indemnity sent by the sovereign to the Houses, which had to be rejected or accepted by them as a whole.
- 'Addled' Parliament**: a parliament of James I. which lasted only two months, and was dissolved in 1614 without passing any measure.
- 'Adullamites'**: a section among the Liberals, led by Mr. Lowe and Mr. Horaman, who in 1866 opposed Gladstone's Reform Bill; so called by Mr. Bright, with reference to 1 Samuel xxii. 2, because, like David, they called into their cave of Adullam 'everyone that was in distress, and everyone that was discontented.'
- 'adulterine' castles**: the unauthorised baronial castles which sprang up during the weak reign of Stephen and were put down after the Peace of Wallingford, 1153.
- agitators**: *agents* or representatives chosen by the soldiers, two from each troop, to take counsel when the parliament and army were quarrelling about 1647.
- aids**: claims on the vassal made by the lord (1) for a ransom if taken prisoner; (2) when his eldest son was knighted; (3) on the marriage of his eldest daughter. These were the 'three great feudal dues.' These obsolete feudal claims were revived by Empson and Dudley under Henry VII.
- amicable loan**: an attempt of Henry VIII. to exact money from the clergy (one-fourth of their property) and laity (one-sixth); it failed, and all the odium of it fell on Wolsey, 1525.
- Angevin**: of Anjou.
- annates**: the firstfruits or first *year's* income of ecclesiastical benefices or bishoprics (Lat. *annus*, a year).
- Anti-Corn-Law League**: established at Manchester in 1838, Richard Cobden and John Bright being the most able members. The demand for the repeal of the Corn Laws came from the manufacturers and middle class, and then from the poor; the landlords opposed it. For the repeal of the Corn Laws *see* 1846.

- Appellants:** the five nobles, Gloucester, Derby, Nottingham, Warwick, and Arundel, who in 1388 'appealed' or accused the advisers of Richard II of treason.
- armada:** Spanish for an *armed* fleet or armament, especially that which attempted to invade England in 1588.
- Armagnacs:** the supporters of the Duke of Orleans, who had married the daughter of the Count of Armagnac. Their opponents were the Burgundians.
- Arminianism:** the doctrine of a Dutch divine named Arminius, who upheld free-will and the efficacy of good works against the Calvinistic predestination and justification by faith. In England, Laud was the leader of the Arminians.
- arquebus:** an old-fashioned musket which, being clumsy to handle, was fired from a forked rest.
- Assiento:** a contract between France and Spain, giving the former the sole right of importing negroes to Spanish America; transferred to England by the Peace of Utrecht (1713), and confirmed to the South Sea Company by the Treaty of Seville (1729).
- assize:** a legislative edict or assertion of royal authority by Henry II.
- attainder (act of):** a special act of parliament passed in the ordinary way, declaring the guilt of the attainted individual and inflicting punishment, generally forfeiture and death.
- attaint:** to condemn, by special act of parliament, called an Act of Attainder, directed against the individual and passed in the ordinary way. This method was employed against Thomas Cromwell, Strafford, and Laud in preference to the less deadly impeachment. It declared the blood of the attainted person corrupt, and deprived him of the right to possess or transmit property. It entailed forfeiture to the crown, and, as a rule, death. Bills of attainder originate either in the Lords or the Commons.
- attorney:** one who is legally authorised to act for another—e.g. the attorney-general for the crown.
- Babington's Plot:** a Catholic plot formed, possibly with Mary's connivance, to murder Elizabeth, 1586; it was so named from its chief promoter; it resulted in the execution of Mary in 1587.
- balance of power:** the principle of an even distribution of power among rival nations, so that no one has an overwhelming strength. Wolsey was the first English statesman to grasp this idea.
- bards:** an inferior order of Druids—singers and prophets.
- Barebone Parliament (1653):** an assembly of Cromwell's nominees, all 'godly' men, of whom Praise-God Barebone was a most prominent member. It was called in June, after the dissolution of the Long Parliament by Cromwell.
- barilla:** a marine plant imported chiefly from Spain, from which alkali is obtained for the manufacture of soap, &c.; its substitution for the kelp collected by the people on the west coast of Scotland caused such distress there that many died of famine when the duty on foreign alkali was removed in 1845.
- baronets:** a new order instituted in 1611 by James I. to raise money; the price of a baronetcy was 1,030*l.* a year for three years.
- barrier towns:** certain towns in the Spanish Netherlands which had been held

- as a barrier against the aggression of Louis XIV., who, however, induced the Spaniards to acquiesce in his garrisoning them.
- 'Basilicon Doron'** ('Royal Gift'): a book in which James I. set forth the doctrine of divine right and passive obedience.
- Bastille**: a fortress and prison in Paris like our 'Tower of London'; one of the first events of the French Revolution was its storming by the infuriated mob, 1789.
- begum**: an Indian princess or lady of rank; the Begums of Oude, widow and mother of Surajah Dowlah, were brutally treated by Warren Hastings, who wrung a million of money from them.
- benefit of clergy**: in early times no 'criminous clerk' could be tried by any but church courts, which could only pronounce spiritual censure. This was the chief cause of the quarrel between Thomas Becket and Henry II., and was finally forbidden about 1580.
- Benevolences**: gifts from rich people to the king—nominally voluntary, really compulsory. Exacted by Edward IV.; declared illegal by Richard III., 1484. Again exacted under Henry VII. on the plea that the statute of 1484 forbidding benevolences was illegal, Richard III. being a usurper.
- Berlin Decrees**: issued by Napoleon in 1806, forbade France and her allies to trade with Great Britain, declared all British ports under blockade, and any vessel trading with Britain a lawful prize. (*See Orders in Council.*)
- Bernicia**: an Anglian kingdom stretching from Yorkshire (Deira) to the Forth, founded by Ida; capital, Bamborough.
- bill**: a legislative proposal which has not yet passed into law.
- 'Bishop's Book'**: the 'Institution of a Christian Man'—drawn up by Cranmer and Fox, expressing for the first time the doctrine of passive obedience to the king as God's representative, 1537.
- Bishops' War**: a name sometimes given to two Scotch wars, the first in 1639, the second in 1640.
- Black Friday**: December 4, 1745: the day on which Charles, the Young Pretender, reached Derby. So called because of the panic into which London was thrown.
- Black Hole of Calcutta**: the common dungeon, eighteen feet by fourteen, into which Surajah Dowlah crowded 145 Europeans; only 23 came forth alive (1756).
- Blanketeers**: those who, by way of protest against the repressive measures of the government in 1817, held a meeting at Manchester, and being resolved to march to London, provided themselves with blankets to sleep by the way.
- Bloody Circuit or Assizes**: the trial by the brutal Jeffreys, the lord chief justice, of the supporters of Monmouth's rebellion, 1685.
- book-land**: portions of folk-land allotted by the king with the consent of his Witan by *written document*.
- bourgeoisie**: the merchants, shopkeepers, and professional men in France who stood between the nobility and the proletariat.
- 'boys'**: the name applied by Walpole to the rising young men whose opposition began to be felt on the death of Walpole's friend, Queen Caroline, in 1737.
- Bretwalda**: a title assumed by the Saxon chief or king who, for the time being, held the supremacy. It meant 'Lord of the Britons.'

- British legion**: a force of Englishmen, under Sir De Lacy Evans, serving in the pay of Isabella against Don Carlos in 1833, and contributing much to her final success.
- 'broad bottom'**: a name given to Pelham's administration of 1744, because it was a coalition so wide that there was practically no opposition.
- Brownists**: the first of the separatists, known later as Independents and Congregationalists, called after their founder, Robert Browne, a clergyman who advocated complete religious liberty.
- bull**: a decree of the Pope named from the seal attached to it (Lat. *bulia*).
- burgh or borough**: a Saxon settlement protected by a mound, generally developing into a town later on.
- 'Burnt Candlemas'**: February 1856, on account of the fearful devastation worked in the Lothians by Edward III. in that month. Candlemas is a festival of the Catholic Church on February 2, in honour of the Purification of the Virgin Mary.
- butcher**: the name applied to the Duke of Cumberland because of the ruthless slaughter of the Highlanders which followed the battle of Culloden in 1746; in reality, General Hawley was more responsible for it than the duke.
- 'Bye' Plot**: a Catholic plot to kidnap James I. and force concessions from him. Its promoters were Watson, a Catholic priest, and Brooke, brother of Raleigh's friend, Lord Cobham. Through Raleigh's connection with one of the leaders of the plot, Cecil had a chance of ruining him, 1608.
- Cabal**: the administration from 1667-1678; so called because the initials of its members, Clifford, Arlington, Buckingham, Ashley, Lauderdale, formed the word 'cabal'—a body of secret advisers.
- cabinet**: those members of the government who are charged with the executive; they were originally those members of the privy council who were most in the king's confidence.
- Calvinism**: a system of doctrine derived from John Calvin; predestination, justification by faith, and the verbal inspiration of the Bible were its leading tenets. (*See (Presbyterianism.)*)
- Calvinist**: one who follows Calvin in his doctrines of predestination, justification by faith, and the verbal inspiration of the Bible.
- canons**: enactments of convocation not binding without consent of parliament.
- carucage**: a permanent tax on land imposed by Hubert Walter in the reign of Richard I. on every 'carucate' or hide of land, which was henceforth fixed as one hundred acres.
- Castlebar Races**: a fight with some French troops who had landed in Mayo in 1798, so called from the speed with which the disaffected militia ran away from General Humbert's force.
- Catholic Association**: founded in 1828 as a rallying point for his co-religionists by Daniel O'Connell; its object was to forward Catholic emancipation, but its methods were seditious. In 1825 an act for its suppression was passed, but the Irish evaded this by voluntarily dissolving and reviving it in an altered form.
- Cavaliers**: the supporters of Charles I. in the Civil War.
- ceorl**: the Saxon simple freeman, neither noble nor slave; this class gradually disappeared, either rising to thegnhood or sinking to villenage.
- chancellor**: the keeper of the king's seal, and his secretary, inferior to the

- Justiciar** until after the Norman kings; he was nearly always a cleric, and often a bishop (Lat. *cancella*, a screen).
- chantries**: private religious endowments for the maintenance of priests to say mass for the repose of the founder's soul.
- charter**: a royal document conferring privileges on towns, or on the whole nation.
- Charterhouse**: the house in London of the Carthusian monks.
- chartism**: the opinions of those who upheld the 'People's Charter' of 1837. (See *People's Charter*.)
- châteaux**: the country houses of the French nobility burnt and pillaged by the peasantry on the news of the fall of the Bastille in 1789.
- chipâtis**: small cakes by means of which secret signals were passed throughout Bengal early in 1857, just before the outbreak of the mutiny.
- 'Chits'**: Sunderland, Lawrence Hyde (son of Clarendon), and Godolphin, who came into power on the fall of Shaftesbury.
- cinque ports**: Hastings, Sandwich, Dover, Romney, Hythe, to which Winchelsea and Rye were added. The ships of these ports, in the absence of a national navy, guarded the coast. In return these towns enjoyed extraordinary privileges.
- Clarendon Code**: the various acts passed against dissent, 1661-1665—Corporation Act, Act of Uniformity, First Conventicle Act, Five Mile Act.
- clergy, regular and secular**: the monks living according to the rule of their order were called regular clergy (Lat. *regula*, a rule); the parish priests living among and like the people were the secular clergy.
- clerk**: a clergyman (so now 'clerk in holy orders').
- commendation**: for protection every ordinary man or ceorl 'commended' himself to some lord or thegn. Under the feudal system it became a rule that 'every man must have a lord.'
- commissions of array**: (1) royal orders to call out the national militia superseding the sheriffs' power in the fourteenth century; (2) orders calling out the national forces (the ancient *fyrð*) issued by Charles I. in 1642.
- Committee of both Kingdoms**: a mixed body of Scotch and English in whose hands the control of the war was placed by the parliamentarians.
- compurgation**: a method of trial by which the accused brought forward twelve compurgators to swear to his innocence; abolished by Henry II.
- Confession of Augsburg**: published in 1530 as the embodiment of Lutheran views. Henry VIII. had thoughts of joining it in 1535, but did not do so.
- congé d'élire**: permission from the king to the chapter to elect a bishop, who must, however, elect the king's nominee under penalty of *præmunire*.
- Congregationalists**: the same as the Independents or Brownists.
- Conservatives**: the moderate Tories who in the first reformed parliament of 1833 followed Peel.
- constable**: one of the great officers at court; the king's marshal.
- 'constructive' treason**: the line of argument adopted by Pym against Strafford in 1641; by undermining the laws and claiming illegal authority for the crown he had exposed the king to disaster.
- Convention Parliament**: resembling an ordinary parliament in every respect except that the Commons were not summoned by royal writ—e.g. in 1660 and 1689.

- convocation**: the deliberative assembly of the church of England, especially that of the province of Canterbury as more important than that of York; like parliament, it consists of an upper and a lower house. (*See canons.*)
- Council of the North**: established in 1537 by Henry VIII. to keep order in the recently disturbed districts. Wentworth was made its president in 1628. It sat for four months each year at York, Newcastle, Durham, and Hull. It was finally abolished in 1640 by the Long Parliament.
- Council of Trent (1545-1563)**: summoned to define the doctrines of the church of Rome; by declining an invitation to take part in it Elizabeth formally declared for Protestantism.
- Count of the Saxon shore**: an officer in command of ships and fortresses to protect the coast from Saxon invaders during the Roman occupation.
- 'country' party**: Shaftesbury's supporters about 1675; their chief demands were the disbanding of the troops and the exclusion of James from the succession. Their opponents were the 'Courtiers.'
- 'Courtiers'**: Danby's supporters about 1675.
- Covenanters**: those who adhered to the National Covenant of 1638; they hesitated to support William III. in 1689 because, though he had restored Presbyterianism in Scotland, Episcopacy, which they hated as a breach of the Covenant, had not been abolished in England.
- 'Craftsman'**: a daily political paper conducted by Bolingbroke and Pulteney in opposition to Walpole. (*See Patriots.*)
- Curia regis**: the king's court, organised by Henry I. and Henry II. It had three functions: (1) as the king's privy council; (2) as a court of appeal; hearing (a) cases arising between the king and his tenants, (b) appeals from popular courts, (c) some criminal cases, (d) cases where a precedent was wanted; (3) as a court of exchequer (the members in this case being called 'barons of the exchequer') meeting twice a year at Westminster, when the king's treasurer received the money collected by the sheriffs.
- The Justiciar presided in the Curia regis, the chancellor being merely a secretary. The court moved about the country with the king.
- In 1178 five of the judges were formed into the **Court of King's Bench** to hear cases in which the king was concerned, and the **Court of Common Pleas**, which tried cases between one subject and another.
- Early in the reign of Edward I. the division into the three courts of King's Bench, Common Pleas, and Exchequer was completed.
- customs**: duties levied on foreign goods at the ports when they enter.
- Danegeld**: a land tax imposed by Ethelred II. to buy off the Danes; it continued to be imposed—e.g. by William I. in 1068, and was revived under the name of 'carucage' in the reign of Richard I.
- Danelaw**: the territory occupied by the Danes after the peace of Wedmore, 878, north of the Thames and east of Watling Street.
- Darien Company**: formed by the Scotch parliament in 1695 for the purpose of founding a colony on the Isthmus of Darien; it was granted a monopoly of the trade with Asia, Africa, and America.
- dauphin**: the eldest son of the king of France; the title was taken from the Viennois district (Dauphiné), the crest of which was three *dolphins* (*Fr. dauphin*).

- Declaration of Sports:** a circular issued by James I. to the justices and clergy stating what were 'lawful recreations' after divine service on Sunday. This was necessitated by the disturbances which were caused through the Puritans attempting to suppress the amusements which had hitherto been indulged in on Sunday.
- Declaration of the Rights of Man:** issued in 1789 by the National Assembly at Paris, declaring all men equal, dissolving all orders and corporations, and freeing the press and public worship.
- Decree of Defiance:** issued by the Convention in 1793, inviting all people to imitate the French example and overthrow their governments.
- Defender of the Faith:** (*Fidei Defensor*—on coins 'F.D.' or 'Fid. Def.'): a title conferred on Henry VIII. by Leo X. in 1521 for writing a book defending the seven sacraments against Luther.
- Deira:** an Anglian kingdom corresponding to Yorkshire.
- Demeane lands:** lands kept by tenants-in-chief, or the king, in their own possession and not let out to sub-tenants.
- 'Diggers':** an extreme politico-religious sect under the Commonwealth who wished to 'dig up common lands.'
- dispensing power:** the right claimed by Charles II. to suspend penal laws by generally exempting the breakers of them from punishment. It is to be distinguished from the **right of pardon** in individual cases and after the offence, which, under the guidance of the home secretary, still belongs to the crown.
- Dissenters:** the same as Nonconformists: the name arose about the time of the Uniformity Act of 1662, when they were definitely placed outside the pale of the church.
- divine right:** the opinion upheld by the Stuart kings (*see* 'Basilicon Doron') that the sovereign was so by God's appointment and not by election of the people, and was therefore responsible to God alone. This doctrine was finally disposed of by the election of William and Mary in place of James II.
- Domesday Book:** the result of a general and detailed survey of the whole country ordered by William I. to ascertain and secure the services due to the Crown, 1086.
- 'Drapier's Letters':** satires published by Dean Swift in 1724 against the introduction of Wood's Halfpence. Their keen invective so excited the people that the patent was withdrawn.
- Druids:** the priests of the ancient Britons, acting also as physicians, educators, astrologers, magicians, lawgivers and judges.
- Duke of Britain:** a Roman officer commanding in the north of Britain.
- Ealdorman:** the chief in a Saxon shire in times of peace; later in the time of Edgar and Dunstan nominees of the king governing large 'ealdormanries' or earldoms.
- Earl:** a title of nobility—the Danish 'Jarl.' Canute appointed four earls, of Northumbria, Mercia, East Anglia, and Wessex.
- Eastern Association:** a combination of the counties of Norfolk, Suffolk, Essex, Cambridge, and Hertford (where Puritanism and opposition to the king were strongest), for mutual defence against Charles I. in 1643; it was under the leadership of Oliver Cromwell.
- East India Company:** established in 1600 by royal charter for trade only, but it

- gradually acquired territory and founded the British empire in India, which, under several changes of constitution, it governed till 1858, when the government of India was transferred to the crown.
- Eccelesiastical Commission**: established in 1836, they have redistributed the bishops' incomes, united small sees and created fresh ones, the holding of pluralities has been reduced, the surplus revenues of the cathedral establishments devoted to populous places, and the powers of the ecclesiastical courts limited.
- Edict of Nantes (1598)**: by which Henry IV. of France (himself once a Huguenot) gave toleration to the Huguenots; it was revoked by Louis XIV., Oct. 12, 1685.
- 'Eikon Basiliké'** ('Royal Image'): a book appearing in 1649, professedly written by Charles I., but probably by a Dr. John Gauden. It portrayed the sufferings of the 'Royal Martyr' in his imprisonment, and caused such sympathy that Milton answered it in his 'Iconoclastes' or 'Image breaker.'
- Ejectors.** (*See* **Triers.**)
- Engagers**: those siding with the Scotch Commissioners who in 1647 made the 'Engagement' with Charles I.; they were mostly lukewarm in the Presbyterian cause, and only anxious to secure the privileges of the Scotch nobility. (*See* **Protestors.**)
- Engles**: a Teutonic tribe from Schleswig and Holstein, who established themselves in Norfolk and Suffolk (= East Anglia), Yorkshiro, Northumberland, and the Midlands.
- English Chronicle**: a kind of national history translated from Latin into Anglo-Saxon by King Alfred, and continued down to Stephen's reign.
- Englishry**: by 'presentment of Englishry' an unknown corpse was assumed to be that of a Norman, until it was proved to be otherwise, and a fine levied on the hundred.
- Eorl**: a noble or gentleman of old family, afterwards superseded by the thegns.
- Erastians**: those who hold that the church should be completely under the control of the state; the Erastians in the Westminster assembly of 1648 were willing to accept Presbyterianism if strictly under parliamentary control.
- escheat**: under the feudal system a reversion of land to the crown when no heir was left.
- essarts**: illegal clearings in woods, punishable by fine.
- 'Essay on Woman'**: a blasphemous and obscene parody of Pope's 'Essay on Man' found among Wilkes's papers, for which the author was punished in 1764, though it had never been printed or published.
- 'Et Cætera' Oath**: imposed by convocation on the clergy in 1640 after the dissolution of the Short Parliament, binding them 'never to consent to alter the government of the church by archbishops, bishops, deans, and archdeacons, &c.'
- etheling**: a royal prince born on English soil, when the parents have been crowned before his birth.
- Euphuism**: an extravagantly affected style in English literature caused by Italian influence in Queen Elizabeth's days; so called from Lyly's romance of 'Euphuës,' 1579; its influence may be seen even in Shakespeare.

excise: a tax on home commodities and on licences for some trades. Such taxes are paid by the shopkeeper and not by the importing merchant. By this means smuggling is reduced to a minimum.

executive: that portion of the government which is concerned with carrying the laws into effect.

'Ex Officio' Oath: by which the High Commission Court compelled suspected persons to incriminate themselves by answering any questions on oath.

Fenian: a name applied to an association of the Irish Irreconcilables founded in 1858 for the complete removal of British power in Ireland; their methods were those of murder and outrage. (From an Irish word probably meaning an ancient Irish soldier.)

ferms: contributions of the towns on the king's demesne to the royal treasury.

Feudal system: 'a graduated system of jurisdiction based on land tenure, in which every lord judged, taxed, and commanded the class next below him, in which abject slavery formed the lowest, and irresponsible tyranny the highest grade, in which private war, private courage, private prisons, took the place of the imperial institutions of government.' (Stubbs, *Const. Hist.* ch. ix. p. 250.)

It was a method of holding land by which the tenant paid his lord not in money, but in personal service. This system arose in England long before the coming of the Normans.

Anglo-Saxon feudalism was a complex system by which all men, from the villein to the tenant-in-chief, owed duty and homage to their superior lords only.

Norman feudalism was a simple system by which men held their land of and owed duty to their immediate lord, but first of all to the king, if the king and his own overlord quarrelled. William I. retained feudal tenure of land, but not feudal government.

fief (*Lat. feudum*): land held by a vassal from his lord on condition of fealty and homage.

Field of the Cloth of Gold: a meeting between Francis I. and Henry VIII. near Calais in 1520; so called from the magnificence displayed there.

Fifth Monarchy Men: a set of enthusiasts who believed that with the Commonwealth the reign of the saints for 1,000 years—the millennium—had begun; this was the fifth kingdom, the other four being the Assyrian, Persian, Greek, and Roman alluded to in Daniel.

Five Articles of Perth: statements of doctrine bringing the Scotch kirk into closer conformity with the church of England. Accepted by the kirk in 1618 and the Scotch parliament in 1621, under compulsion from Charles.

Flagellants: religious fanatics who used to scourge themselves in the streets. They appeared in England in the time of the Black Death.

folk-land: common land (as all was originally), of which each freeman had a share assigned to him, with common rights over the unassigned part.

Fox's martyrs: 160 members of the opposition and supporters of Fox against Pitt who lost their seats in 1784, when the election gave Pitt a triumphant majority.

franking: the right of members of parliament to have their letters conveyed post free if marked with their initial: this power, which was largely abused, was abolished when Rowland Hill's postal reform was carried in 1839.

Free church of Scotland: established in 1843, when 474 ministers seceded from

- the Established Presbyterian church rather than allow the right of each congregation to veto the nomination of a minister by the patron to lapse.
- free trade**: commerce unrestricted by duties: much favoured by Pitt, who was convinced of the truth of the principles laid down by Adam Smith in his 'Wealth of Nations.' Peel gave it a great impulse in 1845 when by imposing an income tax he secured a surplus which was spent in making substantial reductions in duties. (*See* protection.)
- French Revolution**: The greatest outburst against tyranny the world has ever seen. It began with the calling of the **States-General**, May 5, 1789, which on June 17, 1789, took the title **National Assembly**; this was followed, October 1, 1791, by the **Legislative Assembly**; then came, September 21, 1792, the **Convention**, which lasted till the establishment of the **Directory** in 1795. In 1799 Napoleon overthrew the Directory and became First Consul, and finally Emperor in 1804.
- friar**: the Mendicant Friars, of which there were two orders, the Franciscan and Dominican brethren (*fratres*), visited the poor instead of living in retirement like monks. The Dominicans appeared in England in 1220, and the Franciscans in 1224.
- frith-gilds**, or peace-clubs: voluntary associations among the people for mutual protection and to secure justice.
- fyrd**: the national English militia. This force was the main support of the royal authority against the turbulent feudal barons.
- gemot**: the assembly of a mark, hundred (hundred-moot), shire (shire-moot), or kingdom (witanagemot).
- general warrant**: one which does not specify the accused by name. Such warrants were issued in 1763 against those concerned in the 'North Briton,' No. 45. Wilkes and forty-eight others were arrested. But Chief Justice Pratt decided that they were illegal.
- gesith**: means 'comrade,' the same as the **thegns**; the new nobility attached to the king, who gradually superseded the older **eorls**.
- godly party**: earnest Puritans of various sects whom Cromwell placed in his regiments about 1644; the Barebone Parliament was also composed of 'godly' men.
- 'graces'**: promises made by Charles I. to the Catholics in Ireland; when once the Irish parliament of 1684 had granted a liberal subsidy the promises were unblushingly broken.
- 'grandoes'**: the great Whig families whose object was to build up the supremacy of the aristocracy in parliament; the life aim of George III. was to free himself from the control which they had exercised over George I. and George II.
- Grand Jury**: originated by the 'Constitutions' of Henry II. to present for trial all disputes concerning tenures; it was extended to criminal cases by the assize of Clarendon, 1166, and was still further developed by Hubert Walter in the reign of Richard I.
- Great Contract**: an attempted arrangement between parliament and James I. in 1610. In consideration of increase of subsidy the king was to surrender purveyance, feudal tenures, and the power of imposing rates; the failure of his favourite plan killed Cecil, 1612.
- Great Council** (*Magnum Concilium*): the Witanagemot after the coming of the Normans (called 'witan' by Saxon writers as late as Stephen). The

principal tenants-in-chief were summoned by the king; the right of summons soon became hereditary (compare the House of Lords). It met thrice a year—Christmas, Easter, and Whitsuntide. (1) All important acts were passed by its consent. (2) It was a court of appeal. (3) It elected the king.

guilds: voluntary associations—partly trades unions, partly benefit clubs—the dissolution and spoliation of which under Edward VI. much aggravated the misery caused by the dissolution of the monasteries.

Gunpowder Plot: a plot of the Catholics, who were exasperated by the enforcement of the penal laws, to blow up king, Lords, and Commons by gunpowder, 1604–1605.

habeas corpus: by the act of 1679, except in cases of treason and felony, any prisoner can be admitted to bail, and judge and gaoler are compelled under heavy penalties to obey a writ of habeas corpus for the production of the prisoner. In times of danger—e.g. 1745, 1794—the act has been suspended: the last time this took place was in 1817.

Heretoga: the chief of a Saxon shire in time of war.

hide: sufficient land to support a family—about forty acres, but varying according to the nature of the soil; in the reign of Richard I. it was fixed at one hundred acres (carucate).

High Commission Court: formed under Elizabeth in 1583; it attended to all branches of ecclesiastical law, and enforced uniformity on the clergy; its counterpart in civil matters was the Star Chamber. It was established under a clause in the Act of Supremacy of 1559. The severity and arbitrary nature of its punishments brought about its abolition in 1641.

Highland host: a half-savage army of Highlanders employed by Lauderdale, who was practically absolute in Scotland, in 1677, to crush the Covenanters.

'Histriomastix' ('The Scourge of Players'): a book written by William Prynne, a barrister, in 1632, attacking the stage for its profligacy; it was held to be an insult to the queen, who had taken part in some performance. Prynne was, therefore, condemned by the Star Chamber for libel.

Hospitallers or Knights of St. John: who held Rhodes against the Turks; they were endowed with the wealth confiscated from the rival order of the Templars in 1311.

Huguenots: the French Protestants. They were aided by Elizabeth in 1562, when they revolted. The origin of the name is uncertain; Mr. S. R. Gardiner in his 'Student's History of England' suggests the Germ. *Eidgenossen*, or *confederates*, as pronounced by French lips. (See *Edict of Nantes*.)

Humanists: the English scholars of the Renaissance, who did not, like those on the Continent, discard their old religious belief, but strengthened and adorned it by their new culture. Erasmus, Colet, and More are the greatest names among them.

hundred: a combination of several 'marks' or townships, presided over by a hundred-elder.

hus-carles: the body-guard of Canute and his successors.

'Iconoclastes.' (See '*Eikon Basiliké*')

impeached: accused by the Commons before the Lords, who gave judgment.

impeachment: a form of trial in which the Commons were the accusers and the Lords the judges; after a period of desuetude since 1450 it was revived

against Bacon in 1621; **attainder** was often preferred as being swifter and surer—a condemnation by parliament without trial. The trial of Warren Hastings (1788–1795) is the most famous instance of impeachment since Strafford's time.

Independents: 'separatists; who wished to see each congregation independent of all church organisation. They originated in the reign of Queen Elizabeth as 'Brownists.'

infanta: a daughter of the king of Spain or Portugal other than the heiress-apparent.

Inquisition: an ecclesiastical tribunal for the trial and punishment of heretics established in Spain in the reign of Ferdinand and Isabella.

Intercursus Magnus (the great intercourse): a commercial treaty arranged with Flanders in 1496.

Intercursus Malus (the bad intercourse); the name by which a treaty wrung by Henry VII. from Spain in 1506 went in the Netherlands: it was too favourable to the English to suit that country.

interdict: a sentence pronounced by the pope on recalcitrant kings and peoples; it meant that for the time being all religious services, except baptism and extreme unction, were suspended and the dead buried in unconsecrated ground. Thomas Becket threatened an interdict: in 1208 the kingdom was laid under an interdict.

Investiture of bishops and abbots: the question whether king or pope was to bestow the ring and staff was a constant subject of dispute, involving as it did the entire relations of Church and State—i.e. whether the bishops were to be independent of the king and subject to Rome only, or subject to the king first, and only in the second place to Rome.

Ironsides: the name given to Cromwell's soldiers, whose prowess was due to the combination of religion and discipline.

Jacobites: those who after the revolution of 1689 still adhered to James II. and his descendants, the Old and Young Pretenders. Jacobite rebellions broke out in 1715 and 1745. (Lat. *Jacobus* = James.)

Jacquerie: the revolt of the famished and despairing peasants in France after the Poitiers campaign of 1356. So called from the nickname of 'Jacques Bonhomme' given to the peasants by the gentry.

Jenkins's ear: one Captain Jenkins returned from the Spanish colonies in America with the loss of an ear, which he produced (1738) before the House of Commons wrapped up in cotton wool. True or false, his story excited the people, and was one of the causes leading to a declaration of war against Spain, 1739.

Jesuits: members of the Society of Jesus—a missionary order founded by Ignatius Loyola in 1540; their unquestioning obedience to their superior, their zeal and bravery made them a power in the world. The Jesuits Parsons and Campion were sent to England about 1580 to restore Catholicism.

Jewry: the quarter in towns inhabited by the Jews till their expulsion in 1290.

Jingoes: a political nickname applied by their opponents to supporters of Lord Beaconsfield's policy about 1876: they were the party who felt confidence in the military power and spirit of their country; the name was taken from a popular song of the day.

Junius: the *nom de plume* of the author of some letters which were scathing

attacks against the government at the time of the Wilkes affair (1769-1773). Macaulay makes out that Francis was the author; the question, however, is still open. Their ability is such that they rank high in our classical literature.

Junta: a central committee, chosen from the provincial councils which conducted the government in Spain after 1808, when Joseph Bonaparte was driven out by a national rising.

Junto: a small inner council or committee of the privy council at the time of the Restoration, in whose hands were all matters of importance; a small knot of able Whigs on whom William III. began exclusively to rely (1693, 1694). By thus selecting his ministry from one party William was really beginning the system of party government as we know it.

Justices-in-Eyre (*justiciarii itinerantes*): judges sent out, three to each of six circuits, by the assize of Northampton, 1176.

Justiciar: the king's prime minister and representative when abroad—usually a churchman like Flambard or Roger of Salisbury. The justiciar presided in the Curia regia.

Jutes: a Teutonic tribe from which Jutland takes its name. The Jutes occupied Kent (449-478) and the Isle of Wight.

'King's Book': the 'Necessary Erudition of any Christian Man,' published with a preface by Henry VIII. (hence its name) in 1548. It is a statement of doctrine more Catholic in tone than the 'Bishop's Book,' which it superseded.

'king's friends': a court party in the Commons secured by Lord Bute by means of profuse bribery; they gave their votes according to the king's personal pleasure; their supremacy is marked by the administration of Lord North (1770-1782), when the king finally triumphed over the 'grandees.'

Kirke's 'lambs': the ferocious soldiers whom Kirke had commanded as governor of Tangier, and brought to England when that place was given up. They distinguished themselves for their cruelties after Monmouth's rebellion in 1685.

knigh't's fee: under Henry I. land of the value of 20*l.* So that if, for example, a great lord had lands to the value of 200*l.* he would owe the king the service of ten knights.

læt: a serf in Anglo-Saxon times (afterwards villein).

legate (if with full powers *a latere*—i.e. from the side): the representative of the Pope at any court; such a position was held by Wolsey in 1518 and Pole in 1554.

legatine court: held in 1529 by the papal legates, Wolsey and Campeggio, to decide the question of the divorce of Catherine of Aragon.

Levellers: an extreme sect under the Commonwealth, who were also advanced democrats and desired to reduce all to the same level politically. They were too advanced even for Cromwell, who rigorously suppressed their mutinous risings.

Liberals: a name assumed by the moderate Whigs in the first reformed parliament of 1833—the progressive party.

Liberal Unionists: those members of the Liberal party who allied themselves with the Conservatives in supporting the maintenance of the union between England and Ireland; for the drastic nature of Gladstone's Home Rule Bill had split the Liberal party from top to bottom.

- litany**: issued in 1544 by Cranmer in English to pray for the success of Henry, who was besieging Boulogne; it is substantially the same as our present Litany, and was 'the foundation stone' of the English Prayer Book.
- livery**: the coat and badge worn by the retainers of the great nobles, forbidden by statutes of 1393 and 1399 as favouring disorder. (See **Maintenance**.)
- Lollard** (Low Germ. *lollen* = to sing): the followers of the reformer Wiclif; the doctrinal Protestants who existed in England before the Reformation. They were persecuted by the statute 'De Heretico Comburendo' of 1401.
- Long Parliament** (1640-1660): the most famous of English parliaments.
- lords-lieutenant of counties**: those officers who under Mary, in 1556, superseded the sheriffs as the commanders of the militia for suppression of disorders.
- Lords of the Congregation**: those Scotch nobles who, under the influence of John Knox, had formed a covenant to accept the Calvinistic creed and church government. They were assisted by Elizabeth against the regent Mary of Guise, Mary's mother, in 1560.
- Macchiavelli's 'Prince'**: a famous treatise on state-craft in which the immorality of *means* is little regarded, provided the *end* can be secured. On such principles Thomas Cromwell acted.
- 'Main' Plot**: a Protestant plot in 1603 to dethrone James I. in favour of Arabella Stuart; Raleigh and his friend Lord Cobham were implicated in it.
- maintenance**: the support given by nobles to their turbulent retainers either by open force or by browbeating juries, &c.; **maintenance and livery**, as tending to disorder, were forbidden by statute in 1393, which, however, had been evaded; it was finally suppressed by the Star Chamber early in the reign of Henry VII.
- major-generals**: the officers presiding over the military districts into which Cromwell divided England when it was necessary to govern the country by martial law. They were responsible only to the Protector and his council (1655-1657).
- Malachi Malagrowth**: a *nom de plume* under which Sir Walter Scott led the opposition to the proposal to abolish 1*l.* and 2*l.* notes in consequence of the commercial crisis of 1825. The act was not extended to Scotland or Ireland.
- mark**: a coin worth 13*s.* 4*d.* Robert pledged Normandy to William for 10,000 marks = 6,66*l.*
- marriage**: the right to compel a tenant-in-chief to marry according to the king's will, or to pay a fine for marrying at his own will.
- Martin Marprelate**: the signature under which virulent pamphlets from a secret press appeared against the bishops. They began to appear in 1588.
- Mercia**: an Anglian kingdom extending over the northern and western midlands (the land of the '*march*' or border).
- Methodists**: a nickname originally applied to the little society established by John and Charles Wesley at Oxford about 1730; so called from the rigid and ascetic '*method*' of life they laid down.
- Millenary petition**: a Puritan petition, purporting to be signed by 1,000 ministers, presented to James I. as he came from Scotland in 1603; it prayed for reforms in the Prayer Book and church (to which the Puritans still belonged).

- mise**: an award or verdict of arbitrators, e.g. the mise of Amiens, and the mise of Lewes, 1264.
- monopolies**: sole right to trade in certain articles or certain districts granted by Elizabeth, but cancelled in 1601 by her on the complaint of parliament; revived by James I., and attacked by his parliament of 1621.
- mortmain**: land held by a body like the Church was said to be in '*the dead hand*'; for such corporations do not die, or part with their land again. When land was left to them, therefore, it was found that it accumulated in their hands—for example, by 1279 (date of first Statute of Mortmain) half the soil of England, often acquired by death-bed intimidation, was in the hands of the clergy. Under Henry VIII. it was still necessary to strengthen the law against it.
- Morton's fork**: a dilemma proposed by the chancellor, Archbishop Morton, to those from whom '*benevolences*' were claimed under Henry VII. If they lived handsomely they were clearly rich; if sparingly, they had clearly saved, and could pay from their savings.
- National Covenant** (1638): a written agreement signed by many Scotchmen who bound themselves to accept neither the Prayer Book (hated as being '*popish*' and as English), canons, nor bishops (meant though not mentioned in the Covenant).
- New Model** (1645): a reorganisation of the parliamentary army, which was now a standing force of 21,000 men, regularly paid, under Sir T. Fairfax, the cavalry being under Cromwell.
- 'No bishop, no king'**: the motto of James I., by which he expressed his sense of the fact that Episcopalian churchmen would support the royal power, and dissent tended to favour the growth of democratic sentiments.
- Noblesse**: the French nobility, whose cruel oppression of the peasants was one of the causes of the Revolution in 1789.
- Nonconformists**: the Puritans had wished to reform the church, but without leaving it; the Act of Uniformity (1662) severed the connection between the church and the Dissenters. Previously the Independents had been almost the only body to form a separate communion outside the church.
- Non-importation Agreement**: enraged by the Stamp Act of 1765 as a breach of the principle '*No taxation without representation*,' the colonists agreed to stop all commerce with England and use no English goods.
- Normandy**: a Danish duchy founded by Rolf or Rollo—a kind of French Danelaw.
- 'North Briton'**: a newspaper established by the notorious John Wilkes, violently attacking Bute and the court. No. 45 appeared on April 23, 1768, and attacked the king's speech so virulently that a general warrant was issued against its authors, printers, and publishers.
- Northumbria**: the united territories of Deira and Bernicia.
- 'Olive Branch'**: a petition sent by the thirteen American colonies in 1775, with addresses to the people of Great Britain and Ireland, praying for terms '*consistent with the dignity and welfare of Britain.*'
- Orangemen**: the Irish Protestants, who in memory of William III. called themselves so.
- ordeal**: the English mode of trial by appealing to the judgment of God (German, *Urtheil* = judgment). The accused had to walk on or hold hot iron, or plunge his arm into boiling water, and if uninjured was held to be

innocent. Ordeal was only resorted to when no **compurgators** could be obtained. The corresponding Norman method was **trial by battle**.

Orders in Council (1807): England's reply to the 'Berlin Decrees,' prohibiting trade even by neutral nations with French ports or with ports in French possession. They were far more effective than the Berlin Decrees, because **England had command of the sea**; their enforcement eventually caused a short war with the United States (1812-1814).

Ostend Company: established in 1723 by the Austrian emperor as a rival to the East India Company; Spain agreed to support it in the Treaty of Vienna (1725). In the Peace of 1727 the emperor agreed to suspend it for seven years, and finally abolished it by the secret Second Treaty of Vienna (1781), as the price of England's guarantee of the Pragmatic Sanction.

ovates: sacrificing priests, an inferior order of Druids.

Palatinate: the territory stretching from the Moselle to Bohemia. James's daughter Elizabeth married Frederick, the Protestant prince of this country, and from him is descended the house of Hanover.

Palatine: earldoms or bishoprics were established by William I. at Chester, Durham, and Kent, in which case the earl or bishop, saving his allegiance to the king, acted as an independent sovereign.

Pale, English: that portion of Ireland in which English influence was supreme; it extended from Dundalk to Waterford; with an average breadth of fifty or sixty miles.

pallium: the vestment worn by metropolitan archbishops, usually bestowed personally by the pope at Rome.

Papal provisions: the right claimed by the Pope to nominate to vacant benefices.

Parliament: the national assembly as we know it has been gradually developed from the **Witanagemot** or **Great Council**. The loss of Normandy and the misconduct of John aroused national feeling, and the old **Feudal Assembly** became a national one.

In the **Mad Parliament of 1258**, the lesser barons, as in 1254, were represented by the **Knights of the Shire**.

At the **Great Parliament of Simon de Montfort of 1265** representatives from the **cities and boroughs** were added to the knights of the shire.

In 1295 met the **first complete Parliament**, in which, however, all the orders sat together. But about 1333 the Commons, now including both knights of the shire and burgesses, sat in a separate place.

party government: that system by which the ministers who advise the crown are chosen from the party which commands a majority in the House of Commons. Till about 1693 the sovereign did not choose his advisers for their opinions as representing the majority in the House of Commons, but for their ability or for personal reasons; there were, therefore, no parties in the modern sense. (*See juncto.*)

'**Patriots**': the party of malcontents who gathered round Bolingbroke and Pulteney in opposition to Walpole about 1725; the 'Craftsman' represented their views.

Pensionary Parliament (1661-1679): the first regular parliament of Charles II.; it was at first strongly **Cavalier** in spirit, and one of its first acts was to

burn the Solemn League and Covenant. It was so called after 1674, when Danby began to manage it by wholesale bribery.

People's Charter: drawn up in 1837, and embodying the demands of the Chartists—manhood suffrage, the ballot, annual parliaments, no property qualification for members of parliament, payment of members. The object of all this was to ameliorate the poor man's condition by giving him political power.

'**Peterloo Massacre**' (1819): the loss of life which took place when the authorities employed military force to break up a seditious meeting near Manchester.

Peter's pence or Rome-fee: the annual tribute (one penny on every hearth) paid to Rome since the beginning of the tenth century.

Petition and Advice (1657): an alteration in the constitution drawn up and presented to Cromwell by the second protectorate parliament.

Petitioners (afterwards called Whigs): the supporters of Shaftesbury who in 1680 sent numerous petitions to Charles II. asking him to allow parliament to meet. Their opponents were the **Abhorrrers**.

Pilgrimage of Grace (1536-1537): an insurrection in the northern counties in support of the Roman Catholic religion; it was partly caused by the greed and brutality with which the monasteries had been suppressed.

Pilgrim Fathers: the first emigrants who, in 1620, for their religion's sake crossed the Atlantic in the 'Mayflower' and founded New Plymouth.

Plough-alsms: money contributed after Easter by the parish to support their priest. His other revenues were derived from tithes or a tenth of the annual produce, **church-shot** at Martinmas, **light-shot** thrice a year, and **soul-shot** or burial dues.

Porteous Riots (1786) broke out in Edinburgh when Captain Porteous fired on the mob during a riot. Porteous was tried and condemned to death, but reprieved. The mob rose and hanged him in the streets.

post nati (born afterwards): Scotchmen *born after* the accession of James I. were naturalised in both countries in 1606.

præmunire: penalties of forfeiture, outlawry, and imprisonment were imposed for breaches of the acts of 1353, 1365, 1393. Wolsey's legative authority, the recognition of it by the clergy, were really breaches of these acts, and a writ of *præmunire* was the instrument of Wolsey's fall (1529).

Pragmatic Sanction: a law which the Emperor Charles VI., having no sons, had obtained to permit the succession to pass to his daughters. Spain guaranteed it in the Treaty of Vienna (1725); England guaranteed it in the Second Treaty of Vienna (1731); France and Savoy guaranteed it in 1733. France and Spain broke their pledges on the death of the emperor in 1740.

Prayer Book: The First Prayer Book of Edward VI. was authorised in 1549; a revision, called the Second Prayer Book of Edward VI., in 1552; it was again revised in 1559, and its use imposed by the Act of Uniformity of that year.

prerogative: the royal authority upheld by the Tories against aristocratical 'privilege'; the restoration of 'prerogative' was the aim of George III. from the commencement of his reign.

Presbyterianism: a system of church government derived from Calvin. There were no bishops, all the clergy were of equal rank, the priesthood were

not a separate caste, the Bible was the only authority of the church. In politics, of course, such doctrines favoured democratic sentiments.

Pride's purge (1648). Parliament and the army being at variance, the Commons rejected the 'Grand Army Remonstrance' and voted for making terms with the king; Colonel Pride thereupon forcibly ejected 158 Presbyterian members, the remainder—50 Independents—were found to be more compliant.

Primer: a book of private prayer issued by Cranmer in English in 1544, the same time as the Litany.

privilege: the influence of the great Whig families upheld by them against prerogative.

prophesyings: meetings for expounding and discussing particular texts of Scripture set up by the Puritan clergy under Elizabeth. Archbishop Grindal (1576-1588) declining to suppress them, the queen suspended him and put them down herself.

protection: the opposite of 'free trade'; laying duties on foreign goods imported, so that the producer at home can command a better price and is therefore 'protected.'

Protector: the title bestowed on Cromwell by the Instrument of Government, drawn up December 1653.

Protestants: so called from the 'protest' made by the Lutheran princes to Charles V. at the Diet of Speier in 1529.

Protestant Union of Utrecht: a combination of the seven northern provinces of the Netherlands, which were mostly Protestant, to resist the Spanish; formed by the Prince of Orange in 1579.

Protestors: the party of Argyle and the clergy who *protested* against the engagement of 1647 as giving the king too easy terms. (*See Engagers.*)

Puritans: those who desired a *purer* form of worship and the rejection of 'popish' vestments and ceremonies. They began to come into notice in Elizabeth's reign; at first they were sincerely anxious to reform the church from within, but persecution, and especially the Act of Uniformity of 1662, drove them to establish separate sects.

purveyance: the right of the king and his purveyors to take provisions or exact services at a nominal or no price wherever the court went.

quo warranto: a process by which in 1688 various municipalities, and London in particular, were required to show 'by what warrant' they held their charters; the least flaw led to forfeiture. It must be remembered that at that time the franchise was very narrow, and subservient corporations could secure subservient members of parliament.

Radicals: advanced reformers who desire to go to the root (Lat. *radix*), and demanded 'radical' reform in 1816: they organised the Spa Fields Riot and attacked the Regent. The party in the first reformed parliament of 1833 which desired drastic reform adopted the same name.

reeve: the chief man in a Saxon town or borough.

Reformation (in England): that series of events by which the English church became independent of Rome. The first great step was a change of government by which the papal authority was transferred to the king (1529-1535). Then came the issue of the service books in English, with but few alterations. The growth of a Protestant spirit in the country then caused a change of doctrine, exemplified in various revisions of the

Prayer Book. Under Elizabeth the thirty-nine Articles of 1563 finally completed the Reformation, though there were still a large number who clung to the old forms.

regulators: a board appointed by James II., with Jeffreys at its head, to remould the corporations by introducing Dissenters and Roman Catholics in order through them to secure a subservient parliament. (*See quo warranto.*)

relief: a sum paid into the royal treasury on the death of a tenant-in-chief by the successor.

Renascence: the revival of learning in the sixteenth century, and revolt against the monkish asceticism and narrow theology of the middle ages. Great geographical discoveries, the renewed interest in Greek thought consequent on the fall of Constantinople (1453), and the invention of printing were among the chief causes of this awakening. On the Continent it led to much religious scepticism; in England the chief 'humanists' were deeply religious.

Revolution families: a name assumed by the great Whig families—the 'grandees'—such as the Pelhams, Cavendishes, and Russells, against whose influence George III. successfully maintained his 'prerogative.'

Ridolfi Plot (1571): a plot against Elizabeth named after a Florentine banker residing in England; the Catholic refugees at Antwerp tried to induce Alva to aid them. The Duke of Norfolk was implicated in it, and his arrest and execution (1572) marked the suppression of the plot.

'Root and Branch' party: those who were anxious about 1641 utterly to abolish Episcopacy.

Roundheads: the nickname given by Charles's Cavaliers to their opponents, many of whom, being London apprentices, wore their hair short.

Royal Society: founded in 1660 for the pursuit of science. Halley and Sir I. Newton were eminent members in the reign of Charles II.

'rump': the '*sitting part*' of the Commons after the expulsion of the 178 Presbyterian members by Colonel Pride in 1648. They were about fifty in number and Independents.

Eye House Plot (1683): a Whig plot to assassinate Charles II. as he passed Eye House on his way from Newmarket. The forfeiture of the charters had driven the Whigs to despair.

sac and soc: rights of jurisdiction granted to lords with their land. Such lands were '*Liberties*' or *Soken*, being exempted from the jurisdiction of the hundred. *Socmen* were freemen who owed suit to the lord's *soken* or court.

Saint Bartholomew's Day (August 24, 1572): on this day a terrible massacre of Huguenots was carried out at the instigation of Catherine de Medicis, mother of Charles IX.; 100,000 victims perished, among them the Huguenot leader Coligny.

Saladin tithe: a tax of one-tenth on personal property imposed by Henry II. in 1188, when news came of the capture of Jerusalem by Saladin.

Salic law: it was a rule of the Salian Franks that no woman could succeed to the sovereignty. For more than three centuries every king of France had been succeeded by his son, so that this rule acquired the force of a law by custom.

Saxons: a Teutonic tribe who settled in Sussex and Essex and established the

kingdom of Wessex. (Essex, East Saxons; Sussex, South Saxons; Wessex, West Saxons.)

'scrupling' the habits: a phrase used of those Puritans, amongst whom was Coverdale, who under Elizabeth gave up their livings rather than retain vestments that savoured of the old ritual.

scutage (Lat. *scutum*, a shield): a tax of forty shillings levied by Henry II. on every knight's fee in lieu of personal service, for knights were only bound to serve for forty days. This tax enabled the king to keep troops of his own, and was a great blow to feudalism.

Second South Sea Bubble (1825): a fever for speculating in the Spanish American colonies which had lately become independent, followed by a commercial crisis.

Self-denying Ordinance: a proposal made in 1644 that members of either house should no longer be officers in the army. Its object was to get rid of the Presbyterian generals. The Lords opposed it, but it passed in 1645. 'Ordinance' at this time means 'act of parliament,' except that the king's consent was not required.

sepooy: a native Indian soldier in the British service.

ship-money: a tax demanded in 1634 from the coast towns nominally to maintain ships for protection against pirates and invaders; in 1635 the demand was extended to inland towns. This tax was to be imposed in time of national danger—the king to be sole judge of the danger. If successful in raising it Charles I. would have been a despot. John Hampden made a famous resistance to this tax.

shire-moot: the gemot or general assembly of the shire.

shire-reeve or sheriff: the king's representative in each shire. This official gradually superseded the ealdorman, and the shire-moot became the sheriff's court. His duties were: (1) to collect the king's revenues, (2) to call out and lead the 'fyrd,' (3) to administer justice. The increase of his power meant corresponding loss of power to the feudal barons, whose courts were superseded by the sheriff's court. One of the greatest privileges desired by cities was to elect their own sheriffs (e.g. London by the charter of Henry I.).

Short Parliament (1640, April 18–May 5): assembled after an interval of eleven years (1629–1640).

Sikh: 'disciples,' a warlike race in the north-west of the Punjab, with particular religious beliefs in favour of (1) the abolition of caste, (2) the unity of the Godhead, (3) purity of life.

sinking fund: established by Pitt in 1786 in order to extinguish the National Debt; each year 1,000,000*l.* was to be set aside for this purpose, whether there was a surplus or not, and the interest allowed to accumulate on it.

Slave Circular: issued by Mr. Disraeli in 1875 to captains in the navy, recognising the right of a slave-owner to recover a fugitive slave even on a British ship. An immediate outcry compelled its withdrawal.

Socialism: a scheme for improving the condition of the poor by substituting management by the state for all private enterprise.

Solemn League and Covenant (1643): a treaty arranged between the Parliamentarians and Scotland by Sir Henry Vane. The Scotch were to send an army to help parliament; the English were to defend Presbyterianism in Scotland.

- South Sea Bubble (1720)**: a period of wild speculation in the shares of a company with a monopoly for trading in the Pacific and east coast of South America. A crash came, the shares became worth much less than what had been paid for them, and many were ruined.
- 'Spurs,' battle of**: fought at Guinegate, 1518; so called from the use made of their spurs by the French cavalry in their precipitate flight.
- stadtholder**: the chief magistrate of the Dutch; lieutenant i.e. of the king of Spain, against whom, however, he upheld the national independence.
- staple port**: the only port at which English exported goods were sold (of Calais in 1347).
- Star Chamber (1487-1641)**: established in 1487; it enabled the king to act through his privy council and not only through the ordinary law courts. Not being dependent on a jury, it was a means of dealing with powerful offenders and restoring order after the disorderly times preceding Henry VII. The abuses to which it was liable have given it a bad name; it was abolished by the Long Parliament in 1641. It was held in the 'Camera Stellata,' so called because the ceiling was painted with stars, or, as suggested by Mr. S. R. Gardiner in his 'Student's History,' because 'starres' or bonds were stored there. This court was in civil matters what the High Commission Court was in matters ecclesiastical.
- States-General**: the French parliament, the summoning of which, on May 5, 1789, for the first time since 1614 was the beginning of the French Revolution.
- Stop of the Exchequer (1672)**: when Charles II., in consequence of his debts, suddenly reduced the interest and refused to repay the principal of the 1,400,000*l.* he had borrowed from the goldsmiths, who were the only bankers at that time; by edict he suddenly refused to repay the principal and reduced the interest from 12 to 6 per cent.
- Strathclyde**: a British kingdom extending from Lancashire to the Clyde.
- sub-vassals**: a vassal's vassal by sub-infeudation.
- 'Tables'**: four committees of nobles, gentry, clergy, burghers, bound together by a supreme committee, which drew up the Covenant accepted by the Scotch in 1638.
- tallage**: poll-tax exacted by the kings from the towns, which were for the most part on the royal demesne. This right was surrendered by Edward III. 1340.
- Templars**: a corporation of knights who guarded the Temple at Jerusalem. In England they were dissolved in 1311 and their wealth confiscated.
- tenants-in-capite (in chief)**: those landowners who received their lands directly from the king.
- thegn**: the same as *gesith*, the new nobility attached to the king, who gradually superseded the older *eorls*. Under Alfred a 'ceorl' who acquired five hides of land, or a merchant who made three voyages, became 'thegnworthy.'
- Thirty Years' War (1618-1648)**: this was nominally a religious war between the Protestant and Catholic states of Germany. The leaders of the two parties were Frederick, Elector Palatine, James I.'s Protestant son-in-law, who had been elected king of Bohemia by the Protestant nobles of that country, and the Catholic emperor Ferdinand. It was closed by the Peace of Westphalia in 1648.

- thorough**: the policy adopted by the able **Wentworth** in Ireland, and described by him as 'thorough earnestness, thorough self-abnegation, thorough suppression of all who did not fall in with his views.'
- thrall**: a slave (also called **theow**).
- Tiers État** (third estate): the Commons in the French States-General or parliament; the other two estates were the clergy and the nobility; up to 1789 the Tiers État were powerless against the other two estates.
- tonnage** (1) and **poundage** (2): customs duties paid on (1) wine assessed by the tonnage of the ship in which it was imported, (2) merchandise assessed by the number of pounds weight exported or imported.
- Tories**: the party in the state opposed to change, and supporting the power of the crown and the hereditary principle; in 1689 the Tories looked on William as a usurper, upheld the church against dissent, and were opposed to war; in 1702 they were satisfied with the accession of Anne; the accession of George I. was a triumph for their opponents; under George III. they upheld prerogative against the Whig families or grandees. (The word was a nickname given by the **Petitioners** to their opponents the **Abhorrrers**, and was an Irish word meaning 'brigand' or 'bog-trotter'.)
- treasurer**: one of the king's officials who had charge of the royal hoard at Winchester.
- Triers**: a commission appointed by an ordinance of Cromwell in 1654 to test the suitability of clergymen before admission to a benefice. The '**Ejectors**' were another commission, appointed to 'eject' ignorant and scandalous ministers.
- '**trimmer**': a term applied to Halifax, the lord privy seal under William III., in 1689, who was neither Whig nor Tory, but midway between the two.
- Trinoda necessitas**: the threefold duty imposed on every freeman of (1) attendance on the 'fyrd' or general levy of the shire, (2) repair of bridges, (3) maintenance of fortifications.
- '**truck**' system: the practice of paying working men either wholly or partly in goods instead of in money; this greatly aggravated the miserable condition of the poor.
- Undertakers**: (a) men who 'undertook' to secure a subservient parliament for James I. in 1614. They failed, however, and parliament proving unmanageable was dissolved in two months (see '**Added**' Parliament); (b) the term is also applied to those to whom large tracts of land in Ulster were granted for 'plantation.'
- United Irishmen**: a secret society formed by Wolfe Tone, a Presbyterian lawyer, in 1791, the object of which was to band together all Irishmen, Catholic and Protestant alike, for a common purpose—viz. the overthrow of the English dominion in Ireland, and the establishment there of a republic under French protection.
- Unredig** ('Counsel-lacking'): a nickname of Ethelred II.
- '**Utopia**' ('Nowhere'): a book by Sir Thomas More, in which, under the form of a description of an ideal commonwealth, he satirises the actual state of things in England (1515).
- vassal**: one who held land of a lord.

Vicar-general in matters ecclesiastical: the position given to **Thomas Cromwell** by Henry VIII. when, in 1535, he took the title of 'On earth supreme head of the church of England.'

Vikings: Norse warriors sallying forth from their creeks (*vik* = creek).

villein: a serf (in Anglo-Saxon times *læt*) who was bound to his land, for which he paid by labour on his lord's land. By degrees this labour-rent was changed into a money-rent, and the Statute of Labourers of 1349 was an attempt to restore the old system.

wardship: when a tenant-in-chief died without a grown-up male heir, the king appropriated his revenue in lieu of feudal service.

War of the Spanish Succession (1702-1713): waged by England, the United Provinces of Holland, and the emperor against France to prevent the balance of power in Europe being disturbed by the union of the crowns of France and Spain.

weregild: money paid as a compensation for murder or maiming, at a rate proportioned to the rank of the victim.

Wessex: a Saxon kingdom extending over south and south-west England.

Whigs: a later name for the 'Petitioners,' those who desired to exclude James from the succession; the upholders of aristocratic privilege against prerogative; the election of William in 1689 was a triumph for them over the Tories, who preferred hereditary right; they favoured dissent and were the war party; the growth of the war spirit under Anne gave them a triumph; they were supreme under the first two Georges; George III. again asserted prerogative against privilege. It must be remembered that these Whigs were not a popular but an aristocratic party, though later on they developed into the more popular Liberal party, just as the Tories developed into the Conservatives. (A nickname bestowed by their Tory opponents, probably from Whiggamore, 'a Lowland Scotch drover,' and so 'a dog of a Covenanter.')

Witanagemot: the assembly of the 'witan' or wise men of a kingdom, composed of the king and his family, the bishops, ealdormen, and king's thegns. It had criminal and judicial power, the right of taxation, of declaring war and peace, and the election of ealdormen, bishops, and kings. From this body is ultimately derived the modern parliament.

Woden: the Saxon war-god, from whom all kings and chiefs traced their descent, and whose name survives in our 'Wednesday.'

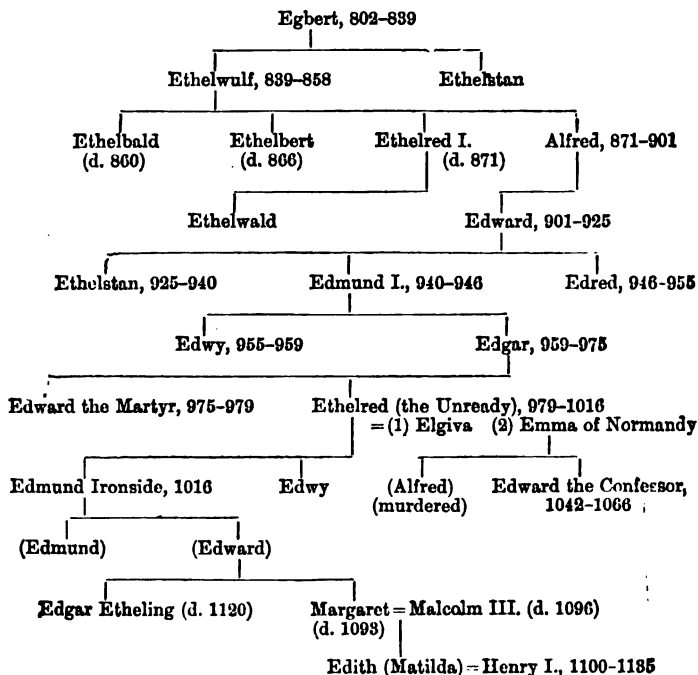
wonderful year: a name given to 1706 and also to 1759, because of the great achievements of those years.

Wood's Halfpence (1724): there was a deficiency of copper coinage in Ireland, and one Wood had received a patent for making 100,000*l.* of farthings and halfpence; Dean Swift, by his 'Drapier's Letters,' excited such opposition that the patent had to be withdrawn.

yeomen of the guard: a permanent bodyguard of fifty archers formed for the protection of the king's person on the accession of Henry VII.

APPENDIX III.

GENEALOGICAL TABLES.

TABLES OF THE SAXON, NORMAN, AND PLANTAGENET
HOUSES. FROM EGBERT TO HENRY VII.

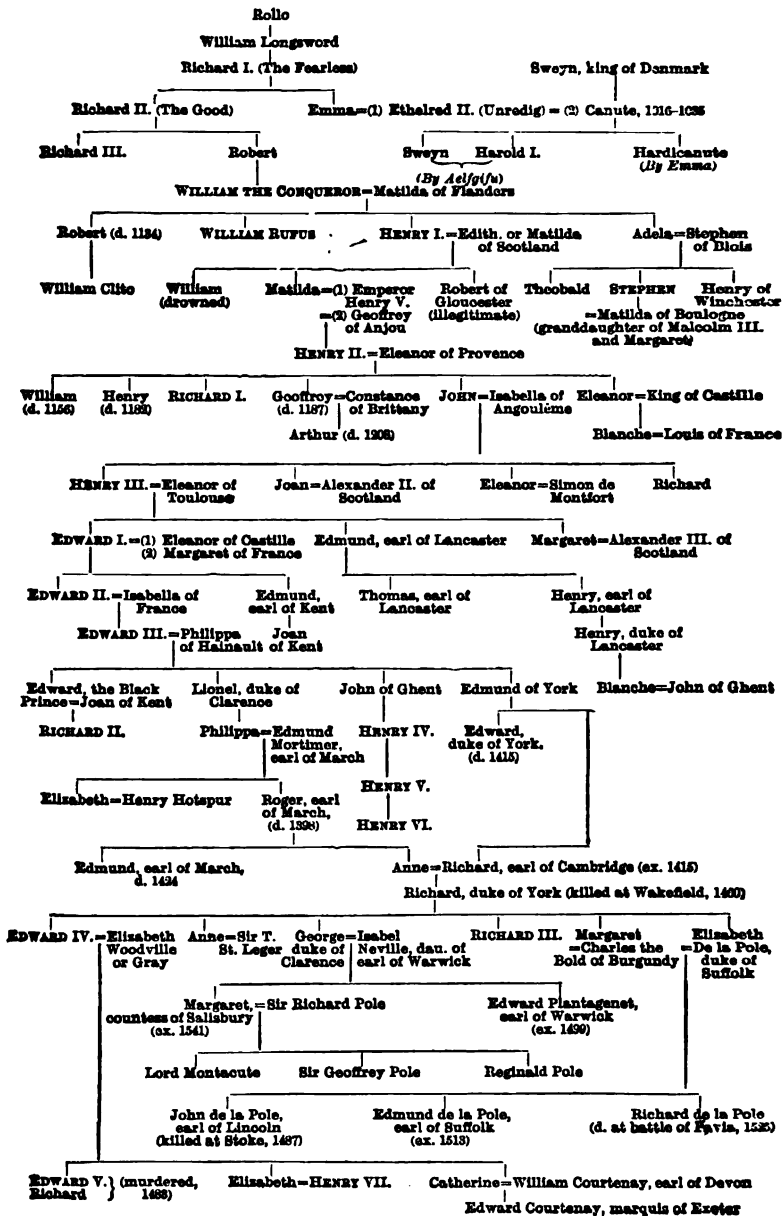
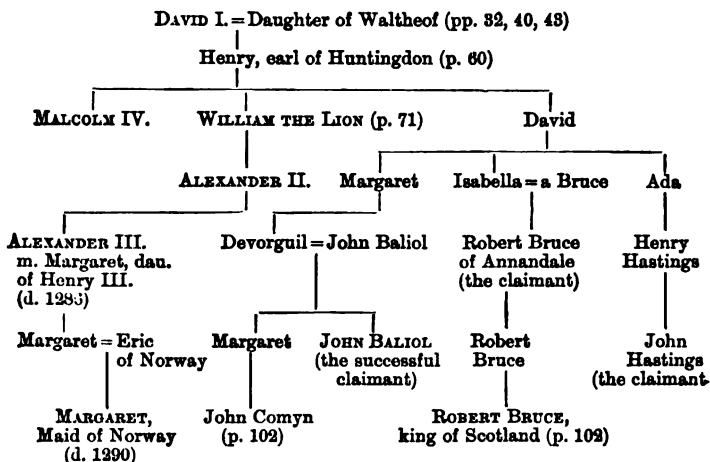


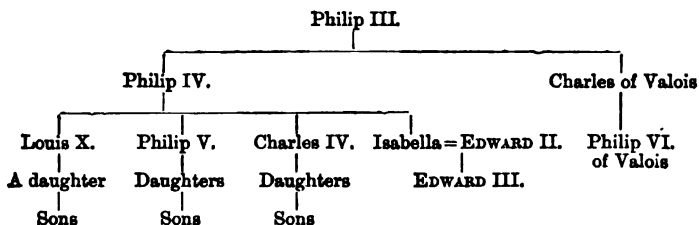
TABLE ILLUSTRATING THE CLAIMS OF BRUCE, BALIOL, AND HASTINGS TO THE SCOTCH THRONE IN 1290.



The right evidently rested between Baliol and Bruce.

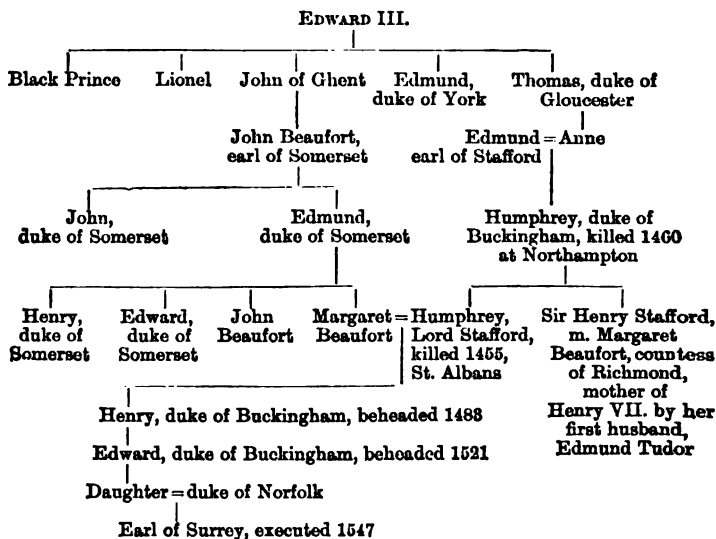
By Scotch custom Bruce, as the son, though of the second daughter, had the better claim. By English feudal custom Baliol, the descendant of the eldest daughter, was heir. Baliol's claim was, therefore, confirmed by Edward.

TABLE ILLUSTRATING THE CLAIM OF EDWARD III. TO THE FRENCH CROWN.

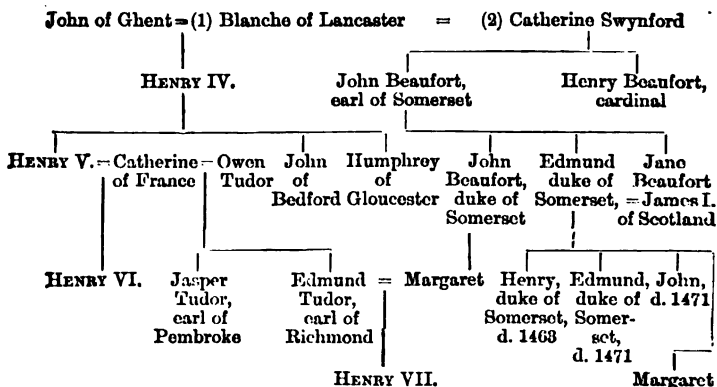


By the Salic law no female could inherit the French crown. On the death of Charles IV., Philip VI. inherited as male heir; but Edward III. claimed the crown on the ground that, though females could not themselves inherit, they could transmit a claim to their descendants. But in that case the surviving grandsons of Louis X., Philip V., or Charles IV. had a prior claim. Edward's claim was therefore null.

THE STAFFORDS.

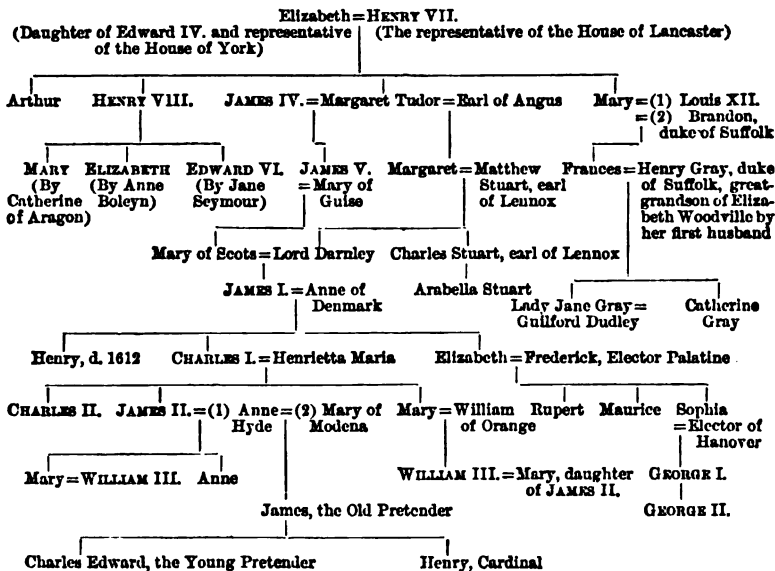


THE BEAUFORTS AND THE TUDORS.

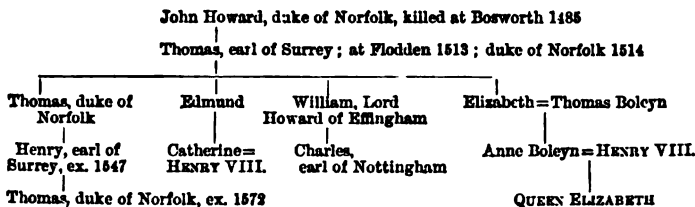


Margaret Beaufort, daughter of John, duke of Somerset, married (1456) Edmund Tudor, earl of Richmond, the son of Henry V.'s widow, Catherine, and Owen Tudor. Their son was Henry VII. Margaret had previously, at the age of nine, been married to John de la Pole, son of William, duke of Suffolk, but this marriage had been set aside. After Edmund Tudor's death (1456) she married (1) Lord Henry Stafford, son of the Duke of Buckingham, and (2) Lord Stanley, created Earl of Derby by Henry VII.

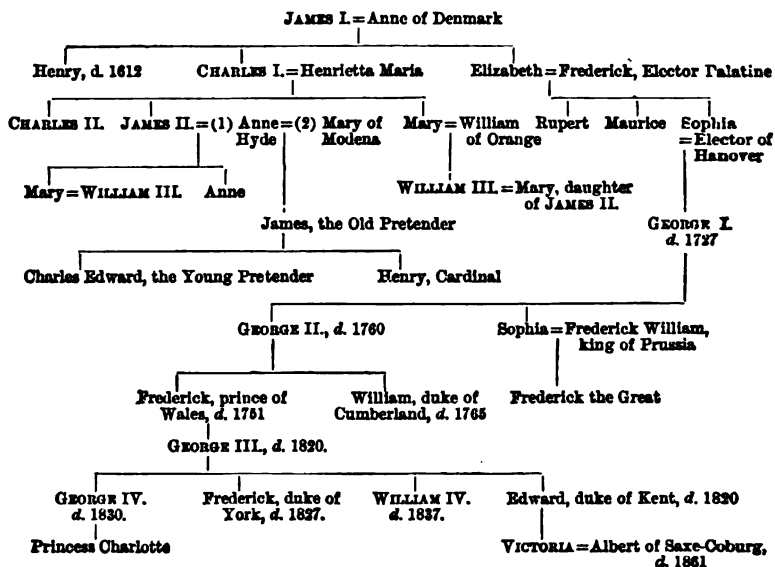
THE TUDOR AND STUART FAMILIES.



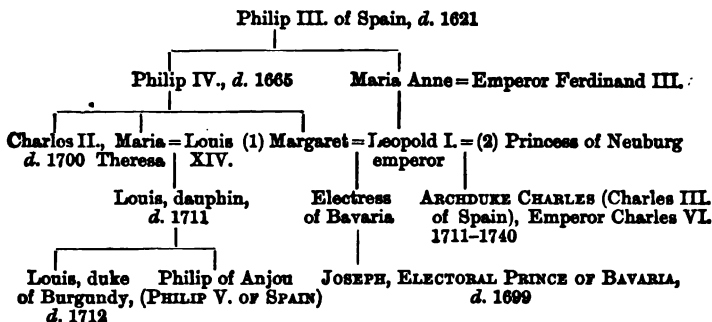
THE HOWARDS.



**THE ENGLISH STUARTS, WILLIAM III., AND THE HOUSE
OF HANOVER.**



THE SPANISH SUCCESSION.



Charles II. of Spain had no children; possible claimants to his throne were:—

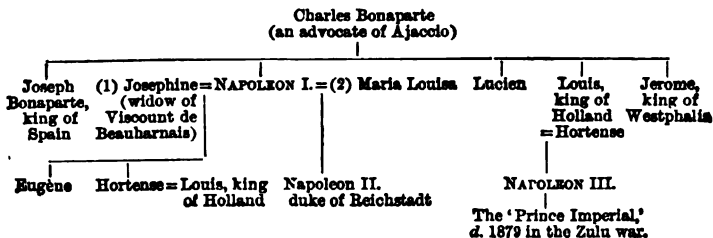
- (1) The Dauphin, through Maria Theresa; but his father and mother had renounced the claim at marriage.
- (2) The Emperor Leopold I., for himself or one of his sons, through Maria Anne, who had made no renunciation.
 - (1) or (2) would disturb the balance of power by uniting Spain with France or Austria. The Dauphin and Leopold had therefore handed over their claims to Philip of Anjou and Archduke Charles respectively.
- (3) Joseph, Electoral Prince of Bavaria, who was not powerful enough to be dangerous.

The First Partition Treaty, 1698, gave the Spanish dominions to Joseph (3), except Guipuscoa, Naples, and Sicily, which went to the Dauphin, and Milan to Archduke Charles.

But Joseph died in 1699 and upset this arrangement.

The Second Partition Treaty, 1700, gave the bulk of the dominions to Archduke Charles, giving Guipuscoa and Milan to France. But Charles was induced to make a will in favour of Philip of Anjou (Philip V.)

THE BONAPARTE FAMILY.



APPENDIX IV.

TREATIES, STATUTES, AND CHARTERS.

-
- Peace of Wedmore, 878:** The Danish king Guthrum accepted Christianity. The country north of the Thames and east of Watling Street became Danish (the Danelaw); all south of the Thames and west of Watling Street was left to Alfred.
- Peace of Olney, 1016:** after the defeat of Edmund by Canute at Assandun; the English king Edmund retained Wessex and Western Mercia and the Danes the Danelaw.
- The Salisbury Decree, 1086:** every freeman, while owing feudal duty to his immediate lord, was before all the king's 'man.' Thus William avoided the disruptive tendencies and retained the advantages of the feudal system.
- Treaty of Caen, 1091:** Robert had sold Western Normandy to Henry for 3,000*l.*; William Rufus now promised to help Robert to regain what he had sold and Maine as well, Robert in return agreeing that, if either he or William died, the survivor should succeed to all his dominions.
- Charter of Henry I., 1100:** to conciliate the English Henry promised the observance of Edward's laws; crimes to be punished by those laws and not by the will of the king; prior debts to the Crown and murder fines to be forgiven; local moots to be restored; privileges given to towns (especially to London the election of its own sheriffs); to conciliate the Church, vacant sees to be filled and Anselm recalled. The demesne lands to be freed from all burdens except knight's service; Ralf Flambard to be imprisoned.
- Henry's Compromise regarding investiture, 1107:** prelates were to do homage to the king for their temporal possessions, while the pope conferred the staff and ring. Election of bishops, synodical decrees, ecclesiastical censures, and the reception of papal legates all depended now on the king's will.
- Peace of Gisors, 1113:** Louis the Fat had taken up the cause of William Clito, but now surrendered to Henry the overlordship of Brittany and Maine; William, Henry's only son, was betrothed to Matilda, daughter of Fulk of Anjou.
- Charter of Stephen, 1135:** the people were promised Edward's laws; the nobles received permission to build castles at will; the Church required the recognition of Stephen by the pope.

- Peace of Wallingford, 1153** : Stephen was to retain the crown for life ; Henry was adopted as his heir, and Stephen was to act by his advice ; Crown rights and lands were resumed, ' adulterine ' castles destroyed, and mercenaries dismissed.
- Constitutions of Clarendon, 1164** : appeals to Rome were forbidden without the permission of the Curia Regis ; no cleric was to leave the kingdom without licence ; the king's consent was now necessary to the election of prelates ; Church estates were to pay the same dues as lay fiefs ; the sons of serfs and villeins were no longer to be ordained without their lord's leave ; **accused clergymen were to be tried like laymen.**
- Assize of Clarendon, 1166** : extended the **grand jury system** (which previously only applied to disputes about tenure) to criminal cases. Twelve men of the hundred, and four of the township were to ' present ' all accused of felony. Judges were to go annually round the country and preside in the shire courts. The inhabitants of each manorial district were divided into groups of ten mutually responsible.
- Assize of Northampton, 1176** : the Salisbury decree of 1086 was again enforced, the jurisdiction of the judges extended, and ' justices-in-eyre ' sent, in six bodies of three each, on circuit all over the country.
- Assize of Arms, 1181** : every freeholder was to be enrolled by the justices and to be armed in a prescribed way ; thus was the royal power strengthened by the reorganisation of the ' fyrd.'
- Magna Carta, 1215** : the benefits secured by the Great Charter were : (1) to the Church—the confirmation of the rights of free election—the declaration of the liberty of the Church of England—the founders of religious houses to have custody during vacancy ; (2) to the **tenants-in-chief**—protection from abuse of feudal burdens and oppressive exaction of debts ; (3) **no scutages or aids beyond the three great feudal dues to be levied save by consent of the national assembly** ; (4) **judicial** : private lawsuits to be tried at fixed places by proper authorities—penalties not to be ruinous—barons to be tried by their peers ; (5) the sheriff's power limited and abuses of purveyance remedied—greater freedom allowed in entering or leaving the kingdom—the oppressive forest laws relaxed ; (6) **personal liberty until after lawful trial and right of justice secured to all men.**
- All sub-vassals were to share in the benefits of the charter, and (a great point of difference from preceding charters) **a committee of twenty-five was appointed to enforce its observance.**
- It was issued in its final form in 1217, omitting the taxation clauses and the committee of twenty-five.
- Treaty of Lambeth, 1217** : Louis was allowed by Pembroke to retire in peace, and all towns, castles, and lands held by foreigners were to be surrendered.
- Provisions of Oxford, 1258** : the executive was transferred from the king to a committee : all the royal castles were to be surrendered into native hands—the sheriff was to become an officer of the people elected annually by the freeholders.
- Mise of Amiens, 1264** : Louis IX., being appealed to as arbitrator, annulled all the reforms of the barons, and the pope confirmed his decision.
- Mise of Lewes, 1264** : a new body of arbitrators was appointed, and the king was bound to act by advice of his counsellors, to keep the charter, and curtail his expedituro.

- Dictum de Kenilworth, 1266**: contained the terms on which the Younger Simon de Montfort finally surrendered to Edward.
- Statute of Marlborough, 1267**: granted the Provisions of Oxford except the appointment of ministers and sheriffs.
- Statute of Westminster the First, 1275**: fixed the amount of 'aid' on the marriage of the king's daughter or the knighthood of his son; the elections were to be free of all undue pressure; the provisions of Magna Carta, Provisions of Oxford, and Statute of Marlborough were revised.
- Statute of Gloucester, 1278**: issued a writ of 'quo warranto' to the great nobles to ascertain 'by what warrant' each held his lands.
- Statute 'De Religiosis,' 1279**: all lands bequeathed for the future to the Church 'in mortmain' were to be forfeited to the testator's lord or the Crown. For the clergy now held nearly one-half the soil of England. This statute was extended to all corporations and guarded against evasions in 1891.
- Writ of 'Circumspecte agatis,' 1285** (mind what you are about): limited the jurisdiction of the Church to spiritual matters.
- Second Statute of Westminster, 1285**: instituted the law of entail, i.e. if an estate was granted to a man and his heirs the owner must not part with it.
- Statute of Winchester, 1285**: reorganised the 'fyrd,' revived the Assize of Arms, and established police measures to suppress brigandage.
- Statute of Westminster, the Third, 1290, or 'quia emptores'** (because purchasers): enacted that in all transfers of land the purchaser did not owe feudal dues to the seller, but to the seller's lord.
- 'Clericis Laicis,' 1296**: a bull, by which Boniface VIII. forbade the clergy to pay, or rulers to demand, taxation upon Church property.
- Confirmatio Cartarum, 1297**: in the absence of the king, Prince Edward confirmed the Charter, adding the clause omitted in 1217 that no customs duties were to be levied except by common consent.
- Articuli super Cartas, 1300** (the articles upon the Charters): on his return Edward re-confirmed the Charters in Parliament, with important additions and without reserve.
- The 'Ordinances,' 1311**: forced upon Edward II. by the barons. Gaveston was to be banished, the royal extravagance checked, all power surrendered to the barons, and parliament to meet annually.
- Statute of Labourers, 1349**: endeavoured to restore the rate of wages prevailing in 1347, before the Black Death, and to restore villenage by tying the labourer to the soil.
- Statute of Provisors, 1351**: all persons receiving papal provisions (nominations to vacant livings) were to be imprisoned, and all preferments to which the pope nominated were to be forfeit for that turn to the king. Re-enacted in a more stringent form in 1390.
- Statute of Treasons, 1352**: defined treason to be compassing the death of the king, queen, or their eldest son; violating the queen, etc.; levying war against the king in his realm; joining his enemies; counterfeiting his seal; importing false coin; slaying the lord chancellor, treasurer, or judges in the discharge of their duty. In 1381 riot and rumour against the king were added. And other additions were made by the Parliament of Shrewsbury, 1398.

- First Statute of Præmunire, 1353**: strengthened in 1365 (*præmunire*, i.e. *præmonere facias* = cause to be warned); inflicted forfeiture, outlawry, and imprisonment on all who sued in foreign (especially papal) courts instead of in the king's. Forfeiture of goods for obtaining papal bulls was imposed by a **New Statute of Præmunire, 1398**.
- Treaty of Brétigny, 1360**: between France and England. Aquitaine was ceded to Edward in full sovereignty with Montreuil, Ponthieu, Calais, Guianes, and their districts, and Edward surrendered all his other claims.
- Statute of Kilkenny, 1367**: defined the relations between the English in Ireland and the native Irish, and allotted the former a district called, later on, the **English Pale**.
- Statute 'De Heretico Comburendo,' 1401**: giving the bishops right to fine or imprison Lollards, and, if they refused to abjure, to burn them.
- Treaty of Troyes, 1420**: Charles VI., the insane king of France, acknowledged Henry V. as his heir and regent till his death, and gave him his daughter Catherine in marriage.
- Treaty of Pecquigny, 1475**; a truce for seven years arranged between Edward IV. and Louis XI. on condition of an annual pension to Edward, gifts to his advisers, and the betrothal of Edward's daughter Elizabeth to the Dauphin.
- Act of parliament settling the crown on Henry VII., 1485**: this act made no mention of hereditary right; Henry became king solely by parliamentary grant. The right of election was thus vindicated. Henry was requested at once to marry Elizabeth of York.
- Poynings' Law, 1494**: no bill could be submitted to the Irish parliament until the king and the English privy council had approved of it.
- Intercursus Magnus, 1496**: trade was permitted between England and Flanders without passport or licence.
- The Holy League, 1511**: a combination of the Emperor Maximilian, Ferdinand of Spain, and the Pope Julius II. against Louis XII. of France. Henry VIII. joined it, being anxious for warlike distinction and proud of his orthodoxy.
- Peace of Cambrai, 1529**: arranged between Charles V. of Germany and Spain and Francis I. of France, who agreed to support the Pope; Clement VII. was now no longer under the necessity of conciliating Henry, and summoned the case of Catherine of Aragon to Rome.
- The Transfer of Ecclesiastical Supremacy, 1529-1535.**
- 1529** Acts are passed attacking convocation, church courts, religious fees, lay employments of clergy, pluralities, non-residence, benefit of clergy.
- 1531** Threatened with *præmunire*, the clergy offer 120,000*l.* and acknowledge Henry supreme governor of the English church.
- 1532** An act is passed abolishing the independent legislation of convocation.
- An Act is passed suspending the payment of annates and tithes to Rome: these were afterwards given to Henry.
- 1533** An act is passed forbidding appeals to Rome.
Convocation is forced to declare the marriage of Henry with Catherine of Aragon illegal.

1534 An act is passed by which bishops were no longer appointed by the Pope on the nomination of the crown, but by a *congé d'élire* from the king to the chapter.

The Act of Supremacy makes Henry 'the only supreme head of the church of England.'

1535 Henry takes the title 'On earth supreme head of the church of England,' and makes Cromwell his vicar-general.

An Act of Succession is passed, 1534, naming Elizabeth (born 1533) successor, and imposing an oath to her succession on all subjects.

The Ten Articles to establish Christian Quietness, 1536, inclined to the Protestant doctrine of justification by faith and attacked those of purgatory and indulgences.

The Six Articles, 1539 (called by those who suffered under them 'the whip with six strings'), formed a complete denial of Protestantism. Death was the penalty for denial of the first; to speak against the others was a felony. (1) Transubstantiation. (2) Communion in one kind (i.e. not the cup) to laymen. (3) Celibacy of the clergy. (4) Vows of chastity were still binding on monks and nuns, though their houses had been destroyed. (5) Private masses to be maintained. (6) Auricular confession expedient and necessary.

An act is passed giving Henry's proclamations the force of laws, 1539.

An act is passed for the better observance of the Six Articles, 1540.

An act is passed making it death to disagree with Henry's theological opinions, 1548.

Act of Uniformity, 1549, enforces the use of the first Prayer Book of Edward VI. under penalty of imprisonment for life for the third offence.

An act is passed for the maintenance of the poor, 1552. Churchwardens were empowered to exact collections in their parishes.

Act of Uniformity, 1552, enforced the use of the second Prayer Book of Edward VI., which was a revision of the former one to meet the views of the Calvinist foreign divines.

The Treason Laws are amended, 1552: two sworn witnesses were now necessary to secure a conviction, and they must be brought face to face with the prisoner.

The 42 Articles of religion, 1553: set forth by Cranmer as a statement of the belief of the church, and linking it with the reformed churches of the Continent.

An act is passed abolishing all the treasons and felonies created in the last two reigns and asserting Mary's legitimacy, 1553.

An act is passed restoring the ancient service, 1553.

The Grand Bill, 1555, restored everything to its condition previous to 1529 so far as the crown, the Pope, and the bishops were concerned; the church lands, however, were not to be restored, though the annates were restored to the Pope.

An act is passed reviving the Lollard statutes, 1555: the jurisdiction of the bishop's courts was also restored.

Acts are passed repealing the religious statutes of Mary and re-enacting those of Edward VI. the annates were also restored to the crown, 1559.

- Act of Supremacy, 1559:** all beneficed clergy and crown officials to take an oath against the papal authority on pain of death for the third offence.
- Act of Uniformity, 1559,** enforced the use of a new revision of the Prayer Book which was really a compromise between the two preceding ones. Absence from church on Sundays and holy days was punishable by a fine of 1s.
- Peace of Câteau Cambresis, 1559.** An agreement with France by which Elizabeth practically abandoned Calais, and promised not to assist the Scotch Reformers against Mary of Guise, the Regent in Scotland.
- Treaty of Berwick, 1560:** Elizabeth agreed with the 'Lords of the Congregation' to maintain an army in Scotland till the French were expelled; the Scots agreed not to let the crowns of France and Scotland ever be united, and to aid Elizabeth with 4,000 men in case of invasion.
- Treaty of Edinburgh, 1560:** Francis and Mary, king and queen of France, made peace with Elizabeth and the Congregation. The French troops left Scotland, and Mary and Francis acknowledged Elizabeth's title to the English throne.
- Statute of Labourers, 1562:** the justices were to fix the rate of all wages; the number of apprentices to be employed was limited; combination of labourers was forbidden.
- The Test Act, 1568,** extended the Act of Supremacy, with the penalties of *præmunire* for the first, and death for the second offence; the Articles, now reduced to thirty-nine, were enforced upon all clergymen.
- The Protestant reply to the excommunication, 1571.** Acts were passed: (1) (Against Mary) Anyone laying claim to the throne should be incapable of succeeding. (2) (Against the Pope) It was treason to introduce bulls from Rome, to call Elizabeth a heretic, schismatic, infidel, tyrant, or usurper, or to name anyone as her heir except her children. (3) (Against the refugees) That they should return in six months or forfeit their property.
- Pacification of Ghent, 1576:** an arrangement entered into by all the seventeen states of the Netherlands binding them to aid in expelling the Spaniards.
- Protestant Union of Utrecht, 1577:** a combination of the seven northern states of the Netherlands formed by William of Orange; the ten southern states had been won back by Spain.
- Anti-Catholic Acts, 1581,** passed in consequence of the coming of the Jesuit missionaries. It was made high treason to absolve subjects from their allegiance; sheltering Jesuits was punished with a year's imprisonment and whipping.
- More severe acts against the Catholics, 1585,** passed in consequence of a conspiracy (1584) to assassinate the queen. All Catholic priests born in the queen's dominions were to leave the country within forty days under penalty of death; all seminary students were to return within six months on pain of treason; those who sent their children abroad were fined 100*l.* and their children disinherited.
- An act was passed imprisoning anyone over sixteen who kept away from church for a month, 1593.**
- Poor Law, 1601:** houses of correction were established in every county, and provided by a compulsory rate to be collected and distributed by overseers. (This remained in force until 1834.)

Parliament insists on the abolition of monopolies, 1601.

Fresh acts are passed against the Catholics, 1605: the 5th of November was to be kept as a day of thanksgiving; Catholics were to receive the sacrament from Protestant ministers. The king was empowered to refuse the 20*l.* fine for absence from church and take two-thirds of the offender's goods. Recusants were practically deprived of civil rights. If Catholics were not buried in Protestant graveyards their executors were fined 20*l.*

Charter of Colonisation, 1606, authorised Judge Popham to make two settlements in America.

The Great Contract, 1610: parliament offered 200,000*l.* increase of revenue if James would abandon purveyance, the feudal tenures, and the power of imposing rates. This attempted arrangement fell through.

Twelve Years' Truce, 1610: negotiated by James I. between Spain and the Dutch.

The Protestant League, 1624: an alliance of Sweden, Denmark, the German Princes, and the Catholic states of France against Spain formed by Buckingham.

The Petition of Right, 1628: a reassertion of Magna Carta and the Confirmatio Cartarum, forbidding (1) Forced loans and other unparliamentary taxation, (2) arbitrary arrest and detention, (3) billeting of soldiers in private houses, (4) exercise of martial law on soldiers and sailors for ordinary offences.

The Remonstrance, 1628: presented by parliament against popery and Arminianism, the late naval failures before Rochelle, and the retention of Buckingham in power.

The Treaty of Berwick, 1639: Charles agreed to submit to the General Assembly and the Scotch parliament all ecclesiastical and civil questions; the Scotch agreed to disband the 'Tables' and the army, and restore the fortresses.

Early acts of the Long Parliament, 1640: severe resolutions passed against the Catholics; the ministers deprived by Laud restored; the supplies granted by convocation to the king and the validity of its canons declared illegal; the Councils of the North and of Wales abolished; monopolies abolished; exactions, especially ship-money, declared illegal.

The Triennial Bill, 1641: (1) No parliament to sit for more than three years. (2) No more than three years might elapse between two parliaments. (3) If the chancellor did not issue writs the peers might; failing them, the sheriffs were to hold elections; failing them, the people. (4) No parliament might be dissolved within fifty days of meeting.

Further reforms, 1641: army disbanded; Star Chamber and High Commission Courts abolished; ship-money, tonnage and poundage, and distraint of knighthood declared illegal.

The Grand Remonstrance, 1641: a statement drawn up by the parliament recounting all the evil doings of the crown since the accession, and demanding a synod of divines for church reform. This was carried by a narrow majority of eleven and presented to Charles.

Militia Bill, 1641: the national forces were to be under the command of a lord general and lord high admiral to be appointed by parliament, with

supreme command, and power to levy money and exercise martial law. This bill, however, failed to pass.

Root and Branch Bill, 1641: brought in by Oliver Cromwell and Sir Henry Vane but not passed; its object was to abolish Episcopacy.

The Solemn League and Covenant, 1643: a treaty arranged by Sir Henry Vane with the Scotch, who desired only a religious covenant, while the English desired only a civil league; the English were to defend Presbyterianism in Scotland and to reform the church in England 'according to the Word of God' (i.e. not necessarily Presbyterian); the Scotch for a subsidy were to send an army at once to help the parliament.

The Engagement, 1647: a treaty arranged between Charles and the Scotch commissioners. The Scotch promised to invade England and restore Charles; Charles promised to confirm the Covenant, establish Presbyterianism in England for three years, and suppress all other sects.

Vote of non-addresses, 1648: when Charles refused their terms, parliament voted that no further addresses should be made to or received from him.

The Grand Army Remonstrance, 1648, presented by the assembly of officers to the Commons, where the Presbyterians again had the ascendancy, demanded (1) that the king should be brought to justice; (2) that parliament, being hostile to the army, should be dissolved; (3) annual parliaments, extended franchise, redistribution of seats, temporary disfranchisement of the royalists; (4) the supremacy of the Commons over the Lords; (5) the confiscation of the estates and revenues of the crown; (6) that the king should be elected by parliament and should not have the power of veto.

Ordinance erecting a high court of justice for the trial of the king, 1648, rejected by the Lords, but persisted in by the 'Rump.'

An ordinance passed abolishing the upper house and the monarchy, 1649: a council of state was also set up with complete executive control.

The Navigation Act, 1651: colonial merchandise could only be brought to England in English ships with English captains; European goods only in English ships or those of the country whence the goods originally came; no fish could be exported or imported in England or Ireland except by English taking. All this struck especially at the Dutch.

The Instrument of Government, 1653, drawn up by a council of officers and accepted by Cromwell, who became 'Lord Protector': its chief provisions were (1) a 'Protector' to hold office for life, his successors to be elected by the council; he must govern according to the will of the council, the Instrument, the laws; he had the right of appointing officials, distributing honours, pardon; (2) a council of 21, vacancies filled up by parliament, council, and Protector; Protector and council together had control of the armed forces and right to make peace and war; (3) parliament to meet triennially, with a minimum duration of five months; parliament had sole right of legislation and taxation; (4) the church was to be state-paid, without bishops, and comprehensive.

A commercial treaty with France, 1655: this was converted into an offensive alliance in 1657.

The Petition and Advice, 1657: an alteration in the constitution as laid down in the Instrument. (1) There were to be two chambers instead of one; (2) the Council of State was to lose its power; (3) the Protector was to have power of dissolution, of naming his successor, and a revenue to maintain

the army and navy. The kingship was offered to Cromwell and refused.

The Declaration of Breda, 1660: drawn up by Edward Hyde and accepted by Charles. It promised (1) amnesty, '*excepting only such persons as shall hereafter be excepted by parliament*'; (2) liberty of conscience; (3) questions of land tenure to be left to parliament; (4) payment of arrears to Monk's soldiers.

Act of Indemnity, 1660, decreed a general amnesty with about twenty exceptions.

Corporation Act, 1661: three conditions laid down for admission into a municipal body: (1) renunciation of the Solemn League and Covenant; (2) denial of the lawfulness of taking up arms against the king; (3) taking the sacrament according to the rites of the Episcopal Church.

Act of Uniformity, 1662, enforced the use of and assent to the newly revised Prayer Book; imposed on all ministers and teachers the oaths prescribed by the Corporation Act.

First Conventicle Act, 1664, forbade under severe penalties religious meetings of more than four persons besides the household.

The Five Mile Act, 1665, forbade under severe penalties any Nonconformist minister to teach in schools or come within five miles of any city, corporate town, or parliamentary borough, unless he had taken the oath prescribed by the former acts.

The Treaty of Breda, 1667, ended the Dutch war, each nation retaining its own conquests.

The Triple Alliance, 1668: between England, Holland, and Sweden; these nations resolved to bring about peace between France and Spain (which was actually done at Aix-la-Chapelle), and to use force against whichever should refuse.

The Second Conventicle Act, 1670, re-enacted the act of 1664 in a more stringent form.

The Treaty of Dover, 1670: arranged secretly between Charles and Louis XIV. Louis promised a large annual sum and a present supply (part to be paid when Charles declared his conversion), help against Charles's subjects, and commercial advantages to England. **The Sham Treaty, 1670,** negotiated by Buckingham, contained no mention of Catholicism.

Declaration of Indulgence, 1672: an attempt to secure the 'dispensing power'; suspended all penal laws against Nonconformists and Roman Catholics.

The Test Act, 1678, required all holding office to take the sacrament according to the rites of the Church of England, and especially to deny the doctrine of Transubstantiation.

The Treaty of Westminster, 1674, concluded the Second Dutch War. England acquired St. Helena.

The Non-Resisting Test, 1675: a bill to impose on all the oath demanded in the Act of Uniformity against 'endeavouring any alteration in the government of church and state.' There would then have been no opposition in the church, parliament, or the executive. The bill passed the Lords; in the Commons it was thwarted by the 'country' party.

The Peace of Nimwegen, 1678, ended the war between Louis and the Dutch.

A secret treaty between Charles and Louis, 1678: Charles promised to dissolve parliament should it prove intractable, and not to help the Dutch; Louis promised 300,000*l.* a year.

- An Exclusion Bill, 1679**, aimed against James, passes its second reading.
- The Habeas Corpus Act, 1679**: prisoners were to be admitted to bail except in cases of treason or felony; judges refusing to issue and gaolers refusing to obey a writ of habeas corpus (produce the body of the prisoner) were to be punished by fine; no one could be rearrested for an offence after release; no one could be imprisoned out of the country except for a capital offence.
- The Declaration of Indulgence, 1687**, issued by James II., proclaiming universal liberty of conscience.
- The Declaration of Right, 1689**, recited as illegal (1) the 'dispensing power'; (2) exactions of money without a grant from parliament; (3) a standing army without the consent of parliament; (4) the Ecclesiastical Commission and similar courts; it claimed (1) right of petitioning the king; (2) free election of members of parliament; (3) freedom of debate; (4) frequent parliaments.
- Act of Settlement, 1689**: the crown was to be held by William and Mary for their joint and separate lives; the succession was (1) to Mary's children; (2) to Anne and her children; (3) to William's children by any other wife. No Catholic or one who should marry a Catholic might be king; the next Protestant heir was to succeed.
- Mutiny Act, 1689**: allowing courts-martial to punish mutiny or desertion with death; it was first passed for six months, then annually renewed.
- Toleration Act, 1689**: suspending the penal laws against all but Catholics and Unitarians.
- Bill of Rights, 1689**: confirming as a law the 'Declaration of Rights,' enacting, in addition, every sovereign was to deny transubstantiation at his coronation, and in case of marriage with a papist the subject was freed from his allegiance.
- Settlement of the revenue, 1690**: about 800,000*l.* was left to William free of parliamentary control—henceforward called the 'civil list'; also 600,000*l.* from the customs for four years only.
- Act of Grace, 1690**: settling the indemnity question; only about thirty exceptions were made, and even those were not acted on.
- The National Debt, 1693, and the Bank of England, 1694**, originate in loans sanctioned by parliament.
- Triennial Bill, 1694**: providing that no future parliament should last more than three years. William had vetoed the bill in 1693.
- The censorship of the press expired, 1695**: it had been renewed for two years in 1693.
- The Coinage Act, 1696**: clipped money was all called in, and a new milled coinage issued under the direction of Sir Isaac Newton.
- The Treason Act, 1696**: providing that (1) a copy of the indictment should be furnished to the prisoner; (2) that he should be allowed counsel; (3) two witnesses on oath should be necessary before conviction; (4) a list of the jury should be given to the accused; (5) he could call witnesses in his own behalf.
- Peace of Ryswick, 1697**: made by England, Spain, and the Dutch with France. England and France agreed each to restore the conquests made in America, Louis recognised William, and William promised to cease

from encouraging French Protestants in rebellion. About a month later the emperor also became a party to the Peace.

- First Partition Treaty, 1698**: arranging that in the event of the death of Charles II., Joseph, Electoral Prince of Bavaria, should succeed to most of the Spanish dominions, France receiving Guipuscoa, Naples, and Sicily, and Archduke Charles Milan. But Joseph died in 1699.
- Bill for resuming the Irish lands, 1700**, 'tacked' on to the Land Bill to coerce the Lords into passing it, just as the bill appointing commissioners to investigate the Irish grants had been 'tacked' previously to the Land Tax Bill.
- The Second Partition Treaty, 1700**: the Archduke Charles was now to be heir to Spain and her colonies, France receiving Guipuscoa, Naples, Sicily, and Milan.
- The Second Act of Settlement, 1701**: necessitated by the death of the Duke of Gloucester (1700), the last surviving child of Anne. On the death of William and Anne the crown was to go to Sophia and her descendants. It provided (1) the sovereign must be a member of the church of England; (2) if the crown fell to one not a native of England the consent of parliament was necessary for war in defence of any land not belonging to the crown of England; (3) the sovereign could not leave the country without permission of parliament; (4) the whole privy council (not a cabal merely) must sign resolutions; (5) no foreigners might hold civil or military posts; (6) no one holding a crown office or pension might sit in parliament; (7) judges can only be deprived on addresses from both houses; (8) no royal pardon under the great seal can be pleaded in bar of a parliamentary impeachment.
- The Grand Alliance, 1701**, arranged between England, the Dutch, and the emperor against France, when Louis seized the 'barrier towns' in the Spanish Netherlands. A little later Prussia joined the Alliance.
- Act imposing an oath of abjuration, 1701**, followed an Act of Attainder against the Pretender when James II. died (1701); all civil officers, ecclesiastics, members of universities, and schoolmasters were required to acknowledge William and abjure the Pretender's title.
- Commissioners are appointed to treat with Scotland, 1702.**
- Act of Security passed in Scotland, 1703**, debarring the same succession in Scotland as in England, unless the religion and trade of the Scottish nation were fully secured. Anne assented to it in 1704.
- Act for the Union of England and Scotland, 1707**: (1) Great Britain was to be the title of the United Kingdom. Scotland was to send forty-five members to the Commons and sixteen elected peers to the Lords. (2) The same laws for taxation and trade were to be for both countries; an indemnity of 400,000*l.* for the Darien shareholders and temporary exemption from taxation were granted; the 'heritable jurisdictions' and all her legal system remained untouched.
- Property qualifications fixed for members of parliament, 1711**: no one with less than 800*l.* a year in land might sit for a borough, or for a county with less than 600*l.*; this was repealed in 1858.
- The Occasional Conformity Bill, 1711**: forbidding Nonconformists to hold office, in spite of the Test and Corporation Acts, by occasionally conforming to the established worship. Anne favoured it, but the Lords rejected the bill in 1702 and 1703. It was repealed in 1719.

- The Peace of Utrecht, 1713:** (1) Philip V. retained Spain and her colonies; Austria received Naples, Milan, and the Spanish Netherlands; Sicily was given to Savoy. (2) France and Spain were not to be united, nor was Spain to alienate her possessions and trade with the Indies. (3) Louis acknowledged Anne and the Protestant succession, and promised to dismiss the Pretender, dismantle Dunkirk, equal trading rights in the colonies, and free trade between the countries. (4) England kept Gibraltar and Minorca, and gained Hudson's Bay Territory, Newfoundland and Nova Scotia, and the 'Assiento.' (5) The Dutch gained a strong barrier, and a favourable commercial treaty with France. Charles VI. assented to it at Rastadt in 1714.
- Schism Bill, 1714:** no one might be a schoolmaster or tutor without a licence from the bishop; this licence was only given to those who had received the sacrament according to the established church in the last year, and taken the oaths of allegiance and supremacy. It was repealed in 1719.
- The Riot Act, 1715,** permits the civil magistrate to call out the military after reading the act and ordering the mob (i.e. more than twelve persons) to disperse.
- The Septennial Act, 1716:** making seven years the limit of the duration of a parliament.
- Triple Alliance, 1717:** between England, the Dutch, and France, to maintain the Treaty of Utrecht; France agreed to guarantee the Hanoverian succession in England.
- Quadruple Alliance, 1718:** between England, France, the emperor, and the Dutch, to preserve the Peace of Utrecht against Spain; Philip V. himself joined it in 1719.
- Peerage Bill, 1719:** limiting the creation of new peers to six, but only on extinction of a title—not to be granted further than to heirs male; the sixteen elective Scotch peers to be replaced by twenty-five hereditary. It was thrown out by the Commons.
- An Act is passed enabling the English parliament to make laws binding on Ireland, 1719.**
- Treaty of Vienna, 1725:** arranged between Spain and the emperor against France and England; Spain guarantees the Pragmatic Sanction and supports the Ostend Company.
- Counter-Treaty of Hanover, 1725:** between England, France, and Prussia, and later on Sweden and the Dutch.
- The emperor consents to peace, 1727,** according to the terms of which the Ostend Company is suspended for seven years and hostilities cease between England and Spain.
- The Treaty of Seville, 1729;** a defensive alliance between England, France, and Spain; Spain revoked the privileges conferred on Austria by the Treaty of Vienna; the 'Assiento' was confirmed to the South Sea Company; captured English ships were restored; the demand of Spain for the restoration of Gibraltar was given up.
- Second Treaty of Vienna, 1731:** between England, the emperor, and Spain. Charles VI. accepted the Spanish terms and abolished the Ostend Company; England guaranteed the Pragmatic Sanction so long as Maria Theresa did not marry a Spanish or French Bourbon.
- The Excise Bill, 1733,** proposed to levy excise instead of customs on tobacco

- and wine; it would have ended smuggling and improved the revenue; Walpole had to withdraw it.
- Family Compact, 1738**: a secret treaty of alliance between the Bourbon rulers of France and Spain directed against England.
- Treaty for the neutrality of Hanover, 1741**: arranged by George II. as Elector with France; George agreed not to support Maria Theresa's husband at the election for emperor.
- Treaty of Dresden, 1745**: in which Maria Theresa gave up Silesia to Frederick, and the latter acknowledged Francis as emperor.
- Acts passed in consequence of the Rebellion, 1746**: (1) for disarming the Highlanders; (2) for abolishing the heritable jurisdictions (*see* Act of Union); (3) for prohibiting the Highland garb; also an Indemnity Act with eighty exceptions.
- Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, 1748**: everything was restored as before the war, except that Frederick kept Silesia. France acknowledged the Emperor Francis, and again guaranteed the Pragmatic Sanction.
- The reform of the calendar, 1751**: eleven days (September 2-14) were dropped to make the reckoning right; the year to begin on January 1 instead of March 25.
- Hardwicke's Marriage Act, 1753**, passed to render clandestine marriages less easy.
- Alliance between England and Frederick the Great, 1756**.
- Convention of Closterseven, 1757**: in consequence of the defeat of Cumberland the French occupy Hanover. This agreement contained the terms of Cumberland's capitulation. Pitt repudiated it in 1758.
- The Peace of Paris, 1763**: arranged between England, France, and Spain; France gave up North America (except Louisiana, which went to Spain), Grenada, Dominica, St. Vincent, Tobago, Senegal, Minorca (for Belle Isle), and retained Goree, Guadeloupe, Martinique, Mariegalante, St. Lucia, fishing rights in Newfoundland, Pondicherry. Spain gave up Florida and fishing rights in Newfoundland, and regained Havannah and the Philippines.
- The Stamp Act, 1765**: every legal document in the American colonies to be valid must be written on stamped paper sent from England, for which a charge was made. It was repealed in 1766.
- Declaratory Act, 1766**: affirming the right of parliament to make laws binding the colonies in all cases whatsoever, as well as to tax them.
- Townsend's act for taxing America, 1767**, imposed duties on tea, glass, and paper; the estimated produce of it was only 40,000*l.*; it was repealed in 1770, except in the case of tea.
- Act by which election petitions were referred to a committee of fifteen, 1770**.
- The Royal Marriage Act, 1772**: no English descendant of George II. was to marry before twenty-five without royal consent, and after twenty-five they must give twelve months' notice to the privy council.
- The Regulating Act, 1773**: made the governor of Bengal governor-general of India; a council of four was to assist him; three judges and a chief justice to form a court of final appeal.
- The Boston Port Act, 1774**, threatened the ruin of Boston by removing the custom-house to Salem.
- Acts passed in reply to the Olive Branch Petition, 1775**, prohibited trade with America, confiscated ships engaged in such trade, and pressed Americans to serve against their country.

- Treaty of Commerce and Alliance between France and America, 1778.**
- Catholic Relief Bill, 1778,** allowed priests to say mass and heirs educated abroad to inherit; a similar bill was passed to relieve Protestant Dissenters. **A motion is carried 'that the influence of the crown has increased, is increasing, and ought to be diminished,' 1780.**
- The Armed Neutrality, 1780:** formed by Russia, Denmark, and Sweden to uphold against England the doctrine 'free ships make free goods.' It was revived in 1800.
- Act disfranchising revenue officers, 1782:** Burke's economic reform, which had failed in 1780, is also carried.
- Treaty of Versailles, 1783:** between England, America, France, Spain, Holland. **America gained independence and fishing rights off Newfoundland;** the Mississippi declared a free river. **France gained St. Lucia, Tobago, Senegal, Gorce, Pondicherry, Chandernagore. Spain gained Minorca, the Floridas. England recovered Grenada, St. Vincent, Dominique, the Bahamas, and right to cut logwood in Honduras.**
- Fox's India Bill, 1783,** passed the Commons, thrown out by the Lords, proposed that seven commissioners should be appointed by parliament first and then by the crown to take over the government of India from the company; a board of eight appointed first by parliament and then by the proprietors should deal with all commercial matters.
- Pitt's India Act, 1784:** all officials except the highest to be appointed by the directors; a board of control with supreme authority, civil and military, but acting through the directors. It was in force till 1858.
- Fox's Libel Act, 1792:** the jury to decide whether the writing was a libel, and not merely as to the fact of its publication.
- Alien Act, 1792:** to put resident aliens under supervision; a Traitorous Correspondence Act was also passed.
- Bank Restriction Act, 1797,** freed the Bank of England from the obligation to honour its notes in gold. Cash payments were resumed 1821.
- Treaty of Campo Formio, 1797:** between Austria and France. **Austria ceded her part of the Netherlands, the left bank of the Rhine, and her Italian provinces, acquiring Venice.**
- The Act for the Union of England and Ireland, 1800:** four spiritual peers, twenty-eight elected lay peers, and one hundred members in the Commons were to represent Ireland; free trade was established between the two countries.
- Peace of Lunéville, 1801,** between Austria and France, repeated the terms of Campo Formio in 1797.
- Peace of Amiens, 1802:** England restored all her conquests except Trinidad and Ceylon; Malta was restored to the Knights of St. John; Egypt restored to Turkey, Cape of Good Hope a free port, the independence of Portugal guaranteed.
- Coalition against Napoleon, 1805:** England, Russia, Austria, Sweden.
- Act for the abolition of the slave trade, 1807.**
- Peace of Tilsit, 1807,** between Napoleon and Russia, made a Kingdom of Westphalia for Jerome Bonaparte and gave the King of Saxony part of Poland; its secret articles arranged that Russia would aid Napoleon and force Denmark and Portugal to act against England; Prussia was also to join them if England did not soon agree to Napoleon's terms.
- Treaty of Vienna, 1809:** between Napoleon and Austria.

The First Peace of Paris, 1814: between England, Russia, Prussia, Austria, and France; France received frontiers as in 1792 with additions, all her colonies except Mauritius; Holland and Belgium united, and Switzerland were to be independent countries. Austria gained Venice and North Italy.

Second Treaty of Paris, 1815: the northern provinces were to be held by the allies for five years. France to pay an indemnity of 40,000,000*l.* Holland and Belgium were united into the kingdom of the Netherlands. Austria received North Italy.

Corn Law, 1815, prohibited the importation of wheat till the price reached 80*s.* a quarter.

The Holy Alliance, 1815: formed by the autocratic rulers of Russia, Austria and Prussia, France and Spain, against revolutionary and popular movements as 'un-Christian.'

Seditious Meetings Bill, 1817, made death the penalty for refusing to disperse when ordered.

The Six Acts, 1819, strengthened the hands of the magistrates, prohibited drilling, punished libel with transportation for a second offence, imposed a stamp duty on cheap (Radical) publications.

A Bill of Pains and Penalties is brought in against the queen, 1820: it has to be abandoned.

Various acts are passed, 1823, exempting more than a hundred felonies from death, partly repealing the Navigation Act of 1651 in the direction of free trade.

The Combination Acts are repealed, 1824: workmen could now meet to discuss rates of wages &c. more freely about the kingdom; also the magistrates were no longer able to fix the wages of the Spitalfields weavers.

A bill is passed for suppressing the Catholic Association, 1825.

The repeal of the Test and Corporation Acts, 1828.

The Catholic Relief Bill, 1829, gave the franchise in Great Britain to Catholics, and enabled them to hold any office except those of lord lieutenant and lord chancellor; the electoral qualification in Ireland raised from 40*s.* to 10*l.*

The Reform Bill, 1832, disfranchised all towns with less than 2,000 inhabitants and took one member from those with less than 4,000; the franchise to be held by 10*l.* householders in boroughs, and 50*l.* leaseholders and 10*l.* freeholders in counties; towns of 10,000 to 20,000 inhabitants were granted a member, those over 20,000 two members, as also counties of over 150,000. The full number of English and Welsh members was retained; the disfranchisement was partly based on the number of houses and assessment, so that only thirty towns were disfranchised. This act transferred the balance of power to the middle classes. In Ireland the 40*s.* franchise was not restored.

Coercion Act for Ireland, 1833: to quell the prevalent disorder; a Church Act also reduced the number of bishops and archbishops in Ireland and rearranged their salaries, and laid a tax on benefices; a Tithe Bill passed by which the government undertook the collection and paid 1,000,000*l.* of arrears.

Act for the abolition of slavery, 1833: all slaves were nominally free after August 1, 1834; 20,000,000*l.* was paid to the planters in compensation.

- Althorp's Factory Act, 1833**, limited the hours of work to eight for children under thirteen, to twelve between thirteen and eighteen.
- Parliament makes the first Education Grant, 1833**: 20,000*l*.
- Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834**, joined parishes into unions; workhouses built as tests of destitution; outdoor relief of able-bodied persons forbidden.
- The Municipal Reform Act, 1835**: each council to be elected by ratepayers of three years' standing, one-third to retire annually; large boroughs divided into wards each electing their own councilmen. It was extended to Ireland in 1840.
- Reform of the Marriage Law, 1836**: persons could be married in chapel as well as in church, after due notice given to a registrar.
- Rowland Hill's postal reform passed, 1839**: came fully into force in 1840; introduced a charge of a penny prepaid (i.e. by stamps), instead of fourpence gathered on delivery.
- Quadrilateral Alliance, 1840**: between England, Austria, Russia, and Prussia, afterwards joined by France, to deal with the questions arising from the war between Turkey and Egypt.
- A new constitution established for Canada, 1841**: the two provinces were united, with a single legislative assembly chosen by each in proportion to its population; legislative and financial independence; a council in harmony with popular feeling; a governor-general appointed by the crown.
- Act repealing the Corn Laws, 1846**: to come fully into force by 1849.
- The Navigation Act of 1651 totally repealed, 1849.**
- Eccelesiastical Titles Bill, 1851**, forbade the assumption of territorial titles by Roman Catholic prelates; all gifts to them and acts done by them under those titles declared void; property bequeathed to them forfeited. It was practically repealed in 1871.
- Transportation is abolished, 1853.**
- The Declaration of Paris, 1856**: (1) privateering forbidden; (2) a neutral flag to cover an enemy's goods, except contraband of war; (3) neutral goods no longer liable to seizure even in an enemy's ship; (4) blockades to be binding must be effective.
- Terms of peace with Russia, 1856**: Russia's claim to interfere in the internal affairs of Turkey given up; the Black Sea neutralised; the navigation of the Danube declared free; Moldavia and Wallachia (now Roumania) and Servia made free.
- India Act, 1858**: the East India Company, court of directors, and board of control were abolished; the government of India transferred to the crown; India henceforth to be governed by a secretary of state in England, a viceroy, and a council of fifteen.
- Abolition of the property qualifications of members of parliament, 1858**: they were imposed in 1710.
- Free Trade Treaty with France, 1860**: England abolished all duties on French manufactured goods and reduced those on French brandy and wines; France reduced the duties on English coal and manufactures.
- The Second Reform Act, 1867**: in boroughs householders, compound and otherwise, received the franchise, also 10*l*. lodgers; in counties those who paid 12*l*. rent were enfranchised. This bill gave political power to the working classes.

Abolition of compulsory Church Rates, 1868.

The Irish Church Act, 1869, disestablished and disendowed the Irish church.

The Irish Land Act, 1870, gave facilities for Irish tenants to purchase their holdings, and also compensation for eviction and improvements; gave landlords inducement to occupy waste lands, and compensation for damages done by tenants.

The Elementary Education Act, 1870: ordered school boards to be formed to build and manage rate-supported schools where there was no adequate accommodation; a conscience clause exempted all whose parents objected from religious instruction; no catechism or dogmatic formulary was to be used; schools could earn a grant from parliament not exceeding 15s., afterwards raised to 17s. 6d., for each child, or the amount of income voluntarily raised.

Abolition of religious tests at Oxford and Cambridge, 1871.

The Ballot Act, 1872, made voting secret to discourage bribery and intimidation.

A Supreme Court of Judicature established, 1873, to hear appeals from the Queen's Bench, Common Pleas, and Court of Chancery.

Irish Education Bill, 1873, proposed to set up a great university at Dublin, from which the teaching of theology and moral philosophy should be excluded; it was thrown out.

Public Worship Regulation Act, 1874, enabled aggrieved parishioners to invoke the interference of the bishop against the clergy, and the bishop to take action in case of ritualistic practices.

Merchant Seamen's Act, 1875, protected merchant seamen against the carelessness and selfishness of many shipowners.

Artisans' Dwellings Act, 1875, enabled local authorities to pull down houses unfit for human habitation and rebuild on the sites.

Treaty of Berlin, 1878: Roumania, Servia, and Montenegro were made independent states; Bulgaria, north of the Balkans, became a tributary principality; south of the Balkans Eastern Roumelia was left partly subject to the Porte; the boundary of Greece was rectified; Russia received Ardahan, Kara, Batoum, and Bessarabia; Austria took Bosnia and Herzegovina.

The Irish Land Act, 1881, established a commission to fix rents for fifteen years in advance, thereby largely reducing them.

Franchise Bill, 1884, extended the franchise to agricultural labourers; the Lords insisted on its being accompanied by a **Redistribution Bill.**

Home Rule Bill, 1886, proposed (1) an Irish parliament in Dublin with no authority over foreign affairs, the army and navy, the customs; (2) Irish peers and members no longer to sit at Westminster except on Irish questions; (3) an executive responsible to the Irish parliament to have executive power in Ireland; (4) Ireland to contribute to imperial expenses.

INDEX

ABB

ABBEVILLE, 116, 144
Abdul-Medjid, 478
Abercrombie, General (George II.), 382 ;
 (George III.) 427
Aberdeen, 272
 —, Lord, 480, 488, 492
Abingdon, 267 *note*, 271
Abjuration oath, 340
Abraham, Heights of, 382
Abyssinia, war in, 507
Accursi, 93
Acce (Richard I.), 74 ; (George III.), 426 ;
 (William IV.), 477
Addison, Joseph, 359
Adeia, dau. of William I., 48 ; wife of John,
 72, 76
Adjournments, 252, 311 *note*
Administrative system (Henry I.), 57
Admiralty, Board of, 362 *note*
Adrian IV., 65, 69
Adrianople, Peace of, 466
Adullamites, the, 506
Adventurers, the, 313
Afghanistan, 494, 514
Agitators, the, 290
Aidan, 14
Aix-la-Chapelle, Peace of (Charles II.), 304 ;
 (George II.), 377
Akbar Khan, 495
 'Alabama,' the, 504
Albany, Duke of (Henry IV.), 140
Albemarle, George Monk, Duke of, 283, 298
Alberoni, Cardinal, 358, 359
Albert, Prince, 479 *note*, 503 *note*
Alexander I., of Russia, 437, 444 ; of Scotland,
 83
Alexander III., of Scotland, 93 ; Pope, 65
Alexandria, bombardment of, 514
Alfonso of Castille, 88
Alfred, son of Ethelred II., 29, 30
Alfred the Great, 18, 19-22
Algiers, war with, 451
Allen Act, 421
Alien Priors, 190
Allpore, 498
Almeida, 439, 441
America, civil war in, 503
American colonies, 392

ABT

American flag, 392 *note*
Amherst, General, 381
Amiens, Mise of, 90 ; Peace of, 427
Anderida, 8
Andover, 271
Andredsweald, 8
Anglesey, 2, 3, 95
Anglo-Saxons, system of, 11
Anjou, 50 *note*, 63, 64, 153 ; Duke of (Eliza-
 beth), 221
Anne (Queen), 325, 330, 332, 338, 342-353
Anne Boleyn, 186-190
Anne of Brittany, 172
Anselm, 63, 59, 66
Anson, Lord, 371, 377, 381
Anti-Bread Tax, 482
Anti-Corn-Law League, 482, 483
Antwerp, 114, 440, 447
 'Apology' of the Commons, 257
 'Appeal from the Old Whigs to the New,' 421
Appellants, 132
Appropriation of supplies, 303
Aquitaine, 62, 63, 79, 97, 118, 121, 122
Arabi Pasha, 514
Arbitrary arrest, 250
Arbitration, 504
Archers, 100 *note*, 117
Arcoot, 385, 387, 491, 495
Ardahan, 512
 'Areopagitica' of Milton, 270
Argyle, Earl of (Charles I.), 258-283 ; Duke
 of (James II.), 318 ; (William III.), 328,
 331, 356 ; (Victoria), 488, 502
Arkwright, 417
Arlington, Henry Bennett, Earl of, 303, 304,
 305
Armagnacs, the, 142, 146
Armed neutrality, 405, 427
Arminianism, 241, 245, 248
Arquebus, 143, 200
Arracan, 494
Art of war in Middle Ages, 19, 37, 100, 153 :
Arteveldt, Jacob von, 113, 115
Arthur of Brittany, 72, 77, 78
 — (son of Henry VII.), 170, 176
Articles of Perth, 242
 — of Religion, 202, 215
 — to establish Christian quietness, 190

ART

Articles, the 'Six,' 184
 — upon the charters, 101
 Arundel, 269
 —, Archbishop, 133, 140; Earl of (Richard II.), 132, 133; (Charles I.), 249
 Ashantee, war with the, 509
 Aske, Robert, 192
 Assassination Plot (Elizabeth), 318, 323; (Cromwell), 288; (William III.), 335
 Assembly of Divines, 268
 Assiento, 336, 352 note
 Assize of Arms, 71, 93, 144, 190
 — of Clarendon, 70
 — of Northampton, 71
 Association (Elizabeth), 323; (William III.), 335
 Athelney, 19, 21
 Attainder, 187 note, 159, 166, 170, 195, 260, 261 note, 273, 280, 355
 Atterbury, Bishop, 263
 Auckland, Lord, 494, 496
 Audley, Lord, 174
 Augustine, II
 Anus Plantius, 3
 Australia, 500
 Avice (wife of John), 78
 Aylesbury election, 343 note
 Ayscough, Bishop, 164

BABINGTON, Anthony, 324
 Bacon, Sir Francis, 228, 241, 244
 — Roger, 103
 Badajoz, 439, 441, 442
 Baillie, General, 273
 —, Robert, 268
 Balance of power, 180
 Baldwin of Flanders, 21
 Balfour, Arthur, 675
 —, General, 273
 Balliol, Edward, 113
 —, John, 96
 Ballols, the, 51
 Ball, John, 128
 Ballot, 481
 Balmerino, Lord, 376
 Bamborough Castle, 9, 119
 Banbury, 267
 Bangor, Monastery of, 6
 Bank of England, 334, 360, 375, 472
 Bantrey Bay, 229
 Barbary States, 451
 Barcelona, 245
 Bards, 2
 Barebone, 286
 Barneveldt (James I.), 241
 Baronetage, 243 note
 'Basilicon Doron,' 233
 Basing House, 267, 274
 Bastille, 419
 Bastwick, John, 260
 Bate, 239
 Bath, 272, 318
 Bath, Order of the, 141
 Batoum, 513
 Battles :—
 Aberdeen, 272
 Aboukir, 427
 Aclae, 18

BAT

Battles—continued
 Adwalton Moor, 267
 Agincourt, 144
 Albuera, 441
 Alford, 273
 Alma, 491
 Almanza, 348
 Almenara, 350
 Argaum, 427
 Arnee, 386
 Ashdown, 19
 Assandun, 26
 Assaye, 427
 Auerstadt, 435
 Anghran, 331
 Auldearn, 273
 Aunay, 121
 Austerlitz, 434
 Aylesford, 8
 Badbury, 9
 Balacava, 492
 Bannockburn, 108
 Barnet, 161
 Bautzen, 445
 Beachy Head (Naval), 330
 Beaugé, 147
 Beauvais, 81
 Belle Isle (Naval), 377
 Blackheath, 174
 Blenheim, 344
 Blore Heath, 167
 Borodino, 445
 Bosworth, 167
 Bothwell Brigg, 313
 Bovines, 81
 Boyne, 330
 Bramham Moor, 140
 Brandywine, 401
 Breeds Hill, 399
 Brenville, 55
 Brest (Naval), 422
 Brooklyn, 400
 Brunanburgh, 23
 Bunker's Hill, 399
 Busaco, 440
 Buttington, 21
 Camden, 405
 Camperdown (Naval), 423
 Cape Finisterre (Naval), 377
 Cape Passaro (Naval), 359
 Cape St. Vincent (Naval), (1790) 404, (1797) 423
 Castillon, 155
 Cheriton, 271
 Chillianwalla, 496
 Clifton, 376
 Copenhagen (Naval), 427
 Corbiesdale, 282
 Corunna, 438
 Cowpens, 405
 Cray, the, 8
 Crécy, 116
 Crevant, 148
 Cropredy Bridge, 271
 Culloden, 376
 Damietta, 427
 Dettingen, 373
 Donauworth, 344

BAT

Battles—continued
 Douro, 438
 Dresden, 445
 Dunbar, 98, 282
 Dundee, 273
 Dunes, 291; (Naval), 302
 Dupplin Moor, 108
 Durham, 10
 Durrunkota, 496
 Edgecote, 160
 Edgehill, 267
 Ethandun, 19
 Eutaw Springs, 405
 Evesham, 91
 Eylau, 435
 Faddley, 10
 Fair of Lincoln, 83
 Falkirk, 100, 376
 Flodden, 180
 Fontenoy, 374
 Formigny, 153
 Friedland, 435
 Fuentes d'Onoro, 441
 Fulford, 34
 Germantown, 401
 Gravelines (1st), 210; (2nd) (Naval), 226
 Great Meadows, 379
 Guildford, 405
 Guinnegette (or 'Spurs'), 179
 Halidon Hill, 113
 Hambledon Hill, 139
 Hastenbeck, 381
 Hatfield, 13
 Heavensfield, 13
 Hedgeley Moor, 159
 Heliopolis, 427
 Hengestdun, 18
 Herrings, 150
 Hexham, 159
 Hobenlinden, 426
 Inkerman, 492
 Inverlochy, 272
 Isandhlwana, 513
 Jena, 435
 Killiecrankie, 328
 Kilsyth, 275
 La Guardia, 349
 La Hogue (Naval), 333
 Landen, 334
 Langport, 273
 Langside, 217
 Laswarree, 427
 Laufeld, 377
 Leipzig, 445
 L'Espagnols-sur-Mer (Naval), 119
 Leuthen, 381
 Lewes, 90
 Ligny, 446
 Lincoln, 61
 Lose Coat Field, 160
 Lowestoft (Naval), 302
 Lutzen, 445
 Maïda, 436
 Majuba Hill, 514
 Malplaquet, 349
 Marengo, 426
 Marston Moor, 271
 Maserfeld, 14

BAT

Battles—continued
 Meeanee, 496
 Methven, 102
 Minden, 384
 Mitton, 109
 Molwitz, 371
 Moodkee, 496
 Mortimer's Cross, 158
 Naseby, 273
 Navarino (Naval), 466
 Navarrete, 121
 Neerwinden, 334
 Neville's Cross, 118
 Newbury (1st), 269, (2nd) 271
 Newton Butler, 329
 Nile, the (Naval), 425
 Nivelles, 443
 Norgau or Brenville, 55
 Northampton, 167
 Orthez, 444
 Otterbourne, 132
 Oudenarde, 348
 Pallitore, 410
 Patray, 151
 Pavia, 183
 Pentland Hills, 313
 Philliphaugh, 274
 Pinkiecleugh, 200
 Plassey, 386
 Pottiers, 119
 Porto Novo, 410
 Preston, 278, 356
 Prestonpans, 375
 Quatre Bras, 446
 Radcourt Bridge, 132
 Ramillies, 346
 Rocica, 457
 Rosbach, 381
 Roundway Down, 267
 Rowton Heath, 274
 St. Albans (1st), 156
 — (2nd), 158
 St. Aubyn, 172
 St. Mahé (Naval), 97
 St. Mary's Cyst, 201
 St. Quintin, 210
 Salamanca, 443
 Saragossa, 350
 Sedgemoor, 318
 Senlac or Hastings, 35-37
 Sheriffmuir, 356
 Shrewsbury, 140
 Sluys (Naval), 115
 Sobraon, 496
 Solway Moss, 196
 Southwold Bay (Naval), 306
 Spurs, 197
 Stamford Bridge, 34
 Standard, 60
 Steinkirk, 333
 Stirling, 160
 Stoke, 171
 Stow-in-the-Wold, 274
 Stratton, 267
 Superga, 346
 Taillebourg, 83
 Talavera, 459
 Tel-el-Kebr, 514

BAT

BBB

Battles—continued

- Tenchebrai, 55
 Tewkesbury, 163
 Texel (Naval), 303
 Tippermuir, 272
 Toulouse, 444
 Towton, 159
 Trafalgar (Naval), 433
 Ulundi, 513
 Verneuil, 148
 Vimiero, 437
 Vinegar Hill, 429
 Vittoria, 443
 Wagram, 433
 Wakefield, 157
 Waudewash, 387
 Wausborough, 10
 Warburg, 384
 Waterloo, 446-448
 Wimbledon, 9
 Winceby, 269
 Winnington Bridge, 293
 Winwari, 14
 Wippelsfleet, 8
 Worcester, 283
 Zealand (Naval), 306
 Zutphen, 223
 Bavaria, Elector of, 337, 342, 344
 Baylen, 436
 Beaconsfield, Benjamin Disraeli, Earl of, 483, 484, 488, 502-513
 Beaton, Cardinal, 196
 Beauchamp, Lord, 234
 Beaufort, Cardinal, 147-153
 Becket, Thomas, 64, 65-69
 Beckford, Lord Mayor, 398
 Bedchamber Question, 479
 Bede, 16, 21
 Bedford, Duke of (Henry VI.), 148-152;
 (George III.), 377, 391, 397, 398
 Begums of Oude, 410, 415
 Belgium, 420, 445, 450, 466, 476
 Bell, 417
 Belle Isle, 377, 390
 Benares, 410, 415
 Benedict, 33
 Benedictines, 57, 92
 Benefit of Clergy, 66
 Benevente, 437
 Bengal, 404
 Bentinck, Lord George, 434
 —, Lord William, 497
 Beorn, 31
 Berengaria, 74
 Beresford, General, 441, 442
 —, Lord, 428
 Bergen-op-Zoom, 446
 Berlin, Congress of, 512
 — Decrees, 435, 444
 —, Treaty of, *ib.*
 Bernicia, 10, 13, 14
 Bertha, wife of Ethelbert of Kent, 11
 Berwick, 98
 —, Duke of, 346, 348, 358
 —, Treaty of (Charles I.), 258
 Bhurtpore, 494
 Bigod, 51
 —, Earl of Norfolk, 99

- Bill of Rights, 329
 Billeting, 250
 Birmingham Riots, 483
 — Union, 467
 Bishops, 13, 26, 29, 215
 — in the ministry, 350
 —, the Seven, 321
 Bishops' Book, 193
 Bismarck, 504 *note*
 Black Death, 118, 128
 — Friday, 375
 — Hole of Calcutta, 386
 — Prince, 116, 119, 121, 125
 — Sea, 477
 Blackheath, 174
 Blair Castle, 328
 Blake, Robert, 273, 281, 284, 285, 289 *note*, 291
 Blakeney, General, 379
 Blanche of Castille, 83
 Blanchetaque, 116, 144
 Blanketeers, 453
 Blenheim, 344
 Bloody Circuit, 319
 — Tenet, 270
 Blücher, 446, 450
 Boacher, Joan, 200
 Boadicea, 3
 Board of Control, 414
 'Bobbies,' 467 *note*
 Bohemia, Anne of, 133
 —, King of, 117
 Bolan Pass, 495
 Boleyn, Anne, 185-190
 Bolingbroke, Henry St. John, Earl of, 344-370
 Bombay, 314, 409
 Bonaparte, Joseph, 436, 439, 443
 —, Napoleon, 423-460
 Boniface of Savoy, 87
 — VIII., Pope, 100
 Bonner, Bishop, 199, 201, 209
 Book of Martyrs, 211
 — Rates, 239
 — Sports, 254
 Bookland, 12
 Booth, Sir George, 293
 Bordeaux, 119, 122, 98
 Boscawen, Admiral, 381, 383
 Bosnia, 511
 Bosphorus, 478
 Boston, 396, 398, 399
 — Port Act, 399
 Bosworth, 167
 Bothwell, James Hepburn, Earl of, 215
 Boulogne, 197, 201, 431
 —, Eustace, Count of, 31, 39
 Bourbons, 445, 465
 Bourchier, Archbishop, 156
 Boyd, 404
 Braddock, General, 379
 Bradshaw, 297
 Brahmin, 497
 Brancaster, 5
 Breakspear, Nicholas, 65
 Breda, Declaration of, 295
 —, Treaty of, 302
 Breadalbane, Lord, 331
 Bremen, 357
 Brentford, storming of, 266

BRE

Brétigny, Peace of, 122, 142, 146
 Bretwalda, 16
 Bridgeman, Orlando, 298
 Bridgwater, 273, 318
 Bright, John, 482, 505-515
 Brihuega, 350
 Brill, 267
 Brindley, 417
 Bristol, 267, 273, 318, 468
 —, Lord, 345, 249
 Britain, early Christianity of, 6
 — — inhabitants, 1
 — mines, 4
 — nature of, 1
 — tribes of, 2
 Brittany, 422
 British and Foreign School Society, 474
 — Church, 11
 — Legion, 477
 — Museum, 378
 — — Reading Room, 502 *note*
 Broad Bottom Administration, 377
 Broadfoot, Captain, 495
 Broadhead, 567
 Bromhead, Lieutenant, 513
 Brooke, George, 235
 Brooklyn, 400
 Brougham, Lord, 458, 467
 Brownists, 220, 237, 247
 Bruce, David, *12, 113, 118
 — Edward, 109
 — Isabella, 109
 — Nigel, 102
 — Robert (King of Scotland), 102-112
 — — the Elder, 96
 Bruces, the, 51
 Bruges, 113
 —, Congress of, 123
 Brunswick, Duke of (George II.), 381, 884
 — — (George III.), 419
 Brydon, Dr., 495
 Brythona, 1 *note*
 Bucer, 200
 Buckingham, Duke of (Richard III.), 164,
 166; (Henry VIII.), 182; (Charles I.), 243,
 250; (Charles II.), 304, 305-308
 Buenos Ayres, 436 *note*
 Bulgaria, outrages in, 511
 Bulmer, Lady, 192
 Bulwer Lytton, 476
 Burghley, Sir W. Cecil, Lord, 212-229
 Burghley House, 269
 Burgos, 437, 443
 Burgoyne, General, 399, 401
 Burke, Edmund, 394, 399, 400, 403, 406-428
 —, Mr., 514
 Burmah, 494, 496, 497
 Burnes, Alexander, 494, 495
 Burnet, Bishop, 323, 323, 327, 328
 Burnt Candlemas, 119
 Burrard, Sir H., 437
 Burton, Henry, 260
 Bute, John Stuart, Earl of, 389, 391
 Butler, Captain, 491
 Byng, Admiral (Anne), 348, 358; (George
 II.), 379, 380; (George III.), 404
 CABAL, 305, 307
 Cabinet, 363 *note*

CAT

Cabot, 178
 Cabul, 494, 495, 512
 Cadiz, expedition to, 249
 Cadwallon, 13
 Cædmon, 16
 Cæsar Caradoc, 3
 Caermarthen, Sir T. Osborne, Earl of (*see*
 Danby), 334
 Cæsar, 1, 2
 Cairns, Lord, 509
 Calais, 117, 201, 210
 Calcutta, 385
 Calendar, reform of, 378
 Calvinism, 223, 230, 241
 Cambrai, Siege of, 114; Peace of, 185
 Cambridge, Richard, Earl of (Henry V.),
 143
 —, Duke of (son of George III.), 457
 — and Oxford, 178
 Camden (Pratt), Lord, 391, 397
 Cameron of Lochiel, 374
 Camulodunum, 3
 Campbell, Sir G. C., 498
 Campbells, the, 272, 316, 328, 331
 Campeggio, 185
 Camperdown (Duncan) Lord, 423
 Campion, 222
 Campo Formio, Treaty of, 424, 426 *note*
 Canada, 379, 382-384, 393, 470, 475, 49
 —, Dominion of, 479 *note*
 Canals, 417
 Candahar, 494, 495, 512
 Canning, George, 432, 431 465 4
 —, Lord, 496, 497
 Cannon, 143
 Canons for the Clergy (1604), 256,
 Canterbury, 7, 11, 14, 18, 68, 7
 'Canterbury Tales,' 126
 Canute, 27, 28
 Cape Breton, 374, 375, 381
 Cape of Good Hope, 406, 422, 436, 500
 Capel, Lord, 277, 280
 Caractacus, 3
 Carow, Sir T., 206
 Carisbrooke Castle, 277
 Carleton, General, 401
 Carlos, Don, 477
 Carnarvon, Lord, 505, 509, 512
 Carnatic, 385, 387, 409, 410
 Caroline of Anspach, 366, 370
 — of Brunswick, 416, 457
 Carrickfergus, 329, 330
 Carteret (Commonwealth), 284
 Carthage, 371
 Carthagenæ, 371
 Cartwright, John, 219
 Cartwright (inventor), 417
 Carucage, 76, 85
 Cash payments, 452
 Cassivelaunus, 2
 Castlebar Races, 429
 Castlereagh, Lord, 432, 434, 440-458
 Câteau Cambresis, Peace of, 213
 Catechism, 199, 265 *note*
 Catesby, Robert, 237
 Catherine of Aragon, 172
 — of Braganza, 300
 Catholic Association, 462, 464
 — disabilities, 462

CAT

COL

Catholic Emancipation, 428, 432, 462, 466
 — Relief Act, 463
 Cato Street Conspiracy, 456
 Cauchon, Bishop of Beauvais, 152
 Cavagnari, 512
 Cavaliers, 264
 Cavendish, Lord F., 514
 Cavendishes, the, 193 *note*, 389
 Cawnpore, 498
 Caxton, 178
 Ceawlin, 10
 Cecils, the, 193 *note*
 Celtic Church, 14
 Ceoria, 12, 26
 Ceceways, 513
 Ceylon, 411, 422
 Chalgrove Field, 266
 Chalmers, Dr., 499
 Chamberlain, Joseph, 513, 516
 Chambers, Richard, 253
 Chancellor, 58
 Chandernagore, 386, 410
 Chapel of Henry VII., 177
 Chapter of Mitton, 109
 Chard, Lieutenant, 513
 Charles, Archduke, 337, 339
 — the Bold, 18, 160
 Charles I., 245, 246, 248-280
 Charles II., 278, 282, 283, 288, 291, 294, 297-316
 — of Spain, 337
 Charles III of Spain, 344, 371
 Charles IV. of France, 111
 — of Spain, 436
 Charles V., Emperor, 182, 197
 — of France, 121
 Charles VI. of France, 142, 158
 —, Emperor, 351, 371
 Charles VII of France, 148, 152
 —, Emperor, 371, 374
 Charles X. of France, 466
 Charles XII. of Sweden, 358
 Charles Edward (Young Pretender), 363, 373-376
 Charleston, 400, 406
 Charlotte, Princess, 457, 477
 Charter (Henry I.), 53; (Stephen), 59
 —, People's, 481
 Charterhouse, 186, 189
 Charters, confirmation of, 99; articles upon, 101
 Chartism, 481, 482, 486
 Château Gaillard, 78
 Chatbam, William Pitt, Earl of, 369-402, 465
 —, Earl of, son of above, 440
 Chancer, Geoffrey, 126
 Chelmsford, Lord, 513
 Cherbourg, 153, 333, 382
 Chesapeake River, 401, 406
 Chester, 40
 —, Hugh of, 49
 Chesterfield, Lord, 368, 369, 377
 Cheyte Sing, 410
 Chillingworth, 270
 China, wars with, 499
 Chensura, 387
 Chits, the, 311

Cholera, 469 *note*
 Christ Church, 186, 271
 Christian brotherhood, 187
 Christianity, effects of, 13, 15
 Christina of Spain, 477
 Chronicle, the English, 21
 Church Act (Ireland), 470
 — building (Anne), 350
 — rates, 476, 489, 503
 —, Roman, 6; character of National, 14, 15
 'Church of England,' 15
 Cider Act, 391
 Cinque Ports, 83, 97, 115 *note*, 431 *note*
 Cintra, Convention of, 437
 'Circumspecte Agatis,' 94
 Cisteriana, 57, 75, 78, 92
 Ciudad Rodrigo, 439, 440, 442
 Civil War, 1st Period, 266-270; 2nd Period, 270-272; 3rd Period, 272-276
 Claim of Right (England), 327
 — (Scotch), 347
 Clare, FitzGibbon, Earl of, 428
 — Richard de (Strongbow), 69, 70
 Clarence, George, Duke of, 160, 163
 — Lionel, Duke of, 121, 131
 — William, Duke of (afterwards William IV.), 457
 Clarendon, Edward Hyde, Earl of, 262, 303; (Charles II.), 298-303, 307; (James II.), 329
 — Code, 301
 Clarkson, 415, 471
 Classical learning, 178
 'Clemency Canning,' 498
 Clergy, Regular and Secular, 96
 —, upper, wealth of, 488
 'Clericis Laicos,' 99
 Clerkenwell explosion, 507
 Clevel, Anne of, 196
 Clifford, Lord (Henry VI.), 102; (Charles II.), 304-307
 —, Rosemond, 70
 Clifforia, the, 217
 Clifton, Mr., 347
 Clinton, General, 400-406
 Cito, William, 55
 Clive, Robert, 388, 387, 409, 491, 495
 Clontarf, 484
 C. osterseven, Convention of, 381
 Cloth of Gold, 182
 Clothworkers in Pembrokeshire, 56
 Co-operation, 508
 Cobden, Richard, 482, 483 *note*, 502, 504
 Cobham, Lord, 235, 368
 Code, Clarendon, 302
 —, Criminal, 459
 —, Education, 508
 Coleridge, Sir E., 446
 Coercion Act, 470, 513, 514, 516
 'Cogge Thomas,' 119
 Coinage Act, 336
 Coke, Lord Chief Justice, 241
 Colchester, 3, 9, 278
 Coldstream Guards, 298
 Coleman, 309
 Colet, 184
 Colley, General, 514
 Collingwood, Admiral, 433
 Colonies (Charles II.), 314

COL

Columbus, 178
 Combination Act, 460, 461 *note*
 Commendation, 20, 29 *note*
 Commissions of Array, 58 *note*
 Committee of Both Kingdoms, 370, 377
 — of Safety, 277
 Common Pleas, 71
 'Common Sense,' 401
 Commonalty of England, 86
 Commons, House of, 82, 115 *note*, 139
 Compound Householders, 505
 Compton Bishop, 320
 'Comus' of Milton, 264
 Comyn, John, 102
 Concord, 399
 Condé, Prince de, 206
 Confederation of the Rhine, 434
 Confession of Augsburg, 190
 Connaught, 281, 284
 Cope, Sir J., 375
 Copenhagen Fields, 423
 Confirmatio Cartarum, 99, 239, 250, 255
 Congé d'Elire, 79, 189
 Conjeveram, 386
 Conservatives, 470
 Conspiracy to Murder Bill, 501
 Constabulary, Royal Irish, 467 *note*
 Constance, daughter of William I., 48
 Constitutional Association, 421
 Constitutions of Clarendon, 67
 Contract, the Great, 239
 Conventicle Act (1), 301; (2), 305
 Convention (1689), 324
 Convention (French), 430
 Convention Parliament (1660), 295
 Convocation, 187, 470
 Conway, General, 392, 406
 Corn Law (1815), 453, 458
 Corn Laws, Repeal of, 484
 Cornbury, Lord, 323
 Cornish revolt, 174, 201
 Cornwallis, Lord, 400, 405, 414, 429
 Coromandel, 426
 Coroners, 76
 Corporation Act, 299, 367; repealed, 464
 Corporations, 317, 321
 Corresponding Society, 481
 Corsica, 396, 423
 Corunna, 438
 Cotton, Sir R., 378
 Cotton Family, the 603, 259
 Council, the Great, 57
 — of the North, 192, 260
 — of Wales, 260
 Count of Britain, 5
 — of the Saxon Shore, 5
 Country Party, 308
 County Government, 316
 Court of Wards, 298
 Courtenay, Sir W., Earl of Devon, 170
 —, Edward, Marquis of Exeter, 194
 —, Edward, Earl of Devon, 204
 Covenant, the, 277
 Covent Garden, 470
 Coverdale, 190
 Cowey Stakes, 2
 Cowper, Lord, 354
 Craftsman, 368

DEL

Cranbrook, Mr. Hardy, Lord, 510
 Cranmer, 188-309
 Cressingham, Hugh, 100
 Crimean War, 490-494
 Criminal Code 409
 Crofts, Sir T., 306
 Crompton, 417
 Cromwell, Henry, 293
 —, Oliver, 271-293, 297, 349
 —, Richard, 293
 —, Thomas, 186-196
 Cross, Lord, 509 *note*
 Crown Point, 399
 Crusade, the First, 50; Second, 74
 Cuesta, 439
 Cumberland, Duke of (son of George II.),
 374, 375, 381
 —, Duke of (brother of George III.), 398 *note*
 —, Duke of (son of George III.), 457
 Curia Regis, 57, 58
 Customs, 367, 418
 — Bill, 484
 Cuthbert, 16
 Cyprus, 74, 75, 512

 DACRE, Lord, 180
 Dalhousie, Lord, 496, 497
 Dalrymple, Sir T., 351, 332
 Damascus, 477
 Damietta, 427
 Danby, T. Osborne, Earl of, 307, 309, 319, 322,
 324, 326, 327
 Danegeld, 27, 45, 51, 53, 66, 76
 Danclaw, 19, 23
 Danae, 18, 19, 21, 26, 288, 427
 Danton, 420
 Dardanelles, 477, 478, 490
 Darien, Isthmus of, 338 *note*
 Darnley, Henry Stuart, Earl of, 216
 Dartmouth, 269
 Davies, Thomas, 484
 David I. of Scotland, 60
 — II. of Scotland, 70
 —, brother of Llewellyn, 95
 Deccan, 427
 Declaration of Breda, 295, 297, 323
 — of Independence, 401
 — of Indulgence, 306, 307, 313
 — of Paris, 493
 — of Right, 324
 — of Right (America), 401
 — of the Rights of Man, 419
 — of Sports, 242
 Declaratory Act, 394
 Decree of Defiance, 420, 421
 De Donis Conditionalibus, 94
 De Facto Act, 174, 297
 De Lacy, Hugh, 51, 70
 De Lucy, Richard, 70
 De la Pole, Richard, 182
 De Religious Act, 94, 98
 De Tallagio non Concedendo, 104, 115, 255
 De Witt, John, 302
 Defender of the Faith, 184
 Defoe, 344
 Delra, 9, 10, 13, 14
 Delamere, Lord, 323

DEL

- Delaware, Lord, 242
 Delhi, 427, 494, 497
 Delinquents, 287
 Demesne, 63
 Denmark, 405
 Derby, Edward Stanley, Earl of (Richard IV.), 167, 170; (William IV. and Victoria), 467, 484, 488, 502; (Victoria), 509, 512
 Derwentwater, Lord, 355, 386
 Despenser, Hugh (elder), 109, 110, 111; Hugh (younger), 109, 110, 111
 'Devil's Own,' 431
 Devon, Edward Courtenay, Earl of, 204, 205
 —, W. Courtenay, Earl of, 170
 Devonshire, Duke of (James II.), 322; (George II.), 377, 380
 Dhnleep Sing, 486
 Dialogus de Scaccario, 72
 'Dieu et mon Droit,' 115
 Digby, Lord, 262
 Diggers, the, 280
 Digges, Sir Dudley, 260
 Directorate, 424, 426
 Disarming Act, 365, 376
 Dispensing power, 324
 Dissenters, 303, 304, 307, 321, 327, 508
 Dissolution, 311 *note*
 Dolly's Brae, 486
 Domestay Book, 45, 58, 93
 Dominica, 396
 Dominicans, 92
 Don Carlos, 367, 372
 Don Pacifico, 489
 Dorset, Gray, Earl of, 164, 171
 Dost Mohammed, 494, 495
 Douglas, Lord James, 108, 139
 Douro, 438
 Dover, Treaty of, 304
 Drake, Francis, 224, 225
 Drapier Letters, 364, 461
 Dresden, Treaty of, 374
 Drogheda, 281
 Druids, 2
 Drunken Administration, 373
 Drunkenness (James I.), 234, 368, 373
 Drury Lane, 470
 Dryden, 285
 Dudley, Edmund, 176
 —, Lord Gulliford, 202
 Dudleys, the, 193 *note*
 'Duke of Britain,' 6
 Duncan, Admiral, 423
 Dundee, 273
 —, James Grahame of Claverhouse, Earl of, 313, 328
 Dungannon, Meeting of, 406
 Dunkeld, 328
 Dunkirk, 290, 291, 300, 351 *note*, 422
 Dunmore, Lord, 400
 Dunning, 456
 Dunstan, 24, 25
 Dupleix, 385, 386
 Dupont, General, 426
 'Durante Placito,' 339
 Durham, 10
 — Lord, 479
 Dutch, 221, 223, 288, 300, 302, 304, 406
 — War (1), 302; (2), 308

ELI

- EALDORMEN, 13, 24
 East India Company, 237, 385, 472, 499
 Easter, dispute about, 6
 Eastern Association, 267, 269, 275
 Ecclesiastical Commission, 320, 326
 — Courts, 489
 — Titles Bill, 487, 509
 'Ecclesiastical Polity,' 219 *note*
 Economic Reform, 408, 407
 Edbert of Northumbria, 16
 Edgar, grandson of Edmund Ironside, 27, 39, 40, 50
 —, son of Edmund Ironside, 32
 —, son of Malcolm III., 51
 — 'the Peaceful,' 25
 Edict of Nantes, 319
 Edinburgh, 13
 Edith, daughter of Godwine, 31
 —, great-granddaughter of Edmund Ironside (otherwise Maud), 53
 —, wife of Harold, 32
 Edmund, brother of Ethelstan, 23
 — 'Ironside,' 27, 28
 — of East Anglia, 19
 — Rich, 87
 Edred, 'Cæsar of Britain,' 24
 Edric, 27, 28
 Education Grant, 474, 508
 Education, Free, 508, 516
 Edward I., 90, 105
 — II., 102, 106, 112
 — III., 112, 113, 126, 430
 — IV., 157, 168, 169, 163
 — V., 164, 166
 — VI., 197, 198, 203
 — 'Confessor,' 30, 32, 92
 —, son of Alfred, 'the Unconquerer,' 21, 27
 —, son of Henry VI., 156, 162
 — 'the Martyr,' 26
 Edwine of Northumbria, 11, 13
 —, son of Leofric, 32, 35, 38, 39, 42
 Edwy, brother of Edmund Ironside, 28
 —, nephew of Ethelstan, 25
 Egbert, Archbishop, 16
 —, King of Wessex and of the English, 16
 Egypt, 425, 514
 'Eikon Basiliæ,' 279
 Ejectment Act, 463
 Elba, 445
 Eleanor (of Castille), wife of Edward I., 88, 96
 — (of Castille), sister of John, 78
 — (of Guienne), wife of Henry II., 62, 64, 70, 71, 77, 78
 — (of Toulouse), wife of Henry III., 87
 — sister of Henry III., wife of Simon de Montfort, 89
 Elcho, Lord, 272
 Eldon, Lord, 432, 463
 Eldred, Archbishop of York, 32, 37, 41
 Elementary Education Act, 508
 Elfhæth, Archbishop, 37
 Elfhreth, daughter of Alfred, 21
 Elliot, Sir J., 249, 250, 292
 Elizabeth, 189, 197, 202, 203, 204, 205, 211-230
 —, daughter of Edward IV., wife of Henry VII., 171
 — of Bohemia, daughter of James I., 233, 266, 338

ELL

Ellenborough, Lord, 496
 Elmet, Forest of, 13
 Ely, Revolt of, 42
 Emigration, 499
 Emma, wife of Ethelred II., 29
 Emmett, Robert, 432 *note*
 'Empress of India,' 511
 Empson, Sir T., 179
 Enclosures of Land, 424
 Endowed Schools Bill, 507
 Engagement, 277
 Engagers, 278, 279, 282
 Engles, 9
 Englishry, 41
 Enniskillen, 328
 'Enterprise' sloop, 399
 Eorls, 12, 28, 38
 Episcopacy, 270, 274, 298
 Episcopalians, 230
 Erasmus, 184, 189
 Erastiana, 268
 Erfurt, Peace of, 437
 Eric, Bloodaxe, 23
 Ermine Street, 5 *note*, 24
 Erpingham, Sir T., 144
 Erskine, 404
 'Essay on Man,' 392
 'Essay on Woman,' 392
 Essex, Arthur Capel, Earl of (Charles II.), 312, 314
 —, Earl of (Charles I.), 266, 371, 273
 —, Robert Devereux, Earl of (Elizabeth), 226
 Et Cetera Oath, 259
 Etapes, Treaty of, 173
 Ethandun, 19
 Ethelbald, 18
 Ethelbert of Kent, 9, 10, 20
 —, son of Ethelwulf, 18
 Ethelfaed, daughter of Alfred, Lady of the Mercians, 21
 Ethelrith of Northumbria, 10
 Etheling, 30, 53 *note*
 Ethelred, Ealdorman of Mercia, 21
 — I., 18, 19
 — II., 'the Unredig,' 26, 27, 28
 Ethelstan, 18
 — I., 'the Glorious,' 22
 Ethelwulf, son of Egburt, 18
 Eton, 191
 Eugène, Prince, 344, 346, 351
 Euphuism, 328
 Eustace of Boulogne, 31, 39
 Evans, Sir de Lacy, 477
 Exeolse, 268, 298, 418
 — Bill, 367
 Exclusion Bill, 310, 311, 317
 Excommunication, 68, 79
 Exeter, Edward Courtenay, Marquis of (grandson of Edward IV.), 194
 —, Siege of, 39
 Exit Tyrannus, 295
 Exmouth, Lord, 451
 Eyre Coote, 410

 'FAIRIE QUEENS,' 228
 Fairfax, 371-381
 Falkland, Lord, 262

FRE

Family Compact, 379, 390
 Famine in Ireland (1845), 484; (1846), 485
 Scotch (1846), 485
 Fancy Franchises, 505
 Fastolph, Sir J., 150
 Faversham, Lord, 323
 Felton, 252
 Ferdinand I. of Spain, 175, 179, 181
 — VI. of Spain (George III.), 436, 465, 477
 Ferrar, Nicholas, 255
 — (Martyr), 208
 Ferrybridge, Skirmish of, 159
 Feudal burdens, 47, 52, 53, 236,
 Feudalism and feudal system, 46, 47
 Fire of London, 302
 Fisher, Bishop, 184, 186, 188, 189
 Fitzgerald, Lord Edward, 429
 Fitzherbert, Mrs., 416, 464
 Fitz-Osbert, 76
 Fitz Osborn, 38, 39
 Fitz-Peter, Geoffrey, 76
 Fitzwilliam, Earl, 428
 Five Members, 264
 Five Mile Act, 301
 Flagellants, 118
 Flambar, Ralph, 51, 52, 53, 59
 Flammock, Thomas, 174
 Flanders, 21, 93, 99, 113, 160, 204, 303, 308
 Fleetwood, 292
 Fleury, 365
 Flint, 96
 Flogging in Army abolished, 510
 Florida, 393, 405
 Floyd, 244
 Folkland, 12
 Forced loans, 250
 Forest Courts, 59, 82
 — Laws, 43, 44, 51, 54, 85
 Foresta, survey of, 253
 Forster, Mr. (George I.), 355, 356; (Victoria), 508, 513, 514
 Fort Augustus, 375
 — David, 368, 367
 — Duquesne, 379, 385
 — Mahé, 410
 — St. George, 385
 — William, 328, 385
 Fosse Way, 5 *note*, 22
 Fotheringay, 224
 Fougères, 153
 Fox, Bishop (Henry VII.), 170
 —, Charles James, 398 and *note*, 400, 406-434
 —, Henry (Lord Holland), 378, 390, 381, 390
 Foxe's 'Martyrs,' 412
 Francis I., 182, 185, 187
 Francis (husband of Mary Queen of Scots), 214
 — of Lorraine, Emperor, 374
 —, Sir Philip, 396
 Franciscans, 92, 103
 Fraternity of St. George, 174
 Frederick, Elector Palatine, 239
 — Prince of Wales, 378, 379-390
 — the Great, 371-390
 Free Kirk, 489
 — Trade, 413, 487, 489, 483
 French Revolution (1789), 417, 481; (1890), 466; (1848), 486

FRE

Frere, Sir Bartle, 513
 Friars, 92, 134
 'Friends of the People,' 430
 Frithgilda, 23
 Frobisher, 324
 Frost, 483
 Fulk of Anjou, 50 *note*, 55
 Fuller (Church historian), 270
 Fuller's Plot, 332
 Fulton, 469
 Fundy, Bay of, 379
 Fyrd, 12 and *note*, 19 *note*, 20, 35, 47, 51, 71,
 72, 95

GAGE, GENERAL, 399, 400
 Gainsborough, 269
 Galgacus, 4
 Galway, Lord, 348, 349
 Gardiner, Bishop, 188, 199-210
 Garibaldi, 503 *note*
 Garter, Order of, 118
 Gas, 417
 Gascogne, Lord Chief Justice, 141 *note*
 Gascony, 85, 88, 89, 111, 116, 155
 Gates, General, 401
 Gaunt, Elizabeth, 319
 —, John of, *see* Lancaster
 Gavan Duffy, 484
 Gaveston, Piers, 107
 Gemot, 12
 General warrants, 391, 392
 'Geneva of Lancashire,' 268
 Genoese bowmen, 117
 Geoffrey, Archbishop of York (son of Henry
 II.), 70, 74
 — of Anjou, 50, 56, 61
 — of Monmouth, 54
 —, son of Henry II., 70, 77
 George I., 240, 353, 356
 — II., 357, 360, 366, 384, 388
 — III., 389-457; insanity of, 416
 — IV., 416 and *note*, 441 *note*, 467-468
 — of Denmark, 323
 Gerald of Wales, 72
 Germanus, 6
 Ghent, 113
 —, John of, *see* Lancaster
 —, Treaty of, 444
 Ghoorkaa, 494
 Ghuznee, 495
 Gibraltar, 344, 345, 351, 365, 366, 404
 Gilbert de Clare, 56
 —, Sir Humphrey, 224
 Ginkell, General, 331
 Gisors, Peace of, 55, 57
 Gladstone, W. E., 483 *note*, 484 *note*, 488-
 517
 Glanville, Ralph, 75
 Glencoe, 331
 Glendower, Owen, 138
 Gloucester, Duke of (Anne), 338
 —, — (brother of George III.), 398
 —, Gilbert de Clare, Earl of, 57
 —, Humphrey, Duke of, 145, 147-153
 —, Richard de Clare, Earl of, 90
 —, Robert, Earl of (Henry I.), 56, 59
 —, Siege of, 269; Statutes of, 93

GYR

Goderich, Robinson, Lord, 458, 463
 Godfrey, Sir Edmund Bury, 309
 Godolphin, 317, 334, 342-351, 415
 Godwine, 29-31
 Goldela, 1 *note*
 'Golden Hind,' 224
 Gondomar, 243
 Goodman, Bishop, 254
 Gordon, Catherine (wife of Perkin Warbeck),
 174
 —, General, 514
 —, Lord George, 403, 404
 — Riots, 403, 487
 Goree, 403
 Goring, 265, 273; (Earl of Norwich), 278, 280
 Goschen, Mr., 515
 Gough, Sir H., 496
 Grace, Act of (William III.), 330; (Anne),
 358
 Grafton, Duke of (James II.), 323; (George
 III.), 392, 398
 Graham, Sir J., 441 *note*
 Graham's Dyke, 4
 Grammont, Duke of, 373
 Granby, Marquis of, 384, 397, 398
 Grand Bill, 207
 — Jury, 69
 Grandees, 389-390
 Grantham, 269
 Granville, Carteret, Earl (George II.), 364,
 369, 372, 377; (Victoria), 488, 502, 503
 Grattan, 406, 430
 Gravelines, Siege of, 291
 Gravina, 433
 Gray, Catherine, 168, 216
 —, Elizabeth, wife of Edward IV., 160, 168
 —, John de, 79
 —, Lady Jane, 168, 182, 203, 206
 —, Sir John de, 160
 —, Sir Richard, 164
 'Great Eastern,' the, 502 *note*
 Great Exhibition, 1851, 489
 Greece, 465, 489
 Greek Church, 490
 Greene, 229
 Greenwich Observatory, 316
 Gregory IX., 86
 — XI., Pope, 123
 Grenville, George, 377, 390-398, 432, 434
 —, Sir John, 267, 296
 Grey, *see* Gray
 — de Wilton, Lord, 222 *note*
 —, Earl, 467
 —, Sir Thomas, 143
 Greyfriars Church, 258
 Griffith of Wales, 32
 Grindal, Archbishop, 219
 Guadeloupe, 382
 Guienne, 97, 98, 119, 153, 158
 Guilds, 199
 Guisnes, 210
 Gunpowder, 178
 — Plot, 237
 Gurney, Mr., 469
 Guthrum, 19
 Guy Fawkes, 237
 Gwalior, 410, 496, 498
 Gyth, 32, 35, 36

HAA

HAARLEM, HEIGHTS OF, 401
Habeas Corpus Act, 310, 315, 373
Hadrian, 4
 'Hairbrained Politicians', 216, 251
Hakluyt, 228
Hales, Sir E., 320
Halifax, 378
 —, **George Savile, Earl of**, 311, 317, 324, 326, 327, 332
Hall, General, 399
Hamilton, Marquis and Duke of, 257, 278, 280
Hampden, John, 255, 267
Hampton Court, 277, 284
 — — **Conference**, 235
Handel Festival, 502 *note*
Hanover, 355, 364, 366, 372, 431, 478
 —, **Treaty of**, 365, 372
Harald, 30
Hardicanute, 30
Hardinge, Sir H., 496
Hardrada, 34, 35
Harleur, 143
Hargreaves, 417
Harlech Castle, 275
Harold, 31, 33, 34-36; (sons of), 39
Harrington, 367
Harris, General, 426
Harrowby, Lord, 432
Hartington, Lord, 510, 513, 519
Haselrig, 264
Hastings, John, 96
 —, **Lord**, 124
 —, **Warren**, 409, 416
Hatfield, 13
Haughton Prior, 189
Havannah, 390
Havelock, 498
Hawkins, John, 223
Hawley, General, 376
Heathfield, Eliot, Lord, 404
Heligoland, 436 *note*
Hengist and Horsa, 8
Henrietta Maria (wife of Charles I.), 246
Henrietta (sister of Charles II.), 304
Henry of Huntingdon, 60; of **Trastamare**, 121; of **Winchester**, 60, 66
Henry I., 53-59
 — **II.**, 61, 63-73, 285
 — **III.**, 83, 85-93
 — **IV.**, 181, 134, 135, 136-141
 — — of **France**, 226, 241 and *note*
 — **V.**, 141-148
 — **VI.**, 148-158
 — **VII.**, 162, 166, 167, 169-178
 — **VIII.**, 178-198
 — **Emperor**, 74
 — (son of **Henry II.**), 70
 — (son of **James I.**), 239
Heraclitus, 494
Herbert, George, 255
 — **Lord**, 265
 — **Sidney**, 493, 502
Hereward the Wake, 42
Hertford, Earl of, 267
Hervey ('Meditations'), 388
Herzegovina, 511
Hibernians, 1 *note*

IND

Hicks, General, 514
High Church, 251, 327, 338
 — **Commission Court**, 220, 239, 251, 263
Highland regiments, 380
Highlanders, 328, 331, 383
Hildebrand, 33, 41, 52, 124
Hill, Abigail, 348, 353
 —, **General**, 442
Hindoos, 497
History of the World, 228
Histriomastix, 264
Hohenlinden, 426
Holland, 455, 466, 476
 —, **Henry Fox, Lord**, 380, 381, 390
 —, **Lord**, 279
Holles, 252, 264
Holmby House, 276
Holy Alliance, 465
 — **League**, 179
Home Rule, 513, 515, 516
Hone, 453
Honorius, Pope, 96
Hood, Admiral, 422
Hooker, Richard, 219 *note*
Hooper, Bishop, 200, 205, 208
Hopton, Sir Ralph, 267, 271
Horne Tooke, 431 *note*
Hospitallers, 107
Hotham, 265
Howard, Sir Edward, 179; **Edmund**, 180;
Catherine, 196
 —, **Lord, of Kiffingham**, 225
 — — (**Charles II.**), 512
Howe, Admiral, 400, 422
 —, **General**, 399, 400, 401
Hubert de Burgh, 84-87
 —, **Walter**, 76-78
Hugh of Chester, 49
 — of **Puiset**, 74
 — **de Lacy**, 69
 — of **Lincoln**, 76
Huguenots, 214 *note*, 217, 226, 249, 290
Hull, 265, 267, 269
Hundred, 12
Huntingdon, Henry, Earl of, 60, 64
Hurst Castle, 279
Huskisson, 458, 469
Huss, John, 148
Hutton, 420
Hyde Park riots, 505
Hyder Ali, 409, 410, 411, 426
Hyderabad, 496

IBRAHIM PASHA, 477, 478
 'Ich Dien', 117 *note*
 'Iconoclasts', 279
Iden, Alexander, 154
Ignatius Loyola, 222
Impeachments, 131, 244, 246 *note*, 261 *note*, 272, 303, 415
Impey, Sir Elijah, 409, 411
Impositions, 228, 239, 240
Impressment Act, 402 *note*
Indemnity Act (Charles V.) 297; (**George II.**), 376
 — **Bill (William III.)**, 329

IND

- Independents, 220, 230, 262, 268 *note*, 273
passim to 316
 India Bill (of Chatham) 395, (of Fox) 411
 — Act of Pitt, 414
 Indulgence, Declaration of (Charles II.), 306,
 307, 313; (James II.), 321
 Ine (of Wessex), 15, 16, 23
 Informers, 301
 Innocent III., 76, 83, 124
 Inquisition, 234, 290
 'Institution of a Christian Man,' 193
 Instrument of Government, 287
 Insurrection Act, 429
 Intercursus Magnus, 174
 — Malus, 176
 Interdict, 68, 79
 'Interpreter,' the, 239
 Investiture, 41, 56, 65
 Invincible Armada, 225 *note*
 Iona, 14
 Ireland, 9, 14, 18, 56
 — (Charles I.) 256, 268
 — (Charles II.), 313
 — (Civil Wars), 272
 — (Commonwealth), 281
 — (Elizabeth), 222 *note*, 227, 242
 — (George III.), 428
 — (George IV.), 462
 — (Henry II.), 69
 — (Henry VII.), 170
 — (Henry VIII.), 190, 196
 — (James I.), 242
 — (James II.), 320
 — Union with England, 429
 — (Victoria), 483, 486, 507-517
 — (William III.), 328, 331
 — (William IV.), 470
 Ireton, 277, 297
 Irish Church, Disestablishment of, 507
 — Commercial Reform, 406, 414
 — Education Bill, 509
 — Land Bill, 508
 — Parliamentary Reform, 428
 Ironsides, 271, 291
 Isabel (daughter of Warwick the King-
 maker, wife of Clarence), 160
 Isabella of Angoulême (wife of John), 78
 — (daughter of Philip II. of Spain), 234
 — (mother of Charles VII. of France), 142,
 146
 — of France (wife of Edward II.), 106-
 113, 114
 — of Spain, 477
 — (wife of Richard II.), 133
 Isle of Wight, 3, 277

 JACK CADK, 154
 — Straw, 129
 — the Miller, 129
 — Trueman, 129
 Jacobites, 332, 334, 351, 352, 355, 363, 373
 Jacquerie, 120, 130
 Jamaica, 290, 292, 300, 395
 James I., 215, 217, 222, 232-248, 254, 240
 — II., 300, 302, 307, 317-325, 327 *note*,
 328-340
 — IV. of Scotland, 174, 180

KOS

- James V. of Scotland, 196
 — VI. of Scotland, 222 *note*
 — of Scotland, 149
 —, Sir H., 515
 Jeffreys, Lord, 319, 323
 Jellalabad, 495
 Jenkins's ear, 370
 Jermyn, Lord, 317
 Jesuits, 222
 Jewa, 72, 73 *note*, 103, 269, 464, 470, 476
 Jhansi, Queen of, 498
 'Jingoes,' 511, 512
 Joan of Arc, 160-162
 — of Brittany (wife of Henry IV.), 138
 — (wife of Philip of Burgundy), 176
 John, 69, 72, 84
 — II. of France (Edward III.), 190
 — of Brittany (Edward I.), 93
 — the Tyler, 129
 Jones (Chartist), 481
 —, Paul, 403
 Joyce, Cornet, 276
 Judges, independence of, 225, 229, 292 *note*
 Julliers, Duchy of, 241
 Jumèges, Robert of, 31, 32
 Junius, 296
 Junot, 436
 Junta (Spain), 437
 Junto, 297
 Juris, rights of, 206 and *note*, 315, 421
 Jury (Grand), 76; (Petty), 76 *note*
 Justice of the Peace, 76
 Justices, 54, 57, 69, 70, 72, 74, 75, 76, 83, 361
 — in Eyre, 71
 Jutes, in Kent, 8
 Juxon, Bishop, 255

 KAFFIRS, 500
 Kara, 386, 493, 512
 Kay, John, 417
 Kay-Shuttleworth, Sir J., 508
 Kendal, Duchess of, 357, 365
 Kenilworth, 89, 91; Dictum de, 92
 Kenmure, Lord, 355, 356
 Kent, Duke of (son of George III.), 457
 Kersal Moor, 481
 Ket, 201
 Khartoum; 514
 Khyber Pass, 495
 'Kicks and Kindness,' 470
 Kilkenny, Statute of, 126
 'Killing no Murder,' 290
 Kilmarnock, Lord, 376
 Kimbolton, Lord, 264
 King of France, 430
 'King Pym,' 267
 King's Bench, 71
 King's friends, 289, 392, 397
 Kirk of Field, 216
 Kirke, 319
 Kléber, General, 426, 427
 Knighthood, distraint of, 94, 263, 263
 Knowledge, taxes on, 476
 Knowles, Sir Thomas, 190
 Knox, John, 200, 210, 213
 Korniloff, 491
 Kosciusko, 402
 Kosuth, 487

LAH

LA HOGUE, 116
La Vendée, 422
Labour laws, 460
Labourers, Statute of, 128
Lacy, Hugh de, 69, 70
Lafayette, Marquis of, 402
Lake Champlain, 399
 —, General, 439
 —, George, 399
Lally, 347
Lambert, General, 278, 287-297
 — Simnel, 171
Lancaster, Edmund of (brother of Edward I.), 98
 —, Henry, Duke of (Edward III.), 119
 —, Henry, Earl of (Edward II.), 112, 116
 —, John of Ghent, Duke of, 121, 122-125, 186
 —, Thomas of, 107, 109, 110
Land League, 518
 — Tax, 333
Landfranc, 31, 33, 41, 49, 51
Langdale, Marmaduke, 278
Langland, Robert, 128
Langton, Stephen, 79, 80
Las Minas, General, 346, 348
Latimer, Bishop, 194, 203, 205, 208
Latin Church, 490
Laud, Archbishop, 242, 248, 260, 272
Lauderdale, John Maitland, Duke of, 807, 813
Lawrence, Major, 386
 —, Sir H., 496, 497; Sir J., 496, 498
Leake, Admiral, 345
Leeds, Sir T. Osborne, Duke of (*see* Danby), 335
Legate, 57, 67, 75, 81
Legislative Assembly (France), 419
Leicester, Robert Dudley, Earl of, 219, 223, 218 *note*
Leighton, 253
Lenthall, 264, 293, 294
Leofric, 31
Leofwine, 32
Leopold of Austria, 74; Saxe-Coburg, 457, 477
Leslie, David, 274, 282, 283; Alexander, 258, 259
Levellers, 280
Leven, Earl of, 274
Lewes, Mise of, 90
Lewis, Sir G. C., 502
Lexington, 399
Libel Act of Fox, 421
Liberal Unionists, 515
Liberals, 470
Liberty of conscience, 270, 295
Lilburn, John, 270, 281
Limerick, Siege of, 331
 —, Treaty of, *ib.*
Limoges, 88, 122
Lincoln, John de la Pole, Earl of, 166, 170
 —, Abraham, 504
Lindsey, the, 9
Lindsay, Earl of, 266
Lisle, Mrs., 319
Little Gidding, 255
Littleton (Solicitor-General), 253
 — (Secretary for Ireland), 474

MAN

Liverpool, Lord, 440 *note*, 462
Livery, Statute of, 133, 137, 143 *note*, 156, 171
Llewellyn, 95
Lockhart, 291, 293
Lollards, 130, 142, 190
Lollius Urbicus, 4
London Corresponding Society, 421
 — Early, 9 *note*
Londonderry, Siege of, 328
Long Island, 400
Longchamp, William de, 73
Lord Protector, 287
 — Treasurer, 362
Lords, House of, 82; Jurisdiction of, 305
 — of the Congregation, 213
Loewithiel, 271
Lothians, 29, 42, 51, 119
Louis VIII., 78, 83, 84
Louis IX., 90; XI., 181; XII., 179, 181; XIV., 300-385 *passim*; XV., 367, 374; XVI., 418, 420; XVIII., 445, 446, 450, 466
 — Philippe, 468, 485, 489
Lovat, Lord, 376
Lovell, Lord, 171
Lovett (Chartist), 481, 482
Low Church, 327
Lucknow, 498
Lugo, 438
Lumley, 322
Lundy, 328
Lunéville, Peace of, 426
Luther, 184, 187
Lutterell, Colonel, 395
Luxembourg, Marshal, 333, 334
 'Lycidas' of Milton, 265
Lylly, 228
Lyme Regis, 318
Lyndhurst, Lord, 463, 480
Lynn, 269
Lyttelton, Lord, 377
Lytton, Lord, 151

MACADAM, 417
Macaulay (slave trade), 415; (historian), 494
McIntosh, Brigadier, 356
Macintosh (Reformer), 459
Mack, General, 433
Mackay, General, 328
Macnaghten, 495
Madras, 385, 409
Magdalen Hall, 321, 322
Magna Charta, 81, 82, 83, 85, 99, 239, 250, 255, 303
Mahrattas, 386, 410, 415, 426
 'Main' Plot, 235
Maine, 50 *note*, 63, 153
Maintenance, 133, 153, 156, 171
Mainwaring, 251
Malacca, 422
 'Malaohi Malagrowthier,' 461
Malakoff, 493
Malcolm I. (of Scotland), 23; II., 29 and *note*; III., 34, 50, 51; IV., 64
Malta, 426, 428, 431
 — Indian troops to, 512
Manchester Art Exhibition, 502 *note*

MAN

Manchester, Earl of, 271, 272
 — Peace Party, 499
 Mansfield, Count, 246
 —, Lord, 404
 Mar, Earl of, 355
 March, Roger, Earl of, 131
 Mardyke, 291
 Margaret, 'Maid of Norway,' 96
 — (mother of Henry VII.), 162, 166, 184
 — of Anjou, 155-162
 — of Burgundy (sister of Edward IV.), 170
 — (sister of Henry VIII., wife of James IV. of Scotland), 176, 215
 — (wife of Eric of Norway), 96
 Maria of Portugal, 477, 489
 — Theresa, 367, 371-373
 Marie Antoinette, 418
 Marischoff, Earl, 358
 Mark, 12
 Marlborough, 9, 267 *note*
 —, John Churchill, Duke of, 322, 323-331, 334
 —, Statute of, 92
 Marlowe, 229
 Marriage Act (Hardwicke's), 375
 — (Royal) 398, 416 *note*
 Marriage reform, 476
 Martial law, 250
 'Martin Mar Prelate,' 220
 —, Richard, 460
 Mary (daughter of Philip Augustus), 78
 — I. (daughter of Henry VIII.), 182, 183, 196, 197, 201-211
 — of Guise, 196, 213, 214
 — of Modena (second wife of James II.), 307, 309, 319
 — of Scots, 196, 200, 204, 212, 214-224
 — (sister of Henry VIII., Queen of France, Duchesse of Suffolk), 181-197
 — (wife of William of Orange), 308, 310, 323, 324, 325
 Mascarenhas, 385
 Massachusetts, 247
 Massena, 425
 Masulipatam, 387
 Matilda, Empress (mother of Henry II.), 55, 59, 61
 —, Queen (Stephen), 59
 — of Flanders (wife of William I.), 31, 33, 45
 Maurice, Prince, 284
 Mauritius, 385
 — 436 *note*, 445
 Maximilian, Emperor, 179
 Maximus, 6
 'Mayflower,' the, 247
 Maynooth, 484 *note*
 Mazarin, 275, 285 *note*, 291 *note*
 Mead, William, 315
 Medicis, Catherine de, 214, 221
 Medina Sidonia, Duke of, 225
 Meer Jaffer, 386
 Meerut, 497, 498
 Mehemet Ali, 477, 478
 Melbourne, Lord, 467, 474-487
 Melville, Andrew, 230, 242
 —, Lord, 434 *note*
 Memorial of William III., 323
 Menschikoff, Prince, 491
 Merchant Seamen's Act, 510

MOB

Mercia, 9, 13-17, 19, 24, 26
 Messina, 74, 268
 Metcalf, 494
 Methodism, 388
 Methuen, Treaty of, 244
 Middlesex, Earl of, 246
 — Election, 395
 Middleton, 283
 'Midlothian campaign,' 513
 Miguel, Don, 477
 Militia Bill, 263, 265
 Millenary Petition, 235
 Milton, 254, 279, 291 *note*
 Minden, 384
 Minie rifle, 497
 Minorca, 348, 351, 365, 379, 390, 406
 Miquelon, 422
 Misae of Lewes, 90
 — — Amiens, 90
 Missionaries, 14
 Missolonghi, 465
 Mitchell, 486
 Mohammedans, 497
 Moldavia, 490, 493
 Moleyns, Bishop, 154
 Monasteries, 15, 67, 191, 192
 Mondego River, 436, 441
 Money Bills, 139, 502
 Monk, George (Duke of Albemarle), 283-298
 Monmouth, Duke of, 310, 312, 318
 Monopolies, 162, 227-244, 243, 260
 Monro, 278
 Mons, 332, 349
 'Monstrous Regiment of Women,' 310
 Montacute, Lord, 194
 Montague (William III.), 333
 —, Admiral (Earl of Sandwich), 295
 —, Bishop, 248, 261, 264
 —, Lord W., 112
 —, Marquis of (brother of the Kingmaker), 155, 161
 Montcalm, 382
 Monte Video, 436 *note*
 Monteagle, Lord, (1) 181, (2) 238
 Montenegro, 511, 512
 Montford, John de, 116
 Montfort, Simon de (Elder), 89-91, 99;
 — (Younger), 91
 Montrel, 382, 400
 Montrose, Earl of (James Graham), 273, 274, 282
 Moore, Sir John, 382, 428, 437
 Moors, 289
 Moots, 13, 47
 Mordaunt, Lord, 326
 More, Sir Thomas, 185, 186, 188, 189
 Moreau, 426
 Morkere, 32, 35, 38, 39, 42
 Morington, Lord, 428
 Morris, 297
 Mortimer, Roger, 109, 113, 391
 — Edmund (son of Roger), 135
 — Sir Edmund, 139
 Mortmain, 94, 133
 Morton, Bishop, 164, 166, 170
 Morton's Fort, 172
 Moscow, retreat from, 445
 'Most Christian King,' 179

MOW

Mowbray, Robert, 51
 Mule, the, 417
 Municipal reform, 476
 Murat, 436
 Murdoch, 469
 Murphy riots, 506 *note*
 Murray, James Stuart, Earl of, 214-218
 —, Lord George, 375
 Mutinies in Navy, 423
 Mutiny Act, 326, 336, 512 *note*
 Mysore, 409, 426

NAMUR, 333, 334, 446
 Nana Sahib, 498
 Nantwich, 270
 Napier, Lord, of Magdala, 507
 —, Sir Charles, 477, 496
 Naples, 465
 Napoleon III., 488, 491
 Naseby, 273
 Nash, 229
 Natal, 500
 'Nation,' 484
 National Assembly, 418, 419
 — Covenant, 257
 — Debt, 353, 360, 378, 393, 413, 424, 451
 — Gallery, 502 *note*
 — Society, 474
 Navarre, Henry of, 223
 Navigation Act, 285, 292, 300, 393, 459
 Navy, 20, 115 *note*, 179
 Necessary doctrine and erudition of a Christian man, 196
 Necker, 418
 Negapatam, 408, 411
 Neill, 498
 Nelson, 423-433
 Nepal, 494
 Nevilles, the, 155
 New England, 248
 New Forest, 43, 53
 'New Model,' 273
 New Plymouth, 247
 New Testament, 187
 New World, 178
 New York, 400, 401, 405
 New Zealand, 501
 Newark, 269
 Newbourne, Skirmish of, 259
 Newcastle, 270, 271, 274
 —, Earl of, 267, 271
 —, Pelham, Duke of, 367, 378-391
 Newcomen, 417
 Newgate, 129, 204
 New Hampshire, 393
 Newmarket, 276, 312
 Newport, 482; Treaty of, 278
 Newspapers, 398
 Newton, Sir Isaac, 336
 Ney, 440
 Nicholas I., 490, 493
 —, Sir E., 297
 Nicholson, 498
 Nigel of Ely, 64, 72
 Nightingale, Florence, 493
 Nimeguen, Peace of, 309
 Nithsdale, Lord, 356

ORI

'No Rent' manifesto, 513
 Noailles, Marshal, 373
 Non-jurors, 326
 Non-resisting Test, 307
 Norfolk House, 369, 372
 Norfolk Island, 501
 Norfolk, Thomas Howard, Duke of (Henry VIII.), 180, 181, 184, 185, 195, 197; (Elizabeth), 217
 —, Thomas Mowbray, Duke of (Richard II.), 134; (Richard III.), 167
 Norham, Conference of, 96
 —, Peace of, 121
 Normandy, 23, 28, 29, 31, 33, 50, 79, 97, 153
 Norria, 226
 'North Briton,' 391
 North, Lord, 395-411
 Northampton, 157, 266
 Northcote, Sir Stafford (Lord Iddealeigh), 510
 Northern League, 427
 Northern rebellion, 217
 'Northern Star,' 481
 Northmen: in Scandinavia, Gaul, Ireland, England, 18
 Northumberland, John Dudley, Duke of, 198-204
 Northumbria, 10, 13, 14, 16
 North-West Provinces, 479 *note*
 Nott, General, 495
 Nottingham, Council of (Richard II.), 131
 —, Earl of, 322, 326, 327, 344-356
 Nova Scotia, 378-379
 Noy (Attorney-General), 255
 Nun of Kent, 188

OAK OF REFORMATION, 301

Oates, Titus, 309, 329, 333
 O'Brien, Smith, 486
 Occasional Conformity Act, 343, 344, 351
 O'Connell, Daniel, 462, 463, 464, 470, 479, 484
 O'Connor, Arthur, 429
 —, Fergus, 481, 482
 Odo, 36, 38, 53, 44, 48, 49, 50
 Offa, 16, 30
 Offa's Dyke, 16, 22
 Old Sarum, 9
 'Old Whig,' 359
 Oldcastle, Sir John, 142
 Olive branch, 400
 Olna, Peace of, 28
 Omar Pasha, 491
 O'Neal, Earl of Tyrone, 227
 —, Sir Phelim, 263
 Opdam, 302
 Oporto, 438
 Orange River Free State, 500
 Orangemen, 428, 429
 Ordeal, 44
 Orders in Council, 455
 'Ordinances,' 106
 Orford, Robert Walpole, Earl of, 350, 351, 356-373
 Orkneys, 4, 65
 Orleans, Duke of (George I.), 355, 357
 —, Henrietta, Duchess of, 300
 —, Isle of, 383
 —, Siege of, 150

OBL

- Orleton, Adam, 110, 112, 113
 Ormoud, Duke of (Charles I., Charles II.),
 277, 281, 291, 297
 —, Duke of (Anne), 352, 355
 Ostend Company, 365
 Ostorius scapula, 2
 Oswald, 13, 14
 Oswy, 14
 Otho of Germany, 77
 Oude, 409, 494, 496, 497
 Ovates, 2
 Owen, Robert, 481 *note*, 507
 Oxford, 267, 269, 271, 273, 274, 311
 —, Harley, Earl of, 344, 351, 353, 357, 360, 378
 —, Provisions of, 89
 —, Robert de Vere, Earl of, 131

PACIFICATION OF GHENT, 221

- Paget, Lord, 204
 Paine, Tom, 401, 421, 481
 Palatinate, 246
 Palatine, earldoms and bishoprics, 38, 49
 Palliure, 410
 Palmerston, Lord, 440, 463, 467, 475-478, 484-492
 Pampeluna, 443
 Paudulph, 80
 Papal provisions, 86
 Paris, Peace of, 390, 393 and *note*
 —, Treaty of, (1) 448, (2) 450
 Parker, Admiral, 424, 427
 —, Archbishop, 213
 Parliament, Addled, 240, 311
 —, Barbones or Daft Little, 266
 —, Good, 125
 —, Long, 259
 —, Mad, 89, 92
 —, Merciless, Wonderful, 132, 135
 —, Model, 98
 — of 1529, 187
 —, Pensionary, 299, 307
 —, dump, 279, 285-295
 —, Short, 259
 —, Unlearned, 139
 Parliamentary title, 135, 169
 — Reform, 414, 466
 Parliaments, annual, 481
 Parma, Duke of, 223, 225
 Parnell, Mr., 513
 Parr, Catherine, 197
 Parsons, 222
 Partition treaties, 337, 338
 Party government, 334, 354, 363 *note*
 Paston Letters, 153
 Patison, 338 *note*
 Patriots, 365
 Paul IV., 207, 210
 Paul's revolving machine, 417
 Pavia, 182
 Paxton, Sir J., 499
 Payment of members, 481
 'Peace with honour,' 612
 Peasant risings (William IV.), 467
 Peasants' revolt, 127, 119
 Pedro, Don, 477
 — the Cruel, 121, 122
 Peel, General, 805

POL

- Peel, Sir Robert, 440, 463, 483
 'Peelers,' 467 *note*
 Peerage Bill, 359
 Peers, Great Council of, 259
 Pelagius, 6
 Pelham, Henry, 373-378
 Pelhams, the, 389
 Pembroke, De Valence, Earl of (Edward II.),
 107
 —, Jasper Tudor, Earl of, and Duke of Bedford, 158, 162, 170
 —, William the Marshal, Earl of, 83
 Pembrokeshire, Flemish weavers in, 56
 Penal laws, 237, 238, 245, 249, 272, 273, 317
 Penda, 13, 14
 Penn, William, 206 *note*, 314, 315
 Pennefather, General, 492
 Penny, 220
 — Postage, 480
 Penry, 220
 Pentland Hills, 313
 Pepys's Diary, 301 *note*
 Perceval, Mr., 434, 440
 Percies, the, 155
 Percy, Henry (Hotspur), 132, 138, 139
 Perkin Warbeck, 173-175
 Perrera, Alice, 125, 127
 Persia, 494
 Perth, Duke of (George II.), 375
 Peter des Roches, 85-87
 — Martyr, 200
 — of Wakefield, 80
 — the Great, 358, 365
 Peterborough, Earl of (George II.), 345
 Peterloo Massacre, 454
 Peter's Pence, 42, 94, 123
 Petition of Advice, 290, 291
 — of Right, 255, 303
 Petre, Father, 319, 321, 322
 Petty jury, 76 *note*
 Pevensy, 1, 2, 5, 8, 35, 49
 Philadelphia, 401, 402
 Philip Augustus, 72, 74
 — of Burgundy (Henry VII.), 176
 — III. of France, 93, 98
 — IV. of France, 114
 — II. of Spain, 205, 209, 210, 227
 — IV. of Spain, 337
 — V. of Spain, 337, 346, 351
 — VI. of France, 114
 Philippa of Hainault, 111
 Picts and Scots, 5, 6
 Pilgrim Fathers, 247
 Pilgrimage of Grace, 192
 'Pilgrim's Progress,' 317
 Pillory, 253
 Pitt, William, 407-434, 482
 Pittsburg, 383
 Pius IV., 215; IX., 487, 489
 Place Bill, 333, 348
 Plague of London, 301, 302
 'Plebeian,' 359
 Plevna, 511
 Plimsoll, Samuel, 510
 Poitiers, 119
 Poitou, 80, 86, 88
 Pole, Geoffrey, 194
 —, Reginald, Cardinal, 184, 201

POL

Poll Tax, 76, 127
 Pollock, General, 496
 Pondicherry, 385, 387, 410
 Pont de l'Arche, 146, 153
 'Poor Caltiff,' 124
 Poor Law (Elizabeth), 220
 — Law, 472
 — — Amendment, 473, 474 *note*
 'Poor Man Robbery' Bill, 474
 'Poor Priests,' 124
 Popery, jealousy of, 211, 300, 487
 'Popish Raga,' 218, 257
 Popish Terror, the, 309
 Port wine, 344
 Porteous, 369
 Portland, Duke of, 408, 434
 Porto Bello, 371
 Porto Novo, 410
 Portsmouth, Louise de Kéroualle, Duchess of, 310-313
 Portugal, 300, 436-444, 465, 477
 Pottinger, Eldred, 494
 Poyning's Law, 174, 272, 364-406
 Præmunire, 123, 133, 185, 188, 215, 238
 Pragmatic Sanction, 365, 367-371
 Prayer Book, 199, 202, 212 and *note*, 265, 289
 Presbyterians, 213, 220, 230, 241, 273, 316
passim, 234
 'Presentment,' 69, 76
 President of the North, 192
 Preston, 278, 356
 —, Lord, 330
 Preston Fans, 375
 Pretender, the Old, son of James II., 322, 340, 356
 Pretender (Young), 363, 373-376
 Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, 459 *note*
 Privilege, 236, 261, 389, 392
 Pride's Purge, 279
 Priestley, Dr., 420
 'Prime Minister,' 361, 363
 Prince Edward's Island, 382
 'Prince of Wales,' 95
 Prince Imperial, death of, 513
 — of Macchiavelli, 186
 'Prince Robber,' 275
 Princeton, 401
 Printing, 178
 Property qualification, 350, 481
 Prophecys, 236
 Prorogation, 311 *note*
 Protectionists, 482
 Protestant League (James I.), 246
 'Protestant Wind,' 323
 Protestants, 186, 186
 Protesters, 278, 279, 282, 313
 Provisions, Papal, 66
 — of Oxford, 89
 Provisors, Statute of, 123
 Prussia, kingdom of, 352, 371
 Prynne, William, 254
 Public Worship Regulation Act, 510
 Pulicat, 411
 Pulteney, 362, 364-372
 Punjab, 494, 496
 Puritans, 234, 248, 292
 Purveyance, 239, 298
 Pym, John, 259, 267

ROB

QUADRILATERAL ALLIANCE, 478
 Quadruple Alliance, 340, 359
 Quakers, 317, 476
 'Quamdiu se bene gesserint,' 389 *note*
 Quebec, 382
 Queen's College, 484
 Quetta, 495
 Quia Emptores, 93
 Quo Warranto, 93, 312, 320, 329

RADICALS, 470
 Raglan Castle, 275
 —, Lord, 491, 493
 Raleigh, Sir Walter, 224, 240 *note*, 243
 Ralph of Waler, 50
 Railway speculation, 486
 Railways, 467 *note*, 483, 488
 Rangoon, 494, 496
 Rastadt, Peace of, 351
 Ravenspur, 134, 161
 Rawdon, Lord, 405
 Reading, 269
 Redan, 493
 Redistribution of seats, 515
 Redwald, 10
 Reform Act (1832), 467-469; (1867), 505
 — League, 505
 Regency Act, 345
 Reginald (Subprior), 79
 Regular Army, 173
 Regulators, 321
 Remonstrance, 251; (Grand), 263; (Grand Army), 278
 Renard, 204, 205
 Responsibility of ministers, 115
 Revenue, 59, 298, 330
 Revival of learning, 183
 Revolution, French, causes, 417; effects of, 420; 'Reflections on,' 420
 — of 1830, 476; (1848), 489
 — Society, 420
 Reynolds, Bishop, 299
 Rhode Island, 401
 Rhuddlan Castle, 95
 Ribandmen, 486
 Rich, Edmund, 87
 Richard (brother of Henry III.), 87, 68
 — I., 70-73, 73-77
 — II., 122, 125, 127-135
 — III., 159, 163, 165, 168
 — of Ely, 72
 Richelleu, 186, 258
 Richmond, Duke of (George III.), 402
 Ridley, Bishop, 205
 Rifle corps, 502 *note*
 Rights of Man, 421
 Riot Act, 355
 Rivers, Woodville, Earl, 160, 164
 Rizzio, David, 215
 Roads, 417
 —, Roman, 5 *note*
 Robert (son of William I.), 44, 45, 50
 Robert of Belême, 54
 — of Jumieges, 31, 32, 87
 — of Mortain (brother of William I.), 85
 — the Devil, 29
 Robinson, Bishop, 350

ROB

Robinson, John, 247
 —, Sir T., 378
 Rochdale Equitable Pioneers, 506
 Rochelle, 249, 250, 252
 Rochester, Laurence Hyde, Earl of, 319, 343, 345, 346
 Rochford, Lady, 196
 'Rocket,' the, 469
 Rockingham, Marquis of, 392, 398, 403-407
 Rodney, 382, 404, 407
 Roger of Hoveden, 72
 — of Salisbury, 54, 61
 — of York, 68
 Rogers (martyr), 208
 Rohillas, 410, 415
 Rolf (of Normandy), 23
 Romans, 1, 2-7; nature of their occupation, 6
 'Rome-fee,' 42
 Romilly, 451
 Rooke, Admiral, 344
 'Root and Branch,' 262, 263, 268
 Borke's Drift, 513
 Roses, the Wars of the, 154
 Rotten boroughs, 407, 414
 Rouen, Siege of (Henry V.), 78, 153
 Roumania, 493 *note*, 512
 Roundheads, 264
 Rowland Hill, 480
 Royal demesne, 80
 — Society, 316
 Runnymede, 81
 Rupert, Prince, 266, 267, 271, 273, 281, 284, 302, 306
 Russell, Admiral, 322, 333, 335
 —, Lord J., 464-467, 484, 485-488
 —, Lord W., 309, 312, 315, 329
 Russells, the, 193, 389
 Russia, 405, 422, 432, 465, 477
 Rutland, Edward, Earl of, 133, 138
 Ruyter, 306
 Rye House Plot, 312
 Ryswick, Peace of, 336

SA, DON PANTALEON, 288
 Sacheverell, 349
 Sackville, Lord, 384
 Sadler, Mr., 472
 Sadras, 411
 Saladin, 74
 — Tithe, 72
 Sale, Sir R., 495, 496
 Salem, 399
 Salic Law, 114 and *note*
 Salisbury, Countess of (niece of Edward IV.), 188, 194
 — Decree, 45, 71
 —, Earl of (Charles II.), 308
 —, Earl of (Henry VII.), 150
 —, Earl of (Longsword), 82, 83
 —, Earl of (Victoria), 508
 —, Montague, Earl of (Edward II.), 113
 —, Neville, Earl of (Henry VI.), 155
 —, Robert Cecil, Earl of, 234
 San Juan, 504
 San Sebastian, 443
 Sancroft, Archbishop, 321, 326

SEV

Sanctuary, 162, 175
 Santiago, 371
 Saracens, 72
 Saragossa, 438
 Saratoga, 401
 Sardinia, 348, 351, 358, 493
 Sarsfield, 331
 Sartorius, Captain, 477
 Saunders (martyr), 208
 —, Admiral, 382
 Savannah, 403, 406
 Savings banks, 453
 Savoy Conference, 299
 — Duke of, 343, 358
 Sawtré, William, 137
 Saxe, Marshal, 373
 Saxon Conquest, 8-16
 Saxons, 5
 Say, Lord, 164
 Scandinavians, 17
 Scarborough, 107, 373
 Scarlett, General, 492
 Schism Act, 352, 357
 Schleswig-Holstein, 504 *note*
 Schomberg, Marshal, 307, 329
 Schwartz, Martin, 171
 Scinde, 496
 Soone, 98, 102
 Scotland in time of—
 Anne, 346-348
 Charles I., 267-269, 269
 Charles II., 313
 Commonwealth, 282
 Edward I., 96, 98, 101, 102
 Edward II., 108
 Edward III., 113, 119
 Elizabeth, 213-217
 Henry II., 71
 Henry IV., 138
 Henry VII., 175
 Henry VIII., 180, 196
 James I., 241
 William I., 49
 William II., 61
 William III., 328-331
 Scotland, union with, 346, 347, 348
 Scott, Sir Walter, 461
 Scrope, Archbishop, 140
 —, Lord, of Masham, 143
 'Scrupling the Habits,' 219
 Scutage, 65, 78, 85, 86
 Scutari, 493
 Sea-dogs, 223
 Seaforth, Earl, 358
 Sebastopol, 491
 Security, Act of, 347, 415
 Seditious Meetings Act, 454
 Selden, 262
 Self-denying Ordinance, 272, 273
 Senegal, 402
 Septennial Act, 356
 Seringapatam, 409, 436
 Servia, 493, 511
 Settlement, Act of (Ireland), 313, 320, 328-331; (England) First Act of, 320, 325, 416, (Second) 338
 Seven bishops, 321
 Seventeenth century, 341

SEV

- Seville, Treaty of, 306
 Seymour, Jane, 190
 —, Sir T., 208
 —, William, 234, 235
 Seymours, the, 193 *note*
 Shaftesbury, Ashley Cooper, Earl of, 806
 —, Earl of (William IV. and Victoria), 472
 Shah Alum, 409, 410
 — Soojah, 494, 495
 Shakespear, 229
 Sharp, Granville, 415
 —, James, Archbishop, 313
 Shelburne, Lord, 407
 Sherbourne, 273
 Sherbrooke, Robert Lowe, Lord, 505
 Shere Ali, 512
 Sheridan, 406, 411, 420
 Sheriff, 23, 58, 71, 76, 139
 Ship money, 255, 280, 282, 320
 Shire, 12
 Shirenote, 13
 'Shortest Way with Dissenters,' 344
 Shovel, Cloudealey, 344, 345
 Shrewsbury, 273, 326, 327
 —, Duke of (Anne), 353
 —, Earl of (James II.), 323
 —, Talbot, Earl of, 155
 Siltmouth, Addington, Lord, 430, 433
 Sidney, Sir Phillip, 223
 Sikhs, 494 *note*, 498
 Silchester, 9
 Siliustria, 286, 491
 Simnel, Lambert, 171
 Simons, Richard, 170
 Sinking fund, 413
 Sinope, 491
 Seward, 31
 Six Acts, 454
 — Articles, 194
 Skinner, 305, 343
 Skippon, 272
 Slave trade, 44, 224, 415, 451
 Slavery Abolition Act, 500
 —, abolition of, 471
 Sloane, Sir Hans, 379
 Smith, Adam, 413
 —, John (Baptist), 247
 —, John (Virginia), 247
 —, Sir H., 496
 —, Sir Sidney, 426
 Smithfield, 187
 Smuggling, 367, 413
 Socialism, 481, 506
 Social Science Association, 502 *note*
 Solemn League and Covenant, 269
 Somers, Lord 338
 Somerset, Beaufort, Duke of, 153
 —, Herbert, Earl of, 181
 Somerset House, 201, 474
 —, Robert Carr, Earl of, 240
 —, Seymour (Duke of), Protector, 198
 Sophia, Electress, 338
 Sorblodunum, 9
 Soudan, 514
 Soul, Marshal, 437, 441, 443, 444
 South Kensington Museum, 502 *note*
 South Sea Bubble, 360
 Southampton, Earl of, 297
 'Sower of Sedition,' 253

STU

- Spa Fields, 453
 Spanish American Colonies, 224, 461, 464, 465
 Spanish succession, 358
 'Speedwell,' the, 247
 Spencer, Earl, 474
 —, General, 437
 Spenser, Edmund, 228
 Spinning jenny, 417 and *note*
 Spitalfields weavers, 480
 St. Albans, 3, 6, 80
 —, Francis Bacon, Earl of, 241
 St. Arnaud, Marshal, 491
 St. Bartholomew's day, 221
 St. Brice's day, 27
 St. Chad, 14
 St. Columba, 14
 St. Crispin's day, 144
 St. Germans, 324
 St. Giles's, riot in, 257
 St. Helena, 306
 St. John, Oliver, 241
 St. Pierre, 422
 St. Ruth, 331
 St. Thomas of Lancaster, 121, 160
 St. Vincent, Sir J. Jervis, Earl of, 423
 Stafford, Humphrey, 164
 —, Thomas, 210
 Staffords, the, 165, 170
 Stair, Earl of, 373
 Stamp Act, 393
 Standing army, 289, 307, 325, 336, 347, 451
 Stanhope (General), 348, 350-361
 Stanley, Sir W., 167, 173
 Star Chamber, 171, 179, 227, 236, 253, 262
 Staten Island, 400
 States-General, 418
 Statute, 'De Heretico Comburendo,' 137
 Statute of Gloucester, 93
 — Kilkenny, 126
 — Labourers, 128, 228
 — Livery, 133, 138, 143 *note*
 — Marlborough, 92
 — Mortmain, 133
 — Præmunire, 133
 — Provisors, 123, 133
 — Savoy Palace, 129
 — Treasons, 126
 — Westminster (1) 94, (2) 94, (3) 95
 — Winchester, 95
 Steamers, 417
 Steele, Richard, 359
 Stein, 437
 Stephen, Count of Blois, 48
 —, Count of Boulogne and King of England,
 56, 59-62
 Stephenson, George, 469
 Stephens (agitator), 481, 507
 Stewarts, the, 51
 Stigand, 32, 33, 37, 41
 Stirling, 160, 356, 376, 376
 Stop of the Exchequer, 306
 Strafford, Thomas Wentworth, Earl of, 250-
 261, 272, 281, 292
 Stratford, Archbishop, 115
 — de Redcliffe, 490
 Strathclyde, 13, 23, 39
 Strickland, 219
 Strikes, 454
 Strode, 252, 259

STU

Stuart, Arabella, 234, 235
 —, Esme, 222 *note*
 —, General, 436
 —, Walter (the Steward), 106
 Sturbridge Fair, 126
 Subinfeudation, 95
 Suetonius *Pan. inus*, 3
 Suez Canal, purchase of, 510
 Suffolk, Charles Brandon, Duke of, 181, 185
 —, Earl of (George III.), 396
 —, Earl of (Mary), 306
 —, Earl of (Michael de la Pole), 131
 —, Edmund de la Pole, Duke of, 176, 179
 —, William de la Pole, Earl of, 152, 154
 Suffrage, Manhood, 481
 Sunderland, Earl of (James II.), 311, 319, 322; (Anne) 346, 354, 357-361
 Supremacy (Henry VIII.), 188; (Elizabeth), 312
 'Supreme Head of the Church,' 187
 Surajah Dowlah, 346, 387, 409, 410
 Surrey, Howard, Earl of, 107
 Suspension of Habeas Corpus Act, 373, 422, 453
 Suspensory power, 306
 Sussex, Duke of (son of George III.), 475
 Suttlej, the, 496
 Sweden, 246, 304, 405, 493
 Sweyn, King of Denmark, (1) 27, (2) 40
 —, son of Godwine, 31
 Swift, Dean, 364, 461
 Swynford, Catherine, wife of John of Ghent, 133
 Sydenham, Lord, 479
 Sydney, Algernou, 315, 329
 —, Henry, 322
 Synod of Dort, 241
 'TABLES,' THE, 257, 258
 'Tacking,' 338, 345
 Tallage, 104 *note*, 115
 Tallard, Marshal, 344
 Tangiers, 313, 319
 Taunton, 267, 273
 —, Malis of, 319
 Taylor (martyr), 208
 Telegraph, 483 *note*
 Telford, 417
 Templars, 107
 Temple, Earl, 307, 331, 411
 —, the, 129
 Tenants in chief, 47, 78, 81
 Tender consciences, 276, 225
 Teneriffe, 291
 Teral, 294
 Terouenne, Siege of, 179
 Test Act (Elizabeth), 315; (Charles II.), 313, 319, 357, 421
 —, Repeal of, 464
 Testa, University, abolished, 509
 Thanet, 8
 Thegn, 12
 Theobald (nephew of William the Conqueror), 59
 — Archbishop, 66
 Theodore, Archbishop, 14
 —, King, 507
 Theodosius, 6

TYR

Thirty Years' War, 243
 Thistlewood, 454
 Thomas the Baker, 129
 — of Woodstock (son of Edward III.), 121
 Thralls, 12
 Throckmorton, Nicholas, 306
 Throgmorton, Francis, 222
 Thurkill, 27
 Thurlow, 396
 Tloonderoga, 382, 399, 401
 Tiers État, 419
 Tilist, Peace of, 435, 436
 Tippoo Saib, 411, 422, 426
 Tithe Commutation Act (England), 476
 Tithes, Irish, 471
 Tobago, 422
 Todleben, 491, 511
 Tolerance, 207, 270, 274, 290, 306, 313
 Toleration Act, 327
 Tonnage and Poundage, 240, 253, 263
 Torbay, 323
 Tories, 312 and *note*, 313, 324, 340, 352
 Torres Vedras, 440
 Torrington, Herbert, Earl of, 326, 329, 330
 Torture, 285, 313
 Tostig, 31, 32, 34, 35
 Toulon, 422
 Touraine, 63, 64
 Tournai, 179, 374
 Tournaments, 75, 118
 Towns, Roman, 5 *note*
 Townshend, Charles, 396
 —, Lord, 354-365
 Trade companies (James I.), 237
 — Unions, 577
 Traitorous Correspondence Act, 422
 Translation of the Bible, 236
 Transportation, abolition of, 501
 Transvaal, 513
 Trastamare, Henry of, 121
 Treason, 133, 134, 163, 174, 260
 Treason Act (William III.), 335
 Treasons, Statute of, 126
 Treasurer, 58
 Trent, Council of, 215
 'Trent,' seizure of the, 503
 Tresham, Francis, 238
 Trevelyan, Sir G., 515
 Trevithick, 469 *note*
 Trichinopoly, 385
 Triennial Act (Charles I.), 261, 301 *note*;
 (William III.), 333, 334
 Triers and Ejectors, 287
 Trinidad, 423
 Trinity Sunday, 68
 Trinoda Necessitas, 12
 Triple Alliance (1668), 304; (1716), 357
 Tripoli, 451
 Troyes, Treaty of, 147, 157
 Tullibardine, Marquis, 358
 Tunis, 451
 Turgot, 418
 Turnham Green, 267
 Tyndale, 187
 Tyrconnel, Earl of (Elizabeth), 242; Richard Talbot, Earl of (James II.), 317
 Tyrone, Earl of, 242

UDA

- UDAL, 230
 Ulm, 433
 Ulster, Plantation, 242, 263
 Undertakers in Parliament, 240; Ireland, 242
 Uniformity, Act of (Edward VI.), 198, 202;
 (Elizabeth), 212; (Charles II.), 307
 Union, Repeal of the, with Ireland, 464
 — with Ireland, 429
 — — Scotland, 346, 347 *note*, 348
 Unitarian Society, 420
 Unitarians, 327, 388
 United Colonies, 393
 'United Irishman,' 426
 'United Irishmen,' 428
 'United Kingdom,' 430
 United Kingdom Alliance, 504 *note*
 Urban, Pope, 50
 Useful Knowledge Society, 476
 Utopia, 185 *note*
 Utrecht, Union of, 221; Peace of, 333, 318, 351

VAGABONDAGE, 202

- Vale of the White Horse, 9, 19
 Valence, Aymer de, 87
 Valentine, 252, 253
 Valley Forge, 401, 402
 Van Diemen's Land, 501
 — Paria, 200
 — Tromp, 285, 288, 302
 Vane, Sir H. (the Younger), 262, 297
 Varangian Guard, 44
 Vasco de Gama, 178
 Vaughan, Lord Chief Justice, 315
 Vendôme, Marshal, 350
 Venice, 424 *note*, 450, 504 *note*
 Venner, 298
 'Venus and Adonis,' 229
 Verden, 357
 Vernon, Admiral, 371
 Versalles, Treaty of (1783), 408 and *note*
 Verulamium, 3
 Vespasian, 3
 Vexin, 65
 Victor Emmanuel, 503 *note*
 —, Marshal, 438
 —, Pope, 65
 Victoria, 457, 478-517
 'Victory,' the, 433
 Vienna, Congress of, 446; Treaty of (George I.), 365; (George II.), 367; Peace of, 435, 444
 Vigo, 359
 Vikings, 18, 20
 Villars, Marshal, 349, 350, 351
 Villein, 12, 128
 Villeneuve, 433
 Villerot, Marshal, 346
 Villiers, Charles, 483
 Vincent, 481, 482
 Virginia, 247
 'Vision of Piers Plowman,' 126
 Vorstinus, 241
 Vortigern, 8

WADE, MARSHAL, 375
 Walcheren, 540

WIL

- Waldenses, 291
 Wales (Edward I.), 95-98; (William II.), 51;
 (Henry IV.), 131
 Wallace, William, 99-101
 Wallachia, 490, 493
 Waller, General, 267, 271, 273
 Wallingford, Peace of, 62
 — House, 267
 Walpole, Robert, *see* Orford
 Walsingham, 224
 Walter of Coutances, 75
 Walthef, 32, 40, 43
 Walworth, 127, 130
 Wantsum, 8
 Ward Hunt, Mr., 510
 Ware, 277
 Warenne, John de, 98, 100
 —, William de (William II.), 49; (Edward I.),
 93, 100
 Warham, Archbishop, 184
 Warren Hastings, 409-415
 Warwick, Dudley, Earl of (afterwards Duke
 of Northumberland), 198, 203, 204
 —, Earl of (Civil War), 273
 —, Edward, Earl of (Henry VII.), 174
 —, Neville, Earl of, 'Kingmaker,' 153, 167
 —, son of Duke of Northumberland, 204
 Washington, George, 379, 399-408
 Wat the Tiler, 129
 Watling Street, 3, 19, 22
 Watson, 235
 Watt, 417
 'Wealth of Nations,' 413
 Weavers, settlement of, 217
 Wedderburn, 396
 Weidmore, Peace of, 19, 28
 Welles, Sir R., 160
 —, Lord, 160
 Wellington, Arthur Wellesley, Duke of, 427,
 436, 438-451, 463-468
 Welsh, 16
 — counties, 196
 —, defeat of, by Harold, 32
 Wentworth, General, 371
 Wesley, John, 388; Charles, 4A
 Westminster, Treaty of, 290
 Weston, Lord Treasurer, 255
 Westphalia, Peace of, 243
 Wexford, Storming of, 281
 Wharton, Lord, 308
 Whigs, 312 *note*, 324, 340
 — and Tories (George III.), 389; (Charles
 II.), 312 *note*; (James II.), 324; (William
 III.), 340 *note*; (Anne), 345; (George I.),
 354
 Whitby, Synod of, 14
 Whitefield, 388
 Whitgift, 219
 Wickli, John, 124, 125, 186, 388
 Wilberforce, 415
 William the Conqueror, 29, 31, 33, 25, 33-48
 — I. (Emperor), 504 *note*, 509 *note*
 — II. (Rufus), 49-53
 — IV., 467-478, *see* Clarence, Duke of
 — de Valence, 87
 — Fitz-Osbert, 76
 — Longsword, 23
 — of Longchamp, 74

WIL

William of Orange (William III.), 302, 322,
326-341; (William I.), 221
— of Wickham, 124
— the Lion, 70
— the Marshal, 78, 83
Williams, Bishop, 244
—, Colonel, of Kara, 386, 493 *note*
—, Roger, 270
Wills, General, 356
Wilmington, Lord, 372, 373
Wilmot, 283
Wiltshire, Scrope, Earl of, 134
Winchester, 9, 21, 271
—, Paulet, Marquis of, 208
Winchilsea, Lord, 463
Winthrop, 247
Wintoun, Lord, 354
Wiseman, Cardinal, 487
Witenagemote, 13, 27, 37
Wolfe, General, 384
— Tone, 428, 429
Wolsley, Colonel, 329
—, Lord, 509, 514 *note*
Wolsey, Thos., 180-186
'Wonderful' Year, 246
Wood's half-pence, 461
Woodville, Elizabeth (wife of Edward IV.).
160

ZUL

Wool, 75, 114
Worcester, 267
—, Earl of (Henry IV.), 139; (Charles I.),
265
Working classes, distress of, 424, 453, 454,
480
Wulfstan, 24
Wyatt, Sir T., 206
Wyndham, 369

YAKOOB KHAN, 512
Yeast, 481
York, 13, 16, 40, 73, 259, 271
—, Duke of (son of George III.), 422, 425, 457,
462
—, Edmund, Duke of (son of Edward III.),
131, 134
— Richard, Duke of, 152-157
Yorkshire, wasting of, 40

Zion's plea against Prelacy, 253
Znaim, Armistice of, 438
Zulus, 513

